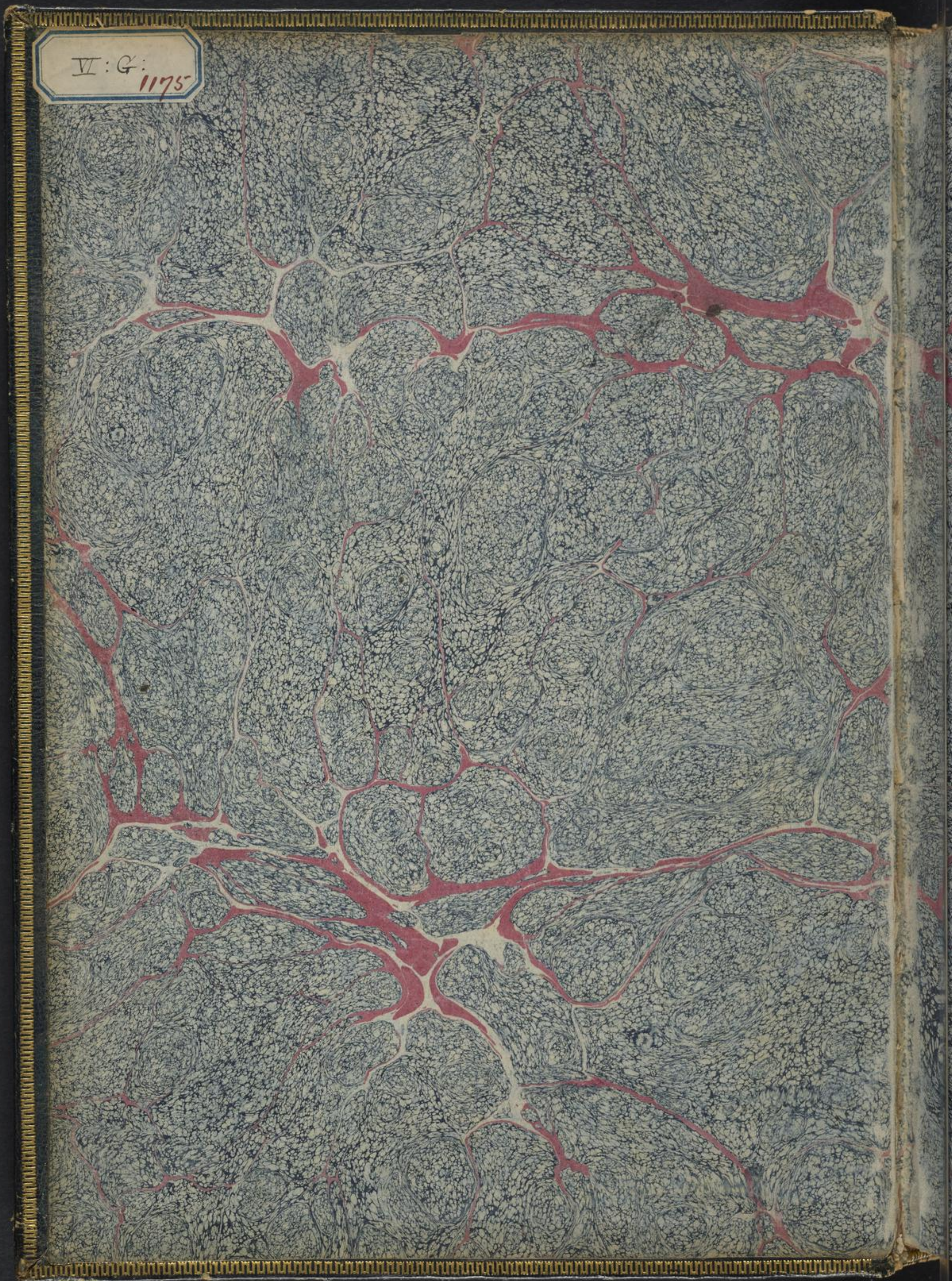


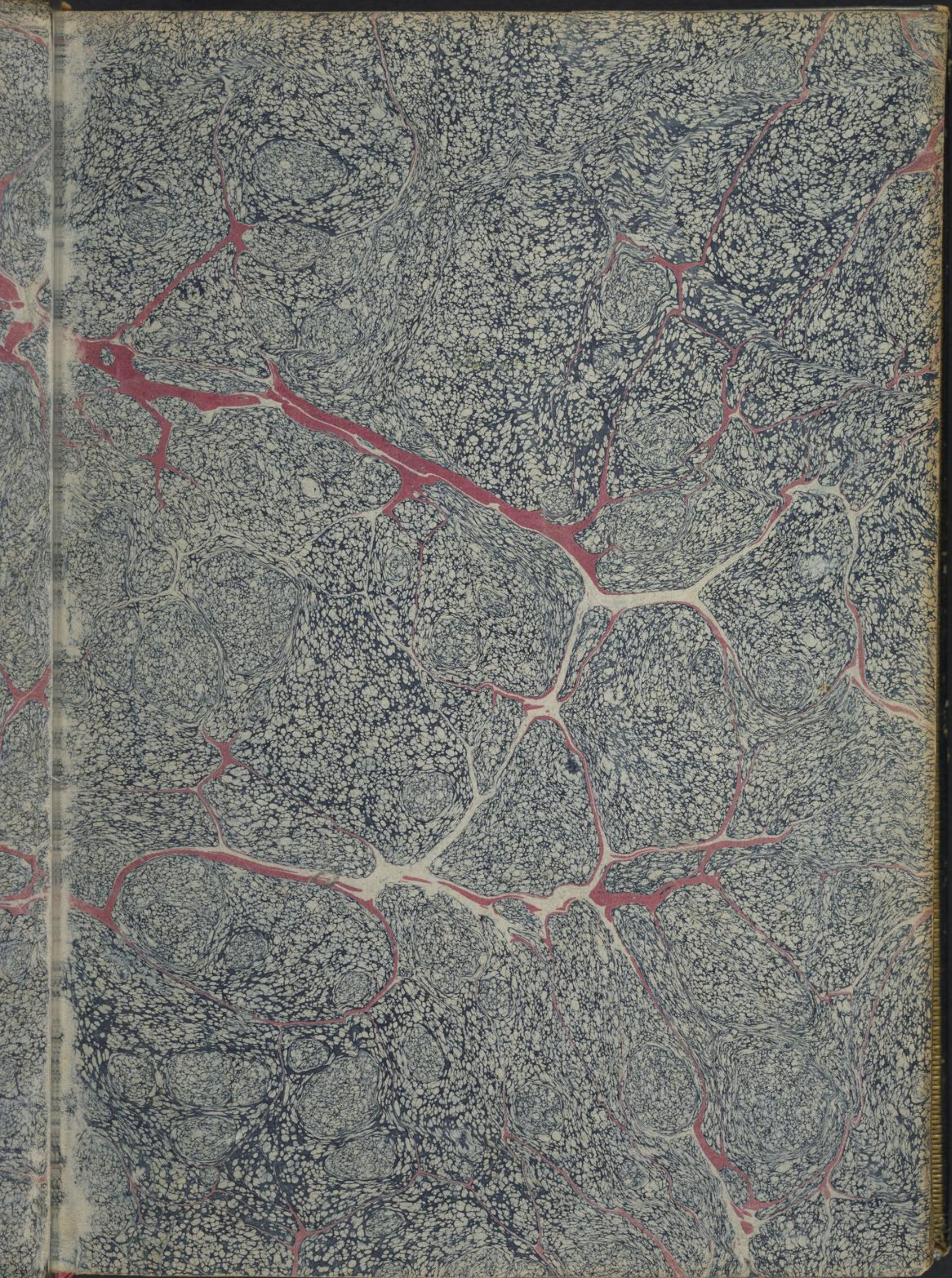


VI: G:

1175









f1083/29

GOWER,  
CONFESSIO AMANTIS  
ENGLAND, 1st half XVc.

Collection of Earl of Aberdeen  
Lord Halden



fyndeth well goy and welland payent  
tynett 1 so grant payett 20 yd 2  
bey yalwey and yare natvett whp 2  
that ony gayed bord and shatt be so  
pp me h 5

\*adist of Lord Pagett



... ..  
... ..  
... ..  
... ..



**P**rologus. *Expor hebes sensus sola pueria  
minimū q. Causant quo minimū  
ne immora canam. Quo tamen eugis  
a lingua canit insula bruta. Anglica  
carmenite metra iuuante loquar. Of  
sibz ergo carnis que comit ossa lo  
quellū. Absit & interpres. scet paul  
ore malus.* **Incipit Prologus...**



**I**f hem pat Wri  
ten be before. The  
bookes shelle and  
the perfore. Ben  
taught of pat was  
write po. for pi  
good is pat be also.  
In oure time among  
be here. So write  
of nelle som mate.

Ensampled of yese olde wise.  
So pat it myght in such a wise.  
When the ben des and elles where.  
Beleue to ye wordes ere.  
In time comende after pis.  
But for men sem and soe it is.  
pat who pat al of wisdom writ.  
It dulley ofte amannes wit.  
To hym pat shal it al day rede.  
for pilke cause if pat ye rede  
I wolt go ye myddel weye.  
And make a booke be tvene tvere.  
Som what of lust som what of lore.  
pat of ye lusse and of ye more.  
Som man my like of pat I write.  
And for pat felbe men endite.  
In oure curtysh I penke make.  
A booke for kyng richardes sake.  
To whom biloungy my ligeaunce.  
Wyt al myn hertes obeisance.  
In al pat euere a here man.  
On to his kyng may do or can.  
So feefor I me recomande.  
To hym which al me may comande.  
preyend vn to ye heithe regne.  
Whiche causey euery kyng to regne.  
That his cyrone longe stound.  
I penke and haue it vnderstound.

**Hic declarat in primis qualiter ob  
reuerencia serenissimi principis dñi  
sui regis Anglie Ricardi secū totus  
suis humilis Johannes Collier licet  
gravi infirmitate a diu multipliciter  
fatigatus huius opusculi labores sus  
cipe no recusauit. sed tanq. suū ex di  
uine floribz recolectis p̄sentē libellū ex  
varis cronis historiis poetarū p̄m  
losofhorū qz diuis quatuor infirmitas  
p̄m̄sit studiosissime compilauit...**

As it befel vpon a tide.  
As ping which sholde po betide.  
Under ye town of nelle troye.  
Which took of bruyt his furste joye.  
In tēse whan it was flouande.  
As I be bote cam rollande.  
So as fortune hie tyme sette.  
my liege lord parchaunce I mette.  
And so befel as I cam nyh.  
Out of my boot whan he me seih.  
He had me come in to his barge.  
And whan I was wyth hym at larye.  
I mouges oper pinges seide.  
He hay pis charge vpon me leide.  
And had me do my besynesse.  
pat to his hih wozynesse.  
Som nelle ping I sholde booke.  
pat he hym self it myghte looke.  
Aftir ye forme of my writyng.  
And pus vpon his comandyng.  
Wyt herre is wel ye more glad.  
To write so as he me lad.  
And eke my feire is wel ye lasse.  
pat noon enue shal compass.  
Wyt oute a resonable wit.  
To feyne and blame pat I writ.  
A gentyl herte his tynge stilley.  
pat it malice non distilley.  
But preye pat is to be preysed.  
But he pat hay his word vperysed.  
And handley outronny euery ping.  
I preye vn to ye heuene kyng.  
ffo suche tynge he me shude.  
And napeles pis world is wilde.  
Of such ianglyng and what befall.  
my kynges hest shal not falle.  
pat I in hope to deserue.  
his pouke he shal his wil obserue.  
And elles were I nouht excused.  
for pat ping may not be refused.  
What pat a kyng hym seluen bit.  
for pi ye sympleste of my wit.  
I penke if pat I may a dayle.  
In his seruice to traunyle.  
pough I sekenesse haue vpon honde.  
And longe haue had yet wol I foude.  
So as I made my beheste.  
To make a booke after his heste.  
And write in such a maner wise.  
Whiche may be wisdom to ye wise.  
And pley to hem pat lust pleye.  
But in prouerbe I haue heris seye.  
pat who pat wel his werk begynne.  
The ryer a good ende he wyne.  
And pus ye plone of my booke.  
Aftir ye world pat whilom took.  
And eke foundel aftir ye nelle.



**W**ole begynne for to merue.  
*Tempus prout p[ro]p[ri]a fortuna be-  
 tid. Inquit in antiquis vertit mor-  
 be dias. progeniunt veterem consore  
 dilectio p[ro]p[ri]a. Dum facies hois mu-  
 tia mentis erat. Regibz vnicolor t[em]-  
 poris aura r[es]ul[si]t. Justicie pla-  
 ne t[em]p[or]is fuere die. r[es]ul[si]t q[ue] Latens o-  
 diu vultu dep[re]ssit amoris. p[ro]p[ri]a  
 subfata temp[or]is ad arma regit. Justar  
 et ex varijs mutabile cauclionis.  
 Rex q[ue]rit et regnis sunt noia inra  
 nouis. C[on]finita q[ue] fuerit solidif  
 fima sicq[ue] p[ro]p[ri]a. Soluere nec eo p[ro]p[ri]a  
 quicq[ue] habent. e statu regnoz  
 Et dicunt sedm temporalia.*  
**I**f I shal dwelle in to my mynde.  
 The tyme passed pat I fynde.  
 The world stod so in his welpe.  
 So was he hys of man in helpe.  
 Tho was plenty so was richesse.  
 So was he fortune of p[ro]p[ri]a.  
 So was he fupghthode of p[ro]p[ri]a be name.  
 Wher of he wylde worldes fame.  
 Writ in crowng is yit wyldeholde.  
 Justice of lalke so was holde.  
 The p[ro]p[ri]a of regule.  
 Was sauf. and al he baronie.  
 Worshipped was in his astat.  
 The lutes buewen no debat.  
 The weple stod in obeisance.  
 Under he reule of gouernance.  
 And pes wylde right wylde keste.  
 Wylde churche so stod in repte.  
 Of mannes herte he corage.  
 Was shewes pan in he disage.  
 The world was lich to he conceyte.  
 Wylde out semblant of decepte.  
 So was noon endies loue.  
 So was he vertu set a boue.  
 And vice was put vnder fote.  
 No stant he crop vnder he rote.  
 The world is changed ouer al.  
 And per of most in special.  
 That loue is falle in to discord.  
 And pat I take to record.  
 Of enen lond for his partie.  
 The comolden boys which may not lie.  
 Trouht vpon don but vpon alle.  
 It is pat men now clepe and calle.  
 And seyn pat regnes ben deuyled.  
 In fede of loue hate is gyded.  
 The werre wole no pees purchace.  
 The lalke hay take his double face.  
 So pat justice out of he wepe.  
 Wylde right wylde is gon a wepe.  
 And thus to loke on euery halue.

**W**hen eu pe soz wylde outen salue.  
 Whiche al he world hay ouer take.  
 Per is no regne of all out take.  
 For euery clime hay his del.  
 And feyr he turnyng of he whiel.  
 Whiche blynde fortune ouerprolley.  
 Wher of he certen no man knolley.  
 The heuene wot what is to done.  
 But we pat dwelle vnder he monie.  
 Stond in his world vpon a weer.  
 And namely but he p[ro]p[ri]a.  
 Of hem pat ben he worldes gydes.  
 Wylde good conseil on all sides.  
 We feyt v[er]y right in such a wise.  
 Pat hate breke not passie.  
 Of loue whiche is al he chief.  
 To feye a regie out of mischief.  
 For al reson wold he.  
 Pat v[er]y to hym whiche he heued is.  
**Apostolus. Regem honorificato.**  
 The membris buyon sholde bolde.  
 And he sholde eke here twolpe.  
 Wylde al his herte and make hem chere.  
 For good conseil is good to here.  
**Salamon. Oia fac ad consilio.**  
 Al pouh a man be wylde hym selue.  
 Yit is he wisdom more of elue.  
 And if he stondyn hope in con.  
 To hope it were pan a noon.  
 Pat god his grace wold sende.  
 To make of yllke weyre an ende.  
 Whiche euery day growey nelle.  
 And pat is grete for to rebe.  
 In special for Cristes sake.  
 Whiche wold his owen hys for sake.  
 Among he men to reuen pees.  
 But now men tellen napeles.  
 Pat is so he world departed.  
 So stant he pees in euene parted.  
 Wylde hem pat lyuen now a dayes.  
 But for to loke at alle assaies.  
 To hym pat wold reson seche.  
 And feyr he comyn worldes speche.  
 It is to wondren of yllke weyre.  
 In whiche non wot who hay he ware.  
 For euery lond hym self deceyuey.  
 And of dyshe his part receyuey.  
 And yet he take men no feye.  
 But yllke lord whiche al may feye.  
 To whom no conseil may ben hid.  
 Vpon he world whiche is beid.  
 A mendre pat. Wher of men pleyne.  
 Wylde twelle hertis and wylde pleyne.  
 And reconcile loue a yem.  
 As he whiche is kynng souerein.  
 Of alle he worldes gouernance.  
 And of his hehe p[ro]p[ri]a.



**I**fferme the pees be thene pe londes.  
 And take here cause in to his bondes.  
 So pat pe world may stonde appesed.  
 And his godhed also be plesed.  
*Quis coluit moyses deus aut no-  
 mus ipse iohes. hesternus letes in-  
 ta colit ista dies. Sic prius ecclia bi-  
 na virtute polluit. et tunc magis incul-  
 ta pallet. Vnq. dia. p. Dauidica petri  
 imaginam nuncio resumptis. Horruit  
 ad xpi verba euangelio iter. et tunc ta-  
 ment assiduo gladio de sanguine tunc  
 tid. Vbiat auaricia lene repente sa-  
 cia. Sic lupus est pastor pater hos-  
 tis mors miserator. p. credo q. lanti-  
 tor par in orbe timor. De statu de-  
 ri ut dicitur sedm spiritualia.*  
**G**o penke vpon pe dayes olde.  
 re lyf of clerkes to beholde.  
 When sem pat pei weren po.  
 Example and reule of alle po.  
 Whiche of wisdom pe vertu souhten.  
 On to pe god first pei besouhten.  
 As to pe substance of here stole.  
 pat pei ne sholde nouht befole.  
 Here vit vpon non enygh werkes.  
 Whiche were a rem pe stat of clerkes.  
 And pat pei myghten fle pe vice.  
 Whiche Symon hay in his office.  
 Wher of he takep pe gold on honde.  
 For yllke tyme q. vnderfroude.  
 pe lumbard made noon eschaunge.  
 pe bischopriches for to chaunge.  
 re yet a lettre for to sende.  
 For dignite ne for prouende.  
 Or cured or wy outen cure.  
 pe cherche feye in auentur  
 Of armes and of bregantails.  
 Stood no ying pan vpon bataille.  
 To fighte or for to make cheste.  
 It yough hem pan not honeste.  
 But of simpleesse and pacience.  
 pei madden pan no defence.  
 The court of woryn regalie.  
 To hem was panne no gaulle.  
 pe veyn honour was not desired.  
 Whiche hay pe proude herto fured.  
 Humilite was pei wy holde.  
 And prude was a vite holde.  
 Of holicherche pe largesse.  
 pat pan and dide gret almesse.  
 To pore men pat hadden nede.  
 pei were eke thast in word and dede.  
 Wher of pe poeple ensample toke.  
 Here lufe was al vpon pe boke.  
 Or for to preche or for to prepe.  
 To wisse men pe trichte weye.

Of such a trode of trollype vulernes.  
 To yus was petrus barre stene.  
 Of hem pat yllke tyme were.  
 And yus cam first to mannes ere.  
 pe fely of crist and alle good.  
 yingh hem pat pan were good.  
 And solze and chaste and large and wise.  
 But nob men seyn is oper wise.  
 Symon pe cause hay vnder take.  
 pe worldes werd on honde is take.  
 And pat is wonder napeles.  
 Whan crist hym self hay bode pes.  
 And set it in his testament.  
 Hol nob pat holycherche is went.  
 Of pat here lalbe posyff.  
 Hay set to make werre and strif.  
 For worldes good whiche may not laste.  
 God wot pe cause to pe laste.  
 Of euery right and wrong also.  
 But whil pe lalbe is reuled so.  
 pat clerkes to pe werre entende.  
 I not hol pat pei sholde amende.  
 pe woful world in oper ynges.  
 To make pes be thene pe kynges.  
 After pe lalbe of charite.  
 Whiche is pe pte duete.  
 Beloungende vpon to pe presthod.  
 But as it yong to minhode.  
 pe heuene is fet pe world is myh.  
 And veyn glorie is eke so sleph.  
 Whiche couetise hay nob wypholde.  
 pat pei noon oper ying beholde.  
 But only pat pei myghte wryme.  
 And yus pe werres pei begynne.  
 Wher of pat holycherche is taxed.  
 pat in pe poynt as it is axed.  
 pe dyne goy to pe bataille.  
 As yong crist myght nought auale.  
 To don hem right by oper weye.  
 In to pe werd pe cherche feye.  
 Is torned and pe holy bede.  
 In to cursyng and euery fede.  
 Whiche sholde stonde vpon pe fey.  
 And to pe cause an ere ley.  
 Astoned is of pe querele.  
 pat sholde be pe worldes eere.  
 Is nob men seyn pe pestalence.  
 Whiche hay exiled pacence.  
 ffo pe clergie in spedal.  
 And pat is shelles ouer al.  
 In euery ying whan pei be greued.  
 But if gregoure be beleued.  
 As it is in bokes wryte.  
 he dop vs somdel for to wryte.  
 pe cause of yllke prelacie.  
 Wher god is not of compaignie.  
 ffor euery werk as it is founded.



Shal stonde or elles be confounded.  
 Who put only for Cristes sake.  
 To seeke cure for to take.  
 And nouht for pride of pilke astat.  
 To beir a name of plat.  
 He shal be reson so profit.  
 In holicherche vpon pe plet.  
 pat he hap set his conscience.  
 But in pe worldes reuerence.  
*Gregorius. Terrenis lucris inhiat*  
*honore place gaudent a non de pssint*  
*sed de pssint epatium desiderant.*  
 Ther ben of suche many glade.  
 Whan poi to pilke astat ben made.  
 trouht for pe merit of pe charge.  
 But for pei wolde hem self descharge.  
 Of pouerte and bycome grete.  
 And pus for pompe and for bixete.  
 pe scribe and eke pe pharise.  
 Of moyses vpon pe see.  
 In pe chauer an heil ben set.  
 Wher of pe fey is ofte let.  
 Whiche is betaken hem to kepe.  
 In Cristes cause alwey pei slepe.  
 But of pe world is not foryete.  
 For wel is hym pat noli may gete.  
 Office in court or ben honoured.  
 The strong cofre hay deuoured.  
 Under pe kepe of auarice.  
 pe tresour of pe benefice.  
 Wher of pe pore sholde clope.  
 And ete and drinke and house bope.  
 pe charite god al vnkowde.  
 For pei no greyn of pite solde.  
 And sloupe kepey pe libraire.  
 Whiche longer vn to pe sainteuaire.  
 To studie vpon pe worldes lore.  
 Sufficey noli wy oure more.  
 Delicacie his stete toy.  
 Hay fostred so pat it for doy.  
 Of abstinence al pat per is.  
 And for to loken ouer pis.  
 If ethna brenne in pe clergie.  
 Al oppyn to mannes eye.  
*Anno dñi millesimo. ccc. nonagesimo.*  
 At Aunon the experience.  
 per of hap yeue an euidence.  
 Of pat men sen hem so diuided.  
 And yet pe cause is not deided.  
 But it is seid and euere shal.  
 Be thien tibo stoles is pe fal.  
 Whan pat men Wenen best to sitte.  
 In holicherche of suche a litte.  
 Is for to rellie in to vs alle.  
 God graunte it mot wel befallle.  
 Towardes hym Whiche hap pe trollye.  
 But ofte is seyn pat muche sloupe.

*Prologus.*

Whan men ben druncken of pe cuppe.  
 Dop muche harm Whan fre is vype.  
 But if som who pe flame traunche.  
 And so to speke vpon his braunche.  
 Whiche proude enue hap mad to sprunge.  
 Of scising cansey for to bryunge.  
 This nelle sette of Collardie.  
 And also many an heresie.  
 Among pe clerkes in hem selue.  
 It were bettere like and delue.  
 And stonde vpon pe righte fey.  
 pan knolde al pat pe bible sey.  
 And erre as som clerkes do.  
 vpon pe hound to were a sho.  
 And sette vpon pe foot a gloue.  
 Accordy not to pe behoue.  
 Of resonable mannes vse.  
 If men behelden pe vertuse.  
 pat Crist in erpe tauht here.  
 pei sholde not in such manere.  
 Amonges hem pat ben holden wise.  
 pe papacie to disguse.  
 vpon diuerse election.  
 Whiche stant after passion.  
 Of sondry londes al aboute.  
 But Whan god wole it shal were oute.  
 For troupe mot stonde at pe laste.  
 But pei pat arguminten faste.  
 vpon pe pope and his astate.  
 Wher of pei fallen in quere debate.  
 pei clerke sey pei is oper nay.  
 And pus pei dryue fory pe day.  
 And eche of hem hi self amende.  
 Of worldes good but noon entende.  
 To pat Whiche comoun profit were.  
 pei seyn pat god is myghti here.  
 And shal ordeyne what he wole.  
 were maken pei noon oper stile.  
 Where is pe peril of pe fey.  
 But euery clerk his herte ley.  
 To kepe his world in special.  
 And of pe cause genetal.  
 Whiche vn to holicherche longer.  
 Is non pat vnderfonger.  
 To shapen ony resistance.  
 pus hap pe right no defence.  
 But pere I loue pere I holde.  
 To pus to brok is Cristes folde.  
 Wher of pe flot wy oure quide.  
 Denoured is on euery side.  
 In lat of hem pat ben vylbar.  
 Shepherdis Whiche here wit belbar.  
 vpon pe world in oper halue.  
 pe sharpe pilke in stode of salue.  
 pei vpon noli wher of pe dele.  
 pei hurte of pat pei shulde hele.  
 And what shep pat is ful of wolle.



Upon his bat pei tose and pulle.  
 Whil pere is eny ping to pile.  
 And pouh pere be noon oper stile.  
 But ouly for pei Wolden Wymme.  
 pei Leuen not Whan pei begynne.  
 Upon here acte to procede.  
 Whiche is no good shepherdis dede.  
 And vpon pis also men seyn.  
 pat fto pe lese Whiche is pleyne.  
 In to pe breeres pei forp caache.  
 Wher of for pat pei Wolden laache.  
 Wip suche duresse and so byreue.  
 pat shal vpon pe pornes leue.  
 Of Wole Whiche pe breere hay toze.  
 Wher of pe sheep ben al to toze.  
 Of pat pe herdes make hem lese.  
 Lo holt pei fermen chalt for chese.  
 ffor pouh pei speke and reche wel.  
 pei don hem self per of no del.  
 ffor if pe Wolt come in pe Weye.  
 here gostly staf is pan a Weye.  
 Wher of pe sholde here flock defende.  
 But if pe pore sheep offende.  
 In eny yung pouh is be lye.  
 pei beil al redy for to fuyte.  
 And pus holt elere pat pei tale.  
 pei ftoles falle vpon pe finale.  
 And vpon oper pat ben grete.  
 hem lackey herte for to bete.  
 So pat vnder pe clerkes lalle.  
 men sen pe merel al mystralle.  
 I Wol not seye in general.  
 ffor pere ben som in special.  
 In Whom pat al Vertu dwelley.  
 And so ben as papostel telley.  
 Qui vocatur a deo tamquam aaron.  
 pat god of his election.  
 hay cleped to his pfection.  
 In pe manere as aaron was.  
 pei ben no ping in pilke cas.  
 Of Synoun Whiche pe foldes gate.  
 hay lete and gop in oper gate.  
 Bot pei gon in pe vnght Weye.  
 per ben also as som men seye.  
 pat folowen synoun at pe heles.  
 Whos carce gop vpon pe wheles.  
 Of couenise and Woldes prude.  
 And holy cherche gop beside.  
 Whiche sheldes ouerward a corage.  
 Of pat is not in pe corage.  
 ffor if men lobe in holy cherche.  
 Be ribene pe Wold and pat pei Wurche.  
 per is a ful gret difference.  
 pei prechen vs in audience.  
 pat no man shal his soule empeire.  
 ffor al is but a chery feire.  
 pis Woldes good so as pei telle.

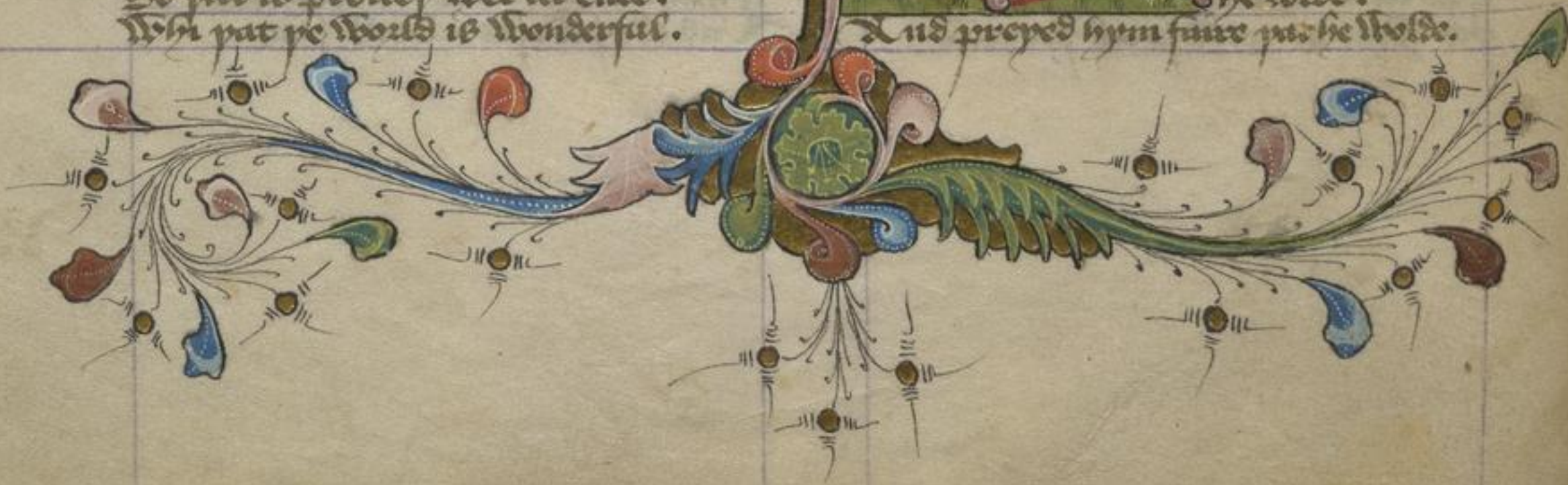
Also pei seyn per is an helle.  
 Whiche yn to mannes synne is due.  
 And bidden vs per for eschelle.  
 pat Wilked is and do pe goode.  
 Who pat here Wordes vnderstode.  
 It penkei pei Wolden do pe same.  
 But pei be elvene earnest and game.  
 ffyl ofte pei turne oper Wye.  
 Wip holy tales pei deuise.  
 holt meritorie is pilke dede.  
 Of charite to clope and fede.  
 pe pore folk. and to departe.  
 pe Woldes good. but pei departe.  
 re penken not fto pat pei haue.  
 Also pei seyn good is to saue.  
 Wip penance and Wip abstinence.  
 Of chastite pei continence.  
 But pleyntly for to speke of pat.  
 I not holt pilke body far.  
 Whiche pei Wip devynte metes kepe.  
 And Leyn it softe for to slepe.  
 Whan it hay elles al his Wille.  
 Wip chastite shal fonde falle.  
 And napeles I kin not seye.  
 In aunter if pat I misseye.  
 Touchend of pis holy elere it fonde.  
 There and Wol nouht vnder fonde.  
 ffor per of haue I nouht to dno.  
 But he pat made first pe moone.  
 pe hihe god of his goodnesse.  
 If pere be cause he it redresse.  
 But What pat ony man accuse.  
 pis may weson of troupe excuse.  
 pe vice of hem pat ben vngood.  
 Is no reprof yn to pe goode.  
 ffor ouer man his owne Werkes.  
 shal bere. and pus as of pe clerkes.  
 pe goode men ben to comende.  
 And alle pese opere god amende.  
 Sularis plius regali lege subactus.  
 Dum inacet de mitis aqua subibat omis.  
 Si caput extollat. 2 Lex sua fixa re  
 laxat. Ut sihi velle inbet nigris istar  
 habet. Ignis aqua duans duo sunt  
 pietate carentes. In tamen plebis  
 est violenta magis.  
 Now for to speke of pe commune.  
 It is gret drede of pat fortune.  
 Whiche hay befallle in sondry londes.  
 Bot ofte for defaute of bondes.  
 Al sodenly er it be Wist.  
 A conne Whan his lye aryst.  
 De statu plebis de ditunt sedam quita  
 villa accidit.  
 To brekei and renney al a boutte.  
 Whiche elles sholde not gon oute.  
 And eke ful ofte a litell scar.





Upon a hantke er be War.  
 Let in pe fterre Whiche Wy gret peyne.  
 If euey man it shal refreine.  
 Where lalbe lackey errouer grolley.  
 He is not Wye Who pat ne twolley.  
 For it hap proued ofte er pis.  
 And pus pe conuou clamour is.  
 In euey lond Wher poeple dwelley.  
 And eche in his compleinte telley.  
 how pat pe World is al myf went.  
 And per vpon his iugement.  
 yefey euey man in sondry Wyse.  
 Bot what man wolde hym self adyse.  
 His conscience and nouht myfise.  
 He may wel at pe first exaile  
 his god Whiche euere stant in con.  
 In hym per is defaute noon.  
 So must it fonde vpon vs selue.  
 Nought only vpon ten ne elue.  
 But pleynerliche vpon vs alle.  
 For man is cause of pat shal falle.  
*Tota contra hoc qd aliqui sortem for-  
 tune aliqui influentiam planetarum  
 ponit p qd de deo reru euentus neces-  
 sario contingit. sed potius dicendum est  
 qd in nos prospera & aduersa in hoc voca-  
 mus secundum merita & demerita hominum  
 digno dei indignatio proueniunt.*  
 And napeles yet som men write.  
 And seyn pat fortune is to Wite.  
 And som men holde oppinion.  
 pat it is constellacion.  
 Whiche cause al pat a man dop.  
 God Wot of hope Whiche is sor.  
 pe World as of his propre fonde.  
 Was euere vntrewe. and pe blynde.  
 Improperliche he demey faine.  
 He blamey pat is not to blame.  
 And preyse pat is not to preyse.  
 pus Whan he shal pe puges poise.  
 per is decepte in his balauce.  
 And al is pat pe variuace.  
 Of vs pat scholde be bettre a wise.  
 For after pat we falle and rise.  
 pe World arise and fulley Wy al.  
 So pat pe man is ouer al.  
 His owne cause of Wele and Wo.  
 pat we fortune clepe so.  
 Out of pe man hym self it molley.  
 And Who pat oper Wyse twolley.  
 Beholde pe poeple of Israel.  
 For euere Whil pei diden wel.  
 Fortune Was hem debonaire.  
 And Whan pei diden pe contraire.  
 Fortune Was contrariende.  
 So pat is prouey Wel at ende.  
 Whi pat pe World is wonderful.

And may no while stonde ful.  
 pouh pat it seme wel besern.  
 For euey Worldes ying is Wern.  
 And ouer gop pe Whiel a bunte.  
 For euey stant a man in doute.  
 Fortune stant no while stille.  
 So hay per no man alhis Wille.  
 As fer as euere a man may knolle.  
 per lastey no ying but a yolle.  
*Boianus. Quia dulcedo humane vite  
 multa amaritudine aspa est & cet.*  
 The World stant euere vpon debite.  
 So may be siber noon astate.  
 Not here not pere not to not fro.  
 Not by not doyn pe World gop so.  
 And euere hay don and euere shal.  
 Wher of I fynde in special.  
 A tale y written in pe bible.  
 Whiche must nedes be crediblo.  
 And pat as in conclusion.  
 Seyn pat vpon diuision.  
 Stant Whi no Worldes ying may laste.  
 Til it be dryue to pe laste.  
*Prophet & aduersus obliquo transire ver-  
 sus. Immundus mundus decipit omne  
 genus. & mundus in euentu deservit  
 ut alia casu. Qm celoz in ludis erat  
 auara manus. Sicut ymago vari va-  
 riantur tempora mundi.*  
 The Whiche almighty purueance.  
 In Whos eterne remembraunce.  
 ffir first Was euey ying p sent.  
 He hay pis pphacie sent.  
 In suche a Wyse as you shalt here.  
 To Daniel of pis matere.  
 How pat pis World shal turne & Wende.  
 Til it be falle to his ende.  
 Wher of a tale I telle shal.  
 In Whiche it is betokened al.  
*In plogo tractat de statua illa  
 qua Rex Nabugodonosor viderat  
 sompnus cu caput aureu. pectus argen-  
 ted. venter ensus. tibie ferre. pedu vero  
 quedu pe ferrea quedu stitilis videtur  
 sub qua membroz diuinitate scdm digne  
 ho expositioin hui mundi variatio figurat.*  
 Nabugodonosor  
 slepte. A sbeue  
 ne hym took the  
 Whiche he fepte.  
 Til on pe mozt we  
 he Was arise. For  
 he per of Was so  
 re agrise. To Sa-  
 mel his dreame  
 he tolde.  
 And preyed hym fure pat he wolde.





And seide what it tokene may.  
 And seide a bedde where I lay.  
 And poult I seih vpon a stage.  
 Wher stod a wonder fulmyng ymage.  
 His hed was al of syluer also.  
 His brest his shuldres and his armes  
 Were al of syluer bot his pannes.  
 His wombe and al down to his knee.  
 Of bras he was vpon to se.  
 His legges were made al of stel.  
 So were his feet al so sumdel.  
 And soundel hart to hem was take.  
 Of clere whiche men pottes make.  
 He feble meynge was vpon the stouinge.  
 So myght it wel not stonde longe.  
*Incipit tractatus de quodam lapide  
 mundi qui in des. sompno videbatur  
 ab excelso monte sup. statua conueniens  
 pum. quasi in nichilo pemit. p. v. r. u. i. t.*  
 And so me poult pat I seih.  
 A gret son from an hult an heih.  
 Fell down of sodern muenture.  
 Vpon the feet of his figure.  
 Whiche ston al to broke was.  
 Gold. syluer. erpe. stel. and bras.  
 pat al was in to powder brought.  
 And so forp turned in to nought.  
*Incipit tractatus de interpretacione sompni et p. v. r. u. i. t.*  
 This was the p. v. r. u. i. t. whiche he hadde.  
 pat Daniel a non a radde.  
 And seide hym pat figure straunge.  
 Betokene how the world shal change.  
 And wate lasse wozy and lasse.  
 Til it to nough al ouer passe.  
 He ned and hed pat wren gold.  
 he seide how pat betokene sholde.  
 A wozy lord a noble a riche.  
 To whiche noon after shal ben liche.  
*De pectore argenteo...*  
 Of siluer pat was ouer forp.  
 Shal ben a world of lasse wozy.  
*De ventre eneo...*  
 And after pat the wombe of bras.  
 Tokene of a worse world it was.  
*De albis ferreis...*  
 He stel whiche he seih after was.  
 A world betokene more hard.  
*De significacione pedis ex duabz matris dy-*  
*cordibz aduincit dñi extiterant...*  
 But yet the worst of euerydel.  
 Is last whan pat of erpe and stel.  
 He seih the feet departed so.  
 For pat betokene muche wo.  
 Whan pat the world diuided is.  
 But must algate fure amys.

For erpe whiche is meynge of stel.  
 To gedre may not laste wel.  
 But if pat oon pat ower waste.  
 So mot it nedes fule in haste.  
*De lapidis statua conueniens significat.*  
 The ston whiche fro the hully stage.  
 He seih down falle on pat ymage.  
 And hay it in to powder broke.  
 He seih how Daniel vnlode.  
 Whiche whan men wenen most vpright.  
 To stonde shal hem ouercaste.  
 And pat is of this world the laste.  
 And pat shal a nelbe begynne.  
 fro whiche a man shal neuere abyne.  
 Or al to perne or al to pes.  
 pat world shal laste endeles.  
*Incipit tractatus de quodam lapide mundi qui in des. sompno videbatur  
 ab excelso monte sup. statua conueniens  
 pum. quasi in nichilo pemit. p. v. r. u. i. t.*  
 This was the p. v. r. u. i. t. whiche he hadde.  
 pat Daniel a non a radde.  
 And seide hym pat figure straunge.  
 Betokene how the world shal change.  
 And wate lasse wozy and lasse.  
 Til it to nough al ouer passe.  
 He ned and hed pat wren gold.  
 he seide how pat betokene sholde.  
 A wozy lord a noble a riche.  
 To whiche noon after shal ben liche.  
*De pectore argenteo...*  
 Of siluer pat was ouer forp.  
 Shal ben a world of lasse wozy.  
*De ventre eneo...*  
 And after pat the wombe of bras.  
 Tokene of a worse world it was.  
*De albis ferreis...*  
 He stel whiche he seih after was.  
 A world betokene more hard.  
*De significacione pedis ex duabz matris dy-*  
*cordibz aduincit dñi extiterant...*  
 But yet the worst of euerydel.  
 Is last whan pat of erpe and stel.  
 He seih the feet departed so.  
 For pat betokene muche wo.  
 Whan pat the world diuided is.  
 But must algate fure amys.



*What* Alisandre put hym vnder.  
Which brouht in armes many a wonder.  
So pat ye monarchie leste.  
Wip Grece and here estat vp leste.  
And Perceus non vnder fote.  
So suffre pei pat nedes mote.  
*De seculo eneo qd in ventre desumptus  
est a tempore ihus Alexandri vsqz in  
regnu Julij Romanor Imperatoris.*  
And so pe world began of bras.  
And pat of siluer ended was.  
But for pe tyme pus it laste.  
Til it besel pat at pe laste.  
pe King whan pat his day was come.  
Wip strengpe of dey was ouer come.  
And naples yit er he deede.  
He shap his regne to diuide.  
To knyghtes which hym hadde serued.  
And after pat ye hane deserued.  
pat ye conquestes pat he wan.  
Wher of gret werre po began.  
Among hem pat ye regnes hadde.  
purgh proud ciuile which hem ladde.  
Til it besel a yen hem pus.  
pe noble cesar iulius.  
Which po was King of Rome lond.  
Wip gret batayle and wip strong hond.  
Al met perse and eke talde.  
Wan and put vnder so pat he.  
rouht al only of pe Orient.  
But al pe marche of pe Occident.  
Gouernep vnder his empire.  
As he pat was hool lord and sire.  
And held purgh his chivalrie.  
Of al pe world pe monarchie.  
And was pe ferste of pat honour.  
Which took pe name of Emperour.  
Wher of Rome panne wolde assaile.  
per myght no prync pan conturuaile.  
But euery contre must obeye.  
po tope pe regne of bras a weye.  
*De seculo ferreo quod in tabeis desumptus  
est a tempore Julij vsqz ad regnu  
Karoli magni Regis francie.*  
And comen is pe world of stel.  
And stant a boue vpon a whiel.  
No stel is hardest in his kinde.  
A boue al ower pat men fynde.  
Of metals such was Rome po.  
The myghtiest and laste so.  
Long tyme among pe Romayns.  
Til pei become to villayns.  
That pe Emperour fals leo.  
Wip constantyne his sone also.  
pe Paternoyne and pe richesse.  
Which to siluestre in pure almesse.  
pe ferste Constantynus leste.

From hollycherche pei hereste.  
And adrian which pope was.  
And seih pe meschef of his cas.  
Goy in to fraunce for to pleyne.  
And prync pe grece charlemeyne.  
for cristes sake and soule hele.  
pat he wolde take pe queuele.  
Of hollycherche in his defence.  
And charles for pe reuerence.  
Of god. pe cause hap vnder take.  
And wip his ost pe weye take.  
ouer pe mountz of lumbardie.  
Of Rome and al pe tyrannye.  
Wip bloody swerd he ouercom.  
And pe cite wip strengpe nom.  
In such a wise. and pere he brouhte.  
pat hollycherche a yen he brouhte.  
In to fraunchise and dox restore.  
pe poppe lost and pat hym more.  
And pus whan he his god hap serued.  
He took as he hap wel deserued.  
The Diademe and was coroned.  
Of Rome and was a bandoned.  
premyre which neuer cam a yen.  
In to pe hond of no Romeyn.  
But a long tyme it stod so stille.  
vnder pe freynsh kynges wille.  
Til pat fortune her whiel so ladde.  
pat afterward lumbardes to hadde.  
rouht be pe swerd but be suffraunce.  
Of hym pat po was King of fraunce.  
Which furle caluys cleped was.  
As he resigned in pe cas.  
premyre of Rome vnto lodyns.  
his couyn which a lumbard is.  
*De seculo nouissimis id est de rebus ad hunc  
militudine pedit in discordia lapsis et di  
uisio qd post decessum ihus Karoli cu  
Impat Romanor in man Longabard  
dox puenit tempore Alberti et Ber  
engarii incepit nam ob eoz diuisione  
contigit de Almani Imperatoris ad op  
ti sunt maiestatem. qd aut solium  
qdam principem theocomad otho  
hem noie sublimari constituerunt  
ab illo regno incipiente diuisio p vi  
uersum orbem in posterum contigit.  
Vnde nos alterutrum diuisi huius se  
culi consummatione id est ultimi exptam.*  
And so it laste in to pe yer.  
Of Albert and of Berenger.  
But penne vpon descencion.  
pei felle. and in diuision.  
Among hem self pei were grete.  
So pat pei losse pe byete.  
Of worshipe and of wordes pees.  
But in prouerbe naples.



men sen ful selden is pat welpe.  
 Can suffre his owne estat in helpe.  
 And pat was on pe Lombardes sene.  
 Such commu scryf was hem betwene.  
 purgh couentise and purgh enue.  
 pat eueri man drouh his partie.  
 Whiche myghte leden eny route.  
 Wip inne purgh and eke wip oute.  
 pe commu right hay no felawbe.  
 So pat pe gouernance of ladde.  
 Was lost and for necessite.  
 Of pat per stode in such demer.  
 Al ony purgh diuision.  
 hem nedey in conclusion.  
 Of straunge londes helpe beside.  
 And pus for per hem diuide.  
 And stonden out of reule vn euene.  
 Of Almayne Prynces seuene.  
 per chose in condicion.  
 pat vpon here eleccion.  
 Thempire of Rome sholde stonde.  
 And pus per leste it out of honde.  
 for lak of grace and it for lok.  
 pat Almayne vpon hem took.  
 And to conseruati here estat.  
 Of pat per stoden in debat.  
 per toke pe possession.  
 After pe confuscion.  
 Among hem self and per vpon.  
 per made an Emperour anon.  
 Whos name as pe Cronikz telley.  
 Was Othee. and so forp it welley.  
 fro yille day pat vn to pis.  
 Thempire of Rome hay ben and is.  
 To Almayne and in pis wise.  
 As pe tofore haue herd deuise.  
 How Daniel pe shewene expouder.  
 Of pat ymage on Whom he founde.  
 pe world Whiche after sholde fülle.  
 Come is pe laste token of alle.  
 vpon pe feet of erpe and steel.  
 So stant pis world now eueridel.  
 Departed Whiche began right po.  
 Whan Rome was diuides so.  
 And pat is for to relle sore.  
 for alday sypp more and more.  
 pe world empyrey eueri day.  
 wher of pe sope sholde may.  
 At Rome first if we begynne.  
 pe wal and al pe toun wip inne.  
 stant in ruyne and in dene.  
 pe feld is yere pe paleys des.  
 pe toun is wast and ouer pat.  
 If we beholde yille astat.  
 Whiche Whilom was of pe Romayns.  
 Of buyghod and of citezeyns.  
 To peyse now wip pat befor.

pe chaf is take fro pe corn.  
 And so to speke of Romes myght.  
 Synners stant yere ouht vpright.  
 Of Worschipe and of worldes good.  
 As it before tyme stood.  
 And Whi pe Worschipe is a weye.  
 If pat a man pe sope shal seye.  
 pe cause hay ben diuision.  
 Whiche moder of confusion.  
 Is wher she comey ouer al.  
 Thout ony of pe temporal.  
 But of pe spiritual also.  
 pe dede prouey it is so.  
 And hay de many a day er pis.  
 purgh denym Whiche pat medhyd is.  
 In holycherche of exph. ying.  
 for Crist hym self makep knowleching.  
 pat no man may to gedre serue.  
 God and pe world bot he swerue.  
 Howardes pat oon and stonde stable.  
 And Cristes word may not be fable.  
 pe ying so opyn is at ye.  
 It nedey nouht to specifice.  
 Or speke out more in pis matere.  
 But in pis wise a man may lere.  
 How pat pis world is gon a loutre.  
 pe Whiche wel mygh is wered oute.  
 After pe forme of pat figure.  
 Whiche Daniel in his scripture.  
 Expouder as to form is told.  
 Of bras. of siluer. and of gold.  
 pe world is passed and agoun.  
 And now vpon his olde toon.  
 It stant of brotel erpe and steel.  
 pe Whiche acorden neuere a del.  
 So mot it nedes swerue a side.  
 As ying Whiche men sen diuide.  
**But diat sedm apostoll ad nos sumus**  
**in quos fines seculi denicherunt**  
**¶** Apostol writ vnto vs alle.  
 And sen pat vpon vs is fülle.  
 pe ende of pe world so may we knolle.  
 pis ymage is myh ouer prolle.  
 So Whiche pis world was signified.  
 pat Whilom was so magnified.  
 And now is olde and felle and vil.  
 full of meschies and of peril.  
 And stant diuides eke also.  
 Rich to pe feet pat were so.  
 As I tolde of pe stature aboue.  
 And pus men sen purgh lak of poue.  
 Where al pe lond diuides is.  
 pe mot algate fare anys.  
 And now to loke on euery side.  
 A man may se pe world diuide.  
 And werres ben so general.  
 Among pe cristen ouer al.



Threueri man noll seche wreche.  
 And yet pis clerkes alday preche.  
 And seyn good & de may noon be.  
 Whiche stant not vpon charite.  
 I not holi charite may stonde.  
 Where dedli weire is take on honde.  
 But al pis wo is cause of man.  
 pe Whiche pat wit and reson can.  
 And pat in tokene and in witnesse.  
 pat ilke pynate hit byknesse.  
 Of man and of noon ower beste.  
 ffor first bi to pe mannes heste.  
 Was eueri creature ordeyned.  
 ffor after that pis was restreyned.  
 Whan pat he felle pe felle en eke.  
 Where was sette pe waken sette.  
 ffor as pe man hap passion.  
 Of siknesse in comparison.  
 So suffren ower creatures.  
 To first pe heuenu figures.  
**He scribit qd ex diuisionis passio  
ne singula creatura detrimetur  
corruptibile pacumtur.**  
 The sonne and mone eclipsen bope.  
 And ben vpon mannes spume wrope.  
 pe purest heu for spume a losse.  
 Hay ben and is corrupt ful ofte.  
 Pight noll pe while wraides blotte.  
 And a noon after pei ben tolde.  
 noll cloudy and noll clere it is.  
 So may it prouen wel be pis.  
 A mannes spume is for to hate.  
 Whiche make pe Wellene for to debate.  
 And for to se pe propriete.  
 Of eueri ping in his degre.  
 Senep for amoun vs here.  
 Al stant aliche in pis matere.  
 pe see noll ebbynoll it flodde.  
 pe lond noll welke noll it molde.  
 noll be pe trees vpon leues grene.  
 noll be pe bare and no ping sene.  
 noll be pe lusty somer floures.  
 noll be pe stormy wynter shoures.  
 noll be pe dayes noll be pe nyghtes.  
 So stant no ping al by rightes.  
 noll is it light noll is it darke.  
 And pus stant al pis worldes werk.  
 After pe disposicion.  
 Of man and his condicion.  
 ffor pi Gregoure in his moral.  
 Seip pat a man in speaal.  
 pe lasse world is ptoprely.  
 And pat he prouep redily.  
 ffor a man of soule resonable.  
 It is an Angel resemblable.  
 And rich to beste he hap felmyt.  
 And rich to trees he hap grolmyt.

pe stones ben. and so is he.  
 pus of his propre qualite.  
 pe man as tellep pe clerge.  
 Is as pe world in his partie.  
 And whan pis litel world misturnep.  
 pe gret world al ouerturnep.  
 The lond. pe see. pe firmament.  
 pei axen alle iugement.  
 A ven pe man and make hym weire.  
 per while hym self stant out of here.  
 pe remenant stant out of noorde.  
 And in pis wise as i recorde.  
 pe man is cause of alle woo.  
 Whi pis world is diuided so.  
**He dicit sedm euangelium qd omne  
regnum in se diuisum est & labitur.**  
 Iunison pe hospel seip.  
 Don holde vpon an ower seip.  
 It pat pe regne al ouerholde.  
 And pus may eueri man welholde.  
 Iunison abouen alle.  
 Is ping whiche make pe world to falle.  
 And eueri hap don by it be galle.  
 It may first proue vpon a man.  
**Ex sua complexionis materia  
diuisus homo mortalibus existat.**  
 pe whiche for his complexion.  
 Is maad vpon diuision.  
 Of cold of hoot of moist of drie.  
 He mot be weere kynde drie.  
 ffor pe contrarie of his staat.  
 Stant euermore in such debat.  
 It pat o part be ouercome.  
 per may no final pees benome.  
 But ower wise if a man were.  
 maad al to gedere of o matere.  
 Wy outen in corrupcion.  
 pei sholde no corrupcion.  
 Engendre vpon pat diuite.  
 But for per is diuersite.  
 Wy hune hym self he not laste.  
 pat he no diep at pe laste.  
 But in a man yet ouer pis.  
 ful gret diuision per is.  
**Quod homo ex corporis & aie o  
dis diuisus stant saluacionis ita  
dampnacionis apert ingreditur.**  
 Church whiche pat he is euer in fust.  
 Whil pat hym lastep eny fust.  
 pe body and pe soule also.  
 A motheim ben diuided so.  
 pat what ping pat pe body hatep.  
 pe soule louep and debater.  
 But napeles ful ofte is seile.  
 Of weire whiche is hem be tvene.  
 pe feble hap donne pe victorie.  
 And who so dwille in to memorie.



What may be fulle of old and new.  
 He may pat werre soe avelle.  
*Qualiter Adam a stat innocentie  
 diuisus a Paradiso voluptat in ter-  
 ram laboris peccator pectus est.*  
 Which first began in paradys.  
 For here was proued what it is.  
 And what di these were it wroughte.  
 For pulke werre pat tyme brougte.  
 Of vice of alle dedly synne.  
 purg. Whiche diuisiō am quō.  
*Qualiter pti p diuisiōem orbem a cul-  
 tum dei diuisi. 1. 2. 3. cum sua sequela  
 diu. 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.*  
 Among pe men in erpe here.  
 And was pe cause and pe matiere.  
 Whi god pe grete flosdes sende.  
 Of al pe world and made an ende.  
 But 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.  
 Whiche only were salu. bi schipe.  
 And ouer pat purg. synne t. come.  
 pat rembroth suche brise nome.  
*Qualiter in edificacione turris babil  
 quem in dei contemptu rembroth  
 dixerit summa prius hebraica in lin-  
 guas elica diuisa diuisa.*  
 Whan pat pe tour babil on heite.  
 Let make as he pat wolde feite.  
 A pen pe hise wodes nyght.  
 Wher of diuides a noon right.  
 Was pe language in suche entente.  
 per wist noon what oper mente.  
 So pat pei nyghten not proce.  
 And pus it stant of euer dede.  
 Wher synne takey pe cause on hōde.  
 It may by right not longe stonde.  
 For synne of his condiciō.  
 Is moder of diuisiō.  
*Qualiter mulier qui in statu diuisio-  
 nis quasi cotidiana p. senta tempore  
 deuat flagell. a lapide sup. ueniente  
 1. a diuina potēcia d. 2. ad resolu-  
 cōe ois carnis subitō dnteretur.*  
 And tokene whan pe world shal faile.  
 For so seip crist wip outen faile.  
 pat myh vpon pe worldes ende.  
 Dees and acord a wey shal wende.  
 And all charite shal cese.  
 Among pe men and hate enare.  
 And whan yse tokenes ben bestalle.  
 Al sodenly pe stoon shal faile.  
 As samel it hap beknolle.  
 Which al pis world shal ouerwolde.  
 And euer man shal pan arise.  
 To ioye or elles to ioyse.  
 Where pat he shal for euer dwelle.  
 Or straught to heuene or straught to helle

In heuene is pees and al acord.  
 But helle is ful of such discord.  
 pat peie may be no loue day.  
 For pi good is whil a man may.  
 Echō to sette pees wip oper.  
 A loue as his odene broper.  
 So may he hymne worldes welpe.  
 And after wūd his soule helpe.  
*Incipit exemplum de concordia et  
 unitate inter hoies. 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.*  
 In op. such as Arion.  
 Whiche hadde an harpe of such tempore.  
 And per to of so good mesure.  
 He song pat he pe bestes wulde.  
 made of his note came and mylde.  
 The hynde in pees wip pe hōw.  
 pe wof in pees wip pe motow.  
 pe hare in pees stōd wip pe hound.  
 And eueri man vpon pis ground.  
 Which Arion pat tyme heide.  
 Als wel pe lord as pe sheperde.  
 He brouht hem alle in good acord.  
 So pat pe comun wip pe lord.  
 And lord wip pe comun also.  
 He sette in loue boye tbo.  
 And put a wey malencolie.  
 pat was a lust melodie.  
 Whan eueri man wip oper lōbe.  
 And if peie were such on wolde.  
 Whiche coupe harpe as he po dide.  
 He myght auale in many hōde.  
 To make pees where nōw is hate.  
 For whan men penken to delate.  
 I not what oper ping is good.  
 But where pat wisdom woxep wood.  
 And reson turnep in to rage.  
 So pat mesure vpon outrage.  
 hap sette his world it is to drede.  
 For pat byrtinge in pe comun drede.  
 Whiche stant at eueri mannes dore.  
 But whan pe sharpnesse of pe spore.  
 The hors side suyt to sore.  
 It greuer ofte. and uold no more.  
 As for to speke of pis matere.  
 Whiche uon but god only may stere.

Explicit prologus  
 Incipit liber primus



*Matutinus amor nature* *sanctus*  
*orbem. Subdit dignitates conatus esse*  
*femus. Huius gremii mundi princeps*  
*amor esse videtur. Cui eger dices pau*  
*p & ois ope. Sunt in agone pares a*  
*mor & fortuna qz cecis. Bis ad ma*  
*dias verit vnoqz vnoqz. Est amor e*  
*gra salus verata quies plus error.*  
*Sellia pax dulcis dulce suauis malis.*

**I**n may not stretch  
by to ye heuene.  
Whyn hond ne sette  
al in euene. pis  
world which is  
in balaunce. It  
stant not in my  
suffaunce. So  
greete pinges to  
compasse. But

mot mot Lete it ouer passe.  
And tere vpon ope pinges.  
For ye stile of my vntynnes.  
For ye day fory I reule chaunge.  
And spote of pinges nouht of sarauinge.

*Postquam in p[ro]logo tractatu[m] acce*  
*nus existit qualiter hodiernae condicio*  
*nis diuisio caritatis dilectione sup[er]*  
*uit. Intendit et auctor ad p[re]sentis su*  
*um libellum cui nomen confessio[n]is*  
*manus in laudat[ur] exponere in illo*  
*amore a quo no[n] solum humani genus*  
*et cuncta animalia natalit[er] subiungunt.*  
*Et q[uod] nonnulli amantes vera[m] qui ex*  
*pedi desiderij passionib[us] arde[n]te stimu*  
*lantur materia lib[ri] p[er] totu[m] sup[er] his*  
*specialius diffundent[ur].*

Whiche euen creature hap vpon honde.  
And wher vpon ye world mot stonde.  
And hap don sy pat it be gan.  
And shal whil yere is eny man.  
And hat is loue of whiche I mene.  
To tere as after shal be sene.  
In whiche yet can no man hym reule.  
For loued lalbe is out of reule.  
pat of to nuiche or of to lite.  
Wel myh is eueni man to vite.  
And napeles per is no man.  
In al pis world so wyse pat can.  
Of loue tempore ye mesure.  
But as it falleth in auenture.  
For wit ne strenghe may not helpe.  
And he whiche elles wolde hym helpe.  
o rapest prollen vnder fore.  
er can no wight per of do bore.  
for yet was neuere such courne.  
pat coupe ordeyne a medecine.  
To yung which god in lalbe of kynde.

hap sette. for yere may no man fynde.  
ye right salus of such a soor.  
It hap and shal ben eueremore.  
pat loue is mynster wher he wile.  
per fan no byf make ope stile.  
for wher as hym self list to sette.  
per is no myght which hym may lette.  
But what shal falle at ye laste.  
ye sope can no wysdom caste.  
But as it falleth vpon chaunce.  
for if yere eue[n]e was balaunce.  
Whiche of fortune stant gouerned.  
I may wel leue as I am bernd.  
pat loue hap pat balaunce on honde.  
Whiche wol hot resou vnder stonde.  
for loue is blind and may not se.  
for ye may no certeynete.  
Be set vpon his iugement.  
But as ye whiel aboute went.  
he reuey his grace vnder serued.  
And so pat man which hap hym serued.  
ful ofte he takey a wey his fees.  
And he pat playes a ye dees.  
And yet vpon what shal be falle.  
he not til pat ye chaunce falle.  
Where he shal lese or he shal wyne.  
And pis ful ofte men begynne.  
pat in ye wisten what it mente.  
yei wolde chaunge al here entente.

*Quia quasi in p[ro]p[ri]a alioz quos a*  
*mor alligat fingens se auctor esse a*  
*mantem varias eoz passionib[us] da*  
*vis huius lib[ri] distinctionib[us] p[er] sin*  
*gula scribere p[ro]ponit.*

**I**n for to proue it is so.  
am my self oon of yo.  
Whiche to pis scole am vnder fouge.  
for it is sy go nouht loue.  
As for to speke of pis matere.  
I may yoll telle if ye wole here.  
A wonder hap whiche me befelle.  
That was to me boye hard and felle.  
Toucheud of loue and his fortune.  
ye whiche me likey to comune.  
And pleyntly for to telle it oute.  
To hem pat ben louers a boutte.  
ffro poynt to poynt I wole declare.  
And witten of my woful care.  
my woful day my woful chaunce.  
pat men nob take remembraunce.  
Of pat per shal here after vede.  
for in good feip pis wole a rede.  
pat eueni man ensample take.  
Of wisdom which hym is betake.  
And pat he wot of good apprise.  
To teche it fory for such emprise.  
Is for to p[re]p[ar]e and per for a.



Hole write and shelve al oppuly.  
Hole love and I to gedre mette.  
Wher of ye world ensample fette.  
May after this Whan I am go.  
Of yllke vnsely goly wo.  
Whos reule stant out of ye weye.  
Nolb glad and nolb gladnesse alleye.  
And yet it may not be wyfstande.  
For ought that men may vnderstande.

*Non ego sampsonis vires no her-  
culis arma. Vincto su sicut in victus  
amore pati. Et discant alij docti expe-  
riencia facti. Phe in ambiguis que  
se henda via. Dominus ordo duas rep-  
tata vicia sequente. Instruit a tempo-  
re simul ille cadat. Aere quibz ergo ve-  
nus casus laqueavit amantem. Orbis  
in exemplis scribere tendo palam...*

**I**n ye point pat is bifalle.  
In love in which pat I am falle.  
I penke telle my matere.  
I tolde herkene who pat wole it here.  
Of my fortune hold pat it ferde.  
His endurday as I fory ferde.

*Hic declarat materiam dicens qualiter  
apido quodam ignito iaculo sui cordis  
memoriam gratui vlcere perforavit qd  
Venus percipiens qm vt dicit qm in mor-  
tis articulo hominum ad confitendum se  
gemo sacerdoti sup amoris causa sic  
semitum specialiter commendavit...*

**T**o walke as I yow telle may.  
And pat was in ye mony of may.  
Whan euery bird hay chosen his make.  
And penke his metris for to make.  
Of love pat he hay acheued.  
But so was I no ying releued.  
For I was furper fro my love.  
Yan erpe is fro ye heuene above.  
As for to speke of my sped.  
So wist I me nam oper red.  
But as it were a man for fare.  
Du to ye wode I gan to fare.  
I sought for to fynde wy pe briddes.  
For whan I was pe wode amyddes.  
I found a swete grene pleyne.  
And yere I gan my wo compleyne.  
Wychyng and wepyng al myn one.  
For oper metris made I none.  
So hard me was pat ilke ploye.  
Pat ofte sye ouerpylde.  
To grounde I was wyf oute brye.  
And euery wysched after drey.  
Whan I out of my peyne awook.  
And cast vp many a piteous look.  
Du to ye heuene and seide yus.  
O yow cupide o you Venus.

**I**hold god of love and you goddesse.  
Where is pite where is mekenesse.  
Nolb do me plynly lyue or dye.  
For certes such a maladie.  
As I nolb haue and longe haue had.  
It might make a wise man mad.  
If pat it sholde longe endure.  
Of Venus queene of loves cure.  
Yow luf you luf you maimes hele.  
Behold my cause and my querelle.  
And yene me som part of thy grace.  
So pat I may fynde in this place.  
If yow be graciouse or noon.  
And wyf pat word I salb anon.  
Ye kynge of love and queene bope.  
Bot he pat kynge wyf when wyf bope.  
His chiere alderdard fro me caste.  
And fory he passid at ye laste.  
But napeles er he fory wente.  
A fery darte me yowht he hente.  
And prellh it purgh myn herte rote.  
In hym I found noon oper bote.  
For lenger luf hym not to welle.  
But she pat is ye socour and welle.  
Of wele or wo pat shal betide.  
To hem pat louen at pat tide.  
A bood. bot for to telle of here.  
She cast on me no goodli chere.  
Yus napeles to me she seide.  
What artold sone and I breyde.  
Fright as a man doy out of slepe.  
And yer of toof she right good kepe.  
And had me no ying ben a drad.  
But for al pat I was not glad.  
For I ne salb no cause whi.  
And eft she asked what was I.  
I seide a cartyf pat luf here.  
What wolde ye my lady dere.  
Shal I be hole or ellis die.  
She seide telle me in maladie.  
What is in soor of which you pleyne.  
Ye hide it nouht for if you feynest.  
I can do ye no medycine.  
Nra dame I am a man of yme.  
Pat in pi court haue longe serued.  
And aske pat I haue deserued.  
Som wele after my longe wo.  
And she began to loue yo.  
And seide yer is many of yow.  
Furourp. and so may be pat yow.  
Art right suchon and by feynise.  
Seist pat you hast me do seruite.  
And napeles she wiste wel.  
My word stood on an oper wheel.  
Wyf outen eny fuyterie.  
But algate of my maladie.  
She bad me telle and seye here twyfe.



Aa dame if ye wolde haue roupe.  
 Quod I pan wold I telle yow.  
 Sey forþ quod she and telle holt.  
 Shelle me in sekensse euery del.  
 Aa dame pat can I do wel.  
 Be so my hif per to wole laste.  
 Wip pat here look on me she caste.  
 And seyde in auncy if you hve.  
 My wil is first pat you be shruue.  
 And napeles holt pat it is.  
 I wot my self bot for al pis.  
 In to my prest whiche comey anon.  
 I wole yow telle it on anon.  
 Hope al pi pouht and al pi werk.  
 I genius myn owne clerk.  
 Come forþ and here pis mannes shrifte.  
 Quod Venus po and I vp lifte.  
 Myn hed wip pat and gan boholde.  
 The selue prest whiche as she wolde.  
 Was redy here and set hym down.  
 To here my confessioun.  
**Confessus nemo si sit medicina salu-  
 tis. Expiat morbis quos tulit ipse  
 mus. Ista quidem ferro medicamentum  
 membra saluti. Paro tamen medi-  
 am. Culmus amoris habet.**  
**H**is wozn prest pis holy man.  
 To me spekynge yus began.  
 And seide a benedicte.  
 My soue of ye feliate.  
 Of Loue and eke of al pi wo.  
 Yow shall ye shruue of bope tbo.  
**Uic dicit qualiter gemo p confesso-  
 redente puolue? amans ad confiten-  
 diu se flexis genibz incuruat supli-  
 cans tui ut ad sui sensus informaco-  
 nem confessor ille in dicendis oppone-  
 sibi benignius dignaretur.**  
 What yow er pis for Loue sake.  
 Hast felt let no ying be for sake.  
 Tel pleyntly as it is befallle.  
 And wip pat word I gan down falle.  
 On knees and wip deuocioun.  
 And wip ful gret contritioun.  
 I seyde panne Dominus.  
 Myn holy fader Genius.  
 So as you hast experience.  
 Of Loue for whos reuerence.  
 You shall me shruue at pis tyme.  
 I prey ye let me not mystyme.  
 My schrifte for I am distourbed.  
 In al myn herte and so contrurbed.  
 pat I ne may my wites nere.  
 So shal I muche ying foryete.  
 If yow wolt my shrifte oppose.  
 fro point to point pan I suppose.  
 per shal no ying be left behynde.

Bot nold my wites ben so blynde.  
 pat I ne can my seluen teche.  
 so he began anon to preche.  
 And wip his wozes debonaire.  
 he seide to me softe and faire.  
 In schrifte to oppose and here.  
 My soue I am assured here.  
**Sermo Genij confessoris sup confessio-  
 ne ad Amantem.**  
**V**e Venus ye goddesse aboue.  
 Whos prest I am touchend of Loue.  
 But napeles for certeyn stile.  
 I mot algate and nedes wile.  
 Trouht only make my spekynges.  
 Of Loue but of oper yingres.  
 pat touchen to ye cause of vice.  
 For pat bilongey to ye office.  
 Of prest. Whos ordre pat I bere.  
 So pat I wole no ying forbare.  
 pat I ye vices on and oon.  
 Ye shal ye shelden euerychon.  
 Wher of you myght take euidence.  
 To reule wip pi conscience.  
 But of conclusioun final.  
 Conclude I wole in special.  
 For Loue whos seruant I am.  
 And whi ye cause is pat I cam.  
 So perke I to do bope tbo.  
 first pat myn orde longey to.  
 ye vices for to telle a relle.  
 Bot next aboue alle opere shelle.  
 Of Loue I wole ye propretees.  
 holt pat you stonden be demeres.  
 After ye disposicioun.  
 Of Venus whos condicioun.  
 I moste folle as I am holde.  
 For wip Loue am al wysholde.  
 So pat ye lasse I am to wite.  
 yowh I ne kan nold but a lye.  
 Of oper yingres pat ben wye.  
 I am not trauht of such emprise.  
 For it is not myn comun vye.  
 To speke of vices and of vertus.  
 But al of Loue and of his lore.  
 For Venus lokes of domore.  
 Ye techen neuer tixt ne glose.  
 Bot for as muche as I suppose.  
 It sit a prest to be wel pessed.  
 For shame it is if he be lessed.  
 Of my presthod lister ye forme.  
 I wole in schrifte so enforme.  
 pat as ye leest you shall here.  
 ye vice and to pi matere.  
 Of Loue I shal hem so remene.  
 pat you shall knowe what I mene.  
 For what a man shal axe or seyn.  
 Touchend of schrifte it moste be pleynt.



It nedey nought to make it queynte.  
For troupe his wordes wol not peynte.  
pat I wole aye of ye for pi.  
my sone it shal be so pleynt.  
pat you shalt knowe and vnderstonde.  
ye poyntes of shifte as yei stonde.

**A**visus & auditus fragilis sit ostia  
mentis. Que diuina manus claudere  
nulla potest. Est ibi larva diuina  
ditur qua cordis ad antrum. Hostis  
& ingrediens fossa tulerat rapit. hec  
michi confessor. Genus primordia  
profert. Dum sit in extremis. Vira re  
morosa malis. Nunc tamen ut poterit  
feminea loquela fateri. Verba per  
os timide conata mentis axam.

**E**t bene se hys and dey thede.  
his prestes tulle er hys thede.  
And ym I puyed hym for to sepe.  
his wil and I it wolde obeye.

**H**ic incipit confessio amantis cui de  
duobz parue quaz sensum hoc est de vi  
su & auditu confessor p' oculis opponit.

Aftir ye forme of his apprise.  
yo spat he to me in such a wise.  
And bad me pat I shulde me shruue.  
As touchend of my wates frue.  
And shap pat yei were amende.  
Of pat I hadde hem misdepende.  
For yo ben propeli ye hates.  
purgh which as to ye herce aligates.  
comy alle yunge on to ye sepe.  
Whiche may the mannes soule emper.  
And uolb ye matere is broughte June.  
my sone I yente ferst beayme.  
To wite holl pat ym yhe hap stonde.  
ye Whiche is as I vnder stonde.  
ye most pynapal of alle.  
purgh Whom pat peril may befall.  
And for to speke in lones kynde.  
ful many such aman may fynde.  
Whiche eueu caste a boure here yhe.  
To lobe if pat yei myht aspie.  
ful ofte yung Whiche hem ne touchy.  
But only pat here herce touchy.  
In hyndryng of an opey wight.  
And pus ful many a boye kyght.  
And many a lufy Lady boye.  
hap beful ofte a lye woye.  
So pat an yhe is as a pest.  
To loue and dey ful gret mychese.  
And also for his olue part.  
ful ofte fulle fer darte.  
Of loue Whiche pat eueu brenney.  
purgh hym to ye herce wimey.  
And pus a mannes yhe ferst.  
hymself greuey al per wimey.

many a tyme pat he knowep.  
Du to his olue harme it knowep.  
my sone herkene uolb for pi.  
A tale to be war per by.

ym yhe for to kepe and warde.  
So pat it passe nought his warde.

**H**ic narrat confessor exemplum de  
visu ab illiatis p'seruando dicens q  
lit Atteon cadim Regis thebarum  
nepos du in quadam foresta denago  
mo causa spaciaretur. accidit ut ipe  
quedam fontem venerosa arbor pul  
artudine arcuuentu supuementu. Vi  
dit ibi digna ad suis mlyphis nudam  
in flumine balneantem qua diligen  
tius intuens oculos suos a muliebri  
nuditate nullatenus auertere vole  
bat. Unde indignata Diana ipm in  
ceru figuram transformauit quem  
canes ipm apprehendentes mortife  
ris dentibz dilacerarunt.

**E**xample touchend of myflook.  
And sep Whilon per was don.

A Worn Lord Whiche Atteon.  
Was hote. and he Was Cousyn myh.  
To hym pat thebes ferst on heyl.  
Op sette Whiche kyng cadme hite.  
his Atteon as he wel myghte.  
A boue alle ope cast his chere.  
And vled it flo per to yeir.  
Wip houndes and Wip grette hornes.  
Inoung ye wodes and ye yomes.  
To make his huntynge and his chace.  
Wher hym best youghte in euery place.  
To fynde best gamen in his wode.  
per rode he for to hunte and ploye.  
So hym besel vpon a tide.  
On his huntynge as he cam ride.  
In a forest alone he was.  
he seih vpon ye grene gras.  
ye faue floutes fresh sprynge.  
he herde among ye leues synge.  
yo postel Wip ye myghtynge.  
pus et he wite in to a sale.  
he com in to a litel pleyne.  
Al round a boure and wel beseyn.  
Wip bushes grene and cedres hihe.  
And yere Wip yme he caste his yhe.  
A myd ye pleyne he seih a welle.  
So faue per myght no man telle.  
In Whiche Diana naked stood.  
To bape and pleye here in ye flod.  
Wip many a tympe Whiche here seuey.  
But he his yhe a Wey ne sberuey.  
fro here Whiche naked was al.  
And she for anger per of swal.



And hym as she whiche was goddesse.  
 For shon a noon and ye liknesse.  
 She made hym take of an herte.  
 Whiche was tofore his houndes stert.  
 Wit women busly a boutte.  
 Wit many a horn and many a route.  
 Wit meden muchel noise and cri.  
 And at ye laste unhappili.  
 His herte hit olde houndes slowhe.  
 And hym for vengeance al to drowhe.  
 To nold my sone what it is. *Confessor.*  
 A man to custe his ye anye  
 Whiche Atteo hay dere a bought.  
 He war for pi and do it nought.  
 For ofte who pat hede to ke.  
 Better is to wynte yam to lode.  
 And for to prouen it is so.  
 Quide ye poete also.  
 A tale lich to pis matere.  
 Accordy seip as you shalt here.  
*¶ Sic ponit exemplū aliud de eodem  
 ubi dicit quod quidā princeps nō  
 Phorcus tres pgenit filias. gorgo  
 nes a vulgo nūcupatās quas vno  
 partu exorte deformitate monstrorū  
 serperū nam optinuerūt qbz cū in  
 statem pueniunt talis destinata fu  
 erat natūm qd quicūqz in eas aspi  
 ceret in lapidem subito mutabatur.  
 et sic qm plures meante respiciētes vñ  
 illis pēbūt. Sz pscus nūllo clipeo pal  
 lidio gladioqz aherany munit eas ex  
 monte Nchlacis cohabitantes aio  
 mdaa absqz sui pūulo interfecit...*  
 And mectamor it telley pis.  
 How pat a lord which phorcus.  
 Was hore. hadde doghtres pre.  
 For vpon here natūte.  
 Such was ye constellation.  
 Wit out of mannes naciou.  
 Wit kynde pei be so mistent.  
 Wit to ye liknes of serpent.  
 pei were bore. and so pat on.  
 Of hem was cleped stellibon.  
 Wit ower fister Suriale.  
 Ye prides as telley in pe tale.  
 Medusa hite and napeles.  
 Of comyn name gorgones.  
 In eueri contre yere aboute.  
 As monstres whiche pat men doute.  
 Witon clēpen hem and but an yhe.  
 Among hem pre in porpartie.  
 pei hadde of whiche yel myghte se.  
 How hay it pis. nold hay it she.  
 A fter pat cause and nede it hadde.  
 He proues eche of hem it hadde.  
 A wonder ying yit more anye.

per was wher of i telle al pis.  
 What man on hem his chier caste.  
 And hem beheld he was als faste.  
 Out of a man in to a stoon.  
 For shape and pus ful many on.  
 Deceyued were of pat pei wolde.  
 pryske wher pat pei ne sholde.  
 But perseus pat worpi knyght.  
 Whom pallas of here grete myght.  
 Halp. and took hym a sheld yerto.  
 And eke ye goode mercurie also.  
 Went hym a swerd. he as it fel.  
 Seyend Achlaus ye hite hel.  
 yese monstres slough 2 yere he foud.  
 Diuerse men of yulle lond.  
 yurgh sht of hem mistournd war.  
 stonde as stones nold here nold yere.  
 But he whiche wisdom and prolesse.  
 hadde of ye god and ye goddesse.  
 ye sheld of pallas gan embrace.  
 Wit whiche he couerey sauf his face.  
 mercuries swerd and out he drowh.  
 And so he bar hym pat he slough.  
 yese dwdful monstres alle yre.  
 To my sone anye ye.  
 Wit you pi sht not misuse.  
 East not yin yhe vpon meduse.  
 Wit you be tomed in to stoon.  
 For so wys man was neuere noon.  
 For if he wole his yhe kepe.  
 And take of sole delit no kepe.  
 Wit he wyf lust yre ofte nome.  
 yurgh strengthe of loue and ouercome.  
 Of mistokyngh holt it hay ferd.  
 As i haile told nold hastow herd.  
 Wit good sone and take good hede.  
 And ouer pis yet i ye rede.  
 Wit you be war of yin herpyngh.  
 Whiche to ye herte ye tydyngh.  
 Of many a vanite hay brouht.  
 To carie wit a mannes pouht.  
 And napeles good is to here.  
 Such ying wher of a man may lere.  
 Wit to vertu is accordant.  
 And to ward al ye remenant.  
 Good is to aurne his ere fco.  
 For elles but a man do so.  
 Hym may ful ofte mysbesalle.  
 yrede ensample amonst alle.  
 Wher of to kepe wel an ere.  
 It ouht putte a man in fere.  
*¶ Sic narrat Confessor exemplū de ab  
 aurs exaudicione facia animi decy  
 tus muoluatur. et dicit qualiter ipse  
 serpens qui apud vocatur quēdā pio  
 sistimū lapidē nōle ambulantē in  
 file fionis medio gestans contra deo*



*In mactantis aurem vna terre affi-  
gendo premio: a liam sue caude fa-  
mulo firmissimo obturat...*

**S**erpent which pat Aspidis.  
Is deper of his kinde happyis.  
pat he pe soon noblest of alle.  
pe Which pat men carbuncle calle.  
Berth in his hed a boue on hyste.  
for which whan pat a man be sleighte.  
pe stou to Wyne and hym to daunte.  
Wip his careate hym wolde enchaunte.  
A noon as he paryerueh pat.  
he ley down his ey al plat.  
Du to pe ground and halt it faste.  
And eke pe toper eere als faste.  
he stopper Wip his taul so fore.  
pat he pe wordes lasse or more.  
Of his enchauntemen ne heyrp.  
And in pis Wyse hym self he steryp.  
So pat he hay pe wordes weyued.  
And purgh hie eere is nouht deceyued.

*And exempli sup eodem qualiter  
duxes cum a bello troiano versus  
Greciam nauigio remaret: et aliam  
sua marina Serenes nuncupata an-  
gelica voce cangas ipm ventore ad-  
uersitate nauigare oporteret omni  
nauitatu suoz aures obturari coegit  
Et sic salutaris providencia psaltus  
absqz pido saluus cum sua classe  
duxes pertransiit...*

**O**per ying who pat reordey.  
Rich du to pis ensamplo acordey.  
Which in pe tale of Troye I fynde.  
Suenes of a wonder fynde.  
Then monstres as pe bokes tellen.  
And in pe grete se pei dwellen.  
Of body boye and of visage.  
Rich to women of yowth age.  
Ep fiv pe namele on heih pei be.  
And down be noye as men may se.  
Thei berey of fushes pe figure.  
And ouer pis of such nature.  
pei ben pat Wip so swete a steuens.  
Rich to pe melodie of heuens.  
In Wimmannysh doys pei synge.  
With notes of so gret lobyng.  
Of such mesure of such musike.  
Wher of pe shipes pei be stike.  
pat passen bi pe costes here.  
for whan pe shyphen leyn an eere.  
Du to pe doys in here a bys.  
Thei wene it be a paradys.  
Which after is to hem am helle.  
for re son may nouht Wip hem dwelle.  
Whan pei pe grete lustes here.  
pei konne not here shipes seere.

So besili upon pe note.  
pei herkene and in such Wyse assote.  
pat pei pe right cours and weye.  
for were and to here eere obeye.  
And saile til it so bisalle.  
pat pei in to pe peril falle.  
Where as pe schipes be to dralbe.  
pat pei ben Wip pe monstres slalbe.  
Got fro pis peril napeles.  
Wip wisdom kyng vluxes.  
Asceper and it ouerpassey.  
for he to for pe hond compassy.  
pat no man of his companye.  
hay polter du to pat folye.  
his eere for no lust to caste.  
for he hem stopper alle faste.  
pat non of hem may here hem synge.  
So when pei comen fory seahinge.  
per was such gouernauice on honde.  
pat pei pe monstres haue Wip stonde.  
And layn of hem a gret partie.  
pis was he sauf Wip his nauye.  
pis Wyse kyng purgh gouernauice.  
Wher of my sone in remembraunce.  
Wold myght ensample taken here. *foff.*  
As I haue told and what you here.  
Se War and yeue no credence.  
for if you se more euidence.  
for if you woldest taken kepe.  
And Wip compest Wunde and kepe.  
Thyn yhe and eere as I haue spoke.  
I an haddest you pe gates scobe.  
for such sotte as comy to Wyne.  
in hercis Wit Which is Wip gume.  
Wher of pat noll in loue excede.  
mesure. and many a perne bredey.  
for if you compest sette in reule.  
no tbo: pe oper pe Wex eye to reule.  
for in as of pi Wites fue.  
I Wol. as noll no more shryue.  
for only of pulke tbo.  
Tel me per of if it be so.  
Hastow ym yhen oust misprole.  
My fader ye I am be knowe. *Amans.*  
I haue hem cast vpon meduse.  
per of I may me nouht excuse.  
for in here is growen in to soon.  
So pat my Lady per vpon.  
Hay such a preynte of loue gume.  
pat I can not my selfe saue. *coff.*  
What seist you sone as of ym ere. *for.*  
*Respondit Amans...*  
My fader I am guiltyfere.  
for whan I may my Lady here.  
my Wit Wip yte hay lost his stere.  
I do not as vluxes bede.  
for falle a noon vpon pe seede.



Wher as. I. se my lady stonde.  
 And pere I do yow vnderstonde.  
 I am to pulled in my poult.  
 So pat of resou leuey noubt.  
 Wher of I me may defende.  
**My** good sone god ye amende. *Confes.*  
 For as me penkeþ he in speche. *for.*  
 In Wittes ben righte fer to seche.  
 That of ym ere and of ym yhe.  
 I wol no more speche.  
 For I wol axen ouer þis.  
 Of oper ying how pat it is.  
*Cellor est aquila in Leone feruorior*  
*ille. Quem tumor elati cordis ad al*  
*ta mouet. Sumit species quinqz quibz*  
*est supbia ducit. Et lamat et in mul*  
*tis mundus adheret eis. Laruando*  
*faciem fero pallore subornat. ffum*  
*dibz ypoctis melles verba suis. Sic*  
*qz pios aios qui sepe vult unilibres.*  
*Ex huius verbo sublatitante dolo.*  
*Hic loquitur qd septem sunt pec*  
*cata mortalia quoz caput supbia*  
*varias species habet. 2 eoz pima*  
*ypoctis dicitur cui ypoctate scdm*  
*placit simpliciter confessor amant*  
*primitus declarat.*  
**My** sone as I ye shal enforme.  
 per be yet of an oper forme.  
 Of dedly vices seuene applies.  
 Wher of ye herce is ofte plied.  
 To ying whiche after shal hym greue.  
 ye ferst of hem þou shalt beleue.  
 Is pride whiche is pynapal.  
 And hay þy hym in special.  
 Crimines frue ful diuerse.  
 Of whiche as I ye shal reheire.  
 ye ferst is sayd ypoctise.  
 If þou art of his compaignie.  
 Tel forþ my sone 2 schirue ye dene.  
 For not fader what ye mene. *Andis*  
 For þis I wol yow besече.  
 pat ye me be som weye teche.  
 What is to ben an ypoctite.  
 And þan if I be for to write.  
 I wol beknowe as it is.  
**My** sone an ypoctite is þis. *Confes.*  
 A man whiche semey conscience. *for.*  
 As þouh it were al innocence.  
 Wy oute. and is not so wy þine.  
 And doþ so for he wolde wyne.  
 Of his desir ye beyn astat.  
 And when he com anon þer at.  
 he shal þe þan what he was.  
 ye corn is turned in to gras.  
 pat was a rose þan is a þorn.  
 And he pat was a lomb be forþ.

Is þan a wolfe and þus malice.  
 Under þe colour of justice.  
 He hid. and as þe peple telley.  
 þese ordres witten where he dwelley.  
**ypoctis religiosa.**  
 As he pat of here conseil is.  
 And þilke world whiche þei er þis.  
 forsoþen he dralþeþ in a þen.  
 he cloþeþ richesse as men seþ.  
 Under þe simplese of pouerte.  
 And doþ to seme of ayt deserte.  
 ying whiche is litel worth wy þine.  
 he seþ in opyn þy to þine.  
 And in secue þer is no vice.  
 Of whiche þat he is a noyce.  
 And euere his chere is sobre and softe.  
 And wher he goþ he blessey ofte.  
 Wher of þe blind world he drecheþ.  
 For yet al only he ne drecheþ.  
 his reule vpon religion.  
 For next to þat condicion.  
 In suche as clepe hem holicherche.  
 It shal þe wel how he can werche.  
**ypoctis ecclesiastica.**  
 Among þe wide furced hodes.  
 To gete hem þe worldes goodes.  
 And þei hem self ben þilke same.  
 pat setten most þe world in blame.  
 For yet in contrarie of here lore.  
 þer is no ying þei louen more.  
 So pat semende of light þei werke.  
 ye dedes whiche ann inward derke.  
 And þus þis double ypoctise.  
 Wy his deuoute appauntye.  
 A viser set vpon his face.  
 Wher of to lward þis worldes grace.  
 he semey to be rightel þelld.  
 And yet his herce is al beschelld.  
 For napeles he stant beleued.  
 And hay his purpos ofte ached.  
 Of worship and of worldes welþe.  
 And tuff it as who seþ by stelyþ.  
 yingh couertine of his fallas.  
 And right so in semblable cas.  
**ypoctis secularis.**  
 þis vice hay eke his officers.  
 Among þis oper seculers.  
 Of grete men for of þe smale.  
 As for tacompte he set no tale.  
 But þei pat passen þe comune.  
 Wy suche hym a þey to comune.  
 And where he seþ he wole scoure.  
 þe peple. þere he wole deuoure.  
 For now a day is many on.  
 whiche speþ of þeynt 2 seint Johan.  
 And penken Judas in here herce.  
 þere shal no worldes good a ferte.



**F**his hond, and yet he receyve almesse.  
And fasten ofte and herey messe.  
Wip me a culpa. Whiche he seip.  
Upon his brest ful ofte he leip.  
His hond and cast vpon his phe.  
As pouh he cristes face seip.  
So pat it semer at ye sight.  
As he al one alle ower myght.  
Fescolde wip his holy bede.  
Bot yet his herte in ower stede.  
Among his bedes most deuoute.  
Goth in ye worldes cause aboute.  
Holl pat he myghte his warison.  
Enaref and in comparison.  
**Whiche mactat confessor ad Amant**  
**supilla presertim vxoris que sub**  
**amoris faae fraudulenter latitand**  
**mulliere vniis fians ardulas se**  
**missine deceptit innocentes.**  
Where ben louers of such a sorte.  
Pat fernen hem of such a port.  
And al is but ypocrisie.  
Whiche wip decepte and flaterie.  
Han many a worpi wif begiled.  
For whan he hay his tuinge affiled.  
Wip softe speche and lesmyng.  
For wip his fals pitous lokyng.  
He wolde make a woman weue.  
To gon vpon ye faire treue.  
Whan pat she fullep in ye myre.  
For if he may haue his desire.  
Holl so it falle of ye remenant.  
He halt no word of couenant.  
Bot er ye tyme pat he spede.  
Per is no sleight at yll nede.  
Whiche ony loues faytour may.  
Pat he ne putte it in assay.  
As hym belongep for to done.  
The colour of ye reyny mone.  
Wip mediane vpon his face.  
He set. and pan he axep grace.  
As he whiche hay sekenesse ferved.  
Whan he his disant hay so disterved.  
Wip vhe vpon cast on hert he fiker.  
And many a contemnanee he piker.  
To bringe here in to belene.  
Of ymyt which pat he wolde achene.  
Wher of he berer ye pale helde.  
And for he wolde seme trewe.  
He makep hym seel whan he is heil.  
But whan he berer lollere seil.  
Pan is he swiftest to begile.  
Ye woman whiche yllke while.  
Set vpon hym fery and credence.  
**Q**y sone if pou pi conscience. **con**  
**fessor.**  
In schriste pou ye myghte a vise.

**A**nd telle it forp if it be so.  
**I**n holy fader certes no. **Amans**  
As for to fernen such sekenesse.  
It nedep not for pis winnesse.  
I take of god pat my corage.  
Hay ben more seke pan my visage.  
And eke pis may I wel a bolde.  
So lollere coure I neuere bolde.  
To ferye humilite wip olde.  
Pat me ne lese bettre lollere.  
Wip alle ye pouhtes of myn herte.  
For pat ymyt shal me neuere a ferte.  
I speke as to my lady dere.  
To make here eny feryed chere.  
God wot wel pat I lye nouht.  
Wip chere hay be such as my pouht.  
For in good fery pis leuep wel.  
My wil was bettre a pou sandel.  
Pan any chere pat I coure.  
But sere if I haue in my volde.  
Son byer wile in ower place.  
I put me per of in poure grace.  
For pis excusen I ne shal.  
Pat I haue elles ouer al.  
To loue and to his compaignie.  
Sepleyn wip oute ypocrisie.  
Bot per is con ye whiche I serue.  
Al pouh I may no pouk deserue.  
To whom yet neuere in to pis day.  
I seide ouliche or ye or nay.  
But if it were so in my pouht.  
As touchend ower seve I nouht.  
Pat I nam sander for to wite.  
Of pat ye clepe an ypocrite. **confes**  
**for.**  
As sone it sit wel euery wight.  
To kepe his word in troupe vpon right.  
Tollardes love in alle wise.  
For who pat wold hym self a vise.  
What hay be fulle in pis matere.  
He sholde not wip feryed chere.  
Deceue loue in no degre.  
To loue is euery herte fere.  
Bot in deceit if pat pou feryest.  
And per vpon pi lust ateynest.  
Pat pou hast donne wip pi wile.  
Pouh it ye like for a while.  
Pou shalt it after ward repente.  
And for to prouen myn entente.  
I finde eysample in a crowing.  
Of hem pat loue so be swite.  
**Q**uod vxoris sit in amore pitosa  
**narat exemplid qualiter sub regno**  
**iberij in patris quidam miles noie**  
**mundus qui romanor. Sux milicie**  
**tunc p fuit dnam paulinam casti**  
**tatis q famosissima mediantibz duo**  
**bz fagis p fiteris in templo yfio**



*deu se esse fingens sub facie sanctitatis  
procurat. uocatur no tempore uicarius. In  
de idem dux in exilium pssit in morte  
ob sui criminis enormitatem dampna  
ti existerant ymago qd deo ysis in tem  
plo euulsa. Emulo qd hz conclamante  
ipso i flume tiberiadis pieam ingebatur.*

**I**n besel in olde tyme yus.  
Whil remperour tiberius.  
ye monarchie of Rome laddo.  
Here was a Worpi Romeyn hadde.  
A Wyf and she paulhne highte.  
Whiche was to ouer mannes shite.  
Of al ye cite ye faireste.  
And as men seiden eke ye beste.  
It is and hay ben euere yit.  
Yus so feruour was a mannes wit.  
Whiche purgh beaute ne may be dralle.  
To loue and stonde vnder ye lalbe.  
Of pilke boze fele kynde.  
Whiche maket ye herces when blinde.  
Wher no resou may be conuined.  
And in yis wise stant fortunied.  
yis tale of Whiche o wolde mene.  
yis Wyf Whiche in here lustes grene.  
Was faire and fresch and tendre of age.  
She may not lette ye corage.  
Of hym pat wole on here assore.  
yere was a Tuk and he was hote.  
mundus Whiche hadde in his baillie  
for to lode ye chynalre.  
Of Rome and was a Worpi kynght.  
But yit he was not of such myght.  
ye strengthe of loue to wyf stonde.  
That he ne was so brouht to honde.  
pat malgre Where he wolde or no.  
yis yonge Wyf he louey so.  
pat he hay put al his assaie.  
To wyne ying Whiche he ne maye.  
Gete of here graunt in no manere.  
Bi yeste of gold ne be priere.  
And Whan he seih pat be no mede.  
To Ward here loue he myght spede.  
ye sleight fermed yin he wynght.  
And yer vpon he hym be pought.  
how pat yer was in pe ate.  
A temple of such auctorite.  
To Whiche Wyf gret deuocion.  
ye noble Wommen of ye tow.  
most communlich in pilgrimage.  
Goon for to preyn pilke ymage.  
Whiche ye goddesse of chuldmyrie.  
And cleped was be name ysis.  
And in here temple yinne were.  
To reule and to mynister yere.  
Aftir ye lalbe Whiche was y.  
A boue alle oyer prestes eke.

**T**his Duk Which pouht his loue to gete.  
Upon a day hem eke to mete.  
Hay bode and yei come at his heste.  
Wher pat yei hadde a riche feste.  
And after mete in yinne place.  
yis lord Whiche wolde his pouk purchase.  
To eche of hem yaf yai a yeste.  
And spak so pat be weye of shryfte.  
He drouh hem vnto his covine.  
To helpe and shape hold yai paulhne.  
Aftir his lust deceyue nyghte.  
And yei here troupe bope ylyghte.  
pat yei be nyghte here sholde wyne.  
In to ye temple and he yer yune.  
Shal haue of here al his entente.  
And yus accorded for yei wente.  
How lest purgh Whiche yocassie.  
Ordyned was ye trecheine.  
Wher yis lady was deceyued.  
yis prestes hadden wel conceyued.  
pat she was of gret holynesse.  
And Wyf a contrefet simplisse.  
Whiche had was in a fulle corage.  
fferned an heuenely message.  
Thei comen and seiden to here yus.  
paulhne ye god Amibus.  
Hay sent vs bope prestes here.  
And seih he wole to ye appere.  
By nyghtes tyme hym self alone.  
for loue he hay to y personne.  
And yer vpon he hay vs lode.  
That we in yis temple a fiede.  
Honestli for ye purueye.  
Wher pou be nyghte as I ye seye.  
Of hym shal take a dyson.  
for vpon y condicion  
ye Whiche is chaste and ful of fey.  
Suche pris as he vs tolde he sey.  
pat he wole stonde of yai accord.  
And for to beir her of record.  
he sent vs heder bope eke.  
Glad was here innocen po.  
Of suche wordes as she herde.  
Wyf humble chere and yus anwerde.  
And seide pat ye goddes wille.  
she was al redy to fulfille.  
pat be here husbondes loue.  
she wolde in yis temple at oue.  
Upon here goddes grace abide.  
To seruen hym ye nyghtes tide.  
ye prestes to goon home a yeyn.  
And she goy to here souereyn.  
Of goddes wille and how it was.  
she told hym al ye pleyu cas.  
Wher of he was deceyued eke.  
And had pat she here meke.  
Al hol vnto ye goddes heste.



And thus she whiche was al honeste.  
 To godward after here entente.  
 At myghte yn to ye temple wente.  
 Where pat ye false prestes were.  
 And yei receyuen here pore.  
 Wip such a tokene of holynesse.  
 As yowh yei seihen a goddesse.  
 And al wip yune in pryue place.  
 A losse bed of large space.  
 yei hadde made and encurtyned.  
 Where she was afterward encurtyned.  
 But she wheche al honour supposen.  
 ye false prestes yanne opposen.  
 And aske be what obseruance.  
 She myght most to ye plesance.  
 Of god pat myghtes wille sepe.  
 And yei here bidden for to slepe.  
 Dignende vpon ye bedde a losse.  
 And so yei seiden alle stille and softe.  
 God Amibus here wolde awake.  
 ye conseil in yis wise take.  
 The prestes fro yis lady goon.  
 And she pat wiste of gile noon.  
 In ye manere as it was seid.  
 To slepe vpon yis bed is leyd.  
 In hope pat she sholde acheue.  
 ying which stood yun vpon belene.  
 fulfilled of al holynesse.  
 Bot she has fayled as I gesse.  
 for in a closet faste by.  
 ye sub was hid so pryvely.  
 pat she hym myght not parceyne.  
 And he pat wouht to deceyne.  
 has such a myght vpon hym nome.  
 pat whan he wolde yn to here come.  
 It sholde seme to here yhe  
 As yowh she werliche sihe.  
 God Amibus. and in such wise.  
 yis ypposite of his queyntise.  
 A waytey euer til she slepte.  
 And yun out of his place he crepte.  
 So stille pat she no ying herde.  
 And to ye bed stallende he ferde.  
 And sodenly er she wiste.  
 hechpte in armes he here kiste.  
 Wher of in womanysch drede.  
 She woke and wiste what to rede.  
 But he wip softe wordes mylde.  
 conforty here and sey wip childe.  
 he wolde here make in such a kynde.  
 pat al ye world shuld have in mynde.  
 ye worshippe of pat ilke sone.  
 for he shal wip ye goddes wone.  
 And ben hym self a god also.  
 Wip such wordes and wip mo.  
 ye whiche he ferney in his speche.  
 yis lady wit was al to seche.

As she whiche al troupe beney.  
 But he pat al vntroupe meney.  
 Wip blinde tales so hete ladde.  
 pat al his wil of here he hadde.  
 And whan hym pouhte it was yowh.  
 A yeyn ye day he hym wip drouh.  
 So pryvely pat she ne wiste.  
 Wher he become but as hym lyfte.  
 Out of ye temple he goy his weye.  
 And she began to bydde and prey.  
 vpon ye bare ground euclidean.  
 And after pat made here offrende.  
 And to ye prestes vestes grette.  
 She yaf. and howldand be ye strete.  
 The sub here mette and seide pus.  
 The myghti god whiche Amibus.  
 Is hote. he saue ye waulme.  
 for yow art of his disciplyne.  
 So holy pat no mannes myght.  
 may do pat he has do to myght.  
 Of ying whiche you hast euer eschelled.  
 For I his grace haue so purfelled.  
 That I was made his lieutenant.  
 for yu be weye of couenant.  
 for yis day fory I am al yin.  
 And if ye like to be myn.  
 pat stant vpon yin olme wille.  
 he herd his tale and bar it stille.  
 And hom she wente as it besel.  
 yn to here chambre and yore she fel.  
 vpon here bed to wepe and crie.  
 And seide o derke ypposite.  
 yurgh whos dissimulation.  
 Of fals ymaginacion.  
 I am pus wikkedly deceyued.  
 But pat I haue it aparceyued.  
 I yowte yn to ye goddes alle.  
 for yowh it one be besalle.  
 It shal neuere est whil pat I lyue.  
 And yulke a doly to god I yue.  
 And pus wende she compleyney.  
 here faure face and al desteyney.  
 Wip woful teres of here yhe.  
 So pat vpon yis agonye.  
 here houswode is in come.  
 And seep holl she was ouercome.  
 Wip forwe and arey what here cyley.  
 And she wip pat here self belweiley.  
 Wel more yun she dede a fore.  
 And seide alas wifhod is lore.  
 In me whiche whilom was honest.  
 I am noon oper yun a beste.  
 Now I defouled am of ewe.  
 And as she myghte speke yu.  
 Ashamed wip a pitous onde.  
 She told yn to here husbonde.  
 ye sope of al ye hole tale.



**S**

liber.

And in here speche ded and pale.  
She shone welungh to ye laste.  
And he here in his armes faste.  
Op held and ofte swor his op.  
pat he wip here no ping is wrop.  
for wel wot he she may it nouht.  
But napeles in his pouht.  
his herte stood in soyr plight.  
And seide he wolde of pat despright.  
He venyged how so euere it falle.  
And send vn to hise frendes alle.  
And whan pei were comen in fere.  
he told hem vpon his matere.  
And axed hem what was to done.  
And pei adised were sone.  
And seiden it pouhte hem for ye beste.  
To sette first his wif in reste.  
And after pleyne to ye king.  
vpon ye matier of his ping.  
Tho was his woful wif conforred.  
Be alle weyes and disporred.  
Til pat she was soundly amended.  
And pus a day or elbo despended.  
ye priddy day she goy to pleyne.  
Wip many a wryn citezern.  
And he wip many a citezern.  
Whan yemperdur herde seyn.  
And knelle pe fulshede of ye vice.  
He seide he wolde do justice.  
And first he lat ye prestes take.  
And for yer sholde it not for sake.  
he put hem in to questiou.  
But pei of ye suggestion.  
re couye nouht a word refuse.  
Bot for pei wolde hym self excuse.  
ye blame vpon ye duk pei leide.  
Bot yer a yen ye conseil seide.  
pat pei be not excused so.  
for he is con. and pei be tbo.  
And tbo han more wryt pan con.  
So pilke excusment was noon.  
And ouer pat was seid hem eke.  
pat whan pat men wolde betrouse.  
men sholden it in ye prestes fynde.  
Here ordre is of so heil a fynde.  
pat pei be duietes of ye wope.  
for pi if ony man fouere  
purgh hem pat be not excusable.  
And pus be halpe resonable.  
A mong ye wise iuges pere.  
ye pstes bope dampned were.  
So pat ye pryue trecherie.  
hid vnder fals ypoarie.  
Was pan al oppynliche shewed.  
pat many a man hem hay be shelled.  
And whan ye pstes weren dede.  
The temple of pilke horrible dede.

Thei pouhten purge. and pilke ymage.  
Whos cause was ye pilgrimage.  
pei drolen out and als faste.  
for in to Tybre pei it caste.  
Wher ye ryuer it hay defied.  
And pus ye temple purified.  
Thei haue of pilke horrible fyne.  
Whiche was pat tyme so per fyne.  
Of pis poynt such was ye quyse.  
But of ye duk was oper wise  
for he wip loue was bestad.  
his don was not so harde rad.  
for lode put reson a waye.  
And can not se ye right waye.  
And be pis cause he was respited.  
So pat ye dey hym was anuyted.  
Bot for al pat he was exiled.  
for he his loue hay so begyled.  
pat he shal neuere come a yen.  
for who pat is to trouye vnplesyn.  
he may not faile of venyauce.  
And eke to take remembrance.  
Of pat ypoarie hyr wrouht.  
On oper halue men sholde nouht.  
To lightly leue al pat pei her.  
Bot pan shuld a wysman fere.  
ye ship whan suche wyndes blowe.  
for first pouh pei begynne blowe.  
at ende pei be not menable.  
Bot al to breken mast and cable.  
So pat ye ship wip sodeyn blast.  
Whan men leest were it ouercast.  
As uold ful ofte a man may se.  
And of old tyme how it hay be.  
I fynde a gret experience.  
Wher of to take an euidence.  
Good is. and to be war also.  
Of ye peril or hym be wo.  
**¶** The poynt vterius exempli de illa  
causa ypoaria que inter vnu decipiens  
pauilossima consistit. Et narrat qd  
liger greci in obsidione ciuitatis tue  
ad quam vi comprehendere nullatenus  
potuerunt. fallaci aio cum troianis  
pacem vt dicunt p pectus statuabant.  
Et sup hoc queda equa mixt grossitu  
dinis de ere fabricati. id sacrifican  
diuiniue ofingentes sb tali satanis  
ypoari ciuitate intrarunt. et quam  
ai inhabitantibz gladio a igne commi  
nuetes p pectus penitus deuastarunt.  
**¶** hem pat ben so derf wip fyne.  
at troie also if we begynne.  
ypoarie hem hay betraied.  
for whan ye grekes hadde al assaied.  
And found pat be no bataille.  
re be no slege it myght auaille.



The town to hymne purgh prouesse.  
 his vice fermed of symplese.  
 purgh sleight of calcas and of crise.  
 It was be such amanner wise.  
 An hors of bras per leet do forge.  
 Of such entaile of such a forge.  
 pat in his world was neuere man.  
 pat such an oper werk began.  
 The crafti workman Epus.  
 It made. and for to telle yus.  
 he grekes pat pouhten to begile.  
 The kyng of Troye for yllke while.  
 Wyntenor and wyntenor.  
 pat were bope of pe citee.  
 And of pe conseil he wilest.  
 he richest and he myghtiest.  
 In priue place so per tete.  
 Wyntenor behestes and yestes grete.  
 Of gold pat per hem hane entymed.  
 To gedre and whan per be conuined.  
 per ferne for to make a pees.  
 And vnder pat vit napeles.  
 per shopen pe destruction.  
 Bope of pe kyng and of pe town.  
 And yus pe fals per was take.  
 Of hem of grece and vnder take.  
 And per vpon per founde a weye.  
 Where streunge myght not a weye.  
 pat sleight holde helpe panne.  
 And of an ynche a large spanne.  
 the colour of pe pees per made.  
 And tolden hold per were ylade.  
 Of pat per stoden in acord.  
 And for it shal ben of record.  
 In to pe kyng pe grete grete.  
 the weye of loue and his per yden.  
 As per pat wolde his poult deserue.  
 A sacrifice in to mynerue.  
 he pees to helpe in good entente.  
 per mote offe er per wente.  
 The kyng conselled in his cas.  
 the Autenor and Encas.  
 per to hay youen his assent.  
 So was pe pleyne twilpe blent.  
 purgh contrifet ypoctise.  
 Of pat per sholden sacrifice.  
 The grekes vnder holynesse.  
 Anoon wyntenor al besynesse.  
 here hors of bras leet fyre dymte.  
 Whiche was to sene a wonder sighte.  
 for it was trapped of hym selue.  
 And hadde of smale whioles tibeue.  
 vpon pe whiche men ynolke.  
 Wyntenor to ward pe tolden it drolke.  
 And gop aliferende a yen pe sonne.  
 so was perre ioye ynolke begonne.  
 for troye in gret deuocion.

cam also with procession.  
 A yen his noble sacrifice.  
 Wyntenor honour and in his wise.  
 In to pe gates per it broughte.  
 Got of here entre whan per soughte.  
 pe gates weren al to smale.  
 And per vpon was many a tale.  
 Got for pe worshipe of mynerue.  
 To whom pe comen for to serue.  
 per of pe town whiche vnderstode.  
 pat al his ping was do for goode.  
 for pees wher of pat per be ylade.  
 he gates pat neptennus made.  
 A thousand wyntenor per tofore.  
 per hane anoon to broke and tore.  
 he stronge walles down per bete.  
 So pat in to pe large stete.  
 his hors wyntenor gret sollemnite.  
 was brouht wyntenor pe citee.  
 And offred wyntenor gret reuerence.  
 Whiche was to Troye an euidence.  
 Of loue and pees for euere mo.  
 he grete token leue po.  
 Wyntenor al pe hole felashipe.  
 And for per wenten in to shipe.  
 And trussen seil and make hem paxe.  
 A noon as pouh per wolden fare.  
 But whan pe blake wyntenor myghte.  
 Wyntenor oute moone or sterre lighte.  
 Bederbed hay pe water stroude.  
 Al pryncely per gon to londe.  
 ful armed out of pe name.  
 Symon which mad was here spie.  
 Wyntenor Troye as was conspired.  
 Whan tyme was a tokene hay fired.  
 And per wyntenor here were holden.  
 And comen in right as per wolden.  
 pere as pe gate was to broke.  
 he purpos was ful take and spoke.  
 Er any man may take kepe.  
 Whil pat pe cite was a slepe.  
 per stollen al pat was wyntenor.  
 And token what per myghten wyntenor.  
 Of such good as was sufficient.  
 And brenden by pe reuerent.  
 And yus cam out pe trechere.  
 Whiche vnder fals ypoctise.  
 was hid. and per pat wonden pees.  
 so myghten fynden no reles.  
 Of yllke sterd which al deuouep.  
 Ful ofte. and yus pe stete souep.  
 whan it is knolke to pe tate.  
 he spulley many a word in wast.  
 pat shal wyntenor suche a peple tete.  
 for whan he wenep most byete.  
 than is he shape most to lese.  
 And right so if a woman chese.



Upon pe wordes pat he herey.  
Som man Whan he most trellie apperey.  
Ym is he ferpest fro pe twilpe.  
But yet ful ofte and pat is wouye.  
Yei speden pat ben most vntrewe.  
And louen euery day a nelle.  
Wherof ye leef is after loye.  
And loue hay cause to ben wrope.  
Bot what man pat his lust desirey.  
Of loue and yer vpon conspirey.  
Wip wordes feyned to deceyue.  
He shal not fayle to receyue.  
His peyne as it is ofte sene.

**For** pi my sone as i pe mene. **conf.**  
Jestit se wel to taken hede.  
pat you eschelle of pi manhede.  
ypocrisie and his semblant.  
pat you ne be not deceyuant.  
To make a woman to beleue.  
Ying which is not in pi beleue.  
for in such feyns ypocrisie.  
Of loue is al pe trecherie.  
Yurth which loue is deceyued ofte.  
for feyned semblant is so softe.  
Eueres loue may be war.  
for pi my sone as i dar.  
I charge ye to flee pat vice.  
pat many a woman hay mad mee.

But loke you dele not wip al.  
**For** pi sone kep pat you hyst more. **Amans.**  
for pi pat you hast herde before. **conf.**  
Is seid ye fust portit of pride.  
And next vpon pat oper side.  
To shrive and speken ouer pis.  
Touchend of pride yet per is.  
ye portit secunde i pe behore.  
Which is inobedience is hore.

**ffleat. qui frangi melius reputatur a olle. fficilis ad cacabum pugna valere nequit. Quem neqz lex hominum neqz diuina valebit. ffleatere multociens corde reflectat amor...**  
**Que non flectit amor no est flectend**  
**ab illo. Sz rigor illius plus elephante riget. Deditur amor potit qd care rebelles. Et rudibz sorem pstat here vnde. Set qui sponte sui subiat se cordis amore. ffangit in adueris oia fura puit.**  
**ffic loquitur de pda specie supbie que iobediencia dicitur a prima illi. Vici natura splicit declarat. Et tractat consequens pilla papue iobediencia qm curia cupidinis exosa amoris causa ex sua imbecillitate sepiusne retardat. In cuiusma Confessor Amanti specialit opponit.**

**His** vice of inobedience.  
A yen pe teule of consciene.  
Al pat is humble he disalloye.  
pat he tollard his god ne bolloye.  
After pe lalles of his heste.  
I thought as a man but as a beste.  
Which top vpon his lustes wilde.  
So top pis proude vice vnnilde.  
pat he desceynay alle lalle.  
He not what is to be felalle.  
And serue may he not for pride.  
So is he badde on euery side.  
And pat selue of Whom men speke.  
Which wol not bolbe er pat he breke.  
I not if loue myght hym ppe.  
for elles for to justifie.

**For** pi my sone of such entaile. **conf.**  
If pat pi herce be desposed. **conf.**  
Del out and let it not be glosed.  
for if pat you vnbuxom be.  
To loue i not in what degre.  
you shalt pi good world achue.  
My fader ye shul wel beleue. **Amans.**  
ye young whelp which is a futed.  
Hay not his maister beire allyted.  
To couche whan he seip go lode.  
pat i auoon as i may knolde.  
my lady wil me bolbe more.  
But oper while i gruche fore.  
Of some yingres pat she dop.  
Wher of pat i wol telle for.  
for of tbo porities i am be pought.  
pat youh i wolde i myghte nought.  
Obeye vnto my lady heste.  
Bot i dar make pis behest.  
Sawe only of pat ille tbo.  
i am vnbuxom of no mo.

**Opponit Confessor.**  
What ben po tbo tel on quod he.  
**Respondit Amans.**  
My fader pis is oon pat she.  
Comaundey me my mouy to close.  
And pat i shulde here nought appose.  
In loue of which i ofte peche.  
Bot plenerliche of such a speche.  
forbere and suffre here in pees.  
But pan ne myght i napeles.  
for al pis world obeye i wys.  
for whan i am pere as she is.  
youh she my tales wole nought alolde.  
A yen here wil yet mot i bolde.  
To seche if pat i myght haue grace.  
But pat ying may i nought embrace.  
for ouht pat i km speke or do.  
And yet ful ofte i speke so.  
pat she is wrope and seip be stille.



**I**f I pat heste shal fulfille.  
And ther to be obedient.  
I am is my cause fully shent.  
For specheles may no man speke.  
So wot I not what is to rede.  
But certes I may not obeye.  
pat I. ne not algaates seye.  
Som what of pat I wolde mene.  
For euere it is a liche grene.  
ye grete Loue Whiche I haue.  
Wher of I can not bope saue.  
my speche and pis obedience.  
And pis ful ofte my silence.  
I breke. and is ye fiste poynt.  
Wher of pat I am out of poynt.  
In pis. and pis it is no proude.  
**N**ow pame vpon pat ower side.  
To telle my disobeyance.  
ful sore it stand to my greuance.  
And may not synke in to my wit.  
ful ofte tyme she me bit.  
To leuen here and chese a newe.  
And seip if I ye sope thelde.  
hold fer I stonde fro here grace.  
I shold loue in an ower place.  
For per of wole I desokye.  
for also wel she myghte seye.  
So take ye inoone per it sit.  
As bynnyng pat in to my wit.  
for pere was neuer rotes tre.  
pat stood so faste in his degre.  
pat I ne stonde more faste.  
vpon her Loue. and may not caste.  
my herte a weye al pouh I wolde.  
for god wot pouh I neuere sholde.  
ene here wythe pte as tye pis day.  
yet stant it so pat I ne may.  
here Loue out of here brest renue.  
pis is a wonder retenue.  
pat manye wher she wole or noon.  
my herte is euere more in oon.  
So pat I can noon ower chese.  
For wher per pat I wyne or lese.  
I must here louen til I deye.  
And pis I breke as be pat weye.  
here hestes and here comandynge  
Bot trewly in noon ower ynges.  
for pi my fader what is more.  
Touchend vn to pis ilke Lore.  
I you beseeche after ye forme.  
pat ye pleyntly me wolde enforme.  
So pat I may myn herte reule.  
In Loues cause after ye reule.  
**M**urmur in aduise ita concipit  
re supbz. **V**ena qd ex bina sorte per  
urget cum. **O**bina fortune cum  
spes in amore resistit. **T**ron sine me

**T**ali numero plangit amans. **H**ic  
loquitur de murmur et plangu qui  
sup omes alios inobedientie peccaciones  
et minister illi deseruunt.

**S**oward pis vice of Whiche wotete.  
per ben per tlyre of yllke estete.  
here name is murmur and compleinte.  
pere can no man here chere pelyte.  
To set a glad semblant per quie.  
for pouh fortune make hem wyne.  
per grauaten per and if per lese.  
per is no weye for to chese.  
Wher of per myghte stonde appesed.  
So ben per comunly disshesed.  
per may no welpe ne pouerte.  
Attempre hem to ye deserte.  
Of byxumnesse be no wise.  
for ofte tyme per despise.  
The good fortune as ye badde.  
As per no mannes reson hadd.  
myth prude wher of per be blinde.  
And right of such a maner kynde.  
pere be Louer al pouh per haue.  
Of Loue al pat per wolde arue.  
per wol per grauache be som weye.  
pat per wole not to Loue obeye.  
vpon ye troupe as per do shulde.  
And if hem lakke per pat per wolde.  
A noon per falle in such a peyne.  
pat euere dubyuntly per pleyne.  
vpon fortune and curse and arie.  
And per wol not here herres pte.  
To suffre til it bette falle.  
for pi if you amouges alle.  
Hast vied pis condiciow.  
**I**f some in pi confession. **C**onfessor.  
I wolle telle me pleyntly what you art.  
**M**y fader I bekwolle a part. **A**mas.  
So as ye tolden here aboue.  
Of murmur and compleint of Loue.  
pat for I se no sped comende.  
A ven fortune compleynende.  
I am as who seip euere mo.  
And eke ful ofte tyme also.  
Whan so is pat I se and here.  
heip word and heip chere.  
Of my Lady I mucke a noon.  
But wordes dar I speke noon.  
Wher of she myghte be dyspleed.  
for in myn herte I am desshesed.  
Wip many a murmur god it wot.  
pis drynke I in myn owne wot.  
And pouh I make no semblant  
at myn herte is al disobeyant.  
And in pis wise I me confesse.  
Of pat ye clepe dubyuntly.  
I wolle telle what youre conseil is.



**H**one and I. ye rede pis.  
What so befallle of oþer weye.  
pat you to Loues heste oþere.  
As fer as you it myghte suffise.  
ffor ofte sike in suche a wyse.  
Obedience in Loue aunylep  
Where al a mannes freynge failep.  
And ensample of pis matere.  
A tale I fynde as you shalt here.

**T**he narrat contra anyori mote  
dientes ad comendacione obediencie  
confessor sup eodem exemplū ponit  
Vbi dicit qd cum quedam Regis fili  
he filia in sue inuentatis floribz pul  
cherima ex eius nouerit inuentatis  
mibz in vitulum turpissimū transfor  
mata extitit. Florentius tunc inpe  
ratoris claudi nepos miles in armis  
strenuissimus amoris qz legibz mte  
deus. ipam in sua obediencia in pul  
critudinem pristinam mirabiliter  
transformauit.

**T**her whilom was by dayes olde.  
A Worin knyght 2 as men tolde.  
He was neben to pempour.  
And of his court a courtois.  
Wifles he was florent he highte.  
He was a man pat mochel myghte.  
Of armes he was desirous.  
Cheualours and amercours.  
And for ye fame of worldes speche.  
Straitte auentures for to seche.  
he rode ye marche al aboute.  
And fel pat tyme as he was oute.  
ffortune whicher makey euery pried.  
To breke and fute of mannes spied.  
Shop as pis knyght tod in a pas.  
pat he be strengye take was.  
And to a Castel pei hym ladde.  
Wher pat he felwe frendes hadde.  
And it fel pat ilke troude.  
pat he hay Wip a dedly wounde.  
ffightende his oþen houndes slayn.  
Braunchus whicher to ye capetayn.  
Was sone and heur wher of be Wrope.  
ye fader and ye moder bope.  
pat knyght Braunchus was of his hond.  
ye Woriness of al his lond.  
And farn pei Wolden do vengeance.  
vpon florent bot remembrance.  
pat pei toke of his Woriness.  
Of knyghthod and of gentillesse.  
And how he stood of cosynage.  
To pempour. made hem asswage.  
And dorsten not sten hem for feer.  
In met disputon pei were.  
Among hem self. What was ye beste.

**T**her was a lady ye slieste.  
Of al pat men knelle po.  
So old she myghte vniuers go.  
And was gynnidame vñ to ye dede.  
And she Wip pat bequm to rede.  
And seide hold she Wold bynny hym iune.  
pat she shal hym to depe Wymme.  
Al only of his olde graunt.  
purch strengye of verrey couenant.  
Wip oute blame of euy Wight.  
Anoon she seide for pis knyght.  
And of here sone she alleide.  
ye dep. and pus to him she seide.  
fflorent hold so you be to Wite.  
Of braunchus dep men shal respice  
As nob to take a vengeance.  
He so you stonde in iugement.  
vpon certeyn condicion.  
pat yold vpon a question.  
Whicher I shal axe shalt answere.  
And ouer pis you shalt eke were.  
That if you of ye sope faile.  
yer shal noon oþer yn anale.  
pat you ne shalt yn dech receue.  
And for men shal ye not deceue.  
pat you yer of myght ben auised.  
you shalt haue day and tyme assised.  
And leue saufsly for to Wende.  
He so pat at pi dayes ende.  
you come ayen Wip yn ays.  
**T**his knyght whicher Worin was 2 Wye.  
This lady preyep pat he may Wite.  
And haue it vnder seales Wite.  
What question it shold be.  
ffor whicher he shal in pat degre.  
Stonds of his hyf in Juxartie.  
Wip pat she feruey compaignie.  
And seide florent on loue it honney.  
Al pat to myn ayynn louny.  
What alle Wommen most desyre.  
pis Wole I axe. and in pempne.  
Wher as you hast most knowlechynge.  
Take counseil vpon pis ayunge.  
fflorent pis ying hay vnder take.  
ye day was set ye tyme take.  
vnder his seal he Wrot his oy.  
In such a wyse and forp he goy.  
Hom to his Enes court a yen.  
To Whom hise auentures pleyu.  
He tolde of pat hym is befallle.  
And vpon pat pei Weren alle.  
ye Wifest of ye lond assent.  
Bot napale of on assent.  
pei myghten nouht accorden plat.  
Don seide pis an oþer pat.  
Afer ye disposicion.  
Of naturel complexion.



To som woman it is plesance.  
 pat to an ower is grouwance.  
 But such a pynge in special.  
 Whiche to hem alle in general.  
 Is most plesant and most desired.  
 A boue alle ower and most conspired.  
 Such a pynge can yei not fynde.  
 The constellation ne be fynde.  
 And thus florent wyi oure cure.  
 Most sconde vpon his auenture.  
 And is al shapen in to ye love  
 As in defaute of his answere.  
 His knyght hap leuere for to dye.  
 pan breke his troupe and for to lye.  
 In place where he was shoure.  
 And shapen goon a yen per fore.  
 When tyme come he wold his leue.  
 pat leuere wold he not beleue.  
 And preyed his Gine he be not wrope.  
 For pat is o poynt of his ope.  
 he seip pat no man shal hym breke.  
 wold suffere wold me here speke.  
 pat he pauerature die.  
 And thus he wente for his weye.  
 Alone as a knyght auenturous.  
 And in his ope was curious.  
 To wite what was best to do.  
 And as he wold alone so.  
 he cam nyh yere he wold be.  
 In a forest vnder a tre.  
 he seip where sat a creature.  
 A lofly woman myshly figure.  
 pat for to speke of flesch and bon.  
 So foul yet seih he neuere non.  
 his knyght beheld here redily.  
 And as he wold haue passed by.  
 She cleped hym and had a byde.  
 And he his hors heued a fide.  
 po turney. and to here he wold.  
 And yere he hound and a bood.  
 To wite what she wold mene.  
 And she began hym to hemene.  
 And seyde florent be y name.  
 wold hast on honde such a game.  
 pat but you be ye better adised.  
 y deth is shapen and dunsed.  
 pat al ye wold ne may ye saue.  
 For if pat you my conseil haue.  
 Florent whan he yis herde.  
 Du to yis olde wyght answered.  
 And of here counseil he here preyde.  
 And she a yen to hym yis seide.  
 florent if i for ye yis shape.  
 pat you myght me yis dep as kape.  
 And take a worship for yis dede.  
 What shal i haue to my mede.  
 What ying quod he pat you wold aye.

I wold neuere a better tyme.  
 Quod she but first er you be sped.  
 you schalt me leue such a wed.  
 pat i wold haue y troupe on honde.  
 pat you shalt be myn housbonde.  
 Nay seip florent pat may not be.  
 And pan for yis weye quod she.  
 And if you wold wyi oure red.  
 you shalt be slyerly ded.  
 florent behyt here gold y noll.  
 Of lond of rente of part of plow.  
 But al pat countrey she at noll.  
 po fel yis knyght in muchel poult.  
 wold hop he for yis noll comp y yem.  
 he wold not what is best to sem.  
 And poult as he wold to and fro.  
 pat chese he mot on of ye tlo.  
 Or for to take here to his wif.  
 Or elles for to lese his luf.  
 And pan he cast his auantage.  
 pat she was of so gret an age.  
 pat she may leue but a while.  
 And poult to put here in an yle.  
 Where pat no man shold here knolle.  
 Til she wyi dep were ouerwolle.  
 And thus yis wyng lufy knyght.  
 Du to yis olde lofly wyght.  
 po seide. if pat noon ower chaunce.  
 may make my delmyerance.  
 But only yis same speche.  
 Which as po seip you shalt me tede.  
 haue here myn hond i shal ye wedde.  
 And thus his troupe he seip to wedde.  
 wyi pat she frouncey vpon ye brolle.  
 yis couenant i wold noll.  
 She seip if euy ower ying.  
 But pat you hast of my redym.  
 ffo dep y body may respite.  
 I wold ye of y troupe quyte.  
 And elles be noon ower weye.  
 wold herfene me what i wold seye.  
 Whan you art come in to ye place.  
 wher noll yei make gret manace.  
 And vpon yis compunge abide.  
 yei wold a noon ye same tyde.  
 Oppose ye of yis answere.  
 I wold you wold no pynge forbere.  
 Of pat you wold be yis beste.  
 And if you myght so fynde rest.  
 wel is. for pan is yere no more.  
 And elles yis shal be my lord.  
 pat you shalt sem vpon yis molde.  
 pat alle women leuest wold.  
 Be souereyn of mannes love.  
 ffor what woman is so aboue.  
 She hap as who seih al here wille.  
 And elles may not she fulfille.



What ying here were leue to haue.  
 Wip me answere you shalt saue.  
 pr self and ope Wise nouht.  
 And Whan you hast ym eide Wrouht.  
 Come here a yen you shalt me fynde.  
 And let no ying out of pi mynde.  
 He got hym fory Wip heuy chere.  
 As he put not in what manere.  
 He may pr Woldes joye atreue.  
 And if he die he hay a peyne.  
 And if he lyue he mot hym bynde.  
 To suchon Whiche of all fynde.  
 Of Wommen pr vusemelleste.  
 prus Wot he not what is pr beste.  
 Bot he hym leef or be hym looy.  
 On to pr Castel fory he got.  
 His ful answere for to geue.  
 Or for to dery or for to lyue.  
 Fory Wip his conseil come pr Lord.  
 pr pynge scoden of record.  
 He eide by for pr Lady soone.  
 And fory she am pat olde moue.  
 In presence of pr remenant.  
 pr sturme of al pr couenant.  
 pr Wot reherced oyrnly.  
 And to florent she bad for pr.  
 That he shal telle his aby.  
 As he put Wot what is pr prys.  
 florent sey al pat euere he couye.  
 But such Wot cony pr non to mouye.  
 pr he for yeste or for behest.  
 In prate eny Wise his dey weste.  
 And prus he taryer longe and late.  
 Til pat pr Lady bad alprate.  
 pr he shal for pr donee fynal.  
 pr his answere in spacial.  
 Of pat she hadde hym first opposed.  
 And prus he hay treldy suposed.  
 pr hym may of no prut helpe.  
 Bot it so be pr Wordes helpe.  
 Whiche as pr Wommen hay hym trauht.  
 Wot of he hay an hope caught.  
 pr he shal ben excused so.  
 And told out plemly his Wille pr.  
 And Whan pat pr matrone herde.  
 pr maner hold pr knyght answorde.  
 She sende a treson Wot you be.  
 pr hast told prus pr pryete.  
 Whiche alle Wommen most desue.  
 Wot pr pr Wot a pr.  
 pr napeles in such a pr.  
 florent is of his answere gyt.  
 And pr began his forde nelle.  
 for he mot goon or ben vntrelle.  
 To here. Whiche his wyllye hadde.  
 Bot he Whiche al shame hadde.  
 Got fory in stede of his penance.

And takey pr fortune of his chaunce.  
 As he put Wot Wip troupe affaynted.  
 pr olde Wight hym hay affaynted.  
 In place where as he here leste.  
 florent his Woful hed by leste.  
 And seih pr velle where she sat.  
 Whiche was pr Doplest what.  
 That euere man cast on his phe.  
 Here nose basse here byldes hie.  
 here phen finale and deye set.  
 Heres chekes ben Wip teres wet.  
 And ryuelen as in empti skyn.  
 Hongynge down by to here chym.  
 Here lippes schronken ben so age.  
 pr was no grace in pr visage.  
 Here frount was naruh here lokkes hore.  
 She lobed fory as don a more.  
 Here neckle was short he sholdres coude.  
 pr myght a mannes lust discourde.  
 here body nyet and no myght final.  
 And shorth to deserye here al.  
 She hay no lip Wip oute a lab.  
 pr Wot by to pr Wille sak.  
 She profrey here by to pr bynaye.  
 And bad hym as he hay behyght.  
 So as she hay be hys Warrant.  
 pr he here holde couenant.  
 And be pr bridel she hym sefey.  
 pr god Wot hold she hym plesey.  
 Of suche Wordes as she speyey.  
 hym penkey Welnyh his herte bryey.  
 for forde pat he may not fle.  
 Bot he Wot vntrelle be.  
 Toke hold a sekeman for his hele.  
 Takey baldemoyne Wip camele.  
 And Wip pr murre takey pr suare.  
 prut byon such a maner luare.  
 prant florent as in pr dicte.  
 he dymkey pr battir Wip pr stote.  
 he medley forde Wip lyfuate.  
 And by pr as who sey demyge.  
 pr prut shal be cast a Wip.  
 byon suchon Whiche as pr Wye.  
 pr old and Dopley ouer al.  
 Bot nede he mot pr nede shal.  
 he Wotde algate his wyllye holde.  
 As euere knyght pr to is holde.  
 What hay so euere hym is besulle.  
 prut she be pr foulest of alle.  
 pr to pr honour of Womynhed.  
 hym prut he Wotde take hede.  
 So pat for pr pure mentlesse.  
 As he couye best a dresse.  
 In vanyes as she Wot to toze.  
 he set here on his hors before.  
 And fory he takey his Wye softe.  
 No wonder prut he sibe ofte.



But as an oule fleeth be nyghte.  
Out of alle briddes fighthe.  
Fright so his knyght on dayes brode.  
In clos hym held and shap his rode.  
On myghtes tyme til pe tye.  
pat he come yere he wolde abyde.  
And pryncely wy oute noyse.  
he bynyng his soules myghte coyse.  
To his castel in such a wyse.  
pat no man myght here shap adyse.  
Til she in to pe chambre cam.  
Where he his pryncie counseil nam.  
Of such men as he most truste.  
And told hem pat he nedes moste.  
his beste wedde to his wyf.  
ffor elles hadde he lost hye lyf.  
pe pryncie women were assent.  
That sholde be of his assent.  
He rugges a noon of dulle.  
And as it was pat tyme lalle.  
She hadde bay she hadde reste.  
And was arayed to pe beste.  
But wy no craft of combes brode.  
pei myghte here hore lottes shode.  
And she wolde not be shode.  
ffor no counseil. and yere perfore.  
wy suche a tye as po was bised.  
Ordemen pat it was excusd.  
And hid so craft alid aboute.  
pat no man myght sen hem oute.  
But when she was full arayed.  
And here a tye was al assayed.  
po was she fouler on to se.  
ffor yet it may noon oyer be.  
pei were wedded in pe nyghte.  
So wo begon was neuer bright.  
As he was pame of marriage.  
And she began to pleye and rage.  
As who seip I am wel knowh.  
But he no pinge per of lowh.  
ffor she took pame chier on honde.  
And clepeth hym he husboure.  
And seip my lord go we to bedde.  
ffor I to pat entent wedde.  
pat you shalt be my worldes blisse.  
And profrey hym wy pat to kisse.  
As she a lussy lady were.  
his body myght wel be yere.  
But as of pouht & of memorie.  
his herte was in putgatorie.  
ffor yet for strengthe of matrimoyne.  
he myghte make noon esoyne.  
pat he ne mot algates myne.  
To gon to bedde of compaignie.  
And whane pei were abedde naked.  
wy oute sleep he was awakid.  
he torney on pat oyer side.

ffor pat he wolde his yhen hide.  
ffor lokyn on pat foule wyght.  
The chambre was ful of lyght.  
pe curtynes were of sendel ymyne.  
his newe bride whiche lay ymyne.  
pouh it be nouht of his accord.  
In armies she bechyt here lord.  
he wolde hym towe a penward po.  
ffor noll she seip we ben bope oon.  
And he lay stille as eny stoon.  
ffor euere in oon she spat and preyde.  
And had hym penke on what he seide.  
Whan pat he took here be pe hond.  
he herde and vnderstood pe bond.  
How he was set to his penance.  
And as it were a man in trauce.  
he torney hym al so dely.  
And seip a lady lay hym by.  
Of cyhtene wynter of age.  
Whiche was fairest of visage.  
pat euere in al his world he seip.  
And as he wolde take here nyh.  
she put here hond and be his leue.  
Resouhte hym pat he wolde leue.  
And seip pat for to wynter or lese.  
he mot oon of tbo ymyges chese.  
Where he wol haue hir such on nyht.  
Or elles vpon dayes lyht.  
ffor he shal not haue bope tbo.  
And he began to sorbe po.  
In many a wyse and cast his pouht.  
ffor al pat yit coupe he nouht.  
Dyde hym self whiche was pe beste.  
And she pat wolde his herte veste.  
pratey pat he sholde algate.  
Til at pe laste lunge and late.  
he seide o ye my lyfes hele.  
Seip what yoll lyste in my querele.  
I not what anllere I shal yue.  
But euere whil I may lyue.  
I wol pat ye be my mayforeste.  
ffor I am not my selue wesse.  
Whiche is pe beste vnto my chere.  
yus graunt I yoll myn hole chere.  
ches for vs bope I yoll preyre.  
And what as euere as ye saie.  
Right as ye wole so wole I.  
wy lord she seid graunt mercy.  
ffor of yis word pat ye noll seyn.  
That ye haue maad me souereyn.  
my destyne is ouerpassed.  
pat neuer her after shal be passed.  
my beaute noll whiche I noll haue.  
Til I be take in to my graue.  
Bope nyht and day as I am noll.  
I shal alday be such to yoll.  
The kynges doughter of cyzile.

And pryncie as he  
was torued fiv.



I am, and felt bot hipe a while.  
 As I was wy my fader late.  
 That my stepmoder for an hate,  
 Whiche tollard me she hay begonne.  
 ffor schop me til I hadde wonne.  
 The loue and ye souereynte.  
 Of what knyght pat in his degre.  
 Alle oper passer of good name.  
 And as men fern ye bep ye same.  
 ye dede prouey it is so.  
 Ius am I yowes euere mo.  
 I was plesance and goye molle.  
 Schon wy oper pleise and solle.  
 yei lyue longe and wel yei ferden.  
 And clerkes pat yei chauce herden.  
 Thei witten it in eydence.  
 To teche holi obedience.  
 may wel fortune a man to loue.  
 And set hym in his lust aboue.  
 As it befel vnto yei knyght.  
**F**or yei my sone if you do right. **ess.**  
 you shall vnto yei loue obeye.  
 And folke here wil be al weye.  
 yei holi fader so I wyle. **Amans.**  
 ffor ye haue told me such a skyle.  
 Of yei ensample now to fore.  
 pat I shal euere mo perfore.  
 hier after ward myn obseruance.  
 To loue and to his obeisance.  
 The better kepe and ouer yei.  
 Of prude if yei ouht elles is.  
 Wher of pat I me shryue shal.  
 What ying it is in special.  
 my fader axe I vob prey.  
**N**ow lest my sone and I shal seye.  
 ffor yei por is furquiderie. **Confessor.**  
 Whiche stant wy pryde of compaignie.  
 Wherof you shall here a noon.  
 To knolle if you haue mltre or noon.  
 vpon ye forme as you shall here.  
 vob vnder soude wel ye matere.  
**Q**uia scire putat se psumpt nos  
 at. ite sibi consulem quem pu  
 tat esse parem. Qui magis astutus  
 reputat se vincere bellum. In laq  
 os veneris foraus ipso cadit. Sepe  
 cupido vni sibi qui psumit aman  
 tem. fallit et in vacuas spes redit  
 ipa vias. **Q**ue loquitur de terra  
 specie supbie que psumptio dicitur  
 amnis mlturam sedm viciu Confes  
 sor simpliciter declarat.  
**S**urquiderie is pulke vice.  
 Of prude Whiche ye priede office.  
 hay in his court. I wol not knolle.  
 ye troupe til it ouerprolle.  
 vpon his fortune and his grace.

Comp hadde I wist ful ofce a place.  
 ffor he dop al his ying be gesso.  
 And vobey al sbernesse.  
 noon oper counseil good hym seney.  
 Bot such as he hym self demey.  
 ffor in such wise as he compasser.  
 his wit al one alle oper passer.  
 And is purgh prude so purgh sought.  
 pat he alle oper set at nouht.  
 And wene of hym seluen so.  
 pat such as he pere be no mo.  
 So faw so seuli ne so wis.  
 And pub he wolde bere yei prys.  
 A boue alle oper and nouht for yei.  
 he sei not ones graund mercy.  
 To god Whiche alle grace sende.  
 So pat hys wites he despende.  
 vpon hym self as pouh per were.  
 vto god Whiche myght auale pere.  
 But al vpon his owne wit.  
 he stant til he falle in yei pit.  
**Q**ue tractat Confessor cu amante  
 sup illa salt psumptione ex an? sup  
 bia qui plures faw amant cu ma  
 ioris certitudinis in amore specie sibi  
 promittunt in expediti distanciantur.  
 And vob yei in yei same wise.  
 yei vice vpon yei cause of loue.  
 So proude set yei hert aboue.  
 And dop hym plesnhy for to wene.  
 pat he to loue eny queene.  
 Hay werynesse and suffaunce.  
 And so wy oute purueaunce.  
 ful ofce he helpe by so heie.  
 pat chippes fallen in his phe.  
 And eke ful ofce he wene yei.  
 per as he nouht beloued is.  
 To be beloued alper best.  
 vob sone tel what yei leso.  
 Of yei pat I haue told yei here.  
**A** fader be not in a wer.  
 ffor he per be no man lesse.  
 Of eny manere werynesse.  
 pat halt hym lase weryn min g.  
 To be beloued. and nouht for yei.  
 I seye in excusynge of me.  
 To alle men pat loue is fre.  
 And cerces pat may no man wene  
 ffor loue is of hym self so derne.  
 It lutey in a mannes herte.  
 But pat shal me nouht a ferte.  
 To wene for to be weryn.  
 To loue bot in hert merci.  
 Bot sive of pat yei wolde mene.  
 pat I shulde oper wise wene.  
 To be beloued ram I was.  
 I am beknolle as in pat cas.



My good fader I wole telle you.

**A**ll that I fader I wole telle you. My good fader I wole telle you. I ful ofte it hay befallē or pis. I wright hope pat was not certē. My Wenynghay beset in ven. To trust in ying pat halp me nouht. For onliche of myn olbne poutht. For as it semer as a belle. Lik to pe wordes pat men telle. Auswerer right so ne more ne less. To yow my fader I confesse. Such wil my wit hay ouersee. pat what so hope me behet. ful many a tyme I wene it sop. For finally no sped it dop. Ius may I telle as I can. Wenynghay begyley many a man. So hay it me right wel I wot. For if a man wol in a bot. Whiche is wy oute botme wolde. He most nedes ouerwolde. Picht so Wenynghay ferd be me. For whenne I wende next haue be. As I be my Wenynghay caste. I wene was I fedre at pe laste. And as a folde my bolbe inbende. Whanne al was failed pat I wende. For pi my fader as of pis. pat my Wenynghay hay gon amys. Touchyng to surquidre. I wene my penance er I deye. For if pe wolde in ony forme. Of pis mure a tale enforme. Whiche were a pen pis vice set. I holde sure wel pe bet.

**E**ne point confessor exemplū otu illos qui de suis viribz psumentes debiliores efficiuntur. Et narrat qualiter ille capiteus miles in armis pbatissimus de sua psumens audacia inuocatione ad suos tepore necessitatis ex recordia tui et no aliter punitus puenisse afferunt. Unde in obisione ciuitatis thebarū ad ipē quodam die corā suis hostibz ad debelandum se obtulit ignis de celo subito supueniens ipm armatum rotulit in cineres combussit.

**I** none in al manner wise. Surquidre is to despise. Wher of I fynde write yus. The proude knyght capiteus. He was of such surquidre. pat he purgh his chynallre. Upon hym self so nuche tryste. That to pe goddes hym ne liste.

In no querel to beseeche. For seide it was an ydel speche. Whiche cause was of pure drede. For lack of herre and for uuede. And vpon such psumpcion. he held his proude opinion. Til at pe laste vpon a day. Aboute thebes where he lay. Whan it of sege was beleyn. This as pe croniges seyn. In alle menes sht yere. Whan he was proudest in his gere. And wouhte hold no pnyght him dere. ful armed wy his sheld and spere. As he pe cite wolde assaile. God toke hym self pe batayle. And yem pe prde and fro pe sky. A furi powder sodeynli. He sende and hym to powder smot. And yus pe prde whiche was hot. Whanne he most in his strengthe wende. Was brent and lost wy outen ende. So pat it prouey wel perfore. pe strengthe of man is sone lore. For yif pat it wel gouerne. And ouer pis a man may lerne. pat eke ful ofte tyme it greuey. Whan pat a man hym self beleuey. As poult it sholde hym wel beseme. pat he alle oper men can deme. And hay foryete his olbne vice. A tale of hem pat ben so nyce. And ferne hem self to be so wise. I shal pe telle in such a wise. Wher of you shalt ensample take. pat you no such ying vnder take.

**Q**uic loquitur confessor contra illos qui de sua scia psumentes aliorū condiciohes diuidicantes indiscere redarguit. Et narrat exemplū de qdā pynape pēne hungarie qmā uo qui ad frēm suū paupibz i publico vidit humiliatū ipm redarguens do i contrariū edocē psumebat. sed rex omni sapientia pōllens ipm sic incaute psumens ad hūilitatis memoriam terribili pūdenā infācā.

**I**fynde vpon surquidre. tignit. holt pat whilom of hungarie. He olde dayes was a kynge. Wyse and honest in al ying. And so beset vpon a day. And pat was in pe money of man. At yllke tyme it was vlande. Ius kynge wy noble purnance. Hay for hym self his char armed. Wher yune he wolde ride amayed.



Out of the cite for to pleye.  
 Wyf lordes and wyf gret noble.  
 Of lusti folk pat were yonge.  
 Where som pleyde and some soure.  
 And some gon and some ride.  
 And some pike here hors aside.  
 And bridle hem wold in wold oute.  
 The kyng his phe caste aboute.  
 Til he was at pe laste war.  
 And seih compunge a yen his char.  
 Til pilgrym of so gret age.  
 pat rich yn to adrie ymage.  
 pat weren pale and fide helled.  
 And as a bussh whiche is be felled.  
 here berdes were hore and white.  
 There was of kynde but a lite.  
 pat pe ne semen fulli dede.  
 pe comen to pe kyng and bede.  
 Som of his good par charite.  
 And he wyf gret humilite.  
 Out of his char to grounde lepte.  
 And hem in bove his armes lepte.  
 And feste hem bove for and hond.  
 Before pe lordes of pe lond.  
 And pat hem of his good per to.  
 And whan he hay pe dede do.  
 he goy in to his char a yem.  
 so was murmur so was deseyn.  
 so was complaynte on euery side.  
 pe seiden of here olde pride.  
 Eche vntal ower what is pe.  
 Our kyng hay do pe ying amys.  
 So to abesse his realte.  
 pat euery man it myghte se.  
 And humbled hym in such a wise.  
 To hem pat weren of noon enpryse.  
 yus was it spoken to and fro.  
 Of hem pat were wyf hym po.  
 Al pruely behynde his bak.  
 Got to him self no man spak.  
 pe kynges broper in pfeuce.  
 Was pille tyme and gret offence.  
 he took per of. and was pe same.  
 Aboue alle ower whiche most blame.  
 Upon his luge lord hay leyd.  
 And hay yn to pe lordes seyd.  
 Anoon as he may tyme fynde.  
 per shal no ying be left behynde.  
 pat he wole speke to pe kyng.  
 And lest what fel upon pe ying.  
 The day was meti and fayr ynowh.  
 Echon wyf ower pleyede and lollh.  
 And fellen in to tales newe.  
 how pat pe freshe floures grewe.  
 And how pe grene leues pronge.  
 And how pat loue among pe yonge.  
 began pe herres pan a wake.

And euery brid hay chsen his make.  
 And yus pe mayes day to pe ende.  
 pe lede and hom a yen pe wende.  
 pe kyng was nouht so soone come.  
 pat whan he hadde his chambere nome.  
 his broper ne was redy pere.  
 And broughte a tale yn to his ere.  
 Of pat he dide such a shame.  
 In hyndrynge of his olde name.  
 When he hym self so wolde drecthe.  
 That to so foul a pore wrethe.  
 hym deynep shelle suche a simplese.  
 A yen pe stat of his noblesse.  
 And seip he shal it nomore wise.  
 And pat he mot hym self excuse.  
 Toward his lordes euerichon.  
 pe kyng stood stille as eny soon.  
 And to his tale and ere he leyde.  
 And pouht more pan he seide.  
 Bot napeles to pat he herde.  
 Wel corteysly pe kyng answered.  
 And told it sholde be amended.  
 And yus when pat here tale was ended.  
 Al redy was pe bord and drep.  
 pe kyng yn to his soup rep.  
 Among pe lordes to pe halle.  
 And when pe hadde souped alle.  
 pe token leue and fory pe go.  
 pe kyng bepouhte him self po.  
 how he his broper myghte chaste.  
 pat he pursh his surquidre.  
 Took vpon honde to despreise.  
 humilite whiche is to preise.  
 And per of yaf hym such conseil.  
 Toward his kyng pat was not heil.  
 wher of to be pe better lered.  
 he yentep to maken hym asered.  
 It fel so pat in yulle dalle.  
 per was ordeyned be pe lalle.  
 A troupe wyf a sterne brey.  
 whiche deped was po troupe of dey.  
 And in pe court wher pe kyng was.  
 A certeyn nam pe troupe of bras.  
 hay in kepynge and per of seruey.  
 That whan a lord his dey deseruey.  
 he shal pe dresful troupe bloude.  
 To fore his gate. and makey it knoude.  
 how pat pe quene ment is yeue.  
 Of dey whiche shal not be foryeue.  
 The kyng whan it was nyht a noon.  
 pe man a sente and bad hym goon.  
 To troupe at his broper gate.  
 And he whiche mot do so aloute.  
 Gop fory and dyp pe kynges heste.  
 pe lord whiche herde of pe tempeste.  
 pat he tofore his gate blew.  
 so wist he be pe lalle and knell.



**T**hat he was iherlyche ded.  
And as of help he wot no red.  
Got sende for his frendes alle.  
And told hem how it is befall.  
And pei hem axe cause why.  
Got he pe soj nouht for y.  
re wyte. and per was sorwe po.  
for it stood pilke tyme so.  
his troupe was of his sentence.  
pat per nyem no resistance.  
pei coupe ordeyne be no weye.  
pat he ne mot algate deye.  
Got if so pat he may purchase.  
To gete his dege lordes grace.  
Here wites per vpon pei caste.  
pei ben appointed at pe laste.  
**T**his lord a worthy lady hadde.  
In to his wyf. Whiche also dradde.  
Hue lordes dep. and children frue.  
Se thene hem the pei hadde a lyue.  
pat weren yonge and tendre of age.  
And of stature and of visage.  
Right faire and lusty on to se.  
pe casten pei pat he and she.  
forp wyf pe children on pe merwe.  
As pei pat weren ful of sorwe.  
Al naked but of smok and sherte.  
To tendre wyf pe kynges herte.  
His grace shulde go to seche.  
And pardon of pe dep beseeche.  
his grace pei pat woful myght.  
And eely whan pei sihe pe right.  
pei gon hem forp in such a wise.  
As you to fore hast herd deuse.  
Al naked bot here shertes one.  
pei wepte and made muche mone.  
her hear hanged a boure here eres.  
wyf snobbing and wyf fori tere.  
his lord god punne an humble pas.  
pat whilom proude and noble was.  
Wher of pe eare fore afflihte.  
Of hem pat sihen pilke sihte.  
And napeles al oppuly.  
wyf such wepyng and such cry.  
forp wyf hire children and his wyf.  
he goy to preie for his lyf.  
In to pe court whan pei becom.  
And men per ynnie haue hede nome.  
per was no might if he hem sihe.  
forp water might kepe his yhe.  
for sorwe whiche pei mazen po.  
pe kyng supposy of his wo.  
And feynyng as he nouht ne wiste.  
But napeles at his wyfste.  
men tolden hym how pat it ferde.  
And whan pat he his wonder herde.  
In haste he goy in to pe halle.

**A**nd alle at ones down pei falle.  
If eny pite may be founde.  
pe kyng whiche seep go to mownde.  
hay axed hem what is pe feue.  
why pei be depouled pere.  
his proper seide ha lord mercy.  
I wot not ower cause why.  
Got only pat pe nylt ful late.  
The troupe of dep was at my gate.  
In tokene pat I shulde deye.  
pus be we come for to prey.  
pat pe my wylles dep respite.  
**A** fool holt you art for to wite.  
pe kyng vnto his broper seip.  
pat you art of so litel seip.  
pat only for a trunpedoun.  
hast gon depouled purgh pe coun.  
you and in wif in such manere.  
forp wyf in children pat ben here.  
In siht of alle men a bouce.  
for pat you seist you art in doute.  
Of dep whiche stant vnder pe lalle.  
Of man and man it may wyf dulle.  
So pat it may parchaunce faile.  
roth shalt you nouht for in meruaile.  
pat I se my char down lyte.  
whan I beheld to fore my sihte.  
In hem pat were of so gret age.  
in yn oultue dep purgh here yunge.  
Whiche god hay set be lalle of kynde.  
Wher of I may no wote fynde.  
forp wel I wot such as pei be.  
Right such am I in my deure.  
Of flesch of blood and so shal die.  
And pus wish I pat lalle obeie.  
Of whiche pe kynges ben put vnder.  
It ouhte ben wel lasse wonder.  
in you whiche art wyf oure nede.  
for lalle on londe in such a drede.  
Whiche for to accompte is bot a iape.  
As purgh whiche you myht ouer scape.  
forp in my broper after pis.  
I rede syen pat so is.  
pat you caust drede a man so fore.  
Drede god wyf al ym herte more.  
forp al shal deie and al shal passe.  
Alc wel a leon as an asse.  
Alc wel a begger as a lord.  
Dolwardes dep in on acord.  
pei schollen stonde and in pe wise.  
pe kyng hay wyf hie wodes wise.  
his broper taught and al for yeue.  
**F**or in my sone if you wolt lue. **Con.**  
In vertu. you most vice escheue. **fess.**  
And wyf lalle herte humbleste seibe.  
So pat you be nouht surquidous.  
**A**y fader I am amorous. **Amans.**



Wher of I wolde yow befeche.  
 That ye me som ensample teche.  
 Whiche myghte in Loues cause stonde.  
 If yow son shalt vnderstonde. **con-**  
 In loue and in oþer þynge alle. **fessor.**  
 If þat surquidrie fulle.  
 It may to hym not wel betide.  
 Whiche þer þulke vice of pride.  
 Whiche to þer wisdom in to benyng.  
 And forfastnesse in to lesynge.  
 þurh foul ymaginacion.  
 And for þin enformacion.  
 þat þou þis vice as I ye rede.  
 Eschewe þalt a tale I rede.  
 Whiche felt whilom be daies olde.  
 So as ye clerke oude tolde.

**¶** *Inc in speciali tractat confessor  
 ad amantem contra illos de ppria for-  
 mitate psumentes amorem nullie  
 ris dedignatur. Et narrat exem-  
 plum quidam pncipis filius nomine  
 natus est in tempore ad ipse vna  
 cionis causa quedam ceruus solus cum  
 suis amicis exagitarer in trauem si-  
 tim in aerebus necessitate compulsus  
 ad bibendum de quodam fonte pñ se  
 inclinavit. Vbi ipse faciem suam pulche-  
 rissimam in aqua papiens putabat se  
 p hoc illam rursus quam qua potest et  
 hoc vocant in flumine coram oculis su-  
 is potius conspexisse de cui amore  
 confestim languens. ut ipam ad se  
 de fonte extraheret plumbz blandi-  
 cis adulabatur. sed cum illud pficere  
 nullatenus potuit p nimio languo-  
 re deficiens contra lapides ibidem  
 adiacentes caput exuberans ceruicibus  
 effudit. Et sic de ppria pulchritudine  
 qui fuerat psumptuosus de ppria pul-  
 chritudine fatuatus interit.*

**¶** *¶* Her was whilom a lordes sone.  
 Whiche of his pride a nice wone.  
 þat caught. þat wrope to his liche.  
 To sechen al þe wordes riche.  
 þer was no woman for to loue.  
 So hi he set hym self a boue.  
 Of stature and of beaute bope.  
 þat hym þouhte alle wimen bope.  
 So was þere no comparison.  
 As towarde his condicion.  
 þis yonge lord raras hite.  
 To freunge of loue bolle myghte.  
 his herte whiche is in a fild.  
 þor at þe laste he was begiled.  
 þor of goddes purueuance.  
 It fel hym on a day parchaunce.  
 That he in al his proude fare.

In to þe forest began to fare.  
 Amonges oþer þat þere were.  
 To huntre and to disporte hym þere.  
 And whan he come in to þe place.  
 Wher þat he wolde make his chace.  
 þe houndes weren in a proll.  
 Encoupled and þe hornes bloude.  
 þe gret herte a noon was founde.  
 Whiche swifte feet set vpon þe grounde.  
 And he wrope spore in horses side.  
 hym hasten faste for to ride.  
 Til alle men beleft behinde.  
 And as he wrode vnder a hunde.  
 Beside a roche as I ye telle.  
 he seih wher sprong a lusty welle.  
 þe day was wonder hoot wy alle.  
 And such a þurst was on hym falle.  
 þat he most oþer deye or drynke.  
 And down he lichte and by þe bynke.  
 he tied his hore vnto a braunche.  
 And leyd hym lode for to stanche.  
 þis þurst. and as he took his look.  
 In to þe welle and hede took.  
 he seih þe lik of his visage.  
 And wende þere were an ymage.  
 Of such a rympe as þo was faie.  
 Wher of þat loue his herte assaie.  
 þe day as it was after sene.  
 Of his sotte and made hym wene.  
 It were a woman þat he seih.  
 þe more he cam þe welle nyh.  
 þe nere cam she to hym a yem.  
 So wist he neuere what to seyn.  
 þor whan he wepte he seih here wepe.  
 And whan he grette he took kepe.  
 þe same word she arde also.  
 And þus began þe nelle wo.  
 þat whilom was to hym so straunge.  
 þo made hym loue an hard eschaunge.  
 To sette his herte and to begynne.  
 þat þat he myghte neuere wynn.  
 And euere among he began to loute.  
 And preyed þat she to hym come oute.  
 And oþer while he goop a fere.  
 And oþer while he drallex nere.  
 And euere he found here in o place.  
 he wep he crye he axep grace.  
 þere as he myghte nere noon.  
 So þat a yen þe roche of soon.  
 As he þat knelle noon oþer red.  
 he smot hym self til he was ded.  
 Wher of þe rymphes of þe welle.  
 And oþer þat þere weren elles.  
 In to þe wodes þey longynge.  
 þor þere þere þat þe haue.  
 þer þe arene þe hym graue.  
 And þan out of his sepulture.



per prout a noon par aventure.  
 Of flowers such a wonder sight.  
 par men ensample take myght.  
 Upon ye dedes which he dede.  
 As ye was sene in yllke stede.  
 For in ye wynter fresh and fair.  
 ye flowers ben which is contrarie.  
 To hynde and so was ye folie.  
 Which fel of his surquidrie.  
**W**as he which lone hadde in deseyn.  
 Worst of alle oyer was beseyn.  
 And as he sette his pryde most hie.  
 He was deest wroth in lous yhe.  
 And most beyned in his wit.  
 Wher of ye remembraunce is yit.  
 So pat you myght ensample take.  
 And eke alle oyer for his sake.  
**W**hy fader as touchyng of me.  
 This vice I wente for to fle.  
 Which of his weynyng overtolde.  
 And nameliche of yung which molde.  
 In lous cause or wele or wo.  
 yit prides I me neuere so.  
 But wolde god grace sende.  
 pat tolward me my lady wende.  
 As I. tollurdes here wene.  
 my lone sholde sone be sene.  
 yere sholde go no pride a place.  
 For I am fer fro yllke grate.  
 As for to speke of tyme now.  
 So mot I suffre and preyre yow.  
 pat ye wolde nye on oyer side.  
 If yere be eny poynt of pride.  
 Wher of it nedey to be shryue.  
**W**hy sone god it ye foryeue.  
 If you haue eny yung mysdo.  
 Touchyng of yis but euer mo.  
 yere is in oyer yit of pride.  
 Which neuer coupe his wordes hide.  
 pat he ne wole hym self auante.  
 yere may no yung his tynge daunte.  
 pat he ne clapey as a belle.  
 Wher of if you wolt pat I telle.  
 It is behouely for to here.  
 So pat you myght in tynge stere.  
 Tolward ye world and stonde in grace.  
 Which lakke ofte in many place.  
 To hym which can not sate fulle.  
 Which elles sholde haue his wille.  
**I**n magniloque p[er]am minut iactan-  
 da lingue. Formam qui stabiliem fir-  
 mat honore alens. Ipse sui laude me-  
 rit non parit vnde. Se sua p[er] verbi  
 iactat in orbe palam. Est q[ui] viri cul-  
 pa iactantia n[on] rubet facias. In nullu-  
 re was causat habere genas. hic  
 loquitur de quarta specie supbie que

iactantia dicitur ex au[tem] natura causa  
 tur de homo de seipso testioni phibens  
 suam virtutem merita de laude in cul-  
 pam transferre et sua fama ad ipse ex-  
 tollere velle. illam p[ro]prio ore subuenit.  
 Sed et Venus in amoris causa de isto  
 vicio maculatos a sua curia sup[er] oes  
 alios abhorrens expellit et eorum multi-  
 loquid verecundia detestatur. vnde co-  
 fessor Amanti opponens materiam  
 plenius declarat.  
**T**his vice cleped auaritaunce.  
 yit pride hap take his acquentaunce.  
 So pat wip his ouhne pris he lassep.  
 Whan he such mesure ouer passsep.  
 pat he his ouhne herald is.  
 pat first was wel is pan amys.  
 pat was praukshory is pan blame.  
 And pus ye worship of his name.  
 purth pride of his auaritaunce.  
 he turney in to vilanye.  
 I rede hold pat ye proude vice.  
 hap yllke hunt in his office.  
 Which purth ye blastet pat he blowep.  
 ye mannes fame he ouerprolep.  
 Of vertu which elles sholde spryng.  
 In to ye wordes kuolblechyng.  
 For he fordoy it al to fore.  
 And right of such amanner lore.  
 yere ben louers. for yif you.  
 art on of hem tell and sey hold.  
 When yow hast taken eny yung.  
 Of lous yfste or nouche or yung.  
 Or took yow ye for ye cold.  
 Som goodli word pat ye was told.  
 Or frendly chere or tokene or leure.  
 Wher of ym herte was ye bettre.  
 Or pat she sende ye motyng.  
 hastow for pride of yif lityng.  
 mad ym auant per as ye lyste.  
**W**olde fader pat ye wite  
 in conscience lip nouht here.  
 yit hadde I neuere such matere.  
 Wher of ym herte myght amende.  
 I tought of so mechel pat she sende.  
 he mouye and seide gret him wel.  
 And pus for pat yere is no del.  
 Wher of to make ym auant.  
 It is to reson acordant.  
 pat I may neuere bot I lie.  
 Of lous make auariterie.  
 I wot nouht what I sholde haue do.  
 If pat I hadde encheson so.  
 As ye haue seid here manyon.  
 For I fond cause neuere noon.  
 For daunter which weluph me stowh.  
 yere of I coupe telle ynowh.



And of noon oper auantunice.  
his nedey me no repentunice.  
I tolde ayeper fuyper of my hys.  
For her of am I nouht gultif.  
**W**hy sone I am wel payed wyth al.  
For wite it wel in fpecial.  
For lone of his verray iustice.  
A loue alle oper ayeper vice.  
At alle tymes most debatey.  
Wyth al his herte and most he hatey.  
And eke in alle manere wyse.  
Anamitarie is to deffuse.

As be cunsaunple pou myght wite.  
Whiche I fynde in pe bokes wite.  
**I**t pouit confessor exemplum otia  
ytos qui del de sua in amnis pbitate  
uel de suo in amoris causa desiderio co  
pleto se iactant. Et narrat qualiter  
Albino pnt Rex Longubardoz ad que  
da aliud Regem noie Gurmundoz bel  
lo morientem triumphasset. restu capi  
tis defuncti auferens apud ex ea gem  
mis et auro circaligantia in sue victorie  
memoriam fabricari conseruit. In sup  
er ipius Gurmundi filia Rosemundam  
rapiens maritali thoro i coniuge su  
copulauit. Unde qd Albino cora sui  
pegni coniugio sedente de Gurmundi  
capit adufo dno ad se inter epulas  
afferi iussit que sumptis Gxori sue Re  
gine porrexit dicens. Bibe ad pte tuo.  
Quod humisimodi et ipa opio uenara  
fecit quo facto Rex statim sup hys  
que prius gesta fuerant quatuor au  
dientibz p singula se iactauit. Regina  
uero ad talia audisset celato aro facto  
abhorrens in mortem sui sui Regis cir  
cumspecta industria conseruauit quam  
q auxiliantibz Rodolfo et Helinge  
Greni subsecuro tempore interfecti au  
mortem suam laudem tam in corpore  
de Regine qui suoz fautores postea vin  
dicauit. sed et hunc totius infortuni  
sola supbia iactancia fomice ministrabat.

**A**lbinus was pe fustre of alle.  
Whiche bar corone of Lumbardie.  
And was of gret chivalrie.  
In were a yen diuers kynges.  
So fell among oper prynces.  
For he was tyme a weye hadde.  
Wyth Gormound whiche pe ceptoz hadde.  
And was a myghty kyng also.  
For napeles it fel hym so.  
Albinus sloth hym in pe feld.  
For halp hym nouer swerd ne sheld.  
For he ne smot of his hed panne.

Wher of he took a lley pe panne.  
Of whiche he seide he wolde make.  
A cuppe for Gurmundes sake.  
To kepe and to dralke in to memorie.  
Of his bataille pe victorie.  
And thus whan he pe feld hap wonne.  
The lond anon was ouer wonne.  
And seled in his olwhue hond.  
Wher he Gurmundes daughter fond.  
Whiche made Rosemounde his he.  
And was in eueri mannes sight.  
A fyrr a fressh a lusti on.  
His herte fel to here anon.  
And such a loue on here he caste.  
For he here weddey at pe laste.  
And after pat longe tyme in reste.  
Wyth here he dwelte and to pe beste.  
For lone eche oper wonder wel.  
For she whiche fery pe blynde whel.  
Dennis whan pei be most aboue.  
In al pe hotest of his loue.  
Here whiel she torney and pei felle  
In pe maner as I shal telle.  
**T**his kyng whiche stood in al his welpe.  
Of pes of worshippe and of helpe.  
And felte hym on no side greues.  
As he pat hay his world acheued.  
For pouhte he wolde a feste make.  
And pat was for his wifes sake.  
For he pe lordes at pe feste.  
For he oberfant to his heste.  
May knolwe and so fory p hyon.  
He lect ordeyne and sende anon.  
For letters and be messagers.  
And warned alle hys offisers.  
For eueri prync be wel arised.  
For grette feldes were assaied.  
For iustynge and for tornement.  
And many a perled garnement.  
Embrouded was a yen pe day.  
For lordes in here beste a way.  
Becomen at pe tyme set.  
Don iustey wel an oper bet.  
And oper while pei torneye.  
And thus pei casten care a weye.  
And token lustes vpon honde.  
And after pou shalt vnderstonde.  
To mete in to pe kynges halle.  
For comen as pei ben beden alle.  
And whan pei were set and serued.  
For after it was deserned.  
For hein pat worpi knyghtes were.  
So as pei seten here and pere.  
For prync was poue and spoken oute.  
Among pe heroundes al aboute.  
And thus be nepe and eke aboue.  
Al was of armies and of loue.



Wher of a bouton at ye bordes.  
 men hadde many souden wordes.  
 pat of ye myrthe pat pei made.  
 ye kynge hym self began to glade.  
 Wip inne his herte and took a pride.  
 And seih ye cuppe stonde a side.  
 Which was was of gurnunides hed.  
 As ye haue herd whan he was ded.  
 And was wip gold and riche stones.  
 Reset and bounde for ye nones.  
 And stod vpon a foot on heithe.  
 Of burnes gold and wip gret fleithe.  
 Of werkmanyschipe it was begraue.  
 Of such werk as it shulde haue.  
 And was polid eke so clene.  
 pat no signe of skolle was sene.  
 Bot as it were a gnyss ey.  
 ye kynge had bere his cuppe a wey.  
 Which stod to fore hym on ye lord.  
 And sette pilke vpon his word.  
 his skulle is fet and wip perinne.  
 Wher of he had his wyf begynne.  
 Drunk wip pi fader dame he seyde.  
 And she to his bidding obeide.  
 And took ye cuppe and what hir luste.  
 She drant whiche no ying wiste.  
 What cuppe it was and pan al oute.  
 ye kynge in audience a boute.  
 Hay told it was hir fader skulle.  
 So pat ye lordes knolle shulle.  
 Of his bataille a soy witnessse.  
 And made auant pursh what pueisse.  
 he hay his wifes loue womie.  
 Whiche of ye skulle hay so begonne.  
 ye was here muchel pride a losse.  
 ye spoken alle and he was softe.  
 penkende on pilke dukynde pride.  
 Of pat here lord so myh hie seide.  
 Auante hym pat he hay slayn.  
 And piket out her fader brayn.  
 And of ye skulle hay mad a cuppe.  
 She suffred al til yei were wyte.  
 And so she hay siknesse fermed.  
 And goy to chammbre & hay coplegmed.  
 Vn to a mayde whiche she tryste.  
 So pat noon ower wist it wiste.  
 his mayde & lodeside is hote.  
 To whom his lady hay behote.  
 Of ladyshipe al pat she am.  
 To dengon here vpon his man.  
 Whiche dede hir drynke in such a plit.  
 Among hem alle for despit.  
 Of here and of here fader bope.  
 Wher of here pouhtes ben so drope.  
 She say pat she shal nouht be glad.  
 Til pat she se hym so be stad.  
 pat he no more make auant.

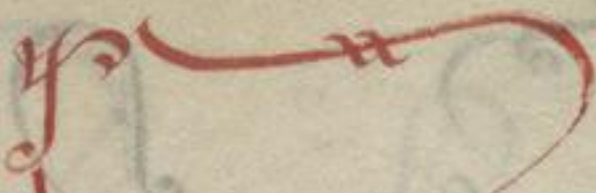
And pus pei felle in couenant.  
 pat pei acorden at ye laste.  
 Wip such wiles pat pei caste.  
 pat pei wole gete of here acord.  
 Som opped knyght to fle his lord.  
 And wip his sleight pei begynne.  
 How pei helmege myhte wynnne.  
 Whiche was ye kynge boteller.  
 A proude a lusty bacheler  
 & lodeside he louep hote.  
 And she to make hym more assote.  
 here loue grauntey and by nyghte.  
 yei shay how pei to gedre nyghte.  
 A bedde mete and don it was.  
 ye same nyght and in pis cas.  
 The queene hir self ye nyght secounde.  
 Went in here stede and pere hym founde.  
 A chammbre derk wip oute light.  
 And goy to bedde to pis knyght.  
 And he to kepe his obseruaunce.  
 To loue dop his obeysaunce.  
 And wene it be & lodeside.  
 And she pan after lay a side.  
 And haye hym what he hay do.  
 And who she was she told hym so.  
 And seid helmege I am ye queene.  
 & thou shal pi loue wel be sene.  
 Of pat pou hast pi wille wrouht.  
 Or it shal fore ben a bouht.  
 Or pou shalt as I ye seye.  
 And if pou wolt be such a weye.  
 To my plesance and holde it stille.  
 for euere I shal ben at pi wille.  
 Bope I and al myn heritage.  
 A noon ye wille loues rage.  
 In whiche no man hym can gouerne.  
 made hym pat he can nouht therne.  
 But fel al hool to here assent.  
 And pus ye whel al is miswent.  
 ye whiche fortune hay vpon honde.  
 for hool pat euere it after stonde.  
 yei shay among hem such a wile.  
 ye kynge was ded wip yme a while.  
 So shih cam it not a boute.  
 pat pei ne be discouered oute.  
 So pat it pouht hem for ye beste.  
 To fle for per was no reste.  
 And pus ye tresour of ye kynge.  
 yei trusse and muchel ower ying.  
 And wip a certeyn felashipe.  
 ye fledde and went a wey by shipe.  
 And held here right cours fro penne.  
 Til pat yei come to pauenne.  
 Wher yei ye dukes helpe souhte.  
 And he so as yei hym besouhte.  
 A place grauntey for to dwelle.  
 Bot after whan he herde telle.



Of þe manere how þei haue do.  
 þis duk let shawe for hem so.  
 þat of porson whiche þei drunke.  
 þei hadden þat þei haue be stouke.  
 And al þis made auant of pride.  
 Good is þerfore a man to hyde.  
 his ouhne þyng for if he speke.  
 he may lightliche his þouht to breke.  
 In armes þy noon auantauce.  
 To hym whiche þenkeþ his name auant.  
 And be renomed of his dede.  
 And also who þat þenkeþ to spede.  
 Of loue he may hym nouht auant.  
 þor what man wilke vice haunte.  
 his þynge shal ful ofte faule.  
 In armes he þat wole traualle.  
 Or elles loue grace atteyne.  
 his looe tunte he mot resceyue.  
 which berþ of his honour þe þere.  
 þor þi my sone in alle weye. *Confessor*  
 take right good hede of þis matere.  
 þouht wyl my fader dre. *Amans*  
 þis scole is of so gentyl loze.  
 And if þere be ouht elles more.  
 Of pride whiche I shal eschelle.  
 I tolde wey forþ and I wole selle.  
 What þynge þat þe me wole enforme.  
 I sone þat in an oþer forme. *Confessor*  
 þer is a vice of prides loze. *Confessor*  
 which þat an hant whan he wole soze.  
 þey þouht in his delices.  
 After þe lityng of his vices.  
 And wole no mannes reson knowe.  
 Til he down falle and ouer prowe.  
 þis vice þe glorie is hote.  
 wher of my sone I þe behote.  
 To trette and speke in such a wise.  
 þat þou þe myghte þe better a wise.  
 þia pueros puerum mundum do  
 dices. Qui tu est unus gaudia lu  
 na cupit. Eius amicia que alia tol  
 lit manit. rō sine blandicie plauis  
 hebit homo. Verbit compositio qui sit  
 fragillare fauella. Scandere fellata  
 lura valebit eques. Sic in amore  
 magis qui blanda subornat in ore.  
 Verba p hoc brauid quod nequit al  
 het. Et tu ornatos varios q parat  
 leta q corda suis leatibz aptat amor.  
 þie loquitur de quinta specie sup  
 þie que inanis alia vocat et idem  
 Sicut natura pmo describens sup eode  
 in amoris causa confessor amanti  
 consequenter appont.  
 þe proude vice of þe glorie.  
 remembreþ nouht of þe glorie.  
 þise worldles ioyes ben so drete.

þym þenkeþ of heuene no byete.  
 þis þyng þynge is al his þe.  
 þer shal he die napelce.  
 And þer of þenkeþ he but a lite.  
 þor al his lust is to delite.  
 In nelle þynge proude and þeyne.  
 Als ferforþ as he may atteyne.  
 I tolde if þat he myght make.  
 his body nelle he wole take.  
 A nelle forme and leue his olde.  
 þor what þynge þat he may beholde.  
 þe whiche to comyn þe is straunge.  
 A noon his olde quyse chaunge.  
 he wole and falle þe þou.  
 Lich þu to þe camelion.  
 whiche þou eueri sōdri helle.  
 þe he beholt he moste nelle.  
 his colour. and þis vnaused.  
 ful ofte tyme he stant desquysed.  
 more ioly þan þe þyrd in may.  
 he makeþ hym eueri fresh and gay.  
 And doþ al his way desquyse.  
 So þat of hym þe nelle quyse.  
 Of lusti folk alle oþer take.  
 And eke he am caroles make.  
 Pondeal. balade. and virelay.  
 And wyþ al þis if þat he may.  
 Of loue gete hym auantage.  
 A noon he wole of his corage.  
 So ouer glad þat þynge towe.  
 þe myght a þe hie þe þe glorie.  
 þor he þay þayme at alle tye.  
 Of loue such an auant pride.  
 þym þenkeþ his ioye is endele.  
 I tolde schryue þe sone in goðes þe.  
 And of þi loue telle me þe þe.  
 If þat in glorie þay be so þe.  
 þe fader as touchyng of al. *Amans*  
 I may nouht þe ne nouht I shal.  
 Of þe glorie excuse me.  
 þat I ne haue for þe be.  
 þe better a dressed and amysed.  
 And also I haue ofte assayed.  
 Pondeal. balade and virelay.  
 þor here on whom myn herte lay.  
 To make and and also for to þe.  
 Caroles wyþ my wordes queyte.  
 To sette my þynge a þe.  
 And þus I song hem forþ ful of þe.  
 In halle and eke in chambres aboute.  
 And made mery among þe wote.  
 þer þe ferþ I not þe better.  
 þus was my glorie in þe þe.  
 Of al þe ioye þat I made.  
 þor whan I wole wyþ here glade.  
 And of here loue sōnges make.  
 she seide it was nouht for hire sake.





And list nouht my songes here.  
 Ye witen what pe wordes were.  
 So for to speke of myn aray.  
 yet couye I neuere be so gay.  
 ye so wel make a sount of loue.  
 wher of I mythe ben a boue.  
 And haue encheson to be glad.  
 For raper I am ofee a dard.  
 For sorthe pat she seip me nay.  
 And myteles I wol not say.  
 pat I am glad on ower side.  
 For fume pat can no ping hide.  
 Al day wol bynne vn to myn ere.  
 Of pat men speken here and pere.  
 How pat my lady berey pe prys.  
 How she is fayr how she is wys.  
 How she is womanlyche of chere.  
 Of al pis ping what I may here.  
 What wonder is pouh I be fayn.  
 And eke what I may here fayn.  
 Tarynges of my lady hele.  
 Al pouh I may nouht wy here dele.  
 yet am I wonder glad of pat.  
 For what I wol here good astat.  
 As for pat tyme I dar wel sware.  
 non ower sorthe may me dore.  
 pus am I gladed in pis wyse.  
 For fader of youre lores wyse.  
 Of whiche ye be fully taught.  
 How telle me if ye pouke aught.  
 pat I per of am for to wite.  
 Of pat per is I pe aghite. *Confes*  
 my sone he seide and for in gode. *for*  
 I wol pat you vnderstode.  
 For I penke vpon pis matere.  
 To telle a tale as wol shalt here.  
 How pat a ven pis proude vice.  
 ye hihe god of his iustice.  
 Is wroy and gret vengeance dop.  
 How herkne a tale pat is sop.  
 pouh it be nouht of lones fynde.  
 A gret cunsauple you shalt fynde.  
 pis wyne glorie for to fle.  
 which is so ful of vante.  
 Human genis ad sit sibi glia ma  
 for. Sepe subesse solet primus ille  
 dolor. mens elata trauces descensus  
 sepe subibit. mens humilis stabile mol  
 le qz firmat iter. et rotas inuicis  
 voluit fortuna p orbem. Cui magis  
 alga petis inferiora time. *Confes*  
 ut confessor exemplum contra via  
 d manis glorie narrans qualiter  
 rabugodonosor rex caldeor ad pe  
 in omni sue maiestatis gloria cassor  
 extiteret. deus ei supbia castigare  
 volens ipm extra formam hois in

bestiam tend comedente subito trans  
 mutauit. Et sic p septenniu penites  
 ad pe potencie se agnouit. miser  
 tus deus ipm in sui regni solid resti  
 tuta sanitate emendatit quatiost collocau.  
**C**her was a kyng pat moche myhte.  
 which rabugodonosor hihte.  
 Of whom pat I spat here to fore.  
 yet in pe bible his name is bore.  
 For al pe world in orient.  
 Was hool in his commendement.  
 And prync of kynges to his liche.  
 Was noon so myghty ne so rich.  
 To his empire and to hys lasses.  
 As who seip alle in pilbe dallas.  
 Were obisant and tribut bere.  
 As pouh he god of erpe were.  
 Wyf farenge he punte kynges vnder.  
 And wrought of pride many a wonder.  
 he was so ful of veyn gloure.  
 pat he ne hadde no memoire.  
 pat pere was euy god but he.  
 For pride of his prosperite.  
 A pat pe hihe kyng of kynges.  
 Which seip and knollep alle pinges.  
 Whos the may no ping a fere.  
 ye prync of mannes herte.  
 pei speke and soluen in his ere.  
 As pouh pei londe wyndes were.  
 he took vengeance vpon his pride.  
 For for he wole a while a bide.  
 To loke if he him wolde amende.  
 To him a for token he sende.  
 And pat was in his sleep be nyghte.  
 his proude kyng a wonder sighte.  
 Had in his sweene per he lay.  
 hym pouht vpon a mery day.  
 As he beheld pe world aboute.  
 A tre ful growe he seih per oute.  
 which stood pe world amydde euene.  
 Whos hihte straucht vp to pe heuene.  
 ye leues weren faire and large.  
 Of fruit she bar so ripe a charge.  
 pat alle men it myhte fede.  
 he seih also pe bolles prede.  
 A boue al erpe in which were.  
 ye fynde of alle byddes pere.  
 And eke hym pouhte he seih also.  
 ye fynde of alle bestes to.  
 vnder pis tre aboute round.  
 And fedden hem vpon pe ground.  
 As he pis wonder stood and seih.  
 hym pouht he herde a voys on heih.  
 friende and seide abouen alle.  
 Well down pis tre and let it falle.  
 ye leues yet down falle in haste.  
 And to pe fruit defruie and waste.



And let do shreden eueri brannche.  
 Bot at ye rote let it stannche.  
 Whan as ye pride is cast to ground.  
 Ye rote shal be faste bounde.  
 And shal no mannes herte bere.  
 But eueri lust he shal forlere.  
 Of man and liche an Oxe his mete.  
 Of gins he shal purchase and etc.  
 Til pat ye water of ye heuene.  
 Haue washen him be tymes seuen.  
 So pat he purgh knowe a rilt.  
 What is ye heueneliche myght.  
 And be mad humble to ye wille.  
 Of hym which al may saue and spille.  
**C**his kyng out of his sweene abside.  
 And he vpon ye worlde it seide.  
 Vn to ye clerkes which he hadde.  
 Bot noon of hem ye sope arade.  
 Was noon his sweene coupe vndo.  
 And it stood ylle time so.  
 His kyng hadde in subiection.  
 Inde. and of a fectioun.  
 A loue alle ower ou Daniel.  
 He louep for he coupe wel.  
 Tuine pat noon ower coupe.  
 To hym were alle yngres coupe.  
 As he hadde of goddes grace.  
 He was to fore ye kynges face.  
 A sent. and bad pat he sholde.  
 Epon ye poynt ye kyng of tolde.  
 Ye fortune of his sweene expounde.  
 As it sholde after ward be founde.  
 Whan Daniel his sweene herde.  
 He stood long tyme or he answered.  
 And made a wonder heuy dre.  
 Ye kyng took hede of his manere.  
 And bad hym telle pat he wiste.  
 And he to whom he mochel triste.  
 And seide he wolde nouht be wrope.  
 Bot Daniel was wonder loy.  
 And seide. vpon pi fomen alle.  
 Sure kyng pi sweene mote falle.  
 And unpeles touchende of pi.  
 I wole ye telle how it is.  
 And what dyshe is to ye shape.  
 God wot if pou it shalt asape.  
 Ye hihe tre which pou hast seyn.  
 Wip leef and fruyt so wel beseyn.  
 Ye which stood ye world amydde.  
 So pat ye bestes and ye briddes.  
 Gouerned were of hym alone.  
 Sure kyng betokeney pi psone.  
 Which stant a boue al cypeli ynges.  
 Yng requen vnder ye kynges.  
 And of ye peple vn to ye loutep.  
 And al ye world pi poller doutep.  
 So pat wip veyn honour deceyued.

you hast pi reuerence weyued.  
 fro hym which is pi kyng a loue.  
 pat pou for dred ne for loue.  
 Wolt no yng knowen of pi god.  
 Which noll for ye hap mad a rodd.  
 In veyn glorie and pi folie.  
 Wip grette peynes to chastie.  
 And of ye vore pou herdest speke.  
 Which had ye bowes for to breke.  
 And helwe and falle down ye tre.  
 pat word belouep vn to ye.  
 pi regne shal ben ouerprowe.  
 And pou despyled for a poulde.  
 Bot pat ye rote shal stonde.  
 Se pat pou shal wel vnderstonde.  
 per shal a biden of pi regne.  
 A tyme a yen whan pou shalt regne.  
 And eke of pat pou herdest seye.  
 To take a mannes herte a weye.  
 And sette yere a bestial.  
 So pat he lich an Oxe shal.  
 Pasture and pat he be bereyued.  
 Be tymes seuen and sore peyned.  
 Til pat he knowe his goddes myghtes.  
 Yng shal he stonde a yen vpryghtes.  
 Al pi betokeney ym astat.  
 Which noll wip god is in debat.  
 In mannes forme shal be lased.  
 Til seuen yer ben ouerpassed.  
 And in ye liknesse of a beste.  
 Of gins shal be pi real feste.  
 Ye weder shal vpon ye reyne.  
 And vnderstond pat al pi peyne.  
 Which pou shalt suffre ylle tide.  
 Is shape al only for pi pride.  
 Of veyn glorie and of ye syme.  
 Which pou hast longe stonden yme.  
 So vpon pi condicioun.  
 In sweene hap exposioun.  
 Bot er pi yng befall in dede.  
 A mende ye pi wolde I rede.  
 yef and departe ym almesse.  
 So mercy for wip right wysnes.  
 Geseche and preie ye hihe grace.  
 And so yoll myht pi pes purchace.  
 Wip god and stonde in good a cord.  
**B**ut pride is loy to leue his lord.  
 And wolde not suffre humilite.  
 Wip hym to stonde in no degre.  
 And whan a ship hap lost his stere.  
 Is noon so wye pat may hym stere.  
 A yen ye wylles in a rage.  
 pi proude kyng in his corage.  
 Humilite hap so forlore  
 pat for no sweene he seih to fore.  
 ze yet for al pat Daniel.  
 Him hap consiled eueri del.



He let it passe out of his mynde.  
 purgh veyn glorie. and as ye blynde.  
 Sey no wele of him be wo.  
 And fel Wip yme a tyme so.  
 As he in Babiloyne wente.  
 ye vante of pride hym hente.  
 His herte aros of veyn glorie.  
 So pat he drouh in to memoire.  
 His lordship and his regalie.  
 Wip wordes of surquidrie.  
 And Whan pat he hym most auante.  
 pat Lord Which veyn glorie daunte.  
 Al sodeynliche as who seip twis.  
 Wher pat he stood in his palers.  
 He took hym fro ye memnes sight.  
 Was noon of hem so fawr pat might.  
 Sette yhe where pat he become.  
 And yus was he from his kyngdome.  
 In to ye wilde forest dralle.  
 Wher pat ye myght goddes lalle.  
 purgh his powder dede hym tynufforne.  
 fro man in to abestes forme.  
 And lich an Oxe vnder ye fote.  
 He graspe as he nedes mote.  
 To geten him his bynes fode.  
 ye pouhte hym colde quises goode.  
 pat Whilom eet ye hote spices.  
 yus was he torned fro delices.  
 ye Wip Which he was wont to depyte.  
 he took pat of ye Welles byrte.  
 Or of ye pit or of ye slough.  
 It pouhte hym pan good ynough.  
 In stede of chambres wel arayed.  
 he was pan of a bussh wel payed.  
 ye harde ground he lay vpon.  
 for ower pillwes hadde he noon.  
 ye stormes and ye reynes falle.  
 ye Wyndes blowe vpon hym alle.  
 he was tormentid day and nyht.  
 Which was ye hys goddes myht.  
 Til seuene yer an ende took.  
 vpon him self po gan he look.  
 In stede of mete gras and trees.  
 In stede of handes longe clees.  
 In stede of man a beste lyk.  
 he seih. and pan he gan to sike.  
 for cloy of gold and ye perreye.  
 Which hym was wont to magnifie.  
 Whan he beheld his cote of heres.  
 he wepte and Wip ful woful teires.  
 vpon ye heuene he caste his chere.  
 Wepend and pouhte in yis manere.  
 pouh he no wordes myhte wyne.  
 yus seide his herte and spak Wip yme.  
 O myhti god pat al hasc wrouht.  
 And al myht byng a yen to nouht.  
 roll knolle I wel but al of ye.

The world hay no prosperite.  
 In ym aspect ben alle liche.  
 ye pore men and eke ye riche.  
 Wip oute ye yer may no Wyt.  
 And pou a boue alle ower myht.  
 O myhti Lord toward my vice.  
 in mercy medle Wip Justice.  
 And I wole make a couenant.  
 pat of my hys ye remenant.  
 I shal it be in grace amende.  
 And in ye lalle so despende.  
 pat veyn glorie I shal esauie.  
 And bolde vnto ym hestes z iue.  
 Humilite. and pat I wolle.  
 And so penkende he gan down bolde.  
 And pouh him lalle wyse and speche.  
 he gan vpon Wip hys feet areche.  
 And Weylend hi his besti steuene.  
 he made his pleynt to ye heuene.  
 he kneley in his wise and prey.  
 To seche mercy and assaue.  
 His god Which made him no ymyng fawne.  
 Whan pat he seih his prude chaunge.  
 A noon as he was humble and tane.  
 he found toward his god ye same.  
 And in a tynnyng of a look.  
 his mannes forme a yen he took.  
 And was reformed to ye regne.  
 In Which he pat he was wont to regne.  
 So pat ye prude of veyn glorie.  
 Euer afterward out of memoire.  
 he let it passe. and yus is shelle.  
 What is to ben of prude vnyshelle.  
 A yen ye hys goddes lalle.  
 To whom no man may be felalle.  
 For in my sone take good hede. *con*  
 So for to lode in manhede. *cessor.*  
 pat pou ne be nouht like a beste.  
 Bot if in hys shal ben honeste.  
 pou moste humbleste take on honde.  
 for pan myght pou sike stonde.  
 And for to speke in ower wise.  
 A pround man can no loue assise.  
 for pouh a woman wolde hym plese.  
 his prude can nouht ben at ese.  
 Ther may no man to meche blame.  
 A vice Which is for to blame.  
 for in men sholden no ymyng hide.  
 pat myhte falle in blame of prude.  
 Which is ye worst vice of alle.  
 Wher of so as it was befall.  
 The tale I penke of a clouge.  
 To telle if pat it may ye like.  
 So pat pou myhte humbleste selve.  
 And eke ye vice of prude eschelle.  
 Wher of ye gloire is fals and veyn.  
 Which god him self hay in desdenn.



pouh pat it mochte for a prole.  
 It shal down falle and ouer prole.  
 Est virtus humilis p qua deus alt?  
 ad yma. se tulit e me viscera carnis  
 habet. Sic humilis superest e amor sibi  
 subditur oib. Cum habet nulla forte  
 supbz opem. Odit em terra celid deie  
 cit e ipm. Sed bz infern stat qz reap  
 tus ibi. **H**ic narrat confessor exen  
 plum simpliciter contra supbia e di  
 at qd mpy quida rex famoso prude  
 ac cunda militi suo sup tribz questio  
 bz inde certitudinis responsione daret  
 sub pena capitalis sentencie finind  
 pfixit. pmo quid minoris indige  
 ab habitantibz orbem auxilid mui  
 optinuit. Sedo quid maioris meriti  
 otinens minoris expense reprisas  
 exigit. Tercio quid oia bona dmi  
 nuens ex sui proprietate nichil penitus  
 valuit. Quarta vero questio quid  
 da virgo da militis filia sapientissi  
 ma nomine prius sui solacione a qre  
 diens taliter regi rudit. Ad pnam  
 dicit. quod terra nullius indiget  
 qua cu adiunare cotidiane laboribz  
 omnes intendunt. Ad cam dicit qd  
 humilitas oibz virtutibz pualer que  
 in nullius pdenalitate expensio  
 mensura excedit. Ad tercia dicit.  
 qd supbia oia tam corporis qua  
 aie bona deuastans maiores expen  
 sare excessus inducit et cu nullius  
 valoris alio rocus pdicoms causa  
 sua culpa ministrat.

**H**erbyng Whilom Was yong e wys.  
 re Whiche set of his wnter pns.  
 Of depe ymaginacions.  
 And feruente interpretacions.  
 Problemes and demundes eke.  
 His wisdom was nouht to seke.  
 Wherof he wolde in sondry wise.  
 Oppose hem pat weren wise.  
 Bot noon of hem it myghte bere.  
 Upon his word to geue answere.  
 Out takon con Whiche Was a knyght.  
 To hym was eueri ping so light.  
 pat also sone as he hym herde.  
 re kynnes word he answerede.  
 What ping re kyng hym aye wolde.  
 per of a noon re troupe he tolde.  
 re kyng somdel had an enue.  
 And pouht he wolde hys wites phie.  
 To sette som conclusion.  
 Whiche sholde be confusion.  
 Out to his knyght so pat re name.  
 And of his wisdom re the fame.

Toward hym self he wolde hymne.  
 And pus of alle hys wites wyngme.  
 re kyng be gan to studie and muse.  
 What straunge matere he myghte use.  
 re knyghtes wit to confounde.  
 And at re laste he hay it founde.  
 And for re knyght a noon he sente.  
 pat he shal telle what he mente.  
 Upon re poyntes stood re matere.  
 Of questions as pou shalt here.  
**Q**ue fuste poynt of alle pre. 1. questio.  
 Was re. What ping in his deie.  
 Of al his world hay nede lest  
 And re may helpe to alhermost.  
 re second is. What most is wory. 2.  
 And of coloure is lest put for. quest.  
 re prude is. Which is most cost. 3.  
 And lest is wory and goy to lost. 4. questio.  
**Q**ue fuste re se demundes aye.  
 And to re knyght re lalle he taye.  
 pat he shal noon and come a yeh.  
 re prude wike and telle hym pley.  
 To eueri poynt what it amountey.  
 And if so be pat he miscomtey.  
 To make in his answere a faile.  
 per shal noon ower ping a hyle.  
 re kyng sey pat he shal be ded.  
 And lese hys goodes and his hed.  
 re knyght was soz of his ping.  
 And wolde excuse hym to re kyng.  
 Bot he hym wolde not forbere.  
 And pus re knyght of his answere.  
 Goy hom to take a wisement.  
 Bot after his entendement.  
 re more he caste his wit aboute.  
 re more he stant per of indoute.  
 re wite he wel re kynnes herte.  
 pat he re dey ne sholde a ferte.  
 And such a sorwe hay to hym take.  
 pat al gladshype he hay for sake.  
 he pouht first vpon his hys.  
 And after pat vpon his wyf.  
 Upon his children eke also.  
 Of whiche he hadde dolytres also.  
 re yongest of hem hadde of age.  
 ffourtene yer and of visage.  
 She was riht fayre and of stature.  
 Ryht to an heuently fygyre.  
 And of manere and of goodly speche.  
 pouh men wolde alle londes seche.  
 rei sholde nouht haue founde here like.  
 She sey here fader sorwe and fike.  
 And wist nouht re cause why.  
 So cam she to hym priuely.  
 And pat was where he made his mone.  
 Wyngme a gardyn al hym one.  
 Upon here knes she gan down falle.



Wif humblo herce and to hym calle.  
 And seide goode fader deere.  
 Whi make pus heuy chere.  
 And q Wor no pmtt holl it is.  
 And wel ye knowen fader pis.  
 What auenture pat yow felle.  
 ye myghte sauely to me telle.  
 For I haue ofte herd yow seide.  
 pat ye such tust haue on me leyde.  
 pat to my suster and my broper.  
 In al pis world ne to noon oper.  
 ye durste telle a priuete.  
 So wel my fader as to me.  
 For pi my fader I yow prey.  
 ye cast nouht pat herte a weye.  
 For I am she pat wolde kepe.  
 yowre honour and Wif pat to wepe.  
 Here yhe myht not be forbore.  
 She wisshet for to be Dubore.  
 Er pat heu fader so mistriste.  
 To tellen here of pat he wiste.  
 And euere amouynmercy she arde.  
 pat he ne sholde his conseil hide.  
 From here pat so wolde him good.  
 And was so mysh his flesh and blood.  
 So pat Wif weyring at he laste.  
 his cheer vpon his child he caste.  
 And sorowfully to pat she puerde.  
 he tolde his tale and pus he seide.  
 ye sorwe dolbhter which I make.  
 Is nouht al onli for my sake.  
 For for ye boye and for yow alle.  
 For such a chaunce is me befall.  
 pat I shal er pis prude day.  
 lese al pat euere I lese may.  
 my lyf and al my good per to.  
 Therfore it is I sorwe so.  
 What is ye cause helas quod she.  
 My fader pat ye sholden be.  
 ded and destruyed in such a wise.  
 And he began ye poyntes deuse.  
 Whiche as ye kint told hym kemoupe.  
 And seide her pleyntly pat he ne coupe.  
 Answer to no poynt of pis.  
 And she pat herde holl it is.  
 Here conseil yaf and seide po.  
 my fader syt it is so.  
 pat ye can see non oper weye.  
 For pat ye most nedel deye.  
 I wolde prey of yow a pmtt.  
 Let me go Wif yow to ye kint.  
 And ye shal make hym vnderstonde.  
 Hobb ye my wittes for to fonde.  
 Haue leyd yowre answere vpon me.  
 And telley hym in such demer.  
 vpon my word ye wole abyde.  
 To hyt or dey what so be tide.

For ye pchance may purchace.  
 Wif som good word ye kintes grace.  
 yowre lyf and eke yowre good to saue.  
 For ofte shal a woman haue.  
 ping Whiche a man may not areche.  
 ye fader herde his dolbhter speche.  
 And pouht per was reson june.  
 And seih his owne lyf to Wymme.  
 He coupe don hym self no cure.  
 So better hym pouhte in auenture.  
 To put his lyf and al his good.  
 pat in ye maner as it stood.  
 his lyf in cerceyn for to lese.  
 And pus penkeng he gan to chese.  
 To do ye conseil of pis mayde.  
 And took ye purpos as she seyde.  
 The day was come and for yei gon.  
 On to ye court yei come anon.  
 Where as ye kint in iugement.  
 Was set and hap pis kynth asent.  
 Arryed in his beste wise.  
 his mayde Wif here wordes wise.  
 Here fader ladde be ye bond.  
 In to ye place where he fond.  
 ye kint Wif oper Whiche he wolde.  
 And to ye kint knelend he tolde.  
 As he enformed was to fore.  
 And preyed ye kint pat he perfore.  
 his dolbhter wordes wolde take.  
 And seih pat he wole vnder take.  
 pro was per gret merueile on honde.  
 pat he Whiche was so wys a kynth.  
 his lyf vpon so poung a wight.  
 He sette wolde in iupertie.  
 And many it helden for folwe.  
 For atte laste napeles.  
 ye kint commaundyng ben in pes.  
 And to pis mayde he caste his chere.  
 And seide he wolde here tale here.  
 he bad here speke and she began.  
 My liege Lord so as I can.  
 Quod she ye poyntes Whiche I herde.  
 yei shal of reson ben answere do.  
 The first I vnderstonde is pis.  
 What ping of al ye world it is.  
 Whiche men most helpe 2 hay lest nede.  
 My liege Lord pis word I rede.  
 ye erpe it is Whiche euery mo.  
 Wif mannes labour is be go.  
 As wel in Wynter as in may.  
 ye mannes hond dox what he may.  
 To helpe it fory and make it rich.  
 And for pi men it delue and diche.  
 And eren it Wif strengpe of plowh.  
 wher it hay off hym self ynough.  
 So pat his nede is at ye leste.  
 For euery man and byrd and best.



Of flowers and gras & rotes and rynde.  
and eueri þing be there of kynde.  
shal sterue and erpe it shal become.  
As it was out of erpe nome.  
Gif schal to perpe tozhe a rein.  
And þus I may be reson seyn.  
þat erpe is þe meste hedeles.  
And men most helpe it napeles.  
So þat my lord touchend of þis.  
I haue answered holt þat it is.  
**¶** That oper þing I vnderstood.  
Whiche most is wory & most is good.  
And coster lest a man to kepe.  
my lord if ye wolde take kepe.  
I seie it is humilite.  
þurgh Whiche ye hisse trinite.  
As for decerte of pure loue.  
In to marie from a boue.  
Of þat he knell here humble entente.  
his owne sone a down he sente.  
A boue alle oper and here he ches.  
for þat vertu Whiche bodey þes.  
So þat I may be reson calle.  
Humilite most wory of alle.  
And lest it coster to meynene.  
In al þe world as it is sene.  
for who þat hay humblesse on honde.  
he bynary no werres in to londe.  
for he desurey for þe beste.  
to setten eueri man in reste.  
þus wry þoure heihe reuerence.  
we þenke þat þis euidence.  
As to þis þing is sufficeant.  
And touchend of þe remenant.  
Which is þe prydde of þoure axinges.  
What lest is wory of alle þinges.  
And coster most. I telle it prydde.  
Whiche may not in þe heuene abide.  
for Quater wry hem þat felle.  
þat prydde wry hym in to helle.  
þer was prydde of to gret cost.  
Whan he for prydde hay heuene lost.  
And after þat in paradys.  
Adam for prydde lost his pris.  
In meddel erpe and eke also.  
Pryde is þe cause of alle wo.  
þat al þe world ne may suffice.  
to stanche of prydde þe reþrise.  
prydde is þe heed of alle synne.  
Whiche wastey al and may not bynne.  
prydde is of eueri mys þe pulke.  
prydde is þe werste of alle witte.  
And coster most and lest is wory.  
In place wher he may haue his forþ.  
þus haue I seide þat I wole sepe.  
Of myn answer and to yow þe prepe.  
my liege lord of þoure office.

That ye such grace and such Justice.  
Orderne for my fader here.  
þat after þis Whan men it here.  
þe world þer of myn speke good.  
The kyng Whiche reson vnderstood.  
And hay al here holt þe hay said.  
Was myn glad and so wel paid.  
þat al his wryppe is ouer go.  
And he began to lode þo.  
þpon þis madden in þe face.  
In Whiche he found so mochel grace.  
þat al his þis on here he leyde.  
In audience and þus he seide.  
in faue maide wel þe be.  
Of þis answer and eke of þe.  
we likey wel and as þou wilt.  
for yeue be þi fader gilt.  
And if þou were of such lymage.  
þat þou to me were of parage.  
And þat þi fader were a þere.  
As he is now a bachelor.  
So liker as I haue a wyf.  
þou sholdest þinne be my wyf.  
þot þis I seie napeles.  
þat I wole shapen þu enaues.  
What worldles good þat þou wolt trane.  
axe of my þisre and þou shalt haue.  
And she þe kyng wry wordes wise.  
þuend þenke þi þis wise.  
in liege lord god mot þou quite.  
my fader here hay but a lite.  
Of þis son and þat he wende.  
hadde al be lost but now amende.  
þe may wel þurgh þoure noble grace.  
wry þat þe kyng right in his place.  
A noon forþ in þat fress here.  
In Erldom Whiche þat of eschete.  
Was late falle in to his hond.  
þu to þis kynght wry reute and lond.  
hay yeue and wry his chartre sesed.  
And þus was al þe noise apesed.  
**¶** This mayde Whiche sat on here knees.  
to fore þe kyng his charitees.  
comender and seyn ouer more.  
in liege lord right now to fore.  
þe seide. and it is of record.  
þat if my fader were a lord.  
And þere þu to þe se oper herte.  
þe wolde for nouht elles lete.  
þat I ne shulde be þoure wyf.  
And þis wot eueri wry þis.  
A kynges word mot nedes beholde.  
for þi my lord if þat þe wolde.  
to gret a charite fulfille.  
God wot it were wel my wille.  
for he Whiche was a bachelor.  
my fader is now an Erll here.



So whences euer pat I cam.  
In erles dothter nobl I am.  
His yong kynge which paised al.  
Here beaute and here wit wy al.  
As he which was wy loue hent.  
Anoon yaf yee to his assent.  
He myght not pe place a feerte.  
pat she wys Lady of his herce.  
So pat he took here to his wyf.  
To holde whil pat he lay lyf.  
And yus pe kyng toward his knyght.  
Acorded hym as it is right.  
And ouer his good is to wite.  
In pe crowne as it is wite.  
his noble kyng of whom I tolde.  
Of spayne be po dayes olde.  
pe kyngdom hadde in gouernance.  
And as pe booke maket remembraunce.  
Alphonse was his propre name.  
pe knyght also of that name.  
Dauy petro hysre. and as men telle.  
his dothters name per nello.  
Was cleped whiche was ful of grace.  
And pat was seue in pulke place.  
Where she here fader out of tene.  
hay brouht and made here self a queene.  
Of pat she hay so wel beselosed.  
pe poyntz wher of she was opposed.  
No nobl my sone as you may here.  
Of al his ying to my matere. **Confess.**  
But one I take. and pat is pride. **for.**  
To whom no grace may be tide.  
In heuene he fel out of his stede.  
And paradys hym was forbede.  
The gode men in erpe hym hate.  
So pat to helle he mot algate.  
Where eueri vertu shal be weyued.  
And eueri vice shal be receyued.  
But humblese is al ower wyse.  
Whiche most is wyse and no prys.  
It takey a yen bot softe and faine.  
And it is alwey debonaire.  
Wip humble speche it is redressed.  
yus was pe yonge mayde blessed.  
pe whiche I spak of nobl to fore.  
Here fader lyf she ant perfore.  
And wan wy al pe knynges loue.  
for pi my sone if polt wolt loue.  
It sit pe wel to leue pride.  
And taken humblese vpon pi side.  
pe more of grace you shalt here.  
As y fader I wol not foryete. **Amas**  
Of yis pat ye haue told me here.  
And if pat euer such manere.  
Of humble port may loue apane.  
Here afterward I penke assaye.  
Bot nobl fory ouer I besetche.

pat ye more of my shritte seche.  
**Confess.**  
My goode sone it shal be do.  
Nobl herke and lay an ere per to.  
for as touchende of prides fare.  
As fer fory as I can declare.  
In cause of vice in cause of loue.  
pat hystoll pleyuly herd aboue.  
So pat per is nomore to seye.  
Touchend of pat bot ower weye.  
Touchend enyue I penke telle.  
Whiche hay pe ppe kynde of helle.  
Wip oute cause of ying unso.  
Toward hym self and ower al so.  
Here afterward as vnderfonde.  
yow schalt pe spices as yel fonde.

**Exphat liber primus.**

**Inapit liber secundus...**

**In**uidie cura magis est amara do  
lore. Nam sua mens nullo tempore  
leta manet. Quo gaudent alij dolet  
ille nec vnius amicus. Est cui de cui  
de pmo comoda velle facit. Proxi  
tatis honor sua corda veretur et omis.  
Est sibi leticia sic aliena dolor. Hoc  
crend vian qui sepe repugnat amati.  
Non sibi sed reliquis dnm faret uti be  
mus. Est amor ex pmo motu fantas  
tiae et que. Caudia fert alijs credit  
obesse sibi. **¶** Hic in secundo libro to  
tat de inuidia et eius speachz quard  
dolor alterius gaudij inuicibilis au  
condicione sedm vian confessoz pri  
micius describens amantia quatinus  
amorem concernit sup eodem conse  
quent opponit.

**A**fter pride  
pe secunde. Ther  
is whiche many  
a woful fonde.  
Towardes opere  
bereth aboute.  
Wich in hym  
self and nought  
Wip oute. for  
in his poult he breney euer.  
Whan pat he wot an ower leuere.  
Or more veracious pat he.  
Whiche passy hym in hys deure.  
per of he taky his maladye  
That vice is cleped hot enyue.  
**Confess.**  
For pi my sone if it be so.  
you art or hast ben con of po.  
As for to speke in loues car  
if euer hit yin herce was.



Set of an oper mannes hele.  
**S**o god amunice my queerele.  
 in fader ye a poufand fyre.  
 Whan I haue fern an oper blye.  
 Of loue and had a goodly chere.  
 Ethna Whiche brenney yer be yer.  
 Was pyn nouht so hot as g.  
 Of pilke for Which princely.  
 myn herres pouht Wip une brenney.  
 The ship Whiche on ye Walles renney.  
 And is for formed and forblode.  
 Is nouht more pyned for a prowe.  
 ym g am pynne Whan I se.  
 An oper Whiche pat passe me.  
 I pat fortune of Loues yeste.  
 Bot fader pis I telle in scrifte.  
 pat is nouhter but in o place.  
 For who pat lese or fynde grace.  
 In oper stede it may not greue.  
 Bot pis ye may rist wel beleue.  
 Toward my Lady pat I serue.  
 pouh pat I wiste for to serue.  
 myn herte is ful of such fortie.  
 pat my self may not chaste.  
 Whan I ye court se of Cupide.  
 I proche vn to my Lady side.  
 Of hem pat lusty ben and fresch.  
 pouh it auale hem nouht a resch.  
 Bot ony pat yei ben in speche.  
 I ry forbe is pynne nouht to seche.  
 Bot Whanne yei rolben in here ere.  
 ym rolben al my most fere.  
 And unnelly Whanne yei talen longe.  
 my sorwes panne ben so fonge.  
 Of pat I se hem wel in ese.  
 I am nouht telle my deshe.  
 But sire as of my Lady selue.  
 pouh she haue wolbers ten or twelue.  
 for no mistrust I haue on here.  
 me greuey nouht but certes sive.  
 I rolbe in al pis world to seche.  
 I tis woman pat in dede and speche.  
 Wole bettre auise here what she do.  
 I te bettre for to seye a so.  
 Repe here honour at alle tide.  
 And yet gete here a pouk beside.  
 Bot napeles I am be knolde.  
 pat Whan I se at eny prowe.  
 Or elles if I may it here.  
 pat she make eny man good chere.  
 pouh I yer of haue nouht to done.  
 my pouht Wole entremete hym sone.  
 for pouh I be my selue straunge.  
 Endie mak myn herte chaunge.  
 pat I am sorwefully bestad.  
 Of pat I se an oper glad.  
 Wip here. bot of oper alle.

Of Loue what so may befulle.  
 Or pat he faile or pat he spede.  
 yer of take I but licel hede.  
 I old haue I seid my fader al.  
 Of Loue what so may befulle.  
 Or pat he faile or pat he spede.  
 yer of take I but licel hede.  
 I old haue I seid my fader al.  
 As of pis point in special.  
 Als forsoy as I haue wist.  
 I old aye furper what wold list.  
**W**ip sone or I aye ony more. *Confessor.*  
 I preke somdel for pi lore.  
 Tel an ensample of pis matere.  
 Touchend endie as you shalt here.  
 Write in I pule pis I fynde.  
 pouh it be nouht in boundes fynde.  
 To ete chaf. yet wol he berne.  
 An ore Whiche comey to ye berne.  
 yer of to taken eny fode.  
 And pus who pat vnderstode.  
 It scaut of Loue in many place.  
 Who pat is out of Loues grace.  
 And may hym self most auale.  
 ye pouh an oper sholde faile.  
 And if he may putte eny lette.  
 he dop al pat he may to lette.  
 Wher of I fynde as you shalt wite.  
 To pis purpos a tale write.  
**W**hic point Confessor exemplid fette  
 Contra istos q in amoris causa alioz  
 gaudys inuidentes nequaquam p hoc  
 sibi ipis pficiunt. Et narrat qst qst  
 iuuenis miles noie deas que Salathie  
 rimpia pulcherrima toto corde pa  
 mant ad ipi sub quadam raxe ineta li  
 tus marie colloquid adinuicem habue  
 runt. Poliphemus rixas concussa in  
 pe magna inde parte sup caput deas  
 ab alto pians ipm p inidia mite  
 at. Et tu rpe sup hoc deam Galathea  
 cape voluisset. Neptim? amant ob  
 sistens ipam inuolara salua custodia  
 pseruauit. Sed et diu misera corpus  
 deas defuncta in fontem aque dulassi  
 me subiti transmutarunt.  
**U**her ben of such mo pyn twelue.  
 pat ben not able of hem selfe.  
 To geten loue mid for enue.  
 ypon alle oper peaspie.  
 And for hem Lackey pat pei wolde.  
 yei Repte pat noon oper shulde.  
 Touchende of Loue his cause spede.  
 Wher of a met ensample I rede.  
 Whiche vn to pis matere acorder.  
 As Ouide in his boof recorder.  
 How poliphemus Whilom brouhte.



Whan pat he Galathe besouhte.  
 Of Loue Whiche he may nouht lache.  
 pat made hym for to waite and wache.  
 He alle weies holt it ferde.  
 Til at ye laste he knell and herde.  
 Holt pat ope hadde leue.  
 To loue yere as he mot leue.  
 As for to speke of eny spede.  
 So pat he knell noon ope rede.  
 But for to waite vpon alle.  
 Til he may se ye chance fulle.  
 That he his loue myght greue.  
 Whiche he hym self may nouht achene.  
 This Galathe seip ye poete.  
 A loue alle ope was dymete.  
 Of beaute pat men yanne knelle.  
 And hadde a lusty loue and trelle.  
 A bachelor in his degre.  
 Ryt such an ope a was she.  
 On Whom she hay here herte sette.  
 So pat it myght nouht be lette.  
 For yeste ne for no behest.  
 pat she ne was al at his heste.  
 His yonge knyght Ais was hore.  
 Which yer a yentward also hore.  
 All ony loue and no mo.  
 Her of was Poliphemus wo.  
 yurgh pure enue and euer aspiede.  
 And waite vpon euer side.  
 Whan he to gedre myght se.  
 His yonge Ais Wip Galathe.  
 So longe he waite to and fro.  
 Til at ye last he fond hem tto.  
 In priue place where yei stode.  
 To speke and haue here wordes gode.  
 The place where as he hem seih.  
 It was vnder a banke myh.  
 ye myte see. and he aboue.  
 Stood and beheld ye lusty loue.  
 Whiche eche of hem to ope made.  
 Wip goodly chere and wordes glade.  
 pat al his hert hay set a fire.  
 Of pure enue and as a fire.  
 Whiche flep out of a myght bolle.  
 A wey he fledde for a prole.  
 As he pat was for loue wod.  
 Whan pat he seih holt pat it stood.  
 His Poliphemus a greunt was.  
 And whan he seih ye sope cas.  
 Holt Galathe hym hay forsake.  
 And Ais to here loue take.  
 His herte may it nouht forbere.  
 pat he ne woteh lych a bere.  
 And as it were a wilde beste.  
 To Whom no resou may drete.  
 He ran ethna ye hell aboute.  
 Where neuere yet ye fir was oute.

Fulfilled of sorwe and gret dysese.  
 pat he seih Ais wel at ese.  
 Til at ye laste hym besouhte.  
 As he which al enue souhte.  
 And tomer to ye bank a yen.  
 Where he Wip Galathe hay seyn.  
 Ais Whom he pouhte greue  
 pouh he hym self may not releue.  
 His greunt Wip his rude myght.  
 Part of ye bank he shof down myght.  
 ye Whiche euene vpon Ais fel.  
 So pat Wip fullmyt of yis hel.  
 His Poliphemus Ais slouh.  
 Whel of she made sorwe ynouh.  
 And as she fledde fro ye lond.  
 Reptinne took hire into hond.  
 And kept here so sauf in a place.  
 fro Poliphemus and his manace.  
 pat he Wip al his fals enue.  
 It myght atteigne here compaignie.  
 His Galathe of Whom I speke.  
 pat of here self may nouht be wreke.  
 Wip outen eny semblant feined.  
 She hay here loues dey compleyned.  
 And Wip here sorwe and Wip hete wo.  
 She hay ye goddes moeued so.  
 pat yei of pite and of grace.  
 Haue Ais in ye same place.  
 yere he lay ded in to a well.  
 Transformed as ye boles telle.  
 Wip fresh stremes and Wip clere.  
 As he Whilom Wip lusty chere.  
 Was fresh his loue for to queine.  
 And Wip his rude Poliphemus.  
 yei were Wip and yis algate.  
 yone you myht vnderstonde. *co*  
 It pol Wolt in grace stonde. *fessor.*  
 Wip loue. you most leue enue.  
 And as you Wolt for pi partie.  
 Toward pi loue stonde fre.  
 So most you suffer an ope be.  
 What so befall vpon ye chance.  
 For it is an vyllys deumeance.  
 Which to non ope man is leef.  
 And is vn to hym self greif.  
 My fader yis ensample is good. *Amas.*  
 Bot holt so euer pat it stood.  
 Wip Poliphemus loue as yo.  
 It shal not stonde Wip me so.  
 To wochen eny felowye.  
 For loue. for no such enue.  
 For pi if yei ouht elles be.  
 Wolt axep fory in What degre.  
 It is. and I me shal confesse.  
 Wip shrif vn to youre holynesse.  
*Qua sibi solito mentalia gaudia lior.*  
*Su videt alteri sapna dolus agit.*



*liber.*

Inuidus obridet hodie fletu alioz.  
 Pletus an prius crastina fata parat.  
 Sic in amore pari scit forte iocosos a  
 amantes. Cum videt illud inuidus  
 ille quasi. Sic licet in baculo sperat  
 tu ipse leuamen. Alterius casu lapsus  
 et ille simul. Sic loquitur confessor  
 de secula specie iudic que gaudium altius  
 doloris dicit et primo eiusdem diuini mate  
 ria tractans amantis conscientiam  
 super eodem alterius inuestigat.

**I**n goode sone yet per is.  
 A vice reuers vn to pis.  
 Which enuious takep his gladnesse.  
 Of pat he sey pe heuynesse.  
 Of oper men for his wel fare.  
 Is whan he wot an oper care.  
 Of pat an oper hap a ful.  
 He penkep hym self aryst wy al.  
 Such is pe gladshipe of enuie.  
 In worldees ping and in partie.  
 ful ofte tyne and eke also.  
 In loues cause it stant vnt so.  
 If you my sone hast ioye had.  
 Whan you an oper sihe vnglad.  
 Shrif pe yer of my fader pis.  
 I am be knolbe vn to yoll pis.  
 Of yese louers pat louen streyhte.  
 And for pat poynt whiche pei coueite.  
 Ben pursuantz fro yer to yere.  
 In loues court whan i may here.  
 How pat pei chynke vpon pe whiel.  
 And whan pei bene at shal be wel.  
 pei ben down yrolwen at pe laste.  
 I am am i feld of pat pei fuste.  
 And lallwe of pat i se hem loue.  
 And yus of pat pei drynke soure.  
 I drynke swete and am wel esed.  
 Of pat i wot pei ben dyschesed.  
 Wot pe whiche i you telle here.  
 Is only for my lady dere.  
 pat for noon oper pat i knolbe.  
 me reachep nouht who oueryrolbe.  
 ne who pat stonde in loue vpryht.  
 But be he squyer be he knyht.  
 Whiche to my lady ward pur suep.  
 pe more he lese of pat he selley.  
 pe more me penkep pat i wunne.  
 And am pe more glad wy iune.  
 Of pat i wot hym sorlwe endure.  
 for ouere vpon such auenture.  
**Sciatis. Consolacio miseror est ha**  
**bere consortem in pena.**  
 It it a confort as men seyn.  
 To hym whiche is in wo beseyn.  
 To sen an oper in his peyne.  
 So pat pei may bope compleyne.

Wher i my self may nouht auale.  
 To sen an oper man trauayle.  
 I am vnt glad if he be let.  
 And yowh i fare nouht pe bet.  
 His sorlwe is to my herte a game.  
 Whan pat i knolbe it is pe same.  
 Whiche to my lady stant enclined.  
 And hap his loue nouht termined.  
 I am vnt ioyful in my poynt.  
 If such enuie greuep ouht.  
 As i be knolbe me coupable.  
 ye pat be wys and resonable.  
 my fader telley yowre avis.  
**I**n sone enuie to no pris.  
 Of such a forme i vnderstonde.  
 ne myht be no reson stonde.  
 for pe enuie hap such a kynde.  
 pat he wole sette hym self behynde.  
 To hyndre wy an oper wylt.  
 And gladly lese his owne right.  
 To maken an oper to lese his.  
 And for to knolbe how so it is.  
 A tale lich to pis matere.  
 I penke telle if you wolt here.  
 To shelle proprely pe vice.  
 Of pe enuie mid pe malice.  
**I**n the point confessor exemplum pferat  
 contra illu qui sponte sui ipius detri  
 mentu in alterius pena maiore pati  
 tur. Et narrat qd ad iubiter angelu  
 suu in forma hois de ho condicoes  
 exploraret ab excessu in terra mist.  
 contigit de ipse angelus duos hoies  
 quoz vn cupidus et alter inuidus  
 erat itinerando quasi paco vnus  
 diu comitabatur. Et ad ceru facu  
 esset angelus eoz noticie scipm cume  
 manifestans dixit qd quicquid alter  
 eoz ab ipso donari sibi peceat illud  
 feceru optinebit. qd et scio suo secu  
 comitanti affirmat duplicandu. Sup  
 quo cupidus impediens auaricia spe  
 rans sibi diuicias capere duplicatas.  
 primo petere recusant. Quod ad in  
 uidus aduocaret natu sui diuie  
 concernens ita de soaus suis verba  
 lumine pnueretur scipm monoa  
 ad fieri constanter prius ab ange  
 lo postulabat. Et sic vnus iudicia  
 alterius auariciam maculauit.  
**I**n iubiter pe fynde i write.  
 How whilom pat he wold write.  
 vpon pe pleyntes whiche he herde.  
 A mong pe men how pat it ferde.  
 As of here wrong condicion.  
 To do iustification.  
 And for pat cause down he sente.



An aungel whiche a loutre loutre.  
 pat he pe sope knolle may.  
 So it be fel vpon a day.  
 his aungel whiche hym wolde enforme.  
 Was cloped in amammes forme.  
 And ouer took q vnderfonde.  
 Tho men pat wenten ouer londe.  
 purth whiche he pouhte to appie.  
 his cause and goy in compaignie.  
 his aungel wyf his wordes wise.  
 Opposet hem in sondri wise.  
 rolle londe wordes and noll softe.  
 pat made hem to desputen ofte.  
 And eche of hem hit reson hadde.  
 And pus wyf tale he hem lade.  
 Wyf good examinacion.  
 Til he kuelly pe condicion.  
 What men pei weren bope tbo.  
 And seih wel atte laste po.  
 pat on of hem was coueitous.  
 And his felalbe was enuious.  
 And pus whan he hay knollechym.  
 A noon he fene departyng.  
 And seide he mot algates wende.  
 For herkne noll what fel at ende.  
 For pan he mude hem vnderfonde.  
 pat he was pere of goddes soude.  
 And seide hem for pe kyndesthip.  
 pat vor haue don hem felshyp.  
 he wol hem do som grace a peyn.  
 And bad pat oon of hem shal seyn.  
 What ping hym is leuest to craue.  
 And he it shal of yeste haue.  
 And ouer pat pat forp wyf al.  
 he seip pe toper haue shal.  
 pe double of pat his felalbe axey.  
 And pus to hem his grace he tuxey.  
 The coueitous was wonder glad.  
 And to pat oper man he bad.  
 And seip pat he ferst axesholde.  
 For he supposet pat he wolde.  
 make his axing of wordes good.  
 And pan he knoll wel how it stood.  
 pat he hym self be dooble wephte.  
 shal after take and pus be slechte.  
 he cause pat he wolde wryme.  
 he bad his felalbe ferst berymme.  
 his enuious pouh it be late.  
 whan pat he seih he mot algate.  
 make his axing ferst he pouhte.  
 If he worschip or yfit souhte.  
 It shal be doubled to his fere.  
 pat wolde he chese in no manere.  
 For pan he shalbey what he was.  
 Toward enue and in his cas.  
 On to his aungel pus he seide.  
 And for his yeste yis he prido.

To make hym blind of his on yhe.  
 So pat his felalbe no ping sihe.  
 his word was nouht so sone spoke.  
 pat his on yhe a noon was lode.  
 And his felalbe forp wyf also.  
 Was blid of bope his yhen tbo.  
 vo was pat oper glad y noll.  
 pat one wepte pat oper loll.  
 And sette his yhe at no cost.  
 wher of pat oper tbo hay lost.  
**O**f yllbe ensample whiche fel po.  
 men tellon noll ful ofte so.  
 pe weild emperer comunly.  
 And yet not noon pe cause whi.  
 for it accordet nouht to kynde.  
 my owne harme to seche and fynde.  
 Of pat q shal my broyer greue.  
 at mythe neuere wel achene. **Confes.**  
**W**hat seist you sone of his folie. **Amans.**  
 For fader but q sholde lie. **Amans.**  
 vpon pe point whiche pe haue seid.  
 yet was myn herte neuere leid.  
 For in pe wise as q yoll tolde.  
 For ouermore if pat ye wolde.  
 Oght elles to my shifte seye.  
 Touchend enue q wolde preyre.  
 For sone pat shal wel be do. **Confessor.**  
 For herkne and lay ym ere to.  
**I**nuidie pars est detractio pessima  
 pestis. Que magis infame placit  
 bus agit. Lingua venenato sermo  
 ne repartit amarus. Sic vt in alte  
 rius scandala fama volat. morsib;  
 a tergo quos infiat ipsi fideles. Cul  
 nervi ignoti sepe salutem carent.  
 Sed generosus amor linguam conser  
 uat vt eius. Verbu quod loquitur  
 nulla sinistra gerat. **I**n tract  
 at confessor de tercia specie inuidie  
 que detractio dicitur amarus morsus  
**T**ouchende of inuious brood.  
 I dot nouht oon of alle good.  
 But napeles such as pei be.  
 yet is per on and pat is he.  
 whiche cleped is detractioun.  
 And to conferme his actioun.  
 he hay wysholde male toucho.  
 whos tynge neiper pyl ne trouche.  
 quap hwe so pat he prouince.  
 A pleyu good word wyf oute frounce.  
 wher behynd a munnies bak.  
 for pouh he preise he fynt a lak.  
 whiche of his tale is ay pe laste.  
 pat al pe prye shal ouer caste.  
 And pouh yere be no cause whi.  
 yet wole he iangle nouht for pi.



As he Whiche hay pe heraldie.  
 Of hem Whiche vlen for to lie.  
 For as pe uelle Whiche vp renney.  
 pe freshe rede roses breuney.  
 And makey hem fade and pale of helle.  
 Right so pe fals envious helte.  
 In euery place Where he dwelley.  
 Wip fals Wordes Whiche he telley.  
 he corney preisung in to blame.  
 And Worshyp in to Wordes shame.  
 Of such Lesung as he compassy.  
 Is noon so good pat he ne passy.  
 He aduene his trey and is bachelied.  
 And purgh his fals tynge endited.  
 Rich to pe Harbudes bynde.  
 Of Whos nature pis I fynde.  
 pat in pe hottest of pe day.  
 When comen is pe mery may.  
 He sprat his Wynge & vp he fleey.  
 And vnder all a bonte he sey.  
 pe faire lusey floures spryng.  
 Bot per of hay he no lityng.  
 Bot wher he sey of eny best.  
 pe felpy per maky he his fest.  
 And per vpon he Wole a lichte.  
 per litye hym noon oper fite.  
 Right so pis iangleter envious.  
 pouh he a man se vertuous.  
 And ful of good condiaon.  
 per of maky he no menaon.  
 Bot elles be it not so lye.  
 Wher of pat he may setto a Wite.  
 pere renney he Wip open mouy.  
 Behynde a man and maky couy.  
 But al pe Vertu Whiche he can.  
 pat Wole he hido of euery man.  
 And openli pe vice telle.  
 As he Whiche of pe scole of helle.  
 Is taunt and fostred Wip endie.  
 Of household and of compaigny.  
 Wher pat he hay his ppre office.  
 To sette on euery man a vice.  
 Holp so his mouy be comely.  
 his Word sit euermore a Wry.  
 And pe Worste pat he may.  
**A**nd in pis Wile nold a day.  
 In Loues Court a man may here.  
 ful ofte pleynt of pis matere.  
 pat many envious tale is scered.  
 Wher pat it may nought be answered.  
 But yet of it is beleued.  
 And many a Wory loue is greued.  
 purgh bacheltyng of fals iudie.  
**I**n amoris causa huius viciy ci-  
 men ad memoriam reducens confes-  
 for amanti sup eode plem opponit.  
**I**f pou haue mad such iangleter.

In loue court my lone er pis.  
 Shrif pe per of: my fader pis.  
 Bot were pe holt noldt openly.  
 But oper While pryncely.  
 Whan I my dere Lady mete.  
 And penk holt pat I am dunete.  
 Vn to hure hie Worpinesse.  
 And eke I se pe besinesse.  
 Of al myn lusey volte.  
 Whiche alday presen here a bonte.  
 And eche of hem his tyme a Waryte.  
 And eche of hem his tale affaite.  
 All to descryue an innocente.  
 Whiche Wol not ben of here assent.  
 And for men seyn vnkowle vnkyst.  
 Here poumbe she holt in he fite.  
 So dos Wip hime here dwe honde.  
 pat pere Wynnep no man lond.  
 She leuey nought al pat she herey.  
 And pus ful ofte here self she skerey.  
 And is al War of hadde I Wist.  
 But for al pat myn herce ariste.  
 Whan I pe se comow Louers se.  
 pat Wol nought holden hem to pre.  
 Bot Wel nph Louen ouer al.  
 myn herce is gubious Wip al.  
 And euere I am a drad of mile.  
 In aumtyr if Wip eny Wile.  
 per mighte here Innocence enchaute.  
 For pi my Wordes I haunte.  
 Behynden hem so as I dar.  
 Wher of my Lady be War.  
 I say What euere comey to mouye.  
 And Worste I Wolde if I kouye.  
 For Whan I come to here speche.  
 Al pat I may enquire and seche.  
 Of such decept I telle it al.  
 And ap pe Worste in special.  
 So fayn I Wolde pat she Wiste.  
 holt lital pei ben for to tryste.  
 And What pei Wolde and What pei mente.  
 So as pei be of double entente.  
 pus tolward hem pat yuele mene.  
 myn yuele Word was euere grene.  
 And napeles pe sope to telle.  
 In certeyn if it so be felle.  
 pat al per trelbest many bore.  
 To chese among a pouysand store.  
 Which were al fully for to trisse.  
 my Lady Loue and it Wiste.  
 per myer pan he sholde speche.  
 I Wolde fute tales sprede.  
 To my Lady if pat I myghte.  
 pat I shulde al here Loue duryte.  
 And per to Wolde I do my perne.  
 For certes pouh I sholde ferne.  
 And telle pat was neuere pouho.



For al pis world I myght nouht.  
 To suffre an ower fully wyne.  
 For as I am yet to begynne.  
 For be yei goode or be yei hadde.  
 I wolde noon my lady hadde.  
 And pat me make ful ofte aspie.  
 In vlen wordes of gndie.  
 And for to make hem bere a blame  
 And pat is but of pilke same.  
 ye whiche du to my lady dwalle.  
 For euere on hem I roume & qualle.  
 And hendre hem al pat euere I may.  
 And pat is for to say.  
 For only to my lady selue.  
 I telle not to ten ne elue.  
 For of I wole me wel adyse.  
 To speke or iangle in my wyse.  
 pat touchen to my lady name.  
 ye whiche in earnest and in game.  
 I wole saue in to my dep.  
 For me were leuer lakke bryp.  
 than speke of here name amys.  
 Now haue ye herd touchend of pis.  
 my fader in confession.  
 And yer fore of detraction.  
 In loue of pat I haue myspeke.  
 Tel how he wole it shal be wrote.  
 I am al redy for to bere.  
 my perne and also for to bere.  
 What prync pat ye wole now a bolle  
 for who is bounden he moste bolle.  
 So wole I bolle du to your heste.  
 for I day make pis behest.  
 pat I to vob haue no prync hid.  
 For told riht as it is betid.  
 And ower wyse of no myspeche.  
 my conscience for to seche.  
 I can nouht of gndie fynde.  
 pat I myspeke haue ouht behynde.  
 Wher of loue ouht be myspeyde.  
 Now haue ye herd and I haue sayd.  
 What wole fader pat I do.  
 My sone do no more so.  
 But euere kepe ye tynge stille.  
 wold myht ye more haue ye wille.  
 for as you sayst ye seluen here.  
 In lady is of such manere.  
 So wys so war in alle prync.  
 It nedey of no bacheryn.  
 pat you in lady misforme.  
 for whan she knowep al ye forme.  
 how pat ye self art enbious  
 you shalt not be so gracious  
 as you paunter sholdest elles.  
 For wold no man drynke of po wellas.  
 which as he wot purson is gme.  
 And ofte whiche as men begynne.

Tollardes ower which yei fynde.  
 pat set hem ofte fer behynde.  
 Whan pat yei wehe be before.  
 my goode sone and you yerfore.  
 We war and leue wylked speche.  
 Wher of hap fallen ofte wreche.  
 To many a my before pis tyme.  
 for who so wole hys hondees hyme.  
 yei moste be ye more duclene.  
 for many a mote shal be sene.  
 pat wold nouht cleue elles yere.  
 And pat shold euere wysman fere.  
 for who so wole an ower blame.  
 he seche ofte his owne shame.  
 whiche elles myht be riht falle.  
 for ye if pat it be ye wille.  
 To stonde vpon a mendement.  
 A tale of gret entendement.  
 I penke telle for ye sake.  
 Wher of you myght ensample take.  
*Whic loquitur Confessor contra istos  
 in amono causa de uoluntates qui suis  
 oblaquis aliena solacia parant. Et  
 narrat exemplum de constancia Tri-  
 berij Rome Imperatoris filia cum virtu-  
 tudinissimam ob amorem sol-  
 danus tunc pederet eam in uxorem  
 suam posset. etiam se fieri promissio-  
 am accepta cauione consilio pel-  
 lagij tunc pape ad filia una ad duobz  
 cardinalibz alijs qz Rome pcedibz in  
 piam martiry causa nauigio ho-  
 norifice destinata fuit que tamen ob  
 loquenciam postea detractionibz di-  
 uis modis put inferius arcaulat  
 absqz sui culpa dolorosa fuit multa  
 pliator passa est.*  
**E**verpi knyght in cristes lalle.  
 Of grete Rome as is ye salle.  
 The septe hadde for to tynhte.  
 Eber constantin he hylte.  
 Whos wyf was cleped yralie.  
 For yei to gedre of pryncipe.  
 No children hadde but a myde.  
 And she to god so wel apande.  
 That al ye wude worldes fame.  
 Spak worship of here gode name.  
 Constance as ye cronys seip.  
 She heilte. and was so ful of seip.  
 pat ye grete of dwabare.  
 Of hem whiche vlen marchandie.  
 She hap conuerted as yei come.  
 To here vpon a tyme at Rome.  
 To shelle such prync as yei brouhte.  
 Whiche woryll of hem she brouhte.  
 And ouer pat in such a wyse.  
 She hap hem wy here wordes wyse.



**O**f Cristes fey so ful enformed.  
 put per to ben alle conformed.  
 So put baptisme per receyuen.  
 And alle here false goddes weyuen.  
 Whan per ben of pe fey corceyn.  
 per gon to barbarie ayein.  
 And pere pe soudan for hem sente.  
 And axey hem to what entente.  
 per haue here ferste fey forsake.  
 And per pe whiche hadde vnder take.  
 pe righte fey to kepe and holde.  
 pe matere of here tale tolde.  
 Wip al pe hole circunstaunce.  
 And whan pe soudan of constaunce.  
 vpon pe popur pat per answerede.  
 The beaute and pe grace herde.  
 As ho whiche pan was to wedde.  
 In alle haste his cause spedde.  
 To sende for pe marriage.  
 And ferpermore wip good corage.  
 he seip be so he may here haue.  
 pat Crist whiche cam pe world to saue.  
 he wole beleue. and pe recorded.  
 per ben on eiper side accorded.  
 And per vpon to make an ende.  
 pe soudan his hostages sende.  
 To Rome of prynces sones thelue.  
 wher of pe fader in hym selue.  
 Was glad and wip pe pope aised.  
 Also cardinales he hay assised.  
 Wip ower lordes many mo.  
 That wip his doughter sholde go.  
 To see pe soudan be conuerted.  
**B**ut pat whiche neuere was wel herced.  
 Qualiter adueniente constantia in  
 barbaria mater soldani humismodi  
 impas paurare volens filium suum  
 na addea constantia cardinalibus  
 et alijs romanis primo die ad communem  
 munitionem et conuersionem illius inuen-  
 sa ipm soldani oeb qz ibidem pe con-  
 stancia romanos ab insidijs latitan-  
 tibus subdola detractione interfici per-  
 vauit. ipam qz constantia in quadam  
 nam absqz gubernaculo posita p al-  
 tid mare ventor flatibus agitata  
 et exiliu dirigi solam constituit.  
 Enne po began traunille.  
 In distourbanne of his spousale.  
 So pryncely pat noon was war.  
 pe moder whiche pe soudan bar.  
 Was pan a hie and pouht pe.  
 Su to hire self if it so is.  
 my sone hym wedde in his manere.  
 pan haue I lost my ioyes here.  
 ffor myn astat shal so be lassed.  
 penkende pus she hay compassed.

**S**e sleiht how she may begyle.  
 Here sone and fel wip iune a while.  
 Be theue hem also when pat per were.  
 She ferney wordes in his ere.  
 And in his wye gan to seie.  
 my sone I am be double wye.  
 Wip al myn herte glad and blye.  
 ffor pat my self haue ofte seie.  
 Dised. you wolt as men seip.  
 Receyue and take a nelle fey.  
 Whiche shal be forpering of pi hyf.  
 And eke so worshipful a wyf.  
 pe doughter of an Emperour.  
 To wedde it shal be gret honour.  
 ffor pi my sone I wolt besече.  
 pat I suche grace myght a reche.  
 Whan pat my doughter come shal.  
 pat I may payme in special.  
 So as me penkep it is honeste.  
 Be yllke whiche pe ferste feste.  
 Shal make vn to here conyunge.  
 pe soudan grauntep here axinge.  
 And she per of was glad y nough.  
 ffor vnder pat a noon she drouh.  
 Wip falso wordes pat sche spak.  
 couyne of dep behynde his bak.  
 And per vpon here ordinaunce.  
 She made so pat whanne constance.  
 Was come forp wip pe romeynes.  
 Of clerkes and of citezynes.  
 A riche feste she hem made.  
 And most whan per weren glade.  
 Wip fals couyne whiche she hadde.  
 Here clos emne po she spradde.  
 And alle po pat hadden be.  
 Or in apert or in pryue.  
 Of conyseil to pe marriage.  
 She slough hem in a sodeyn rage.  
 Endlong pe bord as per be set.  
 So pat it myht nouht be let.  
 Here oline sone was nouht quit.  
 he deyede vpon pe same plit.  
 But what pe hys god wole spare.  
 It may for no peril missare.  
 his woxi mayde whiche was pere.  
 Stood panne as who seip ded for fear.  
 To se pe feste holi pat it stood.  
 Which al was torned in to blood.  
 pe dist forp wip pe cuppe and al.  
 Be bled per weren ouer al.  
 She seih hem depen on euery side.  
 No wonder pouh she wepte and aride.  
 makende many a wofu mone.  
 Whan al was slayn but she alone.  
 pe olde fend his sarazine.  
 Let take a noon his constantine.  
 Wip al pe good she ydet brouhte.



And hay ordeined as she pouhte.  
 A naked ship wyf oute stier.  
 Which he good and here in fere.  
 Vntailed ful for yeres fyue.  
 Where put he wynd wolde it dryue.  
 She put vpon pe waller wude.  
 But he which al ping may shude.  
*Qualiter natus ad Constantiam ad par-  
 tes anglie que tunc pagana fuit pro  
 humer sub quodam castello pennis  
 qui tunc alle vocabatur. post trien-  
 nium applanit qua quidem miles noie  
 elda da castelli tunc custos eam lete  
 suscipiens vxori sue hermyngshelde in  
 custodiam honorifice commendauit.*  
 Chro per til pat she cam to londe.  
 Here schip to fere hay take on honde.  
 And in Northumbreland arriue.  
 And happy pan pat she dryue.  
 Under a Castel wyf pe flood.  
 Which vpon humbet banke stood.  
 And was pe knyges owne also.  
 pe which alle was cleped yo.  
 A Saxon and a worpi knyht.  
 But he beleuey nouht a rht.  
 Of his Castel was chafelayn.  
 Elda pe knyges chambirleyn.  
 A knyhtli man after his labe.  
 And whan he seih vpon pe walbe.  
 pe ship dryuende a lone so.  
 He had a noon men sholden go.  
 To se what it betof he may.  
 pe was vpon a somer day.  
 pe ship was loked and she founde.  
 Elda wyf iune a litel founde.  
 pe wyf and wyf his wyf anoon.  
 Toward pe yong lady is goon.  
 Wher pat pei founde gret richesse.  
 Bot she here wolde nouht confesse.  
 Whan pei here axen what she was.  
 And napeles vpon pe cas.  
 Out of pe ship wyf gret worshipe.  
 pei toke here in to felashipe.  
 As pei pat weren of here glade.  
 Bot she no manere loye made.  
 Bot sorwey sore of pat she fond.  
 To arstendon in yille lond.  
 But elles she hay al here wille.  
 And pus wyf hem she dwellei fülle.  
 Dame hermyngshelde which was pe wyf  
 Of Elda lich here owne lyf.  
*Qualiter Constantia Elda ad vxoresua  
 hermyngshelde qui antea xam no exti-  
 terat ad fidem xaminatose comitit.*  
 Constance loney and it fel so.  
 Spekende alday be abene hem tho.  
 pring quere of noodes purueance.

This mayde caught pe creance.  
 Du to his wyf so parfitely.  
 vpon a day pat faste by.  
 In pience of here housbonde.  
 Whete pei go walkend on pe fawnde.  
 A blind man which come per lad.  
 Du to his wyf criande he bad.  
 Wyf boie his hondes vp and prevede.  
 To here and in his wyf he sevede.  
 Ohermyngshelde. which cristes fery.  
 Enformed as Constance fery.  
 Peceved hast yef me my lyht.  
 vpon his word here herre afflyht.  
 penkende what was best to done.  
 But napeles she herde his bone.  
 And seide in trust of cristes labe.  
 Which don was on pe cross and flabe.  
 you bishp man behold and se.  
 Wyf pat to god vpon his kne.  
 yonfonde he took his fite anoon.  
 wher of pei merueille euerichon.  
 But elda wondrey most of alle.  
 pe open ying which is be falle.  
 Concludy hym be such a weye.  
 pat he pe fery mot nede obeye.  
*Qualiter quidam miles iuuenis  
 in amorem constantie exarscens  
 p eo qd ipa sibi assensum noluit ea  
 de morte hermyngshelde quam pomet  
 noctanter interfecit verbis detrac-  
 toris accusauit sed angelus dñi ipm  
 sic detrahentem in maxilla subito p-  
 cucionis non solum pro mendacio com-  
 ptauit sed etiam mortali poe ipius co-  
 fessionem penitus interfecit.*  
 How lest what fel vpon his ying.  
 Elda forp du to pe kyng.  
 A morwe took his weye and vod.  
 And hermyngshelde at hom a bod.  
 ffory wyf Constance wel atte ese.  
 Elda which pouhte his kyng to plese.  
 As he pat ym vubbeded was.  
 Of Constance al pe pleyu cas.  
 As goodely as he conye tolde.  
 The kyng was glad and seide he wolde.  
 Come veder in such a wyse.  
 pat he hym myhte of here a wyse.  
 pe tyme apoynted forp wyf al.  
 pe Elda wiste in spedal.  
 vpon a knyght whom fro chylhod.  
 He hadde vp dwelle in to manhod.  
 To hym he tolde al pat he pouhte.  
 wher of pat after hym for pouhte.  
 And napeles at yille tyde.  
 Du to his wyf he bad hym ride.  
 To make redi al ying.  
 A yem pe conyng of pe kyng.



And seip pat he hym self perfore.  
 penker to come and had perfore.  
 That he hym kepe and told hym Whan.  
 his knyght rod forp his wey pan.  
 And for Was pat of tyme passed.  
 he hadde and al his wit compassed.  
 how he constance myght winne.  
 For he seih po no sped per tyme.  
 Wher of his lust began to abate.  
 And pat Was loue is yanne hate.  
 Of here honour he hadde enue.  
 So pat vpon his trecherie.  
 A lesynge in his herte he caste.  
 Til he cam hom. hie faste.  
 And doth his lady to understonde.  
 pe message of here husbunde.  
 And per vpon pe longe day.  
 pei setten piinges in aray.  
 pat al Was as it sholde be.  
 Of euery piing in his degre.  
 And Whan it cam in to pe myht.  
 his wif here hap to bedde dight.  
 Wher pat his mynde wip here day.  
 his fals knyght vpon delay.  
 hap caried til pei were aslepe.  
 As he wolde his tyme kepe.  
 his dedly werkes to fulfille.  
 And to pe bed he stalkefalle.  
 Wher pat he wiste Was pe wif.  
 And in his hond a rasour knyff.  
 he bar. wip which here wote he cutte.  
 And pryncely pe knyff he putte.  
 vnder pat dier beddes side.  
 Wher pat Constance lay beside.  
 Elda cam hom pe same myht.  
 And stille wip a priue syht.  
 As he pat wolde nouist a wake.  
 his wif he hap his wey take.  
 In to his chambre. and per he aggende.  
 he found his ded wip bledende.  
 Wher pat Constance lay faste by.  
 Was falle a slepe and so depely.  
 he arde a loude. and she a look.  
 And forp wip al she caste a look.  
 And seih his lady bledde pere.  
 Wher of shouende ded for fere.  
 She Wat and falle as eny stoon.  
 She Lay and Elda per vpon.  
 In to pe castel cleyed oute.  
 pan sterte euery man aboute.  
 In to pe chambre and forp pe wente.  
 But he which al vntrope meinte.  
 his fals knyght a mong hem alle.  
 vpon his piing which is befallle.  
 Seip pat Constance hap don his dede.  
 And to pe bed wip pat he yede.  
 After pe fulshede of his speche.

And made hym per for to seche.  
 And found pe knyff per he it leyde.  
 And pan he arde and pan he seide.  
 To seip pe knyff al bledde here.  
 What nedest more in his matere.  
 To are and pus here innocene.  
 he schalundre per in audienae.  
 Wip fals wordes which he feyne.  
 But pat for al pat ouer he pleyne.  
 Elda no ful credence took.  
 And happy pat pere Lay a book.  
 vpon pe which Whan he it sou.  
 his knyght hap more and seide on heh.  
 pat alle men it myht wite.  
 To be pe book which here is wite.  
 Constance is giltif wel 9 wot.  
 Wip pat pe hond of heuene hym smot.  
 In tokne of pat he Was forp more.  
 pat he hap hope his when Lore.  
 Out of his hed pe same stounde.  
 pei sterten and so pei were founde.  
 And wip Was herd Whan pat pei felle.  
 which seide o damped man to helle.  
 To pus hap god pe schalundre wrofe.  
 pat pou a yens Constance hast spote.  
 Be thow pe sope er pat pou dre.  
 And he told out his felowp.  
 And seip forp wip his tale anon.  
 In to pe ground wher alle goon.  
 his ded lady Was be graue.  
 Elda which pouht his honour saue.  
 pat he may restreynce forbe.  
 For pe second day a monthe.  
 Qualiter Rex Alie ad fidem xpi con-  
 uersus baptizatus recepit et constan-  
 am sup hoc loco ano desponsauit que  
 in vel vnde fuit aliam nullo modo fa-  
 rebatur. Et ad infra breue postea a  
 dno suo insignata fuisset ipso ad de-  
 bellandum cum sociis uel arripuit et  
 ibide sup guerras aliquandu pmanfit.  
 The King cam as pei were accorded.  
 And Whan it Was to hym recorded.  
 What god hap brouht vpon his chaunce.  
 he took it in to remembrance.  
 And pouht more pan he seide.  
 For al his hole herte he leyde.  
 vpon Constance and seide he sholde.  
 For loue of here if pat she wolde.  
 Baptisme take and Cristes fey.  
 beleue. and ouer pat he seip.  
 he wolde here wedde. and vpon his.  
 assured eche to oper is.  
 And for to make shorte tales.  
 per cam a bisschop out of Wales.  
 fro Bangor. and thac he hith.  
 which purgh pe grace of god almyhte.



The King Wy many an oyer mo.  
 Hap crystoned and be abene hem also.  
 He hap fulfilled pe marriage.  
 Bot for no lust ne for no rage.  
 She told hem neuere what she was.  
 And napeles vpon his cas.  
 pe King was glad how so it stood.  
 For wel he wiste and vnderstood.  
 She was a noble creature.  
 pe hys make of nature.  
 Here hap visited in a pottle.  
 pat it was oppulche knolle.  
 She was Wy childe be pe King.  
 Wher of a boue al oyer King.  
 He poukep god and was right glad.  
 And fel pat tyme he was bestad.  
 vpon a verre and moste ride.  
 And whil he sholde peke a bide.  
 And lestre at home to kepe his Wyf.  
 Suche as he knelle of hys lyl.  
 Elda forp Wy pe bysshop eke.  
 And he Wy polver goy to seke.  
 A yen pe sannes for to fonde.  
 The verre which he took on honde.  
**Qualiter Regina Constantia isan-**  
**tem masculu que in baptismo aiaur-**  
**cu vocat regis absente eliga est. s-**  
**india regis mater domilda sup isto**  
**fed condolens. litteris mendentibz pe-**  
**ni certificauit. qz vxor sua demonia-**  
**ti 2 no humani generis quoddam mostro-**  
**sum fantasma dco genitum ad octu-**  
**duxit. huiusmodi detractionibz ad-**  
**uersus constantia in tanto parea-**  
**uit. qd ipa in uau qua prius ve-**  
**nerat ueru ad exilium vna ad suo**  
**pauem remissa desolabatur.**  
 The tyme set of kynde is come.  
 His Lady hap hys chambre nome.  
 And of a sone bore ful.  
 Wher of she was joyful.  
 She was deliuered sauf and soone.  
 The bysshop as it was to done.  
 pat hym baptisme and mores calley.  
 And per vpon as it befallay.  
 Wy litters writen of record.  
 pe sende vn to here hege lord.  
 pat kepers weren of pe queene.  
 And he pat sholde go bettene.  
 pe messagere to knaresburgh.  
 Whiche toun he sholde passe purgh.  
 piden de cam pe furste day.  
 pe Kinges moder pere lay.  
 Whos right name was domilde.  
 Whiche after pat pe cause kynde.  
 For he whiche pouk deservile wolde.  
 vnto his Lady gooy and tolde.

Of his message al how it ferde.  
 And she Wy ferued ioye it herde.  
 And pat hym yestes lauteh.  
 But in pe myht al prudeh.  
 She took pe litters whiche he hadde.  
 ffo poynt to poynt and ouer radde.  
 As she pat was purgh out durtelle.  
 And let do write oyer nelle.  
 In stede of hem and pus pei speke.  
**Prima littera in comendacionem**  
**Constantie ab epo Regi missa p Do-**  
**mulda in contrarium falsata.**  
 Oure liege lord we pe besek.  
 pat pou Wy us be nouht wrope.  
 pe we such ying as pe is lop.  
 vpon oure troupe pe certefie.  
 pe Wyf whiche is of suerrie.  
 Of such a childe deliuered is.  
 ffo kynde whiche stant al amys.  
 Bot for it sholde nouht be seye.  
 We haue hit kept out of pe weye.  
 For dred of pure woldes shame.  
 A pouere childe and in pe name.  
 Of pilke whiche is so mystere.  
 We toke. and per to we be sware.  
 pat noon but only pou and we.  
 shal knolle of his pryncete.  
 mores it hatte and pus men weue.  
 That it was born of pe queene.  
 And of his olde body begete.  
 Bot ying may nouht be foyete.  
 pat pou ne sende be word anon.  
 What is pe wille per vpon.  
 pe lerre as polt hase herd deuise.  
 Was contrefet in such a wise.  
 pat nouman sholde it a parcyue.  
 And she whiche pouhte to desceryue.  
 It lepp wher she pat oyer took.  
 pe messenger whan he a book.  
 And wist no ying howh it was.  
 A ros. and rod pe grete pas.  
 And tof pe lerre to pe King.  
 And whan he seih pe wonder ying.  
 He makey pe messenger no cherk.  
 Bot napeles in wise manere.  
 He wrot a yen and pat hem charge.  
 pat pei ne suffre nouht at lare.  
 his Wyf to go but kepe here stille.  
 Til pei haue herd more of his wille.  
 pe messagere was yesteeles.  
 But why lerre napeles.  
 Or be hym hof or be hym lop.  
 In alle haste a yen he goy.  
 He knaresburgh and as he wente.  
 vnto pe moder his entente.  
 Of pat he fond tollard pe King.  
 He told. and she vpon his ying.



**F**ey pat he scholde abide a bide al nyht.  
And made hym feste and chier arhit.  
ffremend as pouh she foup hym pougl.  
Bot he wyf stroun doun which he drouk.  
ffor wyf ye trauncle of ye day.  
Was dronke. a slepe and whil he lay.  
She hay his lettres ouerseye.  
And formed in an ope weye.  
Ther was a nelle lettre write.  
*Seda littera p Regem Ego remissa*  
*a donulda iterum fallata*  
Which say I do yoll for to write.  
pat purgh ye counsel of you tibo.  
I stound in poynt to ben yn do.  
As he which is a kynng depose.  
ffor eueri man it hay suppos.  
How pat my wyf constance is faie.  
And if pat I sey ony delaye.  
To put here out of compaignie.  
ye worship of my regalle.  
Lore. and ouer ye sei telle.  
here childe shal noulst among he melle.  
To depmen ony heritage.  
So can I se noon auantage.  
Bot al is lost if she a bide.  
ffor ye to lode on eueri side.  
To ward ye myschief as it is.  
I charge how and bide ye.  
pat ye ye same ship vitale.  
In which pat she took arriuale.  
yer june and putte hom bope tibo.  
here self forp wyf here childe also.  
And so forp brouht yn to ye depe.  
Betake here to ye see to kepe.  
Of four dages tyme I sette.  
pat ye ye no longer lette.  
So pat youte hif be noulst forfet.  
And pus ye lettre countrefet.  
ye messenger which was villur.  
Upon ye knynges halue bar.  
And wher he sholde it hay betake.  
And whan pat ye haue hede take.  
And rad pat writen is wyf june.  
So auct a sorlle ye be gynie.  
As yei here olue moder siben.  
Frent in a fyre byfore here yhen.  
pere was wepyng and yer was wo.  
Bot finally ye ying is do.  
Upon ye see ye haue here brouht.  
But she ye cause wist noulst.  
And pus upon ye flood yei done.  
ye lady wyf here yong sone.  
And yame houndes to ye heuene.  
She straughte an wyf a mylde steuene.  
Fulend upon here bare kne.  
She seide o hehe mageste.  
Which seist ye poynt of eueri troupe.

*Libet.*  
**T**ake of ye hosful woman troupe.  
And of ye childe pat I shal kepe.  
And wyf pat word she gan to wepe.  
ffremend as ded and yer she lay.  
Bot he which alle yingis may.  
Conforter here and at ye laste.  
She lokep and here phe caste.  
Upon here childe and seide ye.  
Of me no maner charit it is.  
What sorlle I suffre but of ye.  
ye penkep it is a met pite.  
ffor if I sterue you shal depe.  
So mot I nedes be pat wepe.  
ffor moderhed an for tendresse.  
Wyf al myn hole besinesse.  
Orderne me for ylle office.  
As she which shal be ye noyce.  
pus was she strenged for to stonde.  
And ye she took here childe on honde.  
And pas hym souke and euer among.  
She wept and ower while song.  
To wolke wyf here childe a slepe.  
And pus here olue childe to kepe.  
She hay vnder ye goddes care.  
*Qualiter natus constancie post bieu*  
*mid in partes hispanie superioris in*  
*sauezenos iactabatur a quor natus*  
*deus ipam uenas gracia sille liberauit.*  
And so fel upon auenture.  
Whan ylle yer hay mad his ende.  
here ship so as it moste wende.  
yurth strengre of wynd which god hay.  
Est was was in to spayne dryue.  
Fist fast vnder a Castel wal.  
Wher pat an hepen aduual.  
Was lord. and he a stillard hadde.  
Don thelous which al was bade.  
A false knyght and a reuegar.  
he got to lode in what astat.  
ye ship was come and pere he foud.  
ffor wyf a childe upon here hond.  
This lady where she was alone.  
he took good hede of ye pson.  
And seih she was a wyf wist.  
And yout he wolde upon ye nyht.  
Demene here at his olue wille.  
And let here be yer june stille.  
pat no man seih she noulst pat day.  
At goddes wille pus she lay.  
vubolle what here shal betide.  
And fel so pat be nyhtes tide.  
ye knyght wyf ouce felaschy.  
hay take a bote and cam to ship.  
And yout of here his lust to take.  
And stoz if she hym dautiger make.  
pat certenly she sholde depe.  
She seih yer was noon ower wepe.



And seide he holde here wel conforte.  
 pat he ferst lode out at ye porte.  
 pat no man were nyh ye seide.  
 Which myght knolde what he dede.  
 And pan he may so what he wolde.  
 He was rihst glad pat she so tolde.  
 And to ye port anon he ferde.  
 She preyed god and he here herde.  
 And so derynliche he was out yrolde.  
 And dreynt. and so began to blode.  
 A Wynd menable fro ye lond.  
 And pus the myghty goddes hond.  
 Here hay conueied and defended.  
 And whan ye peer be ful despended.  
*Qualiter nauicula constancie quodam  
 die p altu mare haurius inter copio-  
 sam nauim multitudinem dilapsa est.  
 quare dux et capitaneus ipsam ignotam  
 suscipiens usq ad romam secul pdux-  
 it. ubi equalis exon sue helene pman-  
 sura reuerent associant. necnon a  
 hysdem filis maritand in oi habundat  
 ad quasi propriu educant.*  
 Here ship was deryn vpon a day.  
 Where pat a myghty myghty day.  
 Of shipes al ye world at ones.  
 And as god wolde for ye nones.  
 Here ship goy in among hem alle.  
 And synt nouht er it be falle.  
 And hay pat vessel vnder gete.  
 Which mayster was of al ye flete.  
 Bot yere it rested and a bod.  
 His myght ship on Anker wod.  
 Ye Lord cam fory and whan he feth.  
 That ower linge a borde so myht.  
 And wondrey what it myght be.  
 And bad men to gon in and se.  
 His lady so was croupe a fide.  
 As she pat wolde here selue hude.  
 For she ne wiste what he were.  
 Ye souhter aboute and fond here yere.  
 And brouhten by here child and here.  
 And yer vpon his Lord to spere.  
 Began fro wherme pat she cam.  
 And what she was. quod she I am.  
 A woman wofully bestad.  
 I hadde a lord and pus he bad.  
 Pat I fory wyf myn ltel sone.  
 Vpon ye wallis sholde wone.  
 Bot whi ye cause was I not.  
 Bot he whiche alle myght not.  
 Yet hay I yowte hym of his myht.  
 My child and me so kept by right.  
 Pat we be saue bope tbo.  
 His Lord here axey euer mo.  
 How she beleuey. and she seip.

I beleue and tryste in Cristes feip.  
 Whiche dede vpon ye rode tre.  
 What is pi name so quod he.  
 My name is euse she hym seide.  
 Bot ferper more for ouht he preide.  
 Of here astat to knolde pleyu.  
 She wolde hym no myght elles seyn.  
 Bot of ye name whiche she ferney.  
 Alle ower myghtes she restreney.  
 Pat o word more she ne tolde.  
 His Lord pan axey if she wolde.  
 Wyf hym a bide in compaignie.  
 And seide he cam fro barbarie.  
 To Rome ward and hom he wente.  
 So she supposy what it mente.  
 And seip she wolde wyf hym wende.  
 And dwelle by to here lyues ende.  
 Be so it be to his plesance.  
 And pus vpon here acquoyntance.  
 He told here pleyu as it stood.  
 Of Rome how pat ye gentyl blod.  
 In barbarie was betrayed.  
 And yer vpon he hay assayed.  
 He were and takou such vengeance.  
 Pat noon of pilke allhande.  
 Be whom ye treson was compassed.  
 Is from ye sterd a lyue passed.  
 Bot of constance how it was.  
 Pat coupe he knolde be no cas.  
 Where she be cam so as he seide.  
 Here she dw to his word she leyde.  
 Bot for pat made she no chere.  
 And naples in pis manere.  
 It happed pilke tyme so.  
 His Lord wyf whom she sholde go.  
 Of Rome was ye senatour.  
 And of here fader ye Emperour.  
 His bloper doughter hay to wyfe.  
 Whiche hay here fader eke a lyue.  
 And salustes was cleped so.  
 His wyf helene hith also.  
 To whom constance was cosyne.  
 pus to ye seke a medecyne.  
 Hay god ordeyned of his grace.  
 Pat fory wyf in ye same place.  
 His senatour his troupe plithe.  
 For euer whil he lyue myghte.  
 To kepe in worship and in welpe.  
 Be so pat god wold yere here helye.  
 His lady whiche fortune hym seide.  
 And pus be ship fory seilende.  
 Here and here chyls hom he brouhte.  
 And to his wyf so he besouhte.  
 To take here in to compaignie.  
 And she whiche coupe of curtesie.  
 Al pat a good wyf sholde foune.  
 Was myht glad pat she hay wome.



The felaship of so good one.  
 Til elthe yeres were a gone.  
 His Emperours doughter auste.  
 Forp byr pe doughter of Saluste.  
 Was kept but no man redily.  
 Enell what she was and nouht forpi.  
 For pouste wol she hadde q be.  
 In here astut of heih deure.  
 And euery byt here pouey wel.  
 Qualiter Rex Alle mita pace cum  
 Scotis a guerris redies et no inuenta  
 vxore sua causa exili diligencius  
 pcurans ad matre sua Romilda  
 inde culpabilem scississet. ipam i  
 ne pcurans comburi fecit.  
 How herke hold pulke bustable whel.  
 Whiche euere corner went aboute.  
 pe kyng alle whil he was oute.  
 As you to fore hast herd his cas.  
 Deceyued purh his moder was.  
 For when pat he come hom a pepu.  
 He axep of his chamburleyn.  
 And of pe byshop eke also.  
 Where pei pe queene hadden do.  
 And pei answered yere he bad.  
 And haue hym pulke letre rad.  
 Whiche he hym sente for warant.  
 And tolde hym pleyntly as it scant.  
 And seyn it pouht hem gret pite.  
 To seen so worpi one as she.  
 Wy such a child as yere was bore.  
 So sodeynly to be for lore.  
 He axep hem what child pat were.  
 And pei hym seiden pat nunghere.  
 In al pe world yow men souhte.  
 Was neuere woman pat forp brouhte.  
 A fairere child pan it was on.  
 And pan he axep hem a noon.  
 Whi pei ne hadden writen so.  
 pei tolde so pei hadden do.  
 He seide nay pei seiden yis.  
 pe letre shewed rad it is.  
 Whiche pei forsoke euery del.  
 pe was yere vnder stonde wel.  
 pat yere is trefon in pe pyn.  
 pe messenger to fore pe kyng.  
 Was brouht and sodeynly ch opposed.  
 And he no pyn hay yre suposed.  
 For al was wel. began to seye.  
 pat he nallhere vpon pe weye.  
 A god but only in a fiede.  
 And cause whi pat he so dede.  
 Was as he wente to and fro.  
 At Euarestburgh be nyhtes fllw.  
 And whan pe kyng it herde telle.  
 pe kynges moder made hym dille.  
 Wy gine his herte he wist all faste.

The trefon whiche his moder caste.  
 And pouht he wolde nouht abide.  
 But forp right in pe same tyde.  
 he took his hors and rod a noon.  
 Wy hym riden manyon.  
 To Euarestburgh and forp pei wente.  
 And lich pe fyre whiche tunder hente.  
 In such a rage as seip pe book.  
 his moder sodeynly he took.  
 And seide yu to hire in his wyse.  
 O beeste of helle in what iurse.  
 Hastou deserud for to die.  
 pat hast so falsly put a wepe.  
 Wy trefon of in bacbitryng.  
 pe welbest at my Euorblechpyn.  
 Of wyse and ye most honeste.  
 For q wole make his behest.  
 It shal be deuyed et q go.  
 And let a fyre do make yo.  
 And bad men for to caste here June.  
 But first she told out al pe synne.  
 And dede hem alle for to wite.  
 How she pe letres hadde wite.  
 For poynt to poynt as it was wrouht.  
 And so she was to depe brouht.  
 And brent to fore here sonys yhe.  
 Wher of yere oper whiche it fllw.  
 And herden how pe cause stoad.  
 Seyn pat pe iurment is good.  
 Of pat here sone here hay so serued.  
 For she it hadde wel deserued.  
 purh trefon of here fals tunge.  
 Whiche purh pe lond was a fter funge.  
 Constance and euery wist conplemyng.  
 For he whom alle wo destreymer.  
 his sorowful kyng was so bestad.  
 pat he shal neuere more be glad.  
 he seip est sone for to wedde.  
 Til pat he wiste how pat she spedde.  
 Whiche hadde ben his ferste wyf.  
 And was his yonge vnlusty lyf.  
 he drueh forp so as he may.  
 Til it besel vpon a day.  
 Qualiter post baptism. xij. annoz  
 Rex Alle ob soludoms causa Romā  
 proficiscens vxorem suā Constan  
 ciam vna cu filio suo diuina pui  
 denia ibidem letis inuenit.  
 Whan he his wertes hadde adhoued.  
 he pouht he wolde be releued.  
 Of soule hele vpon pe fey.  
 Whiche he hay take pan he seip.  
 pat he to Rome in pilgrynage.  
 wol go. wher pe pope was pelage.  
 To take his absolucion.  
 And vpon his condicion.  
 Remad Edwyn his lieutenant.



Which heu to hym was apparynt.  
 pat he se Lond in his absence.  
 Shal welbe. and thus be prouidence.  
 Of alle ynynges wel be gon.  
 He took his leue and fory is gon.  
 Elda which po was wyf hym pere.  
 Er pei fullich at Rome were.  
 Was sent to fore to purueie.  
 And he is myde vpon pe weie.  
 In helpe to ben herbergeour.  
 Hay axed who was senatour.  
 pat he his name mihte kenne.  
 Of Capadoce he seide Arcenne.  
 He hihte. and was a worpi knyght.  
 To hym goy Elda po fory right.  
 And told hym of hys lord tidynge.  
 And preyde pat for his conyng.  
 He wolde assaue hym herbergeour.  
 And he so dede of good corage.  
**W**han al is don pat was to done.  
 pe kyng hymself cam after sone.  
 pe Senatour whan pat he come.  
 To couste and to his wyf at home.  
 Hay told how such a kynge alle.  
 Of gret aray to pe cite.  
 Was come. and couste vpon his tale.  
 Wyf herte clos and colour pale.  
 A wone felle and he mervyley.  
 So sodeynly whar prync here cyley.  
 And caught here vp and whan she wolde.  
 She sikep wyf a pitous look.  
 And feynly sekenesse of pe see.  
 But it was for pe kyng alle.  
 For ioye pat she had in here pouht.  
 pat god hym hay to todone brouht.  
 his kyng hay spoke wyf pe pope.  
 And told al pat he coupe mope.  
 What greuey in his conscience.  
 And pat he pouhte in reuerence.  
 Of his astut er pat he wente.  
 To make a feste and thus he sente.  
 vnto pe Senatour to come.  
 vpon pe morde and ope some.  
 To sette wyf hym at pe mete.  
 his tale hay couste nouht forye.  
 But to mores here sone tolde.  
 pat he vpon pe morde sholde.  
 In al pat euere he coupe or mihte.  
 Be present in pe kynges sihte.  
 b. mores to fore pe kynges phe.  
 a. So pat pe kyng hym ofte sike.  
 vpon pe morde wher he sat.  
 ful ofte stood and vpon pat.  
 The kyng his cheer vpon hym caste.  
 And in his face hym pouhte as fuste.  
 He seih his owne wyf constance.  
 for nature as in resemblance.

Of face hym lifep so to clope.  
 pat he were of a fytte bope.  
 pe kyng was moeued in his pouht.  
 Of pat he seih and knoldey nouht.  
 his child he louep kyndely.  
 And yet he wot no cause why.  
 But wel he seip and vnderstod.  
 pat he towarde Arcenne stood.  
 And axep hym anoon rht pere.  
 If pat his child his sone were.  
 He seide pe so i hym calle.  
 And wolde god it were so be falle.  
 For it is al in ope wise.  
 And so began he to deuise.  
 How he pe childe moder foud.  
 vpon pe see fro euery lond.  
 Wyf gynn a ship was scierles.  
 And hold his lady helpeles.  
 for wyf his child he hay fory duille.  
 pe kyng hay vnderstode his salbe.  
 pe childe name and axed po.  
 And what pe moder hihte also.  
 pat he hym wolde telle he preyde.  
 mores his child is hote he seide.  
 his moder hatte couste and pis.  
 I not what manere name it is.  
 For alle wyte wel ynolde.  
 wher of sondel fauend he told.  
 for couste in saxon is to seyn.  
 Constance vpon pe word volmeyn.  
 For who pat coupe specifice.  
 What po fel in his fautesie.  
 And hold his wit a boutte renney.  
 vpon pe loue in whiche he brentey.  
 But were a wonder for to here.  
 for he was nouper here ne here.  
 But clene out of hym self a weie.  
 pat he not what to peute or seye.  
 So fayn he wolde it were she.  
 wher of his herte pryuele.  
 He gan to werre of pe and nay.  
 pe whiche in such a balance lay.  
 pat contenunce for a prowe.  
 he lost al he mihte knolde.  
 The sope. bot in his memoire.  
 pe man which lch in pourtatour.  
 Desirey nouht pe heuene more.  
 pat he ne lougey also fore.  
 To wite what hym shal betide.  
 But whan pe bordes were a side.  
 And euery man was rise a bolte.  
 pe kyng hay wepuel al pe route.  
 And wyf pe Senatour allone.  
 he pat and preyde hym of a boue.  
 To se his couste where she dwelley.  
 At hom wyf hym so as he telley.  
 pe Senatour was wel a pried.



The King no longer is delayed.  
 To se his couste goy pe King.  
 And she was warned of his ying.  
 And wy heleyne for she cam.  
 And yon pe King and he po nam.  
 Good hede and whan he seih his wyf.  
 A noon wyf al his hertes lyf.  
 He caught here in his armes and kiste.  
 Was neuere wyht pat sih ne wiste.  
 A man pat more ioye made.  
 Wher of pei weren alle glade.  
 Whiche herde tellen of his chaunce.  
 His King po wyf his wyf constance.  
 Whiche hadde a gret part of his wille.  
 In Rome for a tyme styll.  
 A bood and made hym wel at ese.  
 But so yet coupe he neuere plesse.  
 His wyf pat she hym wolde seyn.  
 Of here after pe troupe pleyne.  
 And of what coure pat she was bore.  
 re what she was and yet perfore.  
 Wyf al his wyf he had don seke.  
 pus as pei like a bedde and speke.  
 She preyed and counseleyd wyf.  
 pat for pe worship of hem bope.  
 So as here pouhte was honeste.  
 he wolde an honorable feste.  
 make er he wente in pe cite.  
 Where peimperor hym self shal be.  
 he grauntey al pat she hym preyde.  
 But as men in pat tyme seyde.  
 his Emperour fro yllke day.  
 pat ferst his doughter went a way.  
 he was pan after neuere glad.  
 But what pat eueri man hym had.  
 Of grace for his doughter sake.  
 pat grace wolde he nouht forsake.  
 And pus ful gret almesse he dede.  
 Wher of he hadde many a bedde.  
*Quasiuer constancia que antea  
 p totu tempus exili sui penes oes  
 incommuta se celauit tuc demum p  
 suo Impatori se ipsam manifesta  
 uit. qd ad Rex Allee scmisset bna  
 ad vniuersa Romanoy multitudme  
 inestimabili gaudio admirantes  
 amantissimam laudauit.*  
 The Emperour out of pe toum.  
 Wyf iune a ten mile enuiron.  
 Wher as it pouht hym for pe beste.  
 Hay sondry places for to teste.  
 And as fortune wolde po.  
 he was pat tyme at con of po.  
 pe King alle for wyf passent.  
 Of couste his wyf hay peder sent.  
 more his sone as he was taught.  
 To peimperor and he goy straucht.

And in his fader halue besouhte.  
 Wyf delbe reuerence as he ouhte.  
 pat of his hie worshippe.  
 he wolde do so gret mekenesse.  
 his owne toum to come and se.  
 And yene a tyme in pe cite.  
 So pat his fader myght hym mete.  
 pat he wolde oues wyf hym etc.  
 his Lord hay graunted his requeste.  
 And whan pe day was of pe feste.  
 In worship of pe Emperour.  
 pe King and eke pe Senatour  
 for wyf here wyfes bope tith.  
 Wyf many a Lord and Lady mo.  
 On hors riden hym a pen.  
 Til it beset vpon a pleyne.  
 pei sihen wher he was comende.  
 Wyf pat constance anon byende.  
 Spak to here Lord pat he abide.  
 So pat she may to fore ride.  
 To ben vpon his bien venue.  
 pe firste whiche shal hym salue.  
 And pus after here lordes graunt.  
 vpon a mule wher amblant.  
 for wyf a felle rode pe queene.  
 pe wondren what she wolde mene.  
 And riden after softe pas.  
 Bot whan his Lady come was.  
 To peimperor in his pence.  
 She seide a loude in audience.  
 My Lord my fader wel yold be.  
 And of his tyme pat I se.  
 your honour and your good hede.  
 whiche is pe helpe of my querele.  
 I yonke vnto pe goddes myht.  
 for ioye his horte was alyht.  
 Of pat she tolde in remembrance.  
 And whan he wiste it was constance.  
 Was neuere fader half so blye.  
 Depend he feste here ofte tyme.  
 So was his herte al ouer come.  
 for pouh his moder were come.  
 fro dey to lyue out of pe graue.  
 he myht no more wonder haue.  
 pan he hay whan he here seih.  
 Wyf pat here owne Lord cam myh.  
 And is pe Emperour obeyed.  
 Bot whan pe fortune is belouped.  
 how pat constance is come aboute.  
 So hard an herte is noon oute.  
 pat he for pite po ne wepte.  
 A vceus whiche here fond and kepte.  
 Was pan glad of pat is falle.  
 So pat wyf ioye among hem alle.  
 pei riden in at Rome grette.  
 his Emperour pouht al to late.  
 Til pat pe pope were come.



**A**nd of ye lordes sende some.  
 To preye hym pat he wolde haste.  
 And he cam forp in al haste.  
 And whan pat he was tale herde.  
 How wonderly his chaunce ferde.  
 He poucep god of his miracke.  
 To whos myght may be non obstacle.  
 Ye kynge a noble feste he made.  
 And thus pei weren alle glade.  
 A parlement er pat pei wente.  
 pei setten vn to his entente.  
 To putten Rome in ful espyr.  
 pat euens was apparant heur.  
 And sholde abide wyth hem stille.  
 For such was al pe lordes wille.  
**Qualiter mauricius ad imperatorem de  
 heres imperii remansit. Et Rex alle ad  
 Constantia in Anglia regressus fuit.**  
**W**han euery thing was fulli spoke.  
 Of sorwe and queynt was al pe smoke.  
 pe toke his leue alle pe kynge.  
 Wyth ful many a riche thinge.  
 Whiche pe Emperour hym hadde geue.  
 he geit a glad byt for to lye.  
 For he Constantia hap in his hond.  
 Whiche was pe comfort of his lond.  
 For whan pat he cam hom ayein.  
 per is no tinge it myghte seyn.  
 What was pat ilke stounde.  
 Of pat he hap his queene founde.  
 Whiche ferst was sent of goddes soude.  
 Whan she was dyue vpon pe stounde.  
 Be whom pe mysteue of synne.  
 Was left. and Cristes fery cam june.  
 To hem pat whilom were blinde.  
 Bot he whiche hymdrey euery kynde.  
**Qualiter Rex alle post biennium in  
 Anglia huiusmodi carnis resolutionis sub  
 icetus nature debitum persoluit. post  
 cuius obitum Constantia ad patrem suo  
 Rome se transfudit mortuum.**  
**A**nd for no hold may be forbounde.  
 pe dey comende er he be sounde.  
 To his wyf his kynge such aqueyntance.  
 pat he wyf al his lidenance.  
 myht nouht defende his liff.  
 And thus he partey from his wyf.  
 Whiche pan made sorwe ynough.  
 And per vpon here herce drouh.  
 To Louen Engelond for euere.  
 And go where she hadde leuere.  
 To Rome whences pat she cam.  
 And thus of al pe lond she nam.  
 Here leue and goy to Rome a yen.  
 And after pat pe boles seyn.  
 She was nouht yere but a yolle.  
 pat dey of kynde hap ouer yolle.

**De morte Imperatoris...**  
 Here wyrti fader whiche me seide  
 pat he be thene here armes deide.  
 And after pat pe yer suende.  
**De morte Constantie...**  
 pe god hap made of here an ende.  
 And fiv pe wordes faderie.  
 Hay take here in to compaignie.  
**De coronacione mauricii qui adhuc  
 in ciuitate mauricianus imperator  
 christianissimus inuincibilis est.**  
**O**ne here sone was coroned.  
 Whiche so ferfor was abandoned.  
 To Cristes fery pat men hym calle.  
 Arros pe Cristenest of alle.  
 And thus pe wel menyng of Loue.  
 Was at pe laste set aboue.  
 And so as poth hast herde to fore.  
 pe false cuntes weren lore.  
 Whiche vpon Loue wolden lye.  
 For pe touchend of his enye.  
 Whiche Lougey vnto bacbitunge.  
 Be War pou make no lesunge.  
 In hyndryng of an ower wylt.  
 And if you wilt be tauht a rylt.  
 What myschep bacbitunge dop.  
 Be ower weye a tale sop.  
 Now myht pou here heyt suende.  
 Whiche to his vice is accordende.  
**Ad hoc ponit confessor exemplum  
 contra istos detractores qd alius  
 vituperat mendacia confingentes  
 defamacione fieri parat. Et nar  
 rat qualiter Philippi regis  
 macedonie filius Demetrio filio suo ob  
 eo pbitate inuidens composito detrac  
 tione mendacio ipm apud prem su  
 u mortalit aquisauit dices qd ipe  
 no solu prem sz a tota macedonie  
 regnu romane hostibz pditione ven  
 didisset. quem sup hoc in iudiciu pro  
 ducens testibz qz iudicibz auro subor  
 natis quibus falsissime morte con  
 demnatu euicidit quo defuncto. ead  
 z patre infra breue postea mortuus  
 est. Et sic persio successore regnan  
 te deus huiusmodi detractiones in  
 vidia abhorrens ipm ad vniuersa  
 suoz pugnatoz multitudie extra  
 Danubij flum ad Emilio nro Ro  
 manoz consule euentu bellico mit  
 ta fortunauit. Ita qd ab illo die  
 macedonie potestas penit destrutta  
 romano imperio subiugata deserui  
 uit sz eius detractio qua contra aliu  
 pspirat i sui ipi defamacione p p  
 petuo deuulhato consistit.**



**I**n Cronyke as pou shalt wite.  
 A grete ensample I fynde wite  
 Whiche I shal telle vpon pis pinge.  
 Philippe of macedonie kynge.  
 Two sonnes hadde he his wyf.  
 Whos name was in grece ruf.  
 Demetrius the firste broper.  
 Was hote and perseus pat ower.  
 Demetrius men seide so.  
 The better knyght was of the two.  
 To whom the lond was entendaunt.  
 As he whiche heir is appaunt.  
 To regne after his fader day.  
 Bot pat pinge whiche no water may.  
 Queneche in pis world but euere breyn.  
 In to his broper herte it renney.  
 The proude enuie pat he seih.  
 His broper sholde chynbe on heih.  
 And he to hym not pan obeie.  
 Pat may he suffre be no weie.  
 Wip strengthe durste he no pinge fonde.  
 So took he lesping vpon honde.  
 Whan he seih tyme and spak per to.  
 For it befell pat tyme so.  
 His fader met werres hadde.  
 Wip Rome whiche he fereite ladde.  
 Wipgh myghty hond of his manhode.  
 As he whiche hay ynough knyghthode.  
 And ofte hym hadde sore treued.  
 Bot er the werre were acheued.  
 As he was vpon ordenaunce.  
 At home in grece it fel pchaunce.  
 Demetrius whiche ofte aboute.  
 Fynde was. stod pat tyme oute.  
 So pat his perse in his absence.  
 Whiche bar the tinge of pestelence.  
 Wip false wordes whiche he ferney.  
 Vpon his owne broper pleyney.  
 In priuete behynde his bak.  
 And to his fader thus he spak.  
 Wip dere fader I am holde.  
 So weie of kynde as woun wolde.  
 Pat I fro yow shal no pinge hide.  
 Whiche myghte torne yn ouy side.  
 Of yowre estat to greuaunce.  
 For pi myght hertes obeisaunce.  
 Towardes yow I penke kepe.  
 For it is good ye take kepe.  
 Vpon a pinge whiche is me told.  
 Wip broper hay so alle sold.  
 To hem of Rome and yow also.  
 For pame pei behote him so.  
 That he wip hem shal regne in pees.  
 Thus hay he cast for his ences.  
 Pat yowre astut shal go to nouht.  
 And pis to pue shal be brouht.  
 So ferfori pat I vnder take.

It shal not wel mowe be for sake.  
 The kynge vpon pis tale answerde.  
 And seide if pis pinge whiche he herde.  
 Besoy and may be brouht to proue.  
 It shal nouht ben to his behoue.  
 Whiche so as shapen oue ye werste.  
 For he hym self shal be the ferste.  
 Pat shal be ded if pat I may.  
 Thus after ward vpon a day.  
 Whan pat Demetrius was come.  
 Anon his fader hay hym nonge.  
 And bad yn to his broper perse.  
 Pat he his tale shal reherce.  
 Of milke treison whiche he tolde.  
 And he whiche al vntrollye wolde.  
 Conserley pat so heih a nede.  
 He trected where as it may spede.  
 In comodu place of iugement.  
 The kynge per to yaf his assent.  
 Demetrius was put in holde.  
 Wher of pat perseus was bolde.  
 Thus stod the troupe vnder the charge.  
 And the fallshode tray at large.  
 Whiche yurgh behest hay ouercome.  
 The gretest of the lordes some.  
 Pat puyeliche of his accord.  
 Per stonde as witnesse of record.  
 The iuge was made fauorable.  
 Thus was the lalbe decernaible.  
 So ferfori pat troupe fonde.  
 Rescoue noon. and thus the lond.  
 Wip wip the kynge deceyued were.  
 The misteles was dampned per.  
 And deiede vpon accusment.  
 But such a fals consperement.  
 Prouh it be proue for a prollie.  
 God wolde nouht it were vnknothe.  
 And thus was after ward wel pue.  
 In hym whiche hay the dey controued.  
 Of pat his broper was so slayn.  
 The perseus was wonder fayn.  
 As he pat was heu appaunt.  
 Vpon the regne and expectant.  
 Wher of he was so prouid and beyn.  
 Pat he his fader in deseyn.  
 Hay take and set at noon a compte.  
 As he whiche wouht hym to surmount.  
 Pat where he was first de bonant.  
 He was so rebel and contrative.  
 And nouht as heu but as a kynge.  
 He took vpon hym alle pinge.  
 Of malice and of tyrannye.  
 In contempt of the regalie.  
 Eyuende his fader and so brouhte.  
 Pat whan the fader hym depouhte.  
 And seih to whoder side it shoul.  
 Anon he wiste wel ynough.



hold perse wy his false tynge.  
 Hay so pe innocens belle tynge.  
 pat he hay slayn his owne broper.  
 wher of as pan he kneld noon ower.  
 For sodeynly pe iugge he nom.  
 Which corrupt sat vpon pe dom.  
 In such a wise and hay hym pressed.  
 pat he pe sope hay confessed.  
 Of al pat hay be spoke and do.  
**M**ore sory pan pe kynge was po.  
 Was neuere man vpon his molde.  
 And pouht in certeyn pat he wolde.  
 Vengeance take vpon his wroug.  
 For pover party was so fawour.  
 pat for pe lalbe of no statut.  
 per may no right be creat.  
 And vpon his diuision.  
 pe Lond was turned vpon so down.  
 wher of his herte is so distraught.  
 pat he for pure sorbe hay caught.  
 pe maladie of whiche nature.  
 he querit in ouer creature.  
 And whan his kynge was passed pus  
 pe false tynge perseus.  
 pe reherment hay vnderfonge.  
 For per may no ymyng stonde longe.  
 Whiche is nouht vpon troupe groundes  
 for god which all ymyng hay boundes.  
 And seih pe fulshode of his quyle.  
 hay set hym but a lytel while.  
 pat he shal regne vpon depes.  
 for sodeynlich rih as he wes.  
 So sodeynlich down he fel.  
 In yllke tyme it so befel.  
 his nelbe kynge los uelbe pride.  
 Wy strenge shop hym for to ride.  
 And seide he wolde to Rome faste.  
 wher of he made a besy haste.  
 And hay assembled hym an ost.  
 In al pat chere he myht moost.  
 What man pat myht wepen bere.  
 Of alle he wolde noon forbere.  
 So pat it myht nouht be nombred.  
 pe folk whiche after was enobred.  
 putch hym pat god wold ouerwille.  
 In noon it was at Rome knolde.  
 pe pompe whiche pat perse lade.  
 And pe Romaynes pat tyme hadde.  
 A conseil whiche was cleped pus.  
 he name paulus emilius.  
 A noble a worpi knyht wy alle.  
 And he whiche cheef was of hem alle.  
 his wyrt on honde hay vnder take.  
 And whan he sholde his leue take.  
 Of a yong daughter which was his.  
 she wepte. and he what cause it is.  
 here axep. and she hym answered.

pat perse is ded. and he it herde.  
 And wondrey what she mene wolde.  
 And she vpon childhod hym tolde.  
 pat perse hure litel hound was ded.  
 Wy pat he pulley vpon his hed.  
 And makey rih a glad visage.  
 And seide hold pat was a presage.  
 Touchend vpon to pat ower perse.  
 Of pat fortune hym holde aduerse.  
 he seih. for such a pnestab.  
 Most of an hound is to hym hte.  
 for as it is an houndes kynde.  
 To berke vpon a man behynde.  
 Rih so behynde his broper bak.  
 Wy fals wordes whiche he spak.  
 Hay hym do slayn and pat is roupe.  
 For he whiche hatey al durtoupe.  
 pe hihe god it shal redresse.  
 for so my daughter propheteisse.  
 For wy here litel holundes dey.  
 betokeney and pus for he dey.  
 conforced of his euidence.  
 Wy pe romaynes in his defence.  
 And ven pe grebes pat ben comende.  
**C**his perseus as nouht secnde.  
 pe mischey whiche pat hym abod.  
 Wy al his multitude rod.  
 And prided hym vpon pe puny.  
 Of pat he was become a kyny.  
 And hold he hadde his romie gete.  
 For he hay al pe rih forete.  
 Whiche longe vpon to gouernance.  
 wher of purgh goddes ordeuance.  
 It fel vpon pe wynter tide.  
 pat wy his ost he sholde ride.  
 ouer Danubio yllke flos.  
 Whiche al be frosse pan stod.  
 So hard pat he wende wel.  
 To passe. but pe blynde whiel.  
 Whiche toney ofte er men be war.  
 yllke is pat pe horsmen bar.  
 To brak so pat a gret partie.  
 was dreynt of pe cheualrie.  
 pe reuerdard it took a weye.  
 cam noon of hom to londe dreye.  
**C**lausus his worpi knyht romeyn.  
 he his asprie it herde seyn.  
 And haster hym al pat he may.  
 So pat vpon pat ower day.  
 he cam wher he hy ost beheld.  
 And pat was in a large feld.  
 wher pe romaynes ben desplayed.  
 he hay a noon his men arrayed.  
 And whan pat he was embatuled.  
 he goy and hay pe feld assayled.  
 And slouh and took al pat he found.  
 wher of pe macedoyne lond.



Which purgeth hring Alisaundre hound.  
Long tyme scod. Was so deuoured.  
To perse. and al pat infortune.  
pei wite so pat ye comune.  
Of al ye lond his heu exile.  
And he despoiled for ye while.  
Desquied in a pore thede.  
To Rome goy and he for nede.  
ye anstir which pilke tyme was.  
To Worche in Laton and in bras.  
He lerney for his sustenance.  
Such was ye soner purueance.  
And of his fader it is seid.  
In strong prison pat he was leyd.  
In Albe where pat he was ded.  
for hunger and destute of bred.  
The hound was tokne and wheate.  
pat lich an hound he sholde die.  
Which lich was of condicion.  
Wha he wy his detraction.  
Baw on his bioper so behynde.  
To what profit aman may fynde.  
Whiche hindre wole an ower biht.  
for pi wy al yin hole myht.  
My sone eschele pilke vice.  
My fader elles were gnyce. **Aman.**  
for ye perfore so wel haue spoke.  
pat it is in myn herte lobe.  
And euere shal but of quibie.  
If ye be more in his baillie.  
Towardes Loue sey me what.  
My sone as gyle vnder ye hat. **co.**  
Wy slehtes of a tregetour. **fessor.**  
his hid. quibie of such colour.  
Hap yet ye fer so deceyuant.  
ye which is cleyed falssemblant.  
Wher of ye matere and ye forme.  
Nol herfene and i ye shal enforme.  
**Q**uod biluagus aget nisi duplo con  
uat ore. Dungi die loqur wy sua  
wta teat. Dule het luce tenebras mes  
sermo salute. Aaus set morbu dat su  
us esse graue. Pax tibi qua poudet  
magis est pnostica quere. Comoda  
si dederit disce subesse dolim. Quod  
pater esse fides in eo frans est qz politi.  
Quapud paci fings habere negat. O  
qui adico talis deformat amante. O  
nams appares en amore nichil. it  
uacat confessor sup quarta speie in  
indie que dissimulacio datur. cui uul  
tus qito maioris amicie apparet  
A ostedit nro sbaliois doli fallaaas ad  
deapiedid meus ymaginatur.  
O falssemblant if i shal telle.  
A bone alle ower it is ye welle.  
Out of ye which deceyt flowey.

Ther is no man so wyse pat knoddey.  
Of pilke flood which is ye tyde.  
Ne holl he sholde hym selue gyde.  
To take sauf passage yere.  
And yet ye wynd to mannes ere.  
Is softe and as it semei oute.  
It makey cler weder al aboute.  
Bot pouh it seme it is nouht so.  
for falssemblant hap euere mo.  
Of his counseil in compaignie.  
ye derke butrebe ypoctisie.  
Whos word discordey to his pouht.  
for pi pei ben to nedre brouht.  
Of a couyne of an houshod.  
Als it shal after pis be told.  
Of falssemblant it nedey nouht.  
To telle of olde ensamples ouht.  
for alday in experience.  
Aman may so pilke euidente.  
Of faure wordes which he hurey.  
Bot yet ye bange enbe fierer.  
And halt it euere fiv ye lond.  
Where falssemblant wy ore on hoid.  
It rolley. and wol nouht arise.  
But let it on ye wallbes drue.  
In gret tempest in gret debate.  
Wher of pat Loue and his astate.  
Empeyten and perfore i rede.  
my sone pat pou fle and drede.  
pis vice and what pat ower seyn.  
Let pi semblant be trelbe zpleyn.  
for falssemblant is pilke vice.  
Which euere was wy oute office.  
Where pat enue penley to mile.  
He shal be fore pilke while.  
Of prude counseil be messenger.  
for whan his semblant is most cler.  
pan is he most derke in his pouht.  
pouh men hym se ye knolle hym nouht.  
Bot as it shellep in ye glas.  
piny which ye per jme neuere was.  
So shellep it in ye visage.  
pat neuere was in his corage.  
pus doy he all his piny wy slehtes.  
Nol ley pi consaence in slehte.  
hic in amoris causa sup isto vicio  
**Confessor Amanti opponit...**  
**Q**uod good sone and shrif ye here.  
If yow were euere customere.  
To falssemblant in eny wise.  
**Confessio amantis**  
for ouht i can me yet adyse.  
my goode fader certes no.  
If i for Loue haue ouht do so.  
i tow axey i wole prepe yow.  
for elles i wot neuere hold.  
Of falssemblant pat i haue gilt.



**M**y sone and sy pat yow wylt.  
 pat I shal axe rabbe nouht.  
 But telle if euere was pi pouht.  
 Wip fals semblaunt and couerture.  
 To wite if eny creature.  
 How pat he was my loue lad.  
 So were he sory were he glad.  
 Whan pan yow wifeste how it were.  
 Al pat he woued in yin ere.  
 Yow coldest fory in ower place.  
 To setten hym fro loues grace.  
 Of what woman pat ye best liste.  
 per as no man his counseil wiste.  
 For you be whom he was decoued.  
 Of loue and from his purpos woued.  
 you pouhtest pat his distourbanne.  
 Thyn olue cause sholde auance.  
 As who seip I am so cele.  
 per is no mannes prouete.  
 may be heled so wel as myn.  
 As to my sone of such enyn.  
 Telle on. my gode fader myn.  
 As for ye more party I say.  
 But of foundel I am beknowe.  
 pat I may stonde in yllke wile.  
 Among hem pat sundres dyle.  
 I wol me nouht per of excuse.  
 pat I wip such colour me seigne.  
 Whan I my best semblaunt feigne.  
 To my felawte til pat I wote.  
 Al his counseil boye cold and hot.  
 for be pat cause I make hym chere.  
 Til I his loue knowe and here.  
 And if so be myn herte souchey.  
 pat ouht yn to my lady touchey.  
 Of loue pat he wole me telle.  
 A noon I reme to ye welle.  
 And caste water in ye fire.  
 So pat his care amysse ye myre.  
 Be pat I haue his counseil knowe.  
 ful ofte sye I ouer proude.  
 When pat he wouey best to stonde.  
 For pis I do yow vnderfoude.  
 If pat a man loue elles where.  
 So pat my lady be nouht pere.  
 And he me telle I wole it hide.  
 per shal no word a scape a side.  
 for wip decept of no semblaunt.  
 To hym breke I no couenaunt.  
 ere likey nouht in ower place.  
 To lette no man of his grace.  
 re for to be inquisit.  
 To knowe an ower mannes lyf.  
 Where pat he loue or loue nouht.  
 pat touchey no ying to my pouht.  
 But al it passet purah myn ere.  
 Right as a ying pat neuere were.

**A**ndie foryete and leyd a side.  
 For if it touche on eny side.  
 my lady. as I haue er spoke.  
 myn eres be nouht panie token.  
 for certeyn whanne pat betit.  
 my wil. myn herte. and al my wit.  
 Ben fully set to herkne and spure.  
 What eny man wole speke of hire.  
 yus haue I feyned compaignye.  
 ful ofte for I wolde aspie.  
 What ying it is pat euery man.  
 Telle of my worpi lady can.  
 And for alio causes I do pis.  
 re ferste cause wher of it is.  
 If pat I myht ouht herkne and seke.  
 pat eny man of here myspeke.  
 I wold excuse here so fully.  
 pat whanne she wist it redely.  
 myn hope sholde be ye more.  
 To haue hele pouht for euermore.  
**C**hat ower cause I yow assure.  
 Is. whi pat I be couerture.  
 haue feyned semblaunt ofte tyme.  
 To hem pat passen alday byme.  
 And ben louers as wel as I.  
 for pis I wene trellisly.  
 pat per is of hem alle noon.  
 pat per ne louen euerychon.  
 my lady. for sonly I leue.  
 And dwiste setten it in preue.  
 To noon so wys pat shulde a sterde.  
 But he were lustles in his herte.  
 for whi. and he my lady sihe.  
 here vusane and here goodly yhe.  
 For he he louede er he wente.  
 And for pat such is myn entente.  
 pat is ye cause of myn aspie.  
 whi pat I feyne compaignie.  
 And make felawte ouer al.  
 for gladly wold I knowen al.  
 And holde me couert alway.  
 pat I ful ofte ye or nay.  
 re lust and were in eny wise.  
 For feyne semblaunt as ye wise.  
 And herkne tales til I knowe.  
 my lady louers al arolle.  
 And whan I here how per haue wrouht.  
 I fare as yow I herd it nouht.  
 And as I no word vnderfod.  
 For pat is no ying for here good.  
 for leuey wel ye sope is pis.  
 pat whan I knowe al how it is.  
 I wole but swyperen hem a lite.  
 But al ye worste I can endite.  
 I telle it to my lady plat.  
 In foryering of myn olue astat.  
 And hyndre hem al pat euere I may.



Bot for al pat yet dar I say.  
 If fride vnto my lady no lye.  
 Al pouh myn herte nedes mote.  
 yung feryngpe of loue al pat I here.  
 Discoure vnto my lady dere.  
 For in good feyn I haue no myht.  
 To hele fro pat shere myht.  
 If pat it touche here any ying.  
 But pis bot wel ye heuene kyng.  
 pat sy furst ye world be gan.  
 vnto noon ower feryngpe man.  
 re feryng 9 semblant ne chere.  
 To wite or aye of his matere.  
 pouh pat he louede ten or tselue.  
 Whan it was nouht my lady selue.  
 Bot if he wolde aye any red.  
 Al only of his olde hed.  
 how he wy ower loue ferde.  
 hie tales wy myn ere I herde.  
 Bot to myn herte cam it nouht.  
 re saut no depper in my pouht.  
 Bot hield counseil as I was bede.  
 And told it neuere in ower fide.  
 Bot let it passen as it com.  
 Now fader say what is y dom.  
 And how yow wilt pat I be permed.  
 For such semblant as I haue feryng.  
 By sone if reson be wel perped. **ffor.**  
 per may no witu be mytroyed. **ffor.**  
 re vice noon be set in pry.  
 For y my sone if yow be wys.  
 Do no dyet vpon y face.  
 Whiche as wole nouht ym herte chace.  
 For if you do wy yme a prole.  
 To ower men it shal be knolle.  
 So myht yow lytly falle in blame.  
 And lese a gret partie of y name.  
 And napeles in pis deure.  
 ful ofte yme you myht se.  
 Of such men pat now a day.  
 pis vice setten in assay.  
 I speke it for no mannes blame.  
 But for to warne the y same.  
 my sone as I may here talke.  
 In euery place where I walke.  
 I not if it be so or noon.  
 Bot it is many dayes noon.  
 pat I feist herd telle pis.  
 how falssemblant hapten and is.  
 most commonly from yow to yow.  
 wy hem pat dwellen amonge de here.  
 Of such as we lumbardes calle.  
 For y ben ye shest of alle.  
 So as men seyn in to lye aboute.  
 To ferne and shelle ying wy oute.  
 Whiche is reuers to pat wy yme.  
 Wher of pat y ful ofte wy yme.

Whan y ben ye wofon sholde lese.  
 y ben ye laste and yet y chese.  
 And we ye fuste and yet behynde.  
 We wouyere as we sholde fride.  
 To pfit of olde olde lond.  
 yow yow yow yow yow yow yow.  
 To don here pfit al at laute.  
 And ower men bere al ye charge.  
 Of lumbardes vnto pis cobine.  
 Whiche alle londes konne engyne.  
 may ffasssemblant in special.  
 Be lited for y ouer al.  
 Where as y penken for to dwello.  
 A mony hem self so as y telle.  
 For ben enformed for to lere.  
 A cruse which cleped is ffacere.  
 For if ffacere come aboute.  
 ym after lard hem stant no doute.  
 To dyde wy a soueril hond.  
 ye best goodes of ye lond.  
 And byng chaf and take com.  
 Where as ffacere goy to som.  
 In al his weie he fynt no let.  
 pat dore cam noon hys her shot.  
 In which he hys to take entie.  
 And yow ye counseil most sece.  
 Of euery ying ffacere sholde.  
 Whiche in to straunge place he dwelle.  
 Where as he dot it may most greue.  
 And yow ffacere makey beleue.  
 So pat ful ofte he hap deceyued.  
 Er pat he may be aperteyued.  
 yow is ye vice for to drede.  
 For who yow olde boles rede.  
 Of which ensample as we ar.  
 hym ouht be ye more war.  
 Of alle yow pat ferne chere.  
 Wher of yow shal a tale here.  
**Whiche point Confessor exempli con**  
**tra istos qui sub dissimulatione uiuolent**  
**ae speculo alios in amore defraudant.**  
**Et narrat qualiter hercules ad ype ad**  
**dam flumina cum vada no notu de ja**  
**nira transiuit pposit sup bonas**  
**ressus gregas ob amiciaa herculis**  
**duxit de amiciaa in bluas suas sup**  
**apiens quam vixam saluo pduxit.**  
**Et sentin ad ad latus puehisset qui**  
**ato curare potuit ipam tamquam**  
**in puidia herculis. asportare fu**  
**gens conabatur. ad quod no solu**  
**yi sed etiam herculis mortis euen**  
**ti fortuna postmodum causant.**  
 ffasssemblant whiche is beleued.  
 ful many a lard yow is greued.  
 And was long yme er we were bore.  
 To ye my sone I wole per fore.



A tale telle of Hallessemblant.  
 Whiche falsen many a couenaunt.  
 And many a fraude of fals conseil.  
 per ben honnend vpon his seil.  
 And pat a bouhten gisteles.  
 Sope Deianire and hercules.  
 ye whiche in gret dishefelle.  
 purth fulssemblant as I shal telle.  
 When hercules wy June a proube.  
 Al only hay his herre proube.  
 vpon his faire Deianire.  
 It fel hym on a day desure.  
 vpon a ryuer as he stod.  
 pat passe he wolde ouer ye flos.  
 Wy oute bote and wy hem lede.  
 his loue but he was in drede.  
 for tendresse of pat wete wyht.  
 for he knew not ye forye aryt.  
 were was a geant pun myh.  
 which nressus hys and whan he seih.  
 his hercules and Deianire.  
 Wy June his herre he gan to spure.  
 As he whiche purth his trecherie.  
 Hay hercules in gret indie.  
 whiche he bar in his herre lode.  
 And pan he pouht is shal be broke.  
 But he ne durste nayeles.  
 A yen his woxy hercules.  
 ffulle in debate as for to feithe.  
 For feynep semblant as be sleithe.  
 Of frousship and of alle goode.  
 And comep where as yei boyos stode.  
 And maky al ye chere he can.  
 And seip as here othe man.  
 He is al redi for to do.  
 What ying he may and it fel so.  
 pat yei vpon his semblant tryste.  
 And axen hym if pat he wiste.  
 What ying hem were best to done.  
 So pat yei myhten sauf and sone.  
 ye water passe he and she.  
 And whanne nressus ye primate.  
 Fuld of his herre what it mente.  
 As he pat was of double entente.  
 He made hem riht a glad visage.  
 And whan he herde of ye passage.  
 Of hym and here he pouhte wile.  
 And feynep semblant for a while.  
 To don hem plesante and seruise.  
 For he pouht al an ower wise.  
 His nressus wy his wordes sihe.  
 pat such a counseil to for here yhe.  
 whiche semep outward pfitable.  
 And was wy June deceivable.  
 He bad hem of ye scemes depe.  
 pat yei be war and take kepe.  
 So as yei knowe nouht ye pas.

But for to helpe in such a cas.  
 He seip hym self pat for here es.  
 He wolde if pat it myht hem plesse.  
 The passage of ye water take.  
 And for his lady vndertake.  
 To bere yn to pat ower stonde.  
 And sauf to sette here vpon a londe.  
 And hercules may pan al so.  
 ye were knolbe how he shal go.  
 And her to yei accorden alle.  
 For what as after shal befulle.  
 Wel pined was hercules of ye.  
 And his geant glad also is.  
 And took his lady vpon a lode.  
 And set here on his shulder softe.  
 And in ye flood began to wade.  
 As he whiche no geuachyn made.  
 And bar here ouer sauf and soun.  
 And whan he stood on drie ground.  
 And hercules was fer be hynde.  
 He sette his troupe al out of mynde.  
 Who so yer of be leef or lop.  
 Wy Deianire po forp he goy.  
 As he pat pouhte to disseuere.  
 ye compaignie of hem for euere.  
 Whan hercules yer of took hede.  
 Als faste as ouere he myght hym spede.  
 He hysch after in a proube.  
 And happe pat he hadde a bolle.  
 ye whiche in all haste he bende.  
 As he pat wolde an arlle sende.  
 whiche he to fore hadde enbenmed.  
 He hay so wel his shote quited.  
 pat he hym purth ye body finette.  
 And yus ye false wyht he lette.  
 For lest now such a felonye.  
 Whan nressus wist he shulde die.  
 He took to Deianire his sherte.  
 whiche wy ye blood was of his herre.  
 purth out desteyned ouer al.  
 And told how she it kepe shal.  
 Al proube to ye entente.  
 pat if here lorde herre wente.  
 To lone in eny ower place.  
 ye sherte he seip hay such a grace.  
 pat if she may so mekel make.  
 pat he ye sherte vpon hym take.  
 He shal alle ower lere in veyn.  
 And torne vnto here lone a yeyn.  
 Who was po glad but Deianire.  
 Here pouhte here herre was a fyre.  
 Til it was in here cofre lode.  
 So pat no word yer of was spoke.  
 The dayes geon ye yeres passe.  
 ye herres wayen lasse and lasse.  
 Of hem pat ben to lone vntrelle.  
 ye hercules wy herre nelbe.



His loue hay sette on Golen.  
 And yer of speken alle me.  
 His Golen his faire mynde.  
 Was as men pilke tyne sayde.  
 Ye knyghtes daughter of Eurice.  
 And she made hercules so nice.  
 Upon here loue and so affore.  
 That she hym clopeth in here cote.  
 And she in his was cloped ofte.  
 And yus ye febleste is sette a losse.  
 And strengthe was put vnder fote.  
 Yer can no man yer of do bote.  
 Whan deianire hay herd his speche.  
 Yer was no sorre for to seche.  
 Of oper helpe bot she noon.  
 Bot herpyn to here cofre anoon.  
 Wip wepyng yhe and woful herte.  
 She took out pilke vnhappi sherte.  
 As she pat wende wel to do.  
 And brouht here werk a bonte so.  
 That hercules ye sherte on dede.  
 To such entent as she was dede.  
 Of ressus so as i seide er.  
 Bot yer of was she nouht ye ner.  
 As no fortune myn be weyued.  
 Wip falssemblant she was decerued.  
 Pan whan she wende best haue donne.  
 She lost al pat she hay begonne.  
 For pilke sherte yn to ye bon.  
 His body sette a fre anoon.  
 And cleuep so it may not tlyvne.  
 For ye venyn pat was yer gune.  
 And he pan as a wilde man.  
 Yn to ye hihe wode he ran.  
 And as ye clerk quide telley.  
 Ye grette trees to grounde he fellay.  
 Wip strengthe al of his owne myht.  
 And made an huge fre vpryht.  
 And lept hym self yer gune at ones.  
 And brent hym boye flesh and bones.  
 Which ying can al purgh falssemblant.  
 That false ressus the greant.  
 Made yn to hym and to his wyf.  
 Wher of pat he hath lost his lyf.  
 And she sori for euere mo.  
 For pi my sone er you be wo.  
 I rede be wel war yerfore.  
 For whan so gret a man was loze.  
 It ouht yene a gret conceyt.  
 To warne alle oper of such decypt.  
 To want mercy fader q am war.  
 So fer pat i no more dar.  
 Of falssemblant take acqueyntance.  
 Bot raper q wole do penance.  
 Pat i haue feyned chere er pis.  
 To old axep forp what so i is.  
 Of pat belongey to my shryfte.

Y sone yer yer is the fyfte.  
 Whiche is conceyued of Iunio.  
 And cleped is supplantarie.  
 purgh whos compassment and gyle.  
 ffur many a man hay lost his while.  
 In loue as wel as oper wise.  
 Her after as i shal dedise.  
 Iunius alcorius est supplantator  
 honoris. Et tua quo vertat culmina  
 subitus arat. Est opus occultu quasi  
 que latet ignis et herba. Quod fuit  
 et subita forte uocatus adest. Sicut  
 alio amans alio supplantat amantem.  
 Et capio occulte quod nequit me  
 palam. Sepe q supplantans in pla  
 tum plantat amoris. Quod putat  
 prius alter hore bonis. Sic tractat  
 confessor de quinta specie Iunio q  
 supplantatio dicitur auctor priusq  
 papiatur aliene dignitatis a officij  
 multoties intrusor existat.  
**S**he vice of Supplantation.  
 Wip many a fals collaoun.  
 Whiche he conspirep al vnknothe.  
 ffur ofte tyne hay ouerprole.  
 Ye worschip of an oper man.  
 So wel no lyf a wayte can.  
 A yen his sleighte for to caste.  
 Pat he his purpos atte laste.  
 Ye hay er to be wip set.  
 But most of alle his herte is set.  
 In court vpon ye grette offices.  
 Of dignitees and benefices.  
 Yus god he wip his sleighte a bonte  
 To hyndre and sholde be an oper oute.  
 And stonde wip his sleigh compass.  
 In frede where an oper was.  
 And so to setten hym self gune.  
 He reacher nouht be so he wryne.  
 Of pat an oper man shal lese.  
 And yus ful ofte chalt for chese.  
 He chaunacy wip ful lreel cost.  
 Wher of an oper hay ye lost.  
 And he ye profit shal receyue.  
 For his fortune is to desceyue.  
 And for to chaunigen vpon ye whel.  
 His wo wip oper memies wel.  
 Of pat an oper man a daley.  
 His owne astat he vphaley.  
 And taky ye brid to his byere.  
 Wher oper men ye busshes bete.  
 Y sone and in ye same wise.  
 Yer ben louers of such amprise.  
 Pat shapen hem to be releued.  
 Wher it is wrong to ben acheued.  
 For it is oper memies rish.  
 Whiche he hay taken day and myht.



To kepe for his owne store.  
 Toward hym self for euermore.  
 And is his pye by ye lalbe.  
 Whiche pynnt pat axey no felalle.  
 Of loue holde his couenant.  
 Got yet pat Worchen by supplant.  
 yet Wolden such a man supplant.  
 And take a part of milke plante.  
 Whiche he hay for hym self sette.  
 And so ful ofte is al vntuette.  
 pat som men Wency were riht faste.  
 for Supplant Wy his slie caste.  
 ful ofte hapney for to molde.  
 Wynn which an oper man hay solde.  
 And maky comoun of preprete.  
 Wy sleute and Wy subtilite.  
 As men may se fro yer to yer.  
 pus clerney he ye got to store.  
 Of Whiche an oper maister is.  
**hic in amoris causa oporuit Con-**  
**fessor amant sup eodem...**  
 For y my sone if yow er pis.  
 hast ben of such professioun.  
 Discouere y confession.  
 hast yow supplantid euy man.  
**Confessio amantis**  
 For ouht pat y yow telle can.  
 myn holy fader as of pceded.  
 I am Wy outen omy drede.  
 Al gylteles bot of my pouht.  
 my consience excuse I nouht.  
 for Were it Wrount or Were it riht.  
 me Lackey no pynnt but myht.  
 pat y ne Wolde longe er pis.  
 Of oper menues Loue y wis.  
 Se Weie of supplantacion.  
 haue mad appropriacion.  
 And holde pat y neuere bouhte.  
 pouht it an oper man for pouhte.  
 And al pis seide y but for on.  
 for Whan y let al oper gon.  
 Bot here I man nouht ouer passe.  
 pat y ne mot alwey compassse.  
 we rouht nouht be What queyntise.  
 So pat y myght in omy wise.  
 fro such pat my Lady serue.  
 her herte make for to serue.  
 Wy outen euy part of Loue.  
 for be ye goddes Loue a boue.  
 I Wolde it miht so befall.  
 pat y alone sholde hem alle.  
 Supplante and Welde here at my Wille.  
 And pat ying may y nouht fulfille.  
 Bot if y sholde strengye make.  
 And pat dar y nouht vnder take.  
 pouht y Were as Was Alisandre.  
 for yer of myht arise sclandre.

And certes pat I shal do neuere.  
 for in good fey yet hadde I leuere.  
 In my synplesse for to dye.  
 In Worchen such supplantarie.  
 Of oper wise I Wole nouht saye.  
 pat if I fond a siber Wape.  
 I Wolde as for conclusion.  
 Worche after supplantacion.  
 So lihe a Loue for to Wymme.  
 Wold fader yf pat yis be frume.  
 I am al redy to redresse.  
 ye gylte of Whiche y me confesse.  
**By good sone as of supplant con-**  
**feffor.**  
 ye par not drede tant ne quant.  
 as for no ying pat y haue herd.  
 Bot only pat you hast mysserd.  
 penfend and pat melikey nouht.  
 for god beholt a mannes pouht.  
 And if you vnderstod in soy.  
 In Loues cause What it doy.  
 A man to be a supplantour.  
 you Woldest for ym owne honour.  
 Se double Were take kepe.  
 fferst for ym astat to kepe.  
 To be y self so wel bepouht.  
 pat yow supplantid Were nouht.  
 And eke for Worshyp of y name.  
 To Wardes oper do ye same.  
 And suffre euey man haue his.  
 Euy huyeles it Was and is.  
 pat in a Wapit at alle assaies.  
 Supplant of Loue in omy dayes.  
 ye des ful ofte for ye leuere.  
 forsak and so it hay don euere.  
 Ensample y fonde yer vpon.  
**Qualiter Agamemnon de amore**  
**brexoid Achilles et Diomedes de**  
**amore Criseida Trilui supplantau.**  
 At Troy holt pat agamemnon.  
 Supplantid ye Worpi Euyht.  
 Achilles of pat Wete Wih.  
 Whiche named Was Brexoida.  
 And also of Criseida.  
 Whom Troylus to Loue ches.  
 Supplantid hay Diomedes.  
**Qualiter Amphitruon socru sum**  
**Gecam Alneenam pamaunt. scip**  
**sum loco alterius cautelosa supplan**  
**tacione substatit.**  
 Off Geta and Amphitruon.  
 That Whilom Weren boye as con.  
 Of frendshyp and of compaignie.  
 I rede how pat supplantarie.  
 In Loue as it beride po.  
 Begiled hay on of hem tbo.  
 for yis Geta of Whom y mene.  
 To Whom ye lustry faue Alneene.



Assure was be weye of Loue.  
 Whan he best wende haue ben a boue.  
 And fiverest of pat he hadde.  
 Cupide so pe cause hadde.  
 pat whil he was out of pe weye.  
 Amphitruon here Loue alweye.  
 Hay take. and in his fortune wrouhte.  
 He myht yn to pe chambre he souhte.  
 Where pat she lay and wyf a while.  
 He contrefetey for pe while.  
 pe boys of Geta in such a wise.  
 pat made here of here bed arise.  
 Weneunde pat it were he.  
 And let hym june and whan pei be.  
 To gedre a bedde in armes faste.  
 his Geta cam pan at pe laste.  
 yn to pe dore and seide yn do.  
 And she answered and bad hym go.  
 And seide holt pat a bedde alwam.  
 Here leef lay naked in here arm.  
 She wende pat it were for.  
 To what suplant of Loue dop.  
 his Geta fory beyned wente.  
 And yet ne wiste he what it mente.  
 Amphitruon hym hay suplantet.  
 Wyf slepht of Loue and here echauntet.  
 And his pit eueri man out oper.  
 pe ship of Loue hay lost his wyer.  
 So pat he can no wofon stier.  
 And for to speke of his matere.  
 Touchend Loue and his suplant.  
 A tale whiche is accordant.  
 yn to rin Geta I penke enforme.  
 Toold herke for his is pe forme.  
*Quic in amoris causa contra suum  
 dem detractionis punit confessor ex-  
 emplum. Et narrat de quodam ro-  
 mani imperatoris filio qui probitates  
 amoris super omnia excelsior affectibus uel  
 acientis phile ultra mare in partes per-  
 se ad deseruendum Soldano super quier-  
 ras ad solo milite tanquam sold suo  
 ignotus se transiit. Et ad ipius  
 milicie fama super alios ibide assior  
 accersisset. contigit ut in quoda bello  
 contra Caliphid Egypto intro. solda-  
 nus a sagitta mortaliter vulneratus.  
 priusquam moreretur. queda amili  
 filie filo secretissimum isti nobili ro-  
 mano tradidit dicens. qualis sua fi-  
 lia sub paterno benedictionis vinculo  
 adiuncta est. qd quicquid dñi. am-  
 lum ei afferret. ipm in coniugem  
 p omibz suscipiet. Desinito autē  
 Soldano uersus ciuitatem que huius  
 di itinerantes iste romanus comili-  
 con suo huius misterij secretum reuela-*

ut. qui noctanter a bursa dñi sui a-  
 mulo furto surripit. hec que audi-  
 uit dñi pro falsissima supplantat-  
 aione applicauit. Et sic seruus p dño  
 disponsata sibi Soldani filia dñona-  
 tū dñis regnauit.

**O**f pulke cite chief of alle.  
 Whiche men pe noble fōme call.  
 Et it was set to tristes feip.  
 per was as pe crownz seip.  
 An Emperour pe whiche it hadde.  
 In peg. and he no werres hadde.  
 per was no ping disobeyant.  
 Whiche was to fōme appourtenant.  
 But al this turned in co weste.  
 To some it pouht for pe beste.  
 To some it pouht no ping so.  
 And pat was ouly yn to so.  
 Whos herte stood upon flyththode.  
 Bot most of alle of his manthode.  
 pe worri. some of pe Emperour.  
 Whiche wolde be a verrour.  
 As he pat was cheualrous.  
 Of worldes fame and desirous.  
 began his fader to besече.  
 pat he pe werres mighte seche.  
 In seruange marches for to ride.  
 His fader seide he sholde abide.  
 And wolde graunte hym no leue.  
 Bot he whiche wolde not beleue.  
 A fuyght of his to whom he triste.  
 So pat his fader no ping wiste.  
 He took and told hym his corage.  
 pat he purposed a viage.  
 If pat fortune wyf hym stonde.  
 He seide holt he wolde fonde.  
 pe dñe seer to passe yn knolle.  
 And pere a bide for a prolo.  
 yn pe werres to trauaile.  
 And to his portit wyf outen faile.  
 his fuyht whan he hay herd his loid.  
 He wote. and stant of his accord.  
 As per pat bope yonge were.  
 So pat in pryue conseil pere.  
 per ben assented for to wende.  
 And per ynouh wyf hem pei cokou.  
 And whan pe tyne is best pei loken.  
 pat sodeynliche in a Galere.  
 fro fōme lond pei went a weye.  
 And loude vpon pat oper side.  
 pe world fel so pulke rido.  
 Whiche euer his hayres hay dñe.  
 pe dñe soudan pan of perse.  
 A ven pe Caliphe of Egypte.  
 A weye whiche pat hym bedlype.  
 Hay in a marche costiant.



And he which was a pourfuiant,  
Worship of armes to atterghe.  
His romeyn let anon ordeigne.  
pat he was redy euerydel.  
And whan he was arrayed wel,  
Of euery thing which hym belonged.  
Strauht to to fayre his wey he fong.  
Where he se souldan pan found.  
And axen pat wyf hime his lond.  
He myght hym for se weie serue.  
As he which wolde his pong depue.  
The souldan was rihe glad wyf al.  
And wel se more in speal.  
Whan pat he wiste he was romeyn.  
Got what was elles in certeyn.  
pat myght he wite be no weye.  
And pus se kynght of whom i seye.  
Toward se souldan is beleft.  
And in se marches nobl and est.  
Where pat se dedly werres were.  
he wrouht such a kynghtod pere.  
pat euery man spak of hym good.  
And pilke tyme so it seod.  
his myghti souldan be his wif.  
A doughter hay pat in here lyf.  
men seiden per was noon so fair.  
She sholde be here fader heir.  
And was of yeres ripe ynough.  
Here beaute many in herce drouh.  
To bolde vnto pilke lalbe.  
fro which no lyf may be wy dralbe.  
And pat is loue whos nature.  
Sett lyf and dep in auenture.  
Of hem pat kynghtod vnder take.  
his lusty peyne hay ouertake.  
The herte of his romeyn so sore.  
pat to kynghtod more and more.  
prouoce auancey his corage.  
rich to se leon in his rage.  
fro whom alle bestes fle.  
Such was se kynght in demre.  
Where he was armed to se feld.  
per doist noon abide his sheld.  
Gret prys vpon se weie he hadde.  
Got she which al se chaunce ladde.  
fortune schop se marches so.  
pat be passent of bope tho.  
se souldan and se calyhe eke.  
batulle vpon a day per seke.  
which was in sach a wise fet.  
pat lenget sholde it nouht be let.  
per made hem stronge on euery side.  
And whan it drouh toward se tide.  
pat se batulle sholde be.  
se souldan in thert pryncete.  
A goldryng of his doughter too.  
And made here shere vpon a boote.

And ete vpon the goddes alle.  
pat if fortune so befall.  
In se batulle pat he die.  
pat she shal pilke man obere.  
And take hym to here housbond.  
Which pilke saue ryng to hond.  
Here sholde hym after his dep.  
his hay she wore and forp he grey.  
Wif al se possor of his lond.  
vnto se marche where he fond.  
his enemy ful cubatayled.  
The souldan hay se feld assayled.  
per pat ben hardy sone assenbleu.  
Wher of se dresful hertes tremblen.  
pat on sep se put oper saruer.  
Got aboue alle his prys deserue.  
his kynghtly romain wher he res.  
his dedly shere no man abos.  
A ven se which was no defence.  
egypte felle in his psende.  
And per of perse vpon se chace.  
poursuiben but i not what grace.  
sefel an ardre out of a bolde.  
Al sodeynly pat ilke prylke.  
se souldan smot and pere he lay.  
se chace is last for pilke day.  
And he was boze in to a tente.  
The souldan sihe holt pat it wence.  
And pat he sholde alate dye.  
And to his kynght of romayne.  
As vnto hym whom he most tryste.  
his doughter ryng pat noon it wiste.  
he took and told hym al se cas.  
vpon hir op what tokene it was.  
Of pat she sholde ben his wyf.  
Whan his was se the hertes lyf.  
Of se souldan departe sone.  
And se vpon as was to done.  
se dede body wel and fayre.  
per curie til per come at payre.  
Wher he was worpeli bequale.  
The lordes which as wolden saue.  
se regne which was desolat.  
to byng it in good assat.  
A parlement per sette amon.  
it wold herkene what fel per vpon.  
his yung lord his worpi kynght.  
Of Rome vpon se saue wynght.  
pat per a morwe trete sholde.  
En to his his acheler he tolde.  
his conseil and se ryng wyf al.  
The shewer purgh which pat he shal.  
he seip se souldan doughter wedde.  
for so se ryng was leyd to wedde.  
he told in to here fader hond.  
pat wyf what man pat she it fond.  
she sholde hym take to hire lord.



This he seip stant of record.  
 But no man wot who hay pis yung.  
 This sachelur vpon pis yung.  
 His ere and his entent he leyde.  
 And pought more pui he seide.  
 And feignep wip a fals visage.  
 wiche was glad but his corage.  
 Was al set in an ower wyse.  
 yse olde philosophres wyse.  
 yri witen vpon yulle while.  
 pat he may best a man beguyle.  
 In whom ye man hay most credence.  
 And pis besel in eydence.  
 Toward pis yong Lord of Rome.  
 His sachelur which hadde ycome.  
 When pat his Lord be nyghte slepte.  
 pis yung ye which he maister kepte.  
 Out of his purs alwey he dede.  
 And put an ower in ye stede.  
 And wiche whan ye court is set.  
 pis yong Lady was fory fet.  
 To whom ye Lordes don homage.  
 And after pat of mariage.  
 yri telen and axen of here wille.  
 But she which poultte to fulfille.  
 here fader heste in pis matere.  
 Seide openly pat men may here.  
 ye charge which here fader had.  
 ye was pis Lord of Rome glad.  
 And drouh toward his purs anon.  
 Bot al for nouht it was agon.  
 His sachelur it hay fory dralwe.  
 And axep yer vpon ye Larde.  
 pat she hym holde couenant.  
 The tokene was so suffisant.  
 pat it ne myghte be for sake.  
 And napeles pis Lord hay take.  
 Queref ayen his olwhue man.  
 Bot for no ying pat euere he can.  
 He myght as pat nouht ben herd.  
 So pat his clem is vnanswerd.  
 And he hay of his purpos failed.  
 This sachelur wiche was consailed.  
 And wedded. and of yulle empire.  
 he was crowned Lord and sire.  
 And al ye Lord hym hay receyued.  
 wher of his Lord which was deceyued.  
 A sekensse er ye wiche morthe.  
 Conceyued hay of dedly sorwe.  
 And as he lay vpon his dey.  
 yer while hym lastep speche a brey.  
 he seide for ye wichepiste.  
 Of att ye Lord and eke ye beste.  
 And told hem al ye sope po.  
 pat he was sone and heir also.  
 Of yemperor of grete Rome.  
 And how pat yer to gedre come.

This knyght and he might as it was.  
 he told told hem al ye pleyne cas.  
 And for pat he his counseil tolde.  
 pat ower hay al pat he wolde.  
 And he hay failed of his mede.  
 As for ye good he taky noon hede.  
 he seip but only of ye loue.  
 of which he wende haue ben a loue.  
 And yer vpon be lettre write.  
 he doy his fader for to write.  
 Of al ye matiere as it stod.  
 And ymune wip an herthy mod.  
 vnto ye Lordes he besoughte.  
 To telle his Lady how he bouhte.  
 here loue which an ower glader.  
 And wip pat word his helthe fader.  
 And seide a dieu my Lady wete.  
 ye hif hay lost his kyndely hete.  
 And he lay ded as ony ston.  
 wher of was sory many on.  
 But non of alle so as she.  
 This fals knyght in his degre.  
 Arested was and put in hold.  
 for oppynly whan it was told.  
 ye trefon which is befulle.  
 yurgh out ye Lord yer seiden alle.  
 If it be so pat men suppose.  
 his olde vtroupe hym shal depose.  
 And for to sechen an eydence.  
 wip honour and gret reuerence.  
 wher of yempryghten knolle an eide.  
 To yemperor a noon yer sende.  
 The lettre which his sone wrot.  
 And whan pat he ye sope wot.  
 To telle his sorwe is endeles.  
 But yer in haste napeles.  
 vpon ye tale which he herde.  
 his stebard in to persse ferde.  
 wip many a worpi romeyn eke.  
 his lege traytour for to seke.  
 And whan pai ynder come were.  
 pis knyght hym hay confessed yer.  
 how fully pat he hay hym bore.  
 wher of his worpi Lord was lore.  
 ye seiden some he sholde deye.  
 But yer yer founden such a weye.  
 pat he shal nouht be ded in persse.  
 And pis ye stilius ben dmyse.  
 he cause pat he was crowned.  
 And pat ye Lord was abandoned.  
 To hym al pouh it were vnyght.  
 yer is no fayne for hym dyght.  
 Bot to ye point and to pis ende.  
 yer graunten wel pat he shal wende.  
 wip ye romeyns to Rome a yem.  
 And pis accorded ful and pleyne.  
 ye glibe body wip ye dede.



My leue take forþ þei lede.  
 Wher þat supplant þay þis iurse.  
 Wher of þat þou þe myght aduise.  
 Upon þis enformation.  
 Touchend of supplantacion.  
 þat þou my sone do nouht so.  
 And for to take hede also.  
 What supplant þou in oper halue.  
 þer is no man can fynde a salue.  
 Oleyuli to helen such a sore.  
 It þay and shal ben euermore.  
 Whan þride is þy enue ioynt.  
 he suffrey no man in good porit.  
 Wher þat he may his honour lette.  
 And þer þou if I shal sette.  
 Ensample. in holy cherche I fynde  
 þat þat supplant is nouht behynde.  
 God wot if þat it uolt be so.  
 For yn Cronyke of tyme li go.  
 I fynde a tale concordable.  
 Of supplant whiche þat is no fable.  
 In þe manere as I shal telle.  
 So as whilom þe þynque felle.  
*Þis point Confessor exemplum cont  
 uctos in casu diuinitatis adquirende  
 supplantores. Et narrat qualiter  
 p. Bonifacius pdecessorem suu ce  
 lestinu a papatu conlecta arcue  
 cione fraudulenter supplantant.  
 Sz qui potentes a sede deponit hui  
 modi supplantacionis fraudem non  
 sustinens. ipu sic in subline exal  
 tatum postea in pfundi carceris in  
 seriam p. uia fame qz siti cruciari  
 necnon et ab hui. vite gaudijs dole  
 rosa morte explantari finali conclu  
 sione p. m. p.*

Rome as it þay ofte falle.  
 þe Vicar general of alle.  
 Of hem þat leuen in Cristes fey.  
 His laste day which non þy sey.  
 þay shet as to þe worldes þhe.  
 Whos name if I shal speafie.  
 He hihte þope Nicolas.  
 And þus whan þat he passed was  
 þe Cardinals þat Wolden saue.  
 þe forme of lalbe in þe Conclau.  
 Goun for to chese a newe þope.  
 And after þat þe coupe trope.  
 þay eche of hem seid his euent.  
 Til at þe laste þei assente.  
 Upon an holy clerk reclus.  
 Which ful was of gostly vertus.  
 His patience and his symplesee.  
 þay set hym in hys hihe noblesse.  
 þus was he þope Canonized.  
 þy gret honour and utronized.

And þpon chance as it is falle.  
 his name celestyn men calle.  
 Which notefied was bi bulle.  
 To holy church and to þe fulle.  
 In alle londes magnified.  
 For euery worship is endied.  
 And þat was þilke tyme sene.  
 For whan þis þope of whom I mene.  
 Was chose and oper set beside.  
 A cardinal was þilke tide.  
 Which þe papat lout þay desired.  
 And þy þpon gretly conspired.  
 But whan he seih fortune is failed.  
 For whiche lout tyme he þay trauailed.  
 þat ilke þy whiche Ethna breuney.  
 þurgh out his woful herte remney.  
 Whiche is resembled to endie.  
 Wher of supplant and trecherie.  
 Engendred is. and napeles.  
 He feigney lout he feigney þes.  
 Outward he þy þe reuerence.  
 Bot al þy tyme his conscience.  
 þurgh fals ymaginacion.  
 he þouhte supplantacion.  
 And þer þou a wonder wile.  
 he wrouht. for at þilke wile.  
 It fel so þat of his ymage.  
 he hadde a clepton of yong age.  
 Whom he þay in his chambre affaited.  
 þis cardinal his tyme þay wanted.  
 And þy his wordes fleage z queynte.  
 þe whiche he coupe wylly þerite.  
 he þop þis clerk of wiche I telle.  
 Toward þe þope for to dwelle.  
 So þat þy tyme his chambre a nyht.  
 he lay and was a þryue wylt.  
 Toward þe þope a wythes tyde.  
 ay nomman fle þat shal betide.  
 þis cardinal which þouht gyle.  
 þpon a day whan he þay wile.  
 þis yonge clerk þu to hym took.  
 And made hym swere þpon a book.  
 And told hym what his wille was.  
 And forþ þy al a trumpe of bras.  
 he þay hym take and bad hym þis  
 þou shalt he seide whan tyme is.  
 Awaite and take right good þeþe.  
 Whan þat þe þope is faste on slepe.  
 And þat non oper man be nygh.  
 And þan þat þou be so sleigh.  
 þurgh outh þe troupe in to his eye.  
 For heuene as þouh a wps it weir.  
 To soune of such p. uolacion.  
 þat he his meditation.  
 þer of may take and vnderstonde.  
 As þouh it were of godessonde.  
 And in þis wise þou shalt seye.



That he do yllke astat a lye.  
 Of pope in whiche he stant honoured.  
 So shal his soule be secured.  
 Of yllke worshippe at ye laste.  
 In heuene whiche shal euer laste.  
 His clerk whan he hay herd ye forme.  
 How he ye pope sholde enforme.  
 Took of ye cardinal his leue.  
 And gof hom til it was eue.  
 And priuely ye trumpe he hedde.  
 Til pat ye pope was a bedde.  
 And at ye mydnyght whan he euellh.  
 Ye pope slepte. Jan he blew.  
 Wyf his trumpe purgh ye wal.  
 And tolde in what manere he shal.  
 His papacie leue and take.  
 His furste astat and pus a wake.  
 His holy pope he made pries.  
 Wher of diuerse fantasies.  
 Upon his grette holynesse.  
 Wythine his herte he hau mysse.  
 Ye pope ful of Innocence.  
 Conceyved in his conscience.  
 pat it is goddes wille he cesse.  
 But in what wise he may telosse.  
 His hihe astat pat wot he nought.  
 And pus wythine him self he pouht.  
 He bar it stille in his mentoure.  
 Til he cam to ye confistorie.  
 And yere in presence of hem alle.  
 He axey if it so befulle.  
 pat our pope cesse wolde.  
 Holb pat ye lalle it suffice sholde.  
 yei setten alle stille and herde.  
 Was noon which to ye poynt ansuerde.  
 For to what purpos pat he mente.  
 For was no man kenne his entente.  
 Got only he whiche shap ye myle.  
 His cardinal ye same while.  
 At oppuly wyf wordes ployne.  
 Seyf if ye pope wolde ordeyne.  
 pat yer be such a lalle wrought.  
 Jan myght he cesse and elles nought.  
 And as he seide don it was.  
 ye pope anon vpon ye cas.  
 Of his papal auctorite.  
 Hay made and yone ye decre.  
 And whan pat lalle was confermed.  
 In due forme and all affermed.  
 His innocet which was deceyued.  
 His papacie anon had weyued.  
 Renounced and resigned eke.  
 pat oyer was no prync to sele.  
 Got vnderneye suche a jape.  
 He hay so for hym self shape.  
 pat holb as enere it hym beseme.  
 ye antre wyf ye diademe.

He hay purgh suplantacion.  
 And in his confirmacion.  
 Upon ye fortune of his grace.  
 His name is cleped Boniface.  
 Under ye vyer of endie.  
 To pus was hid ye trecherie.  
 Which hay benyuled manyon.  
 Got such counseil per may be noon.  
 Wyf treason whan it is conspyred.  
 pat it wys lich ye spawf fyred.  
 By in ye rof which for a yrolle.  
 By hid til whan ye wyndes blowe.  
 It blasphem out on eueri side.  
 His Bonifas which can nought hide.  
 ye trecherie of his suplant.  
 Hay oppuly made hys auant.  
 Holb he ye papacie hay wounde.  
 Got yung which is wyf wrongt begonne.  
 may neuere stonde wel at ende.  
 Where prude shal ye bolle benede.  
 He shet ful ofte out of ye weye.  
 And pus ye pope of whom I seye.  
 Whan pat he stode on heih ye whiel.  
 He cam nought suffice hym self be wal.  
 Endie whiche is loueles.  
 And prude whiche is lalleles.  
 Wyf suche tempest made hym erre.  
 pat chartre gof out of herre.  
 So pat vpon mys gouernance.  
 A ven lollors ye kyng of ffraunce.  
 He took querels of his outtinge.  
 And seide he sholde don homage.  
 vndo ye church bodyly.  
 Got he pat wyf no prync whi.  
 He sholde do so gret seruaice.  
 A fter ye world in such a wise.  
 Wyf tof ye wrongt of pat demaunde.  
 For nought the pope may commande.  
 ye kyng wol nought ye pope obeye.  
 pus pope ye ke alle weye.  
 pat he may worche of violence.  
 Hay sent ye bulle of his sentence.  
 Wyf cursing and wyf entredit.  
 The kyng vpon his wrongful plat.  
 To sepe his regne fro seruage.  
 Conseiled was of his baronage.  
 pat myght wyf myght shal be wyf stonde.  
 pus was ye cause take on honde.  
 And seiden pat ye papacie.  
 yei wolde honoure and magnifie.  
 In al pat enere is spiritual.  
 Got yllke prude temporal.  
 Of Bonifas in his pson.  
 A ven pat uke wrongt al one.  
 yei wolde stonde in debat.  
 And pus ye man z nought ye stat.  
 ye ffrenssh shapen be here myght.



To greue. and fell per was a knyght.  
 Sire Guiliam de Laingharet.  
 Which was vpon his cause set.  
 And per vpon he took a wote.  
 Of men of armes and rod oute.  
 So longe and in a wayt he lay.  
 pat he assied vpon a day.  
 pe Pope was at Dunmow.  
 And sholde out of pe tow.  
 vnto pourforge pe whiche is.  
 A Castel in Browynce of his.  
 vpon pe weye and as he rod.  
 his knyght whiche houned and a bod.  
 Embusshed vpon horsbak.  
 At sodenly vpon hym grab.  
 And hap hym by pe bridel sefed.  
 And saide o pou whiche hast dyshefed.  
 pe court of ffraunce be pi wrong.  
 Now shalt thou synge a nelle song.  
 pin entredit and pin sentence.  
 A yen pin owne consaunce.  
 Here after thou shalt sele and mowe.  
 pe pleyne nouht a yen pe pope.  
 For yllke name is homynable.  
 But thou whiche hast ben deceyuable.  
 And tricherous in al pi werk.  
 thou Bonesus thou proude clerk.  
 inseder of pi capacie.  
 pi fals body shal aby.  
 And suffice pat it hap deserued.  
 So pis pe suplantour was serued.  
 For pei him laden in to ffraunce.  
 And sette hym to his penance.  
 Wip yune a tour in harde bondes.  
 Wher he for hunger lope hise bondes.  
 Set of and seide god wot how.  
 Of Whom pe writynge is yit now.  
 Penitens as a man may here.  
 Whiche speker and seip in pis manere.  
**Cronica Beneficia. Intrusa de vul-**  
**pis regnasti de leo mortuus es de ca-**  
**pis regne alio die ponde ou hie.**  
 Was rich pe leon in his wyge.  
 Bot atte laste of pi passage.  
 pi dey was to an hond like.  
**Such is pe reure of his cronys.**  
**Proclamed in pe court of Rome.**  
 Wher of pe wise ensample none.  
 And yet als feofor as g dar.  
 I rede alle ower men be war.  
 And pat pei loke wel alyte.  
 pat noon his owne astat translate.  
 Of holychurche in no degre.  
 Be fraude ne subtilite.  
 For yllk honour which Aaron tosh.  
 shul non receyue as seip pe book.

But he be cleyed as he was.  
 What shal penken in pis cas.  
 Of pat 9 hete now a day.  
 I not but he whiche can and may.  
 Be reson lope and be nature.  
 pe helpe of euery mannes aue.  
 he helpe symon for pe folde.  
 For Joachim yllke abbot tolde.  
**Nota de apphicia Joachim abbas.**  
 how such dayes sholde falle.  
 pat communlych in places alle.  
 pe chapmen of such mercurie.  
 Wip fraude and wip suplantery.  
 So manye sholden bere and selle.  
 pat he ne may for shame telle.  
 So foul a frane in mannes ere.  
 Bot god for bede pat it were.  
 In oure dwes pat he seip.  
 For if pe clerk be war his seip.  
 In chapmenhode at such a seip.  
 pe remenant shal sone empeire.  
 Of al pat to pe world belouge.  
 For whan pat holichurche wronge.  
 I not what ower yit shal righte.  
 And napeles at mannes sighte.  
 Endie for to be preferred.  
 Hap consaunce so differid.  
 That no man loke to pe vice.  
 Whiche is pe moder of malice.  
 And pat is yllke fals cunne.  
 Whiche causey many a tricherie.  
 For wher he may in ower se.  
 pat is more gracious pan he.  
 It shal not stonden in his myght.  
 Bot if he hyndre such a myght.  
 And pat is wel woth ouer al.  
 pis vice is now so general.  
**Qualiter Joab princeps milicie David**  
**indidie causa Abner subdole interfe-**  
**at. Et qualiter etiam Achitofel ob-**  
**hoc ad Euf in consilio Absolon p-**  
**crebatur accensus inuidia Dauid**  
**et suspendit.**  
**And** yllke vnhap indowgh.  
 Whan Joab be decepte slough.  
 Abner for dred he sholde be.  
 Wip Euf David such as was he.  
 And purgh cunne also it fel.  
 Of yllke fals achitofel.  
 For his counseil was nouht achened.  
 Bot pat he seih Euf beleued.  
 Wip Absolon and hym forsake.  
 he hing him self vpon a stake.  
**Senec** witnessey oppuly.  
 Bot pat endie pprely.  
 Is of pe court pe commun wench.  
 And halt tauerne for to schenche.



That doynk which maky pe herte brene.  
 And dox pe wit aboute reune.  
 Be euey weye to compasse.  
 how pat he myghte all ower passe.  
 As he which purgh dukyneship.  
 Eueny euey felaship.  
 So pat you myght wel knolle & se.  
 per is no vice such as he.  
 fferst to lunde god abhominable.  
 And to mankynde vnprofitable.  
 And pat be wordes but a felde.  
 Ishal be reson proue and shelle.  
*Inuidie stimulis sine causa redit ab  
 ortu. Nam sed temptante omne cri  
 men habet. 22 on est huius opus temptare  
 cupidinis archu. Dum qd facies veius  
 ethnica flamma vorat. Absqz rubore  
 gene pallor qd fuscus obumbrat. ffa  
 gda nature cetula membra docent.*  
*in descriptio Confessor nativum in  
 vidie tam in amore qm aliter sedm p  
 rueratem vicij sub compendio.*  
**E**ndie if pat Ishal describe.  
 He is nouht shaply for to wyue.  
 In euey a moung pe women here.  
 For per is in hym no matrice.  
 Wher of he myght do plesance.  
 fferst for his heuy contentance.  
 Of pat he seuey euey vnglad.  
 He is nouht able to ben had.  
 And eke he breuier so wyu iue.  
 pat kynde may no profit wyue.  
 Wher of he sholde his loue ples.  
 For pulke blod which sholde haue ese.  
 To regne among pe moyste beynes.  
 Is dre of pulke vnkynedly perues.  
 purgh which endie is fyred ay.  
 And pus be reson proue I may.  
 pat toward loue iudie is nouht.  
 And ower wyse if it be souht.  
 vpon what stde as euey it fülle.  
 It is pe worst vice of alle.  
 Whiche of hym self hay most malice.  
 For vnderstond pat euey vice.  
 Som cause hay wher it groweth.  
 Bot of endie no man knoldey.  
 ffo Whenne he cam but out of dille.  
 For pus pe wise clerkus telle.  
 pat no spirit but of malice.  
 Be weye of kynde vpon a vice.  
 Is tempted and be such a weye.  
 Endie hay kynde put a weye.  
 And of malice hay his sceryng.  
 Wher of he makey his bachtyng.  
 And is hym self per of dyshefed.  
 So may pere be no kynde plesed.  
 ffor ay pe more pat he endiey.

pe more a yen hym self he phiep.  
 pus stant emue in good espyr.  
 To ben hym self pe deuiles heyr.  
 As he which is his next liche.  
 And forpest fiv pe heuene riche.  
 ffor per may he neuere wone.  
 ffor pi my gode dere sone. *Confessor.*  
 If you wolt fynde a fiker weie.  
 To loue. put emue a weie.  
 In yu holy fader reson wolde. *Amans.*  
 pat I pis vice eschue sholde.  
 Got yet to strengthe my corage.  
 If pat ye wolde in auantage.  
 per of sette a recouerer.  
 It were to me a gret desir.  
 pat I pis vice myght fle.  
 Now vnderstond my sone and see.  
 per is fiske for pe sekce. *Confessor.*  
 And vertues for pe vices eke.  
 Who pat pe vices wolde eschue.  
 He mot be reson pame selde.  
 pe vertus for be pulke weye.  
 He may pe vices don a weye.  
 ffor per to gedre may not dwelle.  
 ffor as pe water of pe welle.  
 Off fyre abatey pe malice.  
 Right so vertu for dox pe vice.  
 A yen endie is charite  
 Whiche is pe moder of pite.  
 pat maky a mannes herte tendre.  
 pat it may no malice engendre.  
 In him pat is enclined per to.  
 ffor his corage is tempered so.  
 pat pogh he miht hym self relieue.  
 pat wolde he nouht a noxer greue.  
 Bot raper for to do plesance.  
 He berey hym self pe greuance.  
 So faryn he wolde an oper ese.  
 Wher of my sone for ym ese.  
 Now herken a tale whiche I rede.  
 And vnderstonde it wel I rede.  
**I**n point Confessor exempli de  
 virtute caritatis contra inuidia.  
 Et narrat de constantino helene filio  
 qui ad imperij Romani dignitatem  
 optinuit a morbo lepre infectus me  
 dici pro sanitate recuperanda ipm i san  
 guine pueroz masculoz balnare p  
 posuerunt. Sz cu innumera multitu  
 do matris ad filijs huiusmodi medica  
 ne cause in circuitu palacij affuisset  
 impator qz eoz genit. clamores p  
 cepisset caritate motus ingenuis  
 sic ait. O vere est ipse dñs qui se facit  
 seruū pietatis. Et hys dictis statim  
 sui aditipotentis indele comitens  
 sui ipius morbu potius qui infm



*ad mortem benignus elegit. Unde  
ipse qui antea pauper et leprosus  
extiterat renatus utriusque materie  
tam corporis quam anime diuino mira-  
culo consecutus est salutem...*

**A**mong pe boles of Latyn.  
I fynde I wrete of Constantyn.  
pe Worpi emperour of Rome.  
Such misfortunes to hym come.  
Whan he was in his lusty age.  
pe Lepre caught in his visage.  
And so forp ouer al aboute.  
pat he ne myghte riden oute.  
So left he hope shield and spere.  
As he pat myght hym nouht bestere.  
And held hym in his chambre clos.  
purgh al pe world pe fame a ros.  
pe grete clerkes ben assent.  
And come at his comandement.  
To wete vpon his lordis hele.  
So long pei to gedre dele.  
pat pei vpon his medecyne.  
A poynten hem and determyne.  
pat in pe maner as it stod.  
pei wolde him haue in childes blod.  
Wynne seuene wynter age.  
ffor as pei seyn pat sholde assuage  
pe Lepre and al pe violence.  
Whiche pat pei kenne of accidene.  
And nouht be weie of kynde is falle.  
And per pei accorden alle.  
As for final conclusion.  
And tolden here oppinion.  
To pemyerour an he a non.  
his counseil took and per vpon.  
Wynntes and wyntes seles oute.  
pei sende in euery lond aboute.  
pe yonge children for to seche.  
Whos blod pei saiden shal be leche.  
ffor pemyerours maladye.  
per was y nouth to wepe and crie.  
Among pe modres whan pai herde.  
how wofull his cause ferde.  
Bot napeles pei woten bolde.  
And pus women per come i nouth.  
Wynntes children soukend on the tete.  
pro was pere many teies lere.  
Bot were hem leue or were he in lope.  
pe women and pe children hope.  
In to pe paleys for pei brouht.  
Wynntes many a sory hertis pouht.  
Of hem whiche of here body bore.  
pe children hadde. and so forlore.  
Wynntes a while sholden se.  
pe modres wepe in here deure.  
And many of hem on swone falle.  
pe yonge babes creden alle.

his noyse a ros pe lord it herde.  
And looked out and how it ferde.  
He seih. and as who seih a breyde.  
Out of a sleep. and pus he seide.  
**O**pon diuine pourueance.  
Whiche euery man in pe balace.  
Of kynde hase formed to be liche.  
pe pore is bore as is pe riche.  
And deiey in pe same wise.  
vpon pe fool vpon pe wise.  
Sekelesse and hele entrecommune.  
may non eschue pat fortune.  
Whiche kynde hap in here lalbe set.  
Hare faryngpe and beaute ben be set.  
To euery man a liche fre.  
pat she preferrey no deure.  
As in pe disposicion.  
Of bodely complexion.  
And eke of soule resonable.  
pe pore child is bore as able.  
To vertu as pe kynges sone.  
ffor euery man his owne done.  
A fter pe lust of his assay.  
pe vice or vertu chese may.  
pus stonden alle men stranchised.  
Bot in astat pei ben deuised.  
To some worschipe and richesse.  
To some pouert and distresse.  
Don lordes and an ower seurey.  
Bot vit as euery man deseruey.  
pe world reuey nouht his yestes here.  
Bot certes he hap grete matere.  
To ben of good condicion.  
Whiche hap in his subiection.  
pe men pat ben off his semblance.  
And eke he took a remembraunce.  
How he pat made lalbe of kynde.  
Wolde euery man to lalbe kynde.  
And had a man such as he wolde.  
Toward him self right such he shulde.  
Toward an ower don also.  
And pus his worpi lord as po.  
Set in balace his owne astat.  
And wyntes him self stode in debat.  
And pouht how pat it was nouht good.  
To se so muchel mannes blod.  
He split be cause of him al one.  
He seih also pe grete moone.  
Of pat pe modres were vnglade.  
And of pe wo pe children made.  
Wher of pat al his herte tendrey.  
And such pite wyntes eugendrey.  
pat him was leuere for to chese.  
his owne body for to lese.  
pai se so grete a moorde brouht.  
vpon pe blod whiche gultrey nouht.  
pus for pe pite whiche he colt.



**A**lle oper leches he forsoke.  
And put hym out of auenture.  
Al only in to goddes care.  
And seip who pat wole maister be.  
He mot be seruant to pite.  
So perfor he was overcome.  
Wip charite pat he hap nome.  
His counseil and his officers.  
And bad yn to his tresorers.  
pat pei his tresour al aboute.  
Departte among pe pore wite.  
Of women and of children hope.  
Wher of pei mighte hem fede & clope.  
And saufly counen hem a yen.  
Wip oute lose of eny geyn.  
purgh charite pus he despende.  
his good wher of pat he amende.  
pe pore people and controuaile.  
pe harm pat he hem trauaile.  
And pus pe woful nyghtes forbe.  
To ioye is tourted on pe mede.  
Al was penyng al this blyssing.  
which erst was wepyng & clyng.  
All women gon hom glad ynolth.  
Echon for ioye on oper toth.  
And prayeden for his lordes hele.  
which hap releffed pe querele.  
And hap his owne wil forsaie.  
In charite for goddes sake.  
Got nold her after you shalt here.  
What god hap wrought in his mare.  
As he which dop al equite.  
To hym pat wrought al charite.  
he was was a yentward charitous.  
And to pite he was pitous.  
for it was neuere thowde yit.  
pat charite god ynquyt.  
pe mist whan he was lord to pepe.  
pe heil god which wold hym kepe.  
Sent pectur and seynt doull him sende.  
De whom he wolde his lepre amende.  
pei also to hym lepend appere.  
for god and seyden in his manere.  
O. constantyn for you hast serued.  
pite. you hast pite deservied.  
for yf you shalt such pite haue.  
pat god purgh pite wol pe saue.  
So shalt you double hele fynde.  
ffirst for yf bodily fynde.  
And for yf woful soule also.  
you shalt ben hole of boye also.  
And for you shalt pe nouht despoire.  
in lepre shal nomore empyre.  
Til you wolt sende per vpon.  
yn to pe mount of celion.  
Wher pat siluestre and his clemie.  
To gedre dwelle in compaignie.

**F**for dres of pe which quanye a day.  
hast ben a so to cristes lay.  
And hast deservied to moche schame.  
pe prechours of his holy name.  
Got nold you hast foundel appesed.  
in god and wip god & de plesed.  
pat you yf pite hast beuared.  
vpon pe blood which you hast spared.  
for yf to yf saluacion.  
you shalt haue informacion.  
Such as siluestre shal pe teche.  
ynedep of noon oper leche.  
**T**his Emperour which al his heide.  
Gramercy lordes he ansuerde.  
I wol do so as ye me seye.  
Got of oping I wolde preye.  
What shal I telle siluestre.  
or of youre name or of youre estre.  
And yf him tolden what pai highte.  
And forp wip al out of his sighte.  
pei passen vp in to pe heuene.  
And he allwote out of his stouene.  
And clepe and men come anon.  
he tolde his drem. and per vpon.  
In such a wise as he hem telley.  
pe mount wher pat siluestre duellay.  
pei haue in alle haste souht.  
And founde he was and wip he brouht.  
To pempetour which to hym tolde.  
his stouene and elles what he wolde.  
And whan siluestre hap herd pe kyng.  
he was right ioyful of his ying.  
And him be gan wip al his wit.  
To techen vpon holy writ.  
ffirst holt mankynde was forlore.  
And holt pe hilt god perfore.  
his sone sende from aboue.  
which bore was for mannes loue.  
And after of his owne choyse.  
he took his deth vpon pe croys.  
And holt in graue he was belofe.  
And holt pat he hap helle broke.  
And took hem out pat were him lieue.  
And for to make oue ful beleue.  
pat he was verray goddes sone.  
A yen pe kynde of mannes doue.  
ffirst dep he was pe prude day.  
And whan he wolde as he wel may.  
he stich vp to his fader euene.  
Wip flesh and blood in to pe heuene.  
And rist so in pe same forme.  
In flesh and blod he shal reforme.  
Whan tyme compe ye quike and dede.  
On yllke woful day of drede.  
Wher euery man shal take his doue.  
As wel pe maister as pe grom.  
pe mygher kynges receiue.



That day may stonde of no value.  
 Wyf wordes strengthe to defende.  
 For euery man mot pume entende.  
 To stonde vpon his owne dedes.  
 And loue al ower mennes nedes.  
 That day may no counseil auaille.  
 Ye plesour and ye ple shal faile.  
 Ye sentence of pat ilke day.  
 May noon appell sett in delay.  
 For may no gold ye iuge ple.  
 Pat he ne shal ye sope tre.  
 And setten euery man vpright.  
 As wel ye ploughman as ye knyght.  
 Ye lewed man ye grette clerk.  
 Shal stonde vpon his owne werk.  
 And such as he is founden po.  
 Such shal he be for euermore.  
 For may no peyne be releesed.  
 For may no ioye ben encreased.  
 Bot endeles as pei haue do.  
 Pei shal receyue out of ye tbo.  
 And pis siluestre wyf his salwe.  
 Ye ground of al ye nelwe laue.  
 Wyf gret deuocion he prechep.  
 Fro point to point and pleyntly techep.  
 Vnto pis heven Emperour.  
 And seip ye his Creatour.  
 Hay vnderfonge his charite.  
 Of pat he wrought such pite.  
 Whan he ye children hadde on honde.  
 Thus whan his lord hay vnderfonde.  
 Of al pis ping holi pat it ferde.  
 Vnto siluestre he pan answerde.  
 Wyf al his holi herte and seip.  
 Pat he is redy to ye seip.  
 And so ye vessel which for ye blod  
 Was made siluestre pere it stode  
 Wyf cleue water of ye welle.  
 In alle haste he led do felle.  
 And set constantra per tyme.  
 Al naked vnto ye chynne.  
 And in ye while it was begonne.  
 A light as pouh it were a sunne.  
 Fro heuene in to ye place com.  
 Wher pat he tok his cristendom.  
 And euere amoun ye holi tales.  
 Rich as pei were fishes scales.  
 Per fellen fro hem now and eft.  
 Til per was no ping hym beleft.  
 Of al his grette maladie.  
 For he pat wolde him puresie.  
 Ye hihe god hay mad hym clene.  
 So pat per laste no ping sene.  
 He hay hym cleused bope tbo.  
 The body and ye soule also.  
 Tho knelt pis Emperour in dede.  
 Pat Cristes seip was for to dede.

And sende anon hisse Lettres oute.  
 And let don crien al a bonte.  
 Vp peyne of dey that man weyue.  
 Pat he baptisme ne receyue.  
 After his moder queene Helepe.  
 He sende. and so be tliene hem tliene.  
 Per tixten pat ye cite all.  
 Was cristened and she forp wyf al.  
 Pis Emperour which helle hay founde.  
 Wyfime Rome a noon let founde.  
 Tbo cherches which he dede make.  
 For pectir and for poules sake.  
 Of whom he hadde a vision.  
 And vnto per to possession.  
 Of lordship and of worldes good.  
 Bot holi so pat his wille was good.  
 Toward ye pope and his fraunchise.  
 Pat hay it proued ower wise.  
 To se ye worchynge of ye dede.  
 For in cronys pis grede.  
 A non as he hay mad ye vifte.  
 A boys was heid on his pe lyste.  
 Of which all Rome was a dird.  
 And say to day is benymin shad.  
 In holi cherche of temporal.  
 Which medley wyf ye spirital.  
 And holi it stant of pat degre.  
 Pat may a man ye sope se.  
 God may amende it whan he wile.  
 I can per to noon ower stile.  
 Bot for to go per I began.  
 Holi charite may helpe a man.  
 To hope wordes I haue said.  
 And if you haue an ere laud.  
 My sone you myht vnderstonde.  
 If charite be take on honde.  
 Per folowey after moche grace.  
 For pi if you wolt purchase.  
 Holi pat you myht enrie fle.  
 A queynte ye wyf charite.  
 Which is ye vertu souerene.  
 My fader I shal do my peyne.  
 For pis ensample which ye tolde.  
 Wyf al myn herte I haue wyholde.  
 So pat I shal for euermore  
 Eschme enrie wel ye more.  
 And pat I haue er pis mysdo.  
 Vnto me my penance er I go.  
 And ouer pat to my matere.  
 Of shifte whil we siten here.  
 In prouete betwene vs tliere.  
 Vnto axep what per is I preyre.  
 My good sone and for pi loze.  
 I wole ye telle what is more.  
 So pat you shalt ye vices knowe.  
 For whan pei be to ye fulle knowe.  
 You myht hem wel ye bettre eschme.



In for his cause I penke sue.  
The forme hope and ye manere.  
As noll suende pou shalt here.  
Which vice stant next after his.  
And whan pou dost hold pat it is.  
As pou shalt here me deuise.  
Pou might y self ye lette auise.

Explicit Liber Secundus...

Incipit Liber Tercius...

**I**n his paribz est par furis ache  
vultus. Quos furor ad tempus  
nil pietatis habet. In malencolicos  
alios perturbat de equo. Iure sui pondus  
nulla scire tenet. Omibz in causis  
grauat ora sed inter amittit. Illa  
magis facili sorte grauamen agit...  
Est ubi vir discors leuiter qz repugnat  
amori. Sepe loco ludi. Pletus ad  
ora venit. Et in tecto libro tunc  
tat sup quinqz specibz ire quard pri  
ma malencolia dicitur cuius vicid  
Confessor prima describens amanti  
sup eodem consequenter opponit...

**I**f you be vices list  
to knowe. my so  
ne it say nouht be  
vakuow. fro ferst  
pat men ye shordes  
grounde. That per  
mis on vpon his grou  
de. A vice foreyn  
fro ye lade...  
Wher of pat many a good felatbe.  
Hap be distruht be sodeyn chaunce.  
And yit to bynde no plesauce.  
It doo bot where it most acheuey.  
his purpos most to bynde he greuey.  
As he which out of consaunce.  
Is euermore to pacience.  
And is be name ou of seueue.  
Which ofte hap set ye world in euene.  
And cleped is ye cruel gre.  
Whos herte is euermore on fyre.  
To speke amys and to do hope.  
for his seruantz ben euery wyre.  
My gode fader telle me vis. Amas.  
What pany is gre. sone it is. Confessor.  
pat in oure englishe wyppis is hore.  
Which hap hys wordes ay so hore.  
pat al amannes pacience.  
Is fired of ye violence.  
for he wypp hym hap euere fyre.  
Seruantz pat helpen hym to serue.  
ye ferste of hem malencolie.

Jo cleped whice in compaignie.  
An hundred tymes in an houre.  
Wol as an angri beste loure.  
And noman wot ye cause whi.  
my sone schriue ye noll for pi.  
Hastou ben malencolien.  
The fader be sent Julien. Confessio  
Bot q vntrelle wordes vse. Amantis  
I may me nouht per of excuse.  
And al maky loue wel I wot.  
Of which myn herte is euere hot.  
So pat I beemie as doy a gledo.  
for wyppis pat I may not spede.  
And yus ful ofte a day for nouht.  
Saue onlich of myn dylhne pouht.  
I am so wypp my seluen wypp.  
pat hold so pat ye game hoy.  
wypp over men I am nouht glad.  
Bot I am wel ye more vnglad.  
for is oper meimes game.  
It turney me to pure grame.  
yus am I wypp my self oppressed.  
Of pouht ye whiche I haue gmpressed.  
pat al wallende I dreue and mete.  
pat I wypp here al one mete.  
And preyre here of som gode anfuere.  
Bot for she wol not gladly suere.  
She say me nay wypp outen op.  
And yus wexe I wyppime wypp.  
pat outland I am al affined.  
And so descrempred and esuained.  
A pouland tymes on a day.  
yet souney in myn Gwes may.  
ye whiche seyde me to fore.  
yus be my wittes as forlore.  
And namelly when I begynne.  
To rekne wypp my self wypp inne.  
Holl many yeres ben a goon.  
Sip I haue trellyshly loued oon.  
And neuere took of oper hede.  
And euere aliche for to spede.  
I am ye more I wypp hir dele.  
So pat myn hap and al myn hele.  
gve penke ay ye leng ye ferre.  
pat bymyng my gladshyp out of herre.  
Wher of my wittes ben empyred.  
And I as who seip al despyred.  
for fymaly whan pat I muse.  
And penke hold she me wol refuse.  
I am wypp anger so bestad.  
for al his world miht I be glad.  
And for ye while pat it lastey.  
Al dy so dollu my joie it castey.  
And ay ye ferper pat I be.  
Whan I ne may my lady se.  
ye more I am redy to wyppis.  
pat for ye touchyng of a laype.



Or for ye to mynnyng of a fire.  
 I wode as doo ye wilde see.  
 And am so malencolious.  
 pat per hys seruant in mynnyng.  
 ne non of ye pat ben a boue.  
 pat eche of hem ne stant in doute.  
 And weneh pat i sholde rane.  
 for anger pat per se me haue.  
 And so per wondren more and lasse  
 Til pat per seen it ouer passe.  
 Got fader if it so beade.  
 pat i approche at eny tyde.  
 ye place wher my Lady is.  
 And pame pat hys like ydys.  
 To speke a goodly word vnto me.  
 for al ye gold pat is in Rome.  
 ne coue i after pat be wrop.  
 Got al mynnyng anger ouer wrop.  
 So glad i am of ye presence.  
 Of here. pat i al offence.  
 forye as youh it were nouht.  
 So ouergladed is my pouht.  
 And myles ye sepe to telle.  
 A yendward if it so befelle.  
 pat i at yllke tyme sike.  
 On me pat she myscast here yhe.  
 Or pat she list nouht to loke.  
 And i her of good hede toke.  
 A noon in to my firste astat.  
 I towe and am wyf al so mat.  
 pat euer it is yllch wicke.  
 And pus mynnyng hond a yen ye priske.  
 I hurte and haue do many a day.  
 And so so for as i no may.  
 ful ofte bying on my lype.  
 And make vnto my self a whype.  
 Wyf whiche in many a chele i here.  
 in woful herte is so to bere.  
 pat alle my wntes be vnsoste.  
 And i am wrop i not howh ofte.  
 And al it is malencolie.  
 whiche grolley of ye fantasie.  
 Of loue pat me wol nouht loute.  
 So bere i forp an angry snolte.  
 ful many tymes in a yere.  
 But fader noll ye sitten here.  
 In Loues seede i yow besche.  
 pat som ensample ye me teche.  
 wher of i may my selfe appele.  
 My soue for ym hertes ese. **Confes**  
 I shal fulfille ym prier.  
 So pat you myht ye better leue.  
 Whil myschief pat pis vice frey.  
 which in his angyr nouht forber.  
 wher of pat after him forpente.  
 whan he is sobre and pat he penke.  
 vpon ye folie of his dede.

And of pis poynt a tale i rede.  
 Hic ponit confessor exemplū contra  
 istos qui cū vire amoris non sunt  
 realiter cepti contra alios aman-  
 tes malencolia seueritate ad iracu-  
 undia vindicta pūocantur. Et nar-  
 rat qualiter Rex Solus filiū nōie  
 machariū & filiā nōie amace ha-  
 buit. qui cū ab infācia vsq; ad  
 pūbertatem inuicem educati fuānt.  
 Cupido tandem ignito iaculo ambōz  
 cordis desideria amorose penetrāuit  
 ita qd; canasie natura copante  
 a fratre suo impūgnata pūbit sup  
 quo pater intollerabilem inuēitū  
 as concupiscēcia ignāpans mīnia  
 q; furoris malencolia pūentis sic  
 tam filiā cū partu dolorosissimo  
 rāu interfici adiudicāuit.  
**S**her was a kyng which Solus.  
 was hore. and it befel hym pus.  
 pat he tly children hadde fayne.  
 ye sone cleped was macharie.  
 ye doughter eke canace hite.  
 eke day bope and eke be myhte.  
 whil pei be yonge of comoun wone.  
 In chambie pei to gedre wone.  
 And as pei sholden plede hem of ce.  
 Til pei be wrolden by a losse.  
 In to ye youpe of luste age.  
 Whan kynde assaile ye corage.  
 Wyf loue and doo hym for to bolde.  
 pat he no resou can alowe.  
 Got halt ye lattes of nature.  
 for whom pat loue hay vnder cure.  
 As he is blind hym self right so.  
 he makp his client blind al so.  
 In such manere as i yow telle.  
 As pei alday to gedre dwelle.  
 pis bioper myght it nouht a sterte.  
 pat he wyf al his hole herte.  
 his loue vpon his foster caste.  
 And so it fel hem atte laste.  
 pat pis macharie wyf canace.  
 whan pei were in a prime place.  
 Cupide had hem ferst to bysse.  
 And after she whiche is a maytresse.  
 In kynde and teche euen hyf.  
 Wyf oute lalle possit.  
 Of whiche she talke no maner charge.  
 Got kepep hys lattes al at larte.  
 nature toke hem in to lore.  
 And taught hem so pat euer more.  
 she hay hem in such wise daunted.  
 pat pei were as who seip enchanted.  
 And as ye blinde an ower ledde.  
 And til pei falle no pūnt drede.



**N**ight so pat hadde noon myght.  
Bot as ye herd which wole alighte.  
And sey ye mete and nouht ye net.  
Whiche in deceit is for him sette.  
His yong folk no perel fye.  
Bot pat was likyng to here rye.  
So pat hei felle vpon ye chaunce.  
Where wif haydore his remembrance.  
So longe hei to gedre assemble.  
Ye wombe was and she gan tremble.  
And hild here in here chambre clos.  
For dres it sholde be dysclos.  
And come to here fader ere.  
Wher of ye sone hadde also fere.  
And feryng cause for to ride.  
For longe durst he not a bide.  
In amytir if men wolde seyn.  
Pat he his suster hayd for leyn.  
For rit she hadde it nouht beknowe.  
Whos was ye child at yllke prowe.  
Atachane god Canace abit.  
Ye which was nouht deliuered yit.  
Bot riht sone after pat it was.  
**N**ow list and herke a woful cas.  
Ye sope which may nouht ben hid.  
Was at ye laste knowe and bid.  
Vn to ye frug how pat it fros.  
And whan pat he it vnderstod.  
Anon in to malencolie.  
As yowh it were a frenesie.  
He felt as he which no yung coupe.  
How maisterful loue is in yowpe.  
And for he was to loue strauinge.  
He wolde nouht his loue chaunge.  
To be benigne and favorable.  
To loue bot vnnuerriable.  
Se ellene ye wulle of wode & wrope.  
In to his doughters chambre he gop.  
And shi ye child was late bore.  
Wher of he hayd hys oyes more.  
Pat she it shal ful fore abie.  
And she began mercy to arie.  
Vpon here bare knees and preyede.  
And to here fader pus she seide.  
A mercy fader penk I am.  
Yi child and of yi blod I cam.  
Pat I mysde yowpe it made.  
And in ye flodes had me made.  
Wher pat I segh no perel po.  
Bot now it is befall so.  
Mercy my fader do no wreche.  
And wip pat word she leste speche.  
And fel doun suouende at his fot.  
As she for sorwe nedes mot.  
Bot his horrible cruelte.  
Per myht a tempze no pite.  
Out of here chambre for he wente.

**A**l ful of wrape in his entente.  
And took ye conseil in his herte.  
Pat she shal nouht ye dep ascerce.  
As he which malencolen.  
Of patience hayd no lien.  
Wher of his wrape he may restreyme.  
And in his wille wode perne.  
Whan al his reson was vntame.  
A fuyght he clep be his name.  
And took hym as he were of soude.  
A naked swerd to here on honde.  
And seid him pat he sholde go.  
An telle vn to his doughter so.  
In ye manere as he hym bid.  
How she pat sharpe swerdes blad.  
Receyue sholde and do wip al.  
So as she wot wher to she shal.  
For wip his message gop his fuyght.  
Vn to his woful yonge wille.  
His sharpe swerd to here he took.  
Wher of pat al here body quook.  
For wel she wiste what it mente.  
And pat it was to yllke entente.  
Pat she here seluen sholde slee.  
And to ye fuyght she seide yee.  
Now pat I wot my faders wille.  
Pat I shal in his wile spille.  
I wol obere me per to.  
And as he wole it shal be do.  
Bot now his yung may be non ower.  
I wol a lettre vn to my bioper.  
So as my feble hond may write.  
Wip al my woful herte endite.  
She took a penne on honde po.  
For porne to porne and al ye woo.  
Als forsoy as her self it wot.  
Vn to here dedly friend she wrot.  
And tolde how pat here fader grace.  
She myght for no yung purchase.  
And ouer pat as you shalt here.  
She wrot and seide in his manere.  
O you my sorwe and my gladnesse.  
O you myn hele and my seknesse.  
O my wanhope and al my trise.  
O my dishepe and al my lyse.  
O you my wile o you my wo.  
O you my friend o you my fo.  
O you my loue o you myn hate.  
For ye mot I be ded al herte.  
Fulke ende may I nouht a sterre.  
And pat wip al myn hole herte.  
Whil pat me laste any brye.  
I wole yow loue vn to my dep.  
Bot of o yung I shal yow prey.  
If pat my litel sone deie.  
Let him be buried in my graue.  
Beside me so shalt you haue.



Upon our hope remembrance.  
 For thus it stant of my greivance.  
 Told at this tyme as you shall wite.  
 Wip teies and Wip gule Wite.  
 His letter I haue in carres colde.  
 In my right hond my penne I holde.  
 And in ye list ye shewd I kepe.  
 And in my barm per lip to wepe.  
 In child and myn Whiche sobey faste.  
 Told am I come in to my laste.  
 Fare wel for I shal sone deie.  
 And penk hold I in loue beie.  
 Ye point of ye sherd to grounde.  
 She sette and Wip ye point a wounde.  
 Wip out here here anon she made.  
 And for Wip pat al pale and fade.  
 She fel down ded fro per sche scode.  
 Ye child lay bathing in here blod.  
 Out rolled fro ye modres barm.  
 And for ye blod was hoot and warm.  
 He bakled him aboute perinne.  
 Per was no bote for to wyne.  
 For he Whiche can no pite knowe.  
 Ye fynn cam in ye same prowe.  
 And sith holt pat his dolwher die.  
 And holt his lake al bloody crye.  
 Bot al pat myht hym not suffise.  
 Pat he ne had to do guse.  
 Upon ye child and bere hym oute.  
 And seche in ye forest aboute.  
 Som Wilde place Where it were.  
 To caste hym oute of honde pere.  
 So pat som best him may deuoure.  
 Where as no man him may socoure.  
 Al pat he had was don in dede.  
 A. Who herde euere spunge or rede.  
 Of such a pynge as pat was do.  
 Bot he Whiche Ladde his wrappe so.  
 Hay knowe of loue but a lite.  
 Bot for al pat he was to wite.  
 Wip his sodeyn malencolie.  
 To do so greet a felonye. **Confessor.**  
 For in my sone holt so it stonde.  
 Be ye cas you miht vnderstonde.  
 Pat if you euere in cause of loue.  
 Shalt seme. and you be so a loue.  
 Pat you miht lede at y wille.  
 Perre neuere pynge in wrappe spille.  
 Which euere kynde sholde saile.  
 For it fitte euere man to haue.  
 Edward to loue and to his miht.  
 A ven Whos streng may no wite.  
 And sith an herte is so conserigned.  
 Ye redour ouhte be reserigned.  
 To him pat may ne bette a weie.  
 Whan he mot to nature obeye.  
 For it is seid thus ouer al.

That nedes mot pat nedes shal.  
 Of pat a list dop after kynde.  
 Wher of I may no bote fynde.  
 What pynge nature hay set in Lallie.  
 Per may no mannes myht wydralle.  
 And who pat worchep per a yem.  
 Ful ofte tyme it hay be seyn.  
 Per hay be falle gret veniance.  
 Wher of I fynde a remembrance.  
**The natvrit qualiter Themas in**  
**quodam monte duos serpentes in**  
**uenit piter conuiscences quos ad**  
**virga percussit. nam di ob hoc qd**  
**naturam impedunt qm contra**  
**natura a forma virili in mulie**  
**rem tran mutauunt.**  
 Vide after ye tyme yo.  
 Told an ensample and saide so.  
 Holt pat Whilom Themas.  
 As he Walkende qop pias.  
 Upon an hihe mountayne he sihe.  
 Two serpentis in his weye myhe.  
 And sei so as nature hem taughte.  
 Assembled were and he so caughte.  
 A yerde Whiche he bar on honde.  
 And pouht pat he wolde fonde.  
 To letten hem and smot hem bope.  
 Wher of ye goddes weren drope.  
 And for he hay distourbed kynde.  
 And was so to nature dykynde.  
 Dykyndely he was transformed.  
 Pat he Whiche erst a man thus formed.  
 In to a woman was forshape.  
 Pat was to hym in angly jape.  
 Bot for pat he Wip anger wrouthee.  
 His augres ful angrelliche he bouthee.  
 To pite my sone Quide hay wite.  
 Wher of you miht be reson wite.  
 More is a man yam such a besse.  
 So miht it neuere ben honeste.  
 A man to wrappen hym to fore.  
 Of pat an ower dop ye lore.  
 Of kynde in Whiche is no mulice.  
 Bot only pat it is a vice.  
 And pough a man be resonable.  
 Yit after kynde he is meuable.  
 To loue Where he wole or noon.  
 Perre you my sone p vpon.  
 And do malencolie a weye.  
 For loue hay euere his lust to pleie.  
 As he Which wolde no of greue.  
 Y fader pat I may wel leue.  
 Al pat ye tellen it is stile.  
 Per euery man loue as he wile.  
 Be so it be not my Lady.  
 For I shal nought be Wip pby.  
 Bot pat I wrappe and fabe anye



**I** long vpon my self it is.

pat I. Wyf' bone bone and kynde.  
Am so bestad pat I can fynde.  
to wey how I hit may a ferte.  
Which stant vpon myn othen herte.  
And touchen to non ower lyf.  
Sauf only to pat I wete wyf.  
for whom but if it be amended.  
My glade dayes ben despendis.  
pat I my self shal nouht forbere.  
re wrappe whiche pat I hold bere.  
for I of is noon ower lache.  
How drey for I hold lache.  
of wrappe if I wete elles is.

Wher of to schryue. Some yew. **Confess.**  
In mouet item q' l'que frena re  
soluens. Laxa parui famet currit  
vires. Vias. P'xaru nutrix quos e  
ducit ista loquaces. Nos venit a la  
tere liquit habere dargas. Sz pacen  
ter agens taciturno qui celet ore.

**Whic traktat Confessor sup seda p'e**  
**que que lis dicitur ex amnis contume**  
**lis numerosa dolor occasio tam i**  
**amoris causa qm aliter in qui plu**  
**ribz scripsit exorta est**

**W**hiche pat I wete elles is.  
Whiche hap pe Wyndes of tereste.  
to kepe. a many a sodeyn blast.  
he blolley wher of ben a gast.  
Thei pat desiren pes and roste.  
he is pat ilke vngodelieste.  
Which many a lusty loue hap dymmed.  
for he berep euere his mouny dymmed.  
So pat his lypes ben vylde.  
And his corage is al to broke.  
pat euert ym pat he can telle.  
It sprynges by us dore a welle.  
Whiche may non of his freines hide.  
for remey out on euert side.  
So buillen by pe foule lades.  
pat chert dot of his felaltes.  
for as a sibe larey ale.  
Fich so fan chert kepe a tale.  
Al pat he wot he wole desclose.  
And speke er any man oppose.  
As a cote wyf oute wal.  
Wher men may gon out ouer al.  
Wyp outen omy resistance.  
So wyf his coked eloquence.  
he speky al pat he wot dymme.  
Wher of men lese more pan wyne.  
for ofte tyme of his chiding.  
he bynyng to house suche tyding.  
pat maket werre ut beddes hed.  
he is pe leneyne of pe bres.

**Liber.**

**I**

Which I ourey al pe past aboute.  
men ouhten wel such on to dote.  
for euere his bolle is redy bent.  
And whom he hit I telle hym shent.  
If he may perye hym wyf his tynge.  
And eke so lollode his belle is runge.  
pat of pe noise and of pe soun.  
men fereu hem in al pe toun.  
Wel more pan pei don of pe punder.  
for pat is cause of more wonder.  
And wyf pe Wyndes whiche he blolley.  
ful ofte tyme he ouey prollay.  
pe ctees and pe polie.  
pat I haue herd pe peple crie.  
And echon seid in his degre.  
Ha Wyfkes tynge wo pe be.  
for men seyn pat pe hunde bon.  
Al pous hym seluen haue noon.  
A tynge brekye it al to peccs.  
he hap so many souni pices.  
Of wyf pat I may nouht wel.  
deserue hem be a pousandel.  
Got whan pat he to chert faller.  
ful many a wonder ym bestulley.  
for he can no ym forbere.  
Dow tell me some ym answere.

**Oppunt Confessor**  
If it hap euere so betid.  
pat pou at eny tyme hast chid.  
Tollard pe loue. fader may.  
**Confessio Amantis.**  
Such cherte yet vn to pei day.  
re made I neuere god for bede.  
for er I spryng such a crede.  
I hadde leuere to be loked.  
for pan were I al be shelled.  
And worpi to be put a bak.  
pat any man ordeyne coupe.  
Got pat I spak neuere be moupe.  
pat vn to chert myght touche.  
And pat I durst right wel a wouche.  
vpon here self as for witnesse.  
for I wot of here gentilesse.  
That she me wole wel excuse.  
pat I no ymges suche vse.  
And if it shulde so betide.  
pat I algaies muste chide.  
It myht not be to my loue.  
for so yit was I neuere a loue.  
for al pe wile world to wyne.  
pat I durste any word begynne.  
Se whiche she myht haue be amoued.  
And I of chert also reprovued.  
But raper if it myht here like.  
pe bestes wordes wold I pyke.  
Whiche I collye in myn herte chere.  
And serue hem for in fere of chere.



For pat is helpelich to defie.  
 And so wolde I my wordes ple.  
 pat mihten wrappe and cheste auale.  
 Wip celling of my softe tale.  
 pus dar I make a foreward.  
 pat neuere bi to my ladyward.  
 zit spake I word in such a wise.  
 wher of pat chesht sholde arise.  
 ris seie I nouht pat I ful of to.  
 re haue whan I spak most softe.  
 pat as said more pan I nold.  
 abot so wel hast no man ye plowh.  
 pat he ne bakkep ower while.  
 re so wel can no man affile.  
 his tuinge pat som tyme in a jape.  
 hym may som light word ou scape.  
 And yet ne menep he no cheste.  
 Bot pat I haue apen hire heste.  
 ful of ce spoke I am let noude.  
 And hold my wil is pat ye knowe.  
 for whan my tyme comep aboute.  
 pat I dar speke and sai al oute.  
 erp lounge loue of whiche she wor.  
 pat euer in on a liche hot.  
 me greney pame al my dishe.  
 I telle and pouh it here displose.  
 I speke it forp. and nouht ne leue.  
 And pouh it be beside here leue.  
 I hope and trowe hapeles.  
 pat I do nouht a yen hit pes.  
 for pouh I telle here al my pouht.  
 she wor wel pat I chide nouht.  
 eren may ye hitte god besече.  
 And he wote here a mames speche.  
 And be nouht wip of pat he forp.  
 So reuey it me ye more seip.  
 And mak me hardy for to sepe.  
 pat I dar wel ye better preye.  
 my lady which a woman is.  
 for pouh I telle here pat or pis.  
 Of loue whiche me greney soie.  
 hit ouht nouht be wip ye more.  
 for I wip oute noyse or cry.  
 my pleynt make al boromby.  
 To putten al wip a way.  
 pus dar I sepe bi to pis day.  
 Of chesht en earnest or in game.  
 my lady shal me no pynge blame.  
 For of ce tyme it hit beed.  
 pat wip my selfe I haue chid.  
 pat no man coude better chide.  
 And pat hap ben at euery tye.  
 whan I cam to my self al one.  
 for pan I made a prye mone.  
 And euery tale by and by.  
 Which as I spak to my lady.  
 I penke and perse in my balance.

And drabe in to my remembrance.  
 And pan if pat I finde a lak.  
 Of chy word pat I my spak.  
 whiche was to muche in my wise.  
 And non my wittes I dispise.  
 And make a chidynge in myn herte.  
 pat eny word me sholde a fterte.  
 which as I sholde haue holden inne.  
 And so forp after I benymme.  
 And loke if yer wer elles ouht.  
 To speke and I ne spak it nouht.  
 And pan if I may seche and fynde.  
 pat eny word be left behinde.  
 whiche as I sholde more haue spoke.  
 I wolde vpon my self be wroke.  
 And chide wip my seluen so.  
 pat al my witte is ouer go.  
 for no man mai his tyme lore.  
 recouere. and pus am I per fore.  
 so ouer wip in al my pouht.  
 pat I my self chide al to nouht.  
 pus for to muche or for to lite.  
 ful of ce I am my self to wite.  
 But al pat may me nouht auale.  
 wip chesht pouh I me tynnaile.  
 But oule on stob and stob on oule.  
 ye more pat a man do foule.  
 eren witen wel whiche han ye werse.  
 And so to me mys wory a kers.  
 Bot turnep on myn olben heb.  
 pouh I til pat I were ded.  
 wolde euer chide in such a wise.  
 Of loue as I to you deuise.  
 Bot fader nold ye haue al herd.  
 In pis manere hold I haue ferd.  
 Of chesht and of dysfension.  
 and me yourre absoludon.  
 My sone if pat you wytest al.  
 what chesht do in special.  
 To loue and to his wel wilyng.  
 you woldest ften his knoll lechynge.  
 And leue to ben debonaire.  
 for who pat most can speke faire.  
 Is most accordend bi to loue.  
 fair speche hap of ce brouht a boue.  
 ful many a man as it is knolle.  
 which elles sholde haue be ritht lolve.  
 And failed mochel of his wille.  
 for pi holde you pi tuinge stille.  
 And let pi wip pi wil areste.  
 so pat you falle nouht in chesht.  
 whiche is ye source of gret distauce.  
 And take bi to pi remembrance.  
 whiche is ye leche of alle offence.  
 If you might gete pacience.  
 Seneca. paciencia est vindex omni ini.  
 And tellen de pus olde wise. riaru.



For Whan nouht elles may suffice.  
 Se strengpe ne be mannes witte.  
 In pacience it ouerfate.  
 And ouercomep it at ye laste.  
 For he may neuere longe laste.  
 Whiche wole nouht bolke or he breke.  
 Take hede sone of pat I speke.

**W**hich fader of youre goode speche.  
 And of ye wit pat ye me teche. *ma.*  
 I wote wol wy al myn herte.  
 For pat word shal me neuere aste.  
 Pat I ne shal youre wordes holde.  
 Of pacience as ye me tolde.  
 Als forsoy as myn herte penke.  
 And of myn wyppye it me forpenke.  
 For fader if ye forp wy al.  
 Som goode ensample in special.  
 Of wolden telle of som cromp.  
 It sholde wel myn herte like.  
 Of pacience for to here.

So pat I myght in my matere.  
 Ye more yn to my Loue obeie.  
 And putten my dyshele awei.

*De pacencia in amore contra Socrates  
 habenda. Et narrat qualiter Socrates  
 Socratis ipm quodam die multis  
 sermonibus litigauit. Sz cu ipse abs  
 q villa rursione oia pbra pacien  
 ter sustulit. indignata de quan  
 ta pbra plena aque qua in ma  
 nu tenebat. sup caput sui sui  
 subito effudit dicens. Simila a  
 loquere. qui respondens. tunc ait  
 O uere uim scio & expertus sum qz  
 post ventos rabiē sciantur ym  
 bres & isto modo Liris contine  
 ham sua pacencia debet.*

**I**n sone a man to beye hym pees.  
 Behouey suffre as Socrates.  
 Ensample lest he whiche is write.  
 And for pou shalt pe soye witte.  
 Of his ensample whiche I mene.  
 Al pouh it be wold lreel seue.  
 A mount pe men pulke euidence.  
 Zit he was vpon pacience.  
 So set pat he him self assaie.  
 In pynge whiche myht hi most mispau.  
 Desney. and a wickete wif.  
 He weddey whiche in sorlbe & strif.  
 A ren his ese was contrarie.  
 For he spat euere softe and fure.  
 Til it befel as it is told.  
 In wynter whan pe day is cold.  
 His wif was so pe welle come.  
 Wher pat a pot wy water nome.  
 She hap and brouht it in to house.

And seih holt pat hne seli spouise.  
 Was set and loket on a booke.  
 With to pe fyre as he whiche took.  
 His ese for a man of age.  
 And she began pe wode rage.  
 And axep hym what deucl he pouste.  
 And bar on honde pat he ne wouste.  
 What labour pat she took on honde.  
 And seip pat such an husbonde.  
 Was to a wif nouht worth a stre.  
 He seide nouper nay ne ye.  
 For helde him stille and let here chide.  
 And she whiche may hir self not chide.  
 Begun wy gume for to wille.  
 And pat she brouht in for pe welle.  
 Ye water pot she heu a losse.  
 And bad him speke and he al softe.  
 Sat stille and nouht a word answere.  
 And she was wrope pat he so fode.  
 And axep him if he be ded.  
 And alle ye water on his hed.  
 She pored out and bad a wale.  
 For he whiche wole nouht for sake.  
 His pacience pume spak.  
 And seide holt pat he fond no lak.  
 In no pynge whiche she hadde do.  
 For it was wynter tyme po.  
 And wynter as be wyne of kynde.  
 Which stormy is as men it fynde.  
 First maky pe wyndes for to blowe.  
 And after pat wynter quile a prowe.  
 He reynep and pe water gates.  
 Wyndy. and pus my wif al gates.  
 Which is wynter reson wel beseyn.  
 Hay mad me bope wynd and reyn.  
 After pe seson of pe peer.  
 And pan he sette him neer pe fear.  
 And as he myght his clothes drie.  
 Pat he no more o word ne seide.  
 Wher of he gat hym somdel rest.  
 For pat him pouht was pe best.  
 Not if pulke ensample zit.  
 A cordey wy a mannes wit.  
 To suffre as Socrates pe dede.  
 And if it falle in eny tede.  
 A man to lese so his galle.  
 He ouht among pe wyminen alle.  
 In Loues Court be Jugement.  
 Ye name bere of patient.  
 To yue ensample to pe gode.  
 Of patient holt pat it fode.  
 Pat ouer men it myht fuolde.  
 And sone if you at eny prowe.  
 Be tempted a ren pacience.  
 Take hede vpon his euidence.  
 It shal parcas pe lisse greue.  
 For fader so as I belieue. *Amans.*



of pat hal be no maner neede.  
for I wole take so good hede.  
pat er I falle in suche assay.  
I penke eschune it if I may.  
Bot if yere be ouer elles more.  
Wher of I myght take Lore.  
I pray wole so as I dar.  
wole telley pat I may be war.  
Som oper oper tale in pis matere.  
Sone it is euere good to Lere.  
Wher of you myght in word referre.  
Er pat you falle in eny peyne.  
for who pat can no counseil hede.  
he may nought faile of wo beside.  
Whiche hal be faile er he it wite.  
Wher of I fynde in bokes wite.  
**Hic ponit Confessor exemplum**  
**quod de alterius lite introuit**  
**amendum est. Et narrat qualiter**  
**gubiter ad iunone sup quadam ques**  
**tione iungatur videlicet utrum vir**  
**an mulier in amoris concupiscen**  
**cia feruencius ardebat. sup quo**  
**Tresiam corz indicem constitue**  
**bat. Et qz ille contra iunonem**  
**in digne litis causa sententiam dif**  
**feruit. iuxta dea. pprii amboz**  
**oculoy lumine claritatis absqz re**  
**missione priuauit.**  
**A** Et cam per neuere wood of strif.  
To seche in al amannes hif.  
woul it begynne in pure game.  
ful ofte it turney in to game.  
And dop greuance vpon som fide.  
Wher of ye grete clerk quide.  
After ye talke whiche was po.  
of iubiter and of iuno.  
waken in hys bokes menaion.  
holly yei falle in dissencion.  
In maner as it were a bordo.  
As yei begonne for to worde.  
A mouy hem self in priuete.  
And pat was vpon pis degre.  
Whiche of ye titho more amercous is.  
Or man or wif. and vpon pis.  
yei myht nought accorde in oon.  
And toke a iuge per vpon.  
Whiche cleped is Tresias.  
And bede him demen in ye cas.  
And he wip oute amercement.  
A yeu iuno yaf iungement.  
pis goddesse vpon his answere.  
Was wip and wold nought forlere.  
Bot took alwey for euer mo.  
yei lht fro bope his eyen titho.  
Whan iubiter pis harin hay seyn.  
And oper beufut per a yeu.

He pat and such a grace him dop.  
pat for he wite he seide sop.  
A sop seiere he was for euere.  
But yit pat oper were him leuere.  
Haue ye lokyng of his yhe.  
pan of his word ye pphete.  
To holl so pat ye sope wente.  
Stryt was ye cause of pat he hente.  
So met a peyne bodily.  
**A**y sone be you wat per by. **con**  
And holl in tynge falle clos. **for**  
for who pat hap his word desclos.  
Er pat he wite what he mene.  
he is ful ofte nyl his toue.  
And lest ful many tyme grace.  
Wher pat he wold his pouke pchace.  
And ouer pis my sone dere.  
Of oper men if you myht here.  
In peruete what per haue wrouht.  
Holde counseil and discouere it nought.  
for cheft can no counseil hele.  
Er be it wo or be it wele.  
And take a tale in to y mynde.  
ye whiche of olde ensample I fynde.  
**Qualiter litigantes ora sua con**  
**tere nequunt. hic ponit Confessor**  
**exemplum contra illos qui in amo**  
**ris causa alius consiliu reuelare**  
**psunt. Et narrat qualiter quedam**  
**laus tunc albiissima noie corinus**  
**consiliu consiliu duc sue corinde**  
**phelo demidant. Unde otigit no**  
**foli uxam corinde in fida. s. 2 cor**  
**in qui antea tanqu uix albus fu**  
**erit in pteu. colorem pro perpetuo**  
**transmutari.**  
**A** Hebus whiche maky pe dayes lht.  
A Loue he hadde whiche po lht.  
Corinde. Whom a bouen alle.  
He pleser bot what shal be fulle.  
Of Loue per is no man knolley.  
Bot as fortune hure hap wolle.  
So it befel vpon a chaunce.  
A yong knyght toke here a queyntance.  
And hadde of hure al pat he wold.  
Bot a fals brid whiche he hap holde.  
And kept in chambre of pure youye.  
Discouery al pat euer he couye.  
pis briddes name was as po.  
Corinus. ye whiche was pame also  
Wel more whic pan eny man.  
And he ye shrewd al pat he can.  
Of his lady to phelus seide.  
And he for wryppe his sherd out breide.  
Wip whiche Corinde anon he stowh.  
Bot after him was too yndwh.  
And took a ful gret repentance.



*Wher of in tokene and remembrance.*

Of hem whiche ben wilked speche.  
 Upon his bryd he took his wreche.  
 That per he was suoll whitt to fore.  
 Euer afterward colblak per fore.  
 He was transformed as it shellep.  
 And many a man yit hym beshellep.  
 And clepen hym in to his day.  
 A Rauen be whom yit men may.  
 Take euidence whan he cryep.  
 That som myshap it signifyep.  
 Se war perfore and sey ye beste.  
 If you wolt be yit self in reste.  
 My goode sone I ye rede.

*It loquitur sup eodem et narrat  
 qualiter Laar in impia de eo qd  
 iubiter Iucuriam adulteram in  
 uoni Iouis vron secretum reuela  
 uit. Qua ppter iubiter iua comot  
 lingua Laaris prius absisa iam  
 postea in pfundum acherontis ex  
 ulum p perpetuo mancipauit.*

So in an oper place I rede.  
 Of pilke nymphe whiche Laar highte.  
 For pilke priuete he nyhte.  
 How iubiter Lay be iutorne.  
 Hay cold god made hire ouertorne.  
 Hely tynge he kute and in to helle.  
 For euer he sende hire for to dwelle.  
 As she pat was nouht worpi here.  
 To ben of loue a chamberere.  
 For she no counseil coupe hele.  
 And such a dures be noll fele.  
 In loues court as it is seid.  
 That lette here tynge non vnteyed.

*My sone be you non of po. Confes  
 to Iangle and telle tales so. for.  
 And namely pat you ue chide.  
 For chet can no counseil hide.  
 For wrappe seide neuere wel.  
 My fader so is eueridel. Amans.  
 That ye me teche and I wole holde.  
 Ye reule whiche I am holde.  
 To fle ye chet as ye me bidde.  
 For wel is him pat neuere childe.  
 And telle me forp if ye be more.  
 As touchyng yit to wrappes lore.*

*Demonis iocū quasi scriba cui da  
 bruna materia scripti cordis ad  
 autra sui. non laxabit amor odi  
 que frena restringit. Nec secreta  
 sui iuris adire sinit. Hic mac  
 tar Confessor de tercia pteae in q  
 odno dicitur. cuius natura omnes  
 in inuincibiles ad mentem reducere  
 illas vsqz ad tempus vndate de  
 lit scriba demonis in cordis pa*

*pio conuenerandis inserit.*

**W**rappe yet per is an oper.  
 Which is to chet his owne bryd.  
 And is he name cleped hate.  
 That suffrey nouht wyf iune his gate.  
 That per come ouer loue or pees.  
 For he wole make no reles.  
 Of no debat whiche is be falle.  
 And speke if you art on of alle.  
 That wyf his vice hast be wypholde.  
 As yet for ouht pat ye me tolde.  
 My fader I not what it is. *man.*  
 In gode fey sone I wolle ye. *Confes.*  
 My fader nay bot ye me lere. *Amans.*  
 How lest my sone and you shalt here. *Confes.*  
 Hate is a wrepe nouht sheldende.  
 Bot of long tyme gaderende.  
 And dwellep in ye herce loken.  
 Til he se come to be broken.  
 And yit he shellep his tempeste.  
 More sodeyn pan ye wille be ste.  
 Which wot no ping what mercy is.  
 My sone art you kuowende of pis.  
 My goode fader as I bene. *Amans.*  
 And wot I sounel what ye mene.  
 But I dar saufly make an oy.  
 In lady was me neuere loy.  
 I wot nouht were unpeles.  
 That I of hate am gulteles.  
 For whan I to my lady plie.  
 Fro day to day and mercy crye.  
 And she no mercy on me lery.  
 Bot horce wordes to me seip.  
 Youh I my lady loue al hate.  
 Ye wordes moste I nedes hate.  
 And wolde yei were alle despent.  
 Or so fer out of londe went.  
 That I neuere after sholde hem hear.  
 And yit loue I my lady dere.  
 Yus is per hate as ye may see.  
 Be thene my lady word and me.  
 Ye word I hate and hure loue.  
 What so me shal be ride of loue.  
 Bot ferperfermore I wole me shrow.  
 That I haue hated al my lyue.  
 Yese jangle whiche of here enue.  
 Sen euer redy for to lye.  
 For wyf here false compassment.  
 Ful ofte per han made me shent.  
 And hunderd me ful ofte tyme.  
 Whan per no cause wisten byme.  
 Bot onlich of here owne pouht.  
 And yus ful often haue I bouht.  
 Ye he and drant nollht of ye bym.  
 I wolde here hap were such ab myn.  
 For holl so pat I be nouht schryue.  
 To hem ne may I nouht for yene.



Til pat. I se hem a debat.  
 Wyf loue and panne wyf myn astat.  
 yei mihten be hure oldhne deme.  
 And loke hold wel it sholde hem glome.  
 To hyndre a man pat louey fore.  
 And yue I hate hem euermore.  
 Til loue on hem wole don his wreche.  
 For pat shal I alday besече.  
 Un to ye mihty Cupido.  
 pat he so mochel wolde do.  
 So as he is of loue a god.  
 To smyte hem wyf ye same rod.  
 Wyf which I am of loue smyto.  
 So pat yei myhte kuolle and wite.  
 Holy byndryng is a woful peyne.  
 To him pat loue wolde attayne.  
 yue euer on hem I wate and hope.  
 Til I may sen hem lepe a lope.  
 And halten on ye same for.  
 Which I do now for euer more.  
 I wolde panne do my myht.  
 So for to stonden in here light.  
 pat yei he sholden fynde a weye.  
 To pat yei wolde. bot a weye.  
 I wolde hem putte out of ye scede.  
 For loue right as yei me dede.  
 Wyf pat yei speke of me be moupe.  
 So wolde I do I pat I coupe.  
 Of hem and yis so god me saue.  
 Is al ye hate pat I haue.  
 Toward yese gangelers euer del.  
 I wolde alle oper ferde wel.  
 yue haue I fader said my wille.  
 Say ye now for I am stille.  
 My sone of pat you hast me said.  
 I holde me nouht fully pained. *confess.*  
 pat you wolt hate eny man.  
 To pat accorden I ne can.  
 yough he haue hyndred ye to fore.  
 Bot yis I telle ye perfore.  
 you miht vpon my benison.  
 wel haten ye condicion.  
 Of ye gangelers as you me toldest.  
 For ferpermore of pat you woldest.  
 hem hyndre in ony oper wise.  
 Such hate is euer to despise.  
 For yis my sone I wole ye rede.  
 pat you dralle in be frendlyhede.  
 pat you ne myht nouht do be hate.  
 So miht you wete loue algate.  
 And sette ye my sone in reste.  
 For you shalt fynde it for ye besce.  
 And ouer yis so as I dar.  
 I rede pat you be right war.  
 Of oper mennes hate aboute.  
 Which eueri wysman sholde doute.  
 For hate is euer vpon a want.

And as ye fischer vpon his bary.  
 Slep when he seip ye fisses faste.  
 So when he seip yme at ye laste.  
 pat he may worche an oper wo.  
 shal no man tornen hem per fwo.  
 pat hate nyl his felonye.  
 fulfille. and feintue compaignie.  
 pat naples for fule semblant.  
 is toward hym of couenant.  
 Wyholde so pat vnder hope.  
 ye prynces drapye can hym clope.  
 pat he shal seme of met bilene.  
 Bot war ye wel pat you ne leue.  
 Al pat yow seest to fore ym yhe.  
 So as ye greuous ye whilom fise.  
 ye book of Troye who so rede.  
 yep may he fynde ensample in dede.  
*It is point confessor exemplum con-*  
*tra illos qui ad ire sue odium apte bin-*  
*dicare non possit ficta dissimulatio-*  
*ne vindicta subdole asseditur. Et nar-*  
*rat qd ad palamades princeps*  
*grecorum in obsidione Troie a quibz*  
*dam suis eniulis proditorum interfec-*  
*tus fuisset paterqz suus Rex nam-*  
*plus in patria sua tunc existens hu-*  
*iusmodi euentus certitudine sciuis-*  
*set grecos in sui cordis odio sup oia*  
*recolerit. Dnde contigit qd ad greci*  
*deuicta troia p altis mare versus*  
*grecam nauigio remeantes. obscu-*  
*risimo noctis tempore nimia vento-*  
*rum tempestate iactabantur. Rex*  
*et Amphius in terra sua contra lit-*  
*maris ubi maiora saxoz emuebat*  
*picula sup cacumina monad grau-*  
*grandissimos noctanter fecit ignes.*  
*quos greca aspicientes salu po-*  
*ad ibidem inleuere certissime puta-*  
*bant et terram approximantes di-*  
*ruptis nauibz magna pars grecorum*  
*peribatur. Et sic quoz et amplius*  
*simbz nequit odio latitante p diffi-*  
*mulacionis fraudem vindicant.*  
 One after ye distruction.  
 When Troye was alle bete don.  
 And slayn was Priamus ye kynig.  
 ye greuous which of al pis ying.  
 Ben cause. tornen home a yen.  
 per may no man his happe wyf seyn.  
 It may be seyn and felt ful ofte.  
 ye harde tyme after ye softe.  
 Ye see as yei fory homeward wente.  
 A rage of gret tempest hem hente.  
 Quino let beude here party bolle.  
 ye sky way derk ye wynd gan blowe.  
 The fyr welkne gan to pondre.



As pouh ye werls scholke al to fonde.  
ffro heuene out of ye Watergates.  
ye rem storm fel dom alhates.  
And al here takel made vnlhelde.  
pat no man myght hym self belhelde.  
ye may men here shipmen are.  
pat food in aunter for to dre.  
he pat be hynde stod to fiere.  
may nouht ye forefempne here.  
ye ship aros a yen ye walles.  
ye Rodesman hay lost hys ealles.  
ye see beet in on euey side.  
ye mscen what fortune abide.  
But sette hem alle in goddes wille.  
Wher he hem wolde saue or spille.  
And it fell yllke tyme pus.  
Gher was a kyng which namplius.  
was hote. and he a sone hadde.  
At Troie which ye grekes hadde.  
As he pat was mad pryncce of alle.  
Til pat fortune let hym felle.  
his name was Palamades.  
But purgh an harte napeles.  
Of fume of heni his dey was cast.  
And he be treson ouercafe.  
his fader whan he herd it telle.  
he sboz if euere his tyme felle.  
he wolde him venge if pat he myhte.  
And per his adolt be myhte.  
And pus his kyng purgh pryncce harte.  
A bood apou a wate algate.  
for he was nouht of such emprise.  
To venge him in opyn wise.  
ye fame which god wide where.  
maky knolle holl pat ye grekes were.  
Houmward wy al ye felashipe.  
ffro Troie vpon ye se by shipe.  
Namplius whan he was vnderstod.  
And knolle ye tides of ye flos.  
And sih ye wynd blew to ye lond.  
A grete deerte a noon he fond.  
Of pryncce harte as pou shalt here.  
Wher of I telle al his matere.  
his kyng was weder gan beholde.  
And wist wel ye moten holde.  
here comys endlout his march al rite.  
And made vpon ye derke myht.  
Of grete shides and of blockes.  
Grete fyre a yen ye grete rockes.  
To schelbe vpon ye hilles hie.  
So pat ye flete of grece it sihe.  
And so it felle rite as he yowhte.  
his flete which an haueue souht.  
ye blithe fyre sihe a ferre.  
And yei hem drollen uerre z nerre.  
And wende wel and vnderstode.  
holl al pat fyre was made for gode.

To shelle where men holde anyue.  
And peder ward yei harten blyue.  
In semblant as men sein is guile.  
And pat was pryncce yllke while.  
This ship which wende his helpe awoke.  
Drof al to pecces on ye roche.  
And so per deden ten or twelue.  
per myht no man helpe hym selpe.  
for per yei wende dey asape.  
Wip outen helpe here dey was shape.  
pus yei pat comen ferst to fore.  
Epon ye rockes be for lore.  
But purgh ye noise and purgh ye ay.  
rese oper weren al war per by.  
And whan ye day be gan to rolle.  
yei witen pat yei were knolle.  
pat where yei wende frendes fynde.  
yei fouden freuschips al behinde.  
ye lond was ynnie soone deyned.  
where pat yei hadden be deeyned.  
And toke hem to ye huse see.  
per to yei seiden alle ye.  
ffro pat tyme forp what pat yei were.  
Of pat yei hadde assaied per.  
A sone her of pou myht anyse.  
holl fraud stant in many wise.  
A monges hem pat guile penke.  
per is no scribryn wy his euf.  
which half ye fraude write can.  
pat stant in such a maner man.  
for in ye wise men ne deuen.  
ye pliges after pat yei semen.  
Bot after pat yei knolle and fynde.  
ye arrour sholwey in his kynde.  
As he hadde al ye world wipme.  
And is in soy no purg per jame.  
And so furey harte for a prolle.  
Til he a man hay ouer prolle.  
shal no man knolle be his chere.  
which is auant ne which awere.  
for in my sone penk on pis.  
y fader so I wole I wys.  
And if ye more of wraupe be.  
noll asey forp parcharite.  
As ye be yowre boles knolle.  
And I ye sope shal be knolle.  
The colibere many nequit z sic  
spe ems. Namby hic populo sexen  
mendus erit. Sepius in lucu bonus  
z sua gaudia transfert. Cuius sub  
salamus talis amicus adest. Est  
amor amplexu non iactat allien  
dus. ffuamit amiciaas impetuo  
sa manus. Hic tractat confessor  
sup quara speac z quanta re que  
impetuositas et hominadu diant  
z panno de impetuositate speac



us intendit. cuius natura spiritus  
in nobis gestando ad omnes in mo-  
dores in vincta parata pacien-  
ciam nullatenus observat.

**M**y sone pou shalt vnderstande.  
pat yet tolwardes whaype stonde.  
Of dedly vices oper elbo.  
And for to telle here names so.  
It is contel and homiade.  
pat ven to gedre on euery side.  
Contel so as pe bokes seyn.  
foolhafte hap to his chambirleyn.  
So whos conseil al vnadised.  
Is patience most despised.  
Dil homiade whay hem mete.  
ffor merry pei ben alle vnnete.  
And pus ven pei pe worste of alle  
Of hem whiche vn to whaype falle.  
In dede hope an eke in pouht.  
ffor pei accompte here whaype at nouht.  
Bot if per be schedyng of blod.  
And pus lich to a beste wood.  
pat wolde nouht pe god of luf.  
So so pei haue oz swerd oz knyft.  
here dedly whaype for to wrete.  
Of pite luf hem nouht to speke.  
rown oper reson pei ne soure.  
Bot at pei ben of myghtes stronge.  
Bot war hem wel in oper place.  
Where euery man behouey pite.  
Bot pere I trolde it shal hem fülle.  
To whom no mercy miht auale.  
Bot wrouhten vpon tyrandie.  
pat no pite mihte hem ple.  
Dow tel my sone fader what.

**Opponit confessor.**

If yow have ben coupable of pat.

**Confessio Amantis.**

My fader may Crist me forbede.  
I speke ouly as of pe dede.  
Of whiche I neuere was coupable.  
Wip oute cause resonable.  
Bot pis is nouht to my matere.  
Of schynfere whi we siten here.  
ffor we be sette to schynue of loue.  
As we begyne ferst aboue.  
And napeles I am be knolde.  
pat as touchend of loues proude.  
Whan my wittes ouer wende.  
my hertes contel hay noon ende.  
Bot euere it feant vpon debatt.  
To met disof of myn estat.  
As for pe tyme pat it lastey.  
ffor whan my fortune ouer castey.  
hwe whiel and is to me so strange.  
And pat I se she wol nouht change.  
van caste I al pe world aboute.

And pent hold I at hom z oute.  
haue al my tyme in wynn despende.  
And se nouht holt to ben a mended.  
Bot iaper for to be emperres.  
As he pat is welnyph despende.  
ffor I ne may no yowt deserue.  
And euere I loue and euere I serue.  
And euere I am aliche uerde.  
pus for I stonde in such a werre.  
I am as who seip out of herre.  
And pus vpon my self pe werre.  
I byng and put out alle pees.  
pat I ful ofte in such a res.  
Am veri of myn olbue luf.  
So pat of contel and of strif.  
I am be knolde and haue anwerd.  
As pe my fader nold haue herd.  
my herte is wonderly begon.  
Wip counsel wher of wit is on.  
Which hay reson in compaigne.  
And ven pe whiche stant partie.  
Whi which hay hope of his accorde.  
And pus pei bynggen vp descorde.  
Wit and reson counseilen ofte.  
pat myn herte sholde softte.  
And pat I sholde wil deume.  
And put hem out of retenuie.  
Or elles holde him vnder fote.  
ffor as pei sem if pat he mote.  
his olbue rule haue vpon honde.  
per shal no wit ben vnderfonde.  
Of hope also pei tellen pei tellen yis.  
pat ouer al wher pat he is.  
he set pe herte in champarchie.  
Wip wyschynge and wip fantasie.  
And is nouht trewe of pat he seip.  
So pat in hym per is no feip.  
pus wip reson and wit amised.  
Is wil and hope alday despised.  
Reson seip pat I sholde leue.  
To loue where per is no leue.  
To speke. and wil seip per a yern.  
pat such an herte is to vileyn.  
Which dar nouht loue and al he speke.  
Let hope serue at such a nede.  
he seip eke where an herte sit.  
Al hole gouerned after wit.  
he hay his lynes luf forlore.  
And pus myn herte is al to tore.  
Of such a contel as pei make.  
Bot yet I may nouht wel forsake.  
pat he mys maister of my pouht.  
Or pat I speke or speke nouht.  
Chold dwt my sone a ven pe rht. **confessor.**  
Bot loue is off so gret a myght.  
his talbe may no man refuse.  
So myht yow pe the better excuse.



And mayest thou chalt be learned.  
 pat wilt shold be governed.  
 of reson more pat of prude.  
 wher of a tale write I fynde.  
**Whic point confessor exemplum**  
**ad hunc impetuosa voluntas sit dis-**  
**creacionis moderamine gubernanda.**  
**Et narrat qualiter Diogenes qui**  
**motus animi sui iracō subiuga-**  
**rit regem Alexandro sup isto fco**  
**libi appouente plenius informant.**  
 Philosophre of which men tolde.  
 pat was whilom by dayes olde.  
 And Diogenes pan he highte.  
 So old he was pat panne he myghte.  
 he wolde dwelle in a tubbe.  
 he shew him for to take his reste.  
 And dwelle in hom in such a wise.  
 pat myh his hous he led deuse.  
 Endlong vpon an axeltre.  
 to sette a coune in such degre.  
 pat he it myghte tome aboute.  
 wher on hed was taken oute.  
 for he per yme sette sholde.  
 And tome hem self so as he wolde.  
 to take per and se he heuene.  
 And deme of pe planetes seuene.  
 as he which coure moche what.  
 And yus ful ofte pere he sat.  
 to muse in his philosophre.  
 Solein wy oute compaignie.  
 so pat vpon a morne tide.  
 as yung which sholde so betide.  
 whan he was set pere as him luste.  
 to loke vpon pe soune arise.  
 wher of pe pperes he seih.  
 it felt pere cam rynde myh.  
 yung Alisandre wy a route.  
 And as he caste his yhe aboute.  
 he seih yus coune & what it mente.  
 he wolde wite and peder sente.  
 A knyght be whom he myht it knolde.  
 And he him self pat ilke prole.  
 A good. and houser pere stille.  
 yus knyght after pe kynges Wille.  
 wy spore made his hors to goon.  
 And to pe toune he cam a noon.  
 wher pat he found a man of age.  
 And he him tolde pe message.  
 Such as pe kyng hym hadde bede.  
 And axep whi in yllke scede.  
 pe toune seod and what it was.  
 And he which vnderstod pe cas.  
 sat stille and spak no word axeyn.  
 pe knyght bad speke and seip vileyen.  
 thou shalt me telle ev pat I go.  
 It is pi kyng which axep so.

my kyng quod he pat were buriht.  
 what is he panne seip pe knyght.  
 Is he pi man - pat seie I nouht.  
 quod he. but yus I am be pouht.  
 my manes man hold pat he is.  
 you liest fals chert & wys.  
 pe knyght him seip & was vilt wyse.  
 And to pe kyng a yen he goy.  
 And told hym how yus man answere.  
 pe kyng whan he yus tale herde.  
 had pat yus sholden alle abyde.  
 for he hym self wolde peder ride.  
 And whan he cam to fore pe toune.  
 he hay his tale yus begonne.  
 Alken he seip what man arrow.  
 Quod he such on as yus seest nold.  
 pe kyng which hadde wordes wise.  
 his age wolde nouht despise.  
 But seip my fader I pe preie.  
 pat you me wolt pe cause seie.  
 hold pat I am pi manes man.  
 Sire kyng quod he and pat I can.  
 If pat you wolt - yus seip pe kyng.  
 Quod he yus is pe soye yung.  
 Sip I ferst reson vnderstod.  
 And swelb what yung was yuel & good.  
 pe wyl which of my body moeue.  
 whos werkes pat pe god reponye.  
 I haue restreyned encremore.  
 As hym pat stant vnder pe lore.  
 Of reson whos subget he is.  
 So pat he may nouht don a mys.  
 And yus be weie of couenant.  
 Wyl is my man and my seruant.  
 And euere hay ben and euere shal.  
 And wil is pi pryncipal.  
 And hay pe lordship of pi wit.  
 So pat you courest neuere vit.  
 Take oday rest of pi labour.  
 But for to ben a conquerour.  
 Of worldes good which may nouht laste.  
 you hiest euere a lyche faste.  
 where you no reson hast to bynde.  
 And yus pi wil is cause of synne.  
 And is pi lord to whom you serue.  
 wher of yus wyltel you deserue.  
 pe kyng of pat he yus answere.  
 was no yung wyse but whan he herde.  
 pe hie wordes which he seide.  
 wy goodly wordes yus he preyde.  
 pat he hym wolde telle his name.  
 I am quod he yus same.  
 pe which men Diogenes calle.  
 so was pe kyng right glad wyalle.  
 for hadde ofte herd to fore.  
 what man he was so pat per fore.  
 he seide. O wyse Diogene.



**W**hal pi grette hit besene.  
 For you shalte of my yifte haue.  
 What wordes ping pat you wolt anue.  
 Quod he pan houe out of my soune.  
 And let it shyne in to my toune.  
 For you benyngst me pilke yifte.  
 Which hy nouht in pi myht to schifte.  
 Aroun oper good of pe me nedey.  
 His kyng whom euery contre dredep.  
 To pus he was enformed pere.  
 Wher of my soune you myht lere.  
 Holb you pi wylt shal nouht be lieued.  
 Where it is nouht of hit reliued.  
 And wolt hafe seid pi self er pis.  
 Holb per pi wylt pi mayster is.  
 purgh which pin hertis pouht byrme.  
 Is euere of contel to begynne.  
 So pat it is gretly to drede.  
 pat it non homnide brede.  
 For loue is of a wonder kynde.  
 And hap hys wytes ofte blynde.  
 pat per fiv mannes resou falle.  
 Bot whan pat it is so be falle.  
 pat wil shal pe corage lete.  
 In loues cause it is to drede.  
 Wher of I fynde ensample wyte.  
 Whiche is behouely for to wyte.  
**I**n amoris causa pome confes  
 for exemplum contra illos q in sua  
 dapna minus accelerantes ex impe  
 tuositate ipse multoacens offendit.  
 Et narrat qditer Piramus cu ipse  
 Tesbeo amica suam in loco in coepte  
 deputato tempore aduent sui pmp  
 ram no inuenit aio impetuoso seip  
 sum p dolore extructo gladio morta  
 liter transsodit. que postea ista bre  
 ue veniens cu ipm sic mortuū inue  
 nisset. eadē et illa in sui ipm mor  
 tem impetuose festinans eisdem  
 gladij cuspidē sui cordis intima p  
 medium penetravit.  
**T**ede a tale and telley pus.  
 pe cite whiche Scyrramus.  
 Enclosed hap wyw wal abouce.  
 Of worpi folke wyw many a route.  
 Was enhabited here and pere.  
 Among pe whiche tho per were.  
 A boue alle opere noble and grette.  
 Dwelling po wyw june a fete.  
 So wyh to gedre as it was seue.  
 per was no ping hem bettene.  
 Bot wolt to wolt and wal to wal.  
 His o lord hadde in special.  
 A sone a lufey bacheler.  
 In al pe tolin was noon his per.  
 pat oper hadde a doughter etc.

In al pe lond pat for to seke.  
 men wisten noon so fure as she.  
 And felt so as it scholde be.  
 His faure doughter wyh his sone.  
 As pei to gedre pame wone.  
 Cupide hap so pe pynnes schape.  
 pat pei ne myht his hand ascape.  
 pat he his fyr ou hem ne caste.  
 Wher of her herte he ouer caste.  
 To folke pilke lore and selwe.  
 Which neuere man yit myht eschelle.  
 And pat was loue as it is happed.  
 Which hap here hertis so be trapped.  
 pat pei be alle wees seche.  
 Holb pat pei myhten byrme a speche.  
 Here woful peyne for to lisse.  
 Who louey wel it may nouht mysse.  
 And namely whanne per be tho.  
 Of on acord holb so it go.  
 Bot if pat pei som weye fynde.  
 For loue is euere of such a kynde.  
 And hap his folk so wel affured.  
 pat holb so pat it be alured.  
 per may no man pe porpos sette.  
 And pus he advene hem tho pei sette.  
 In hole vpon a wal to make.  
 purgh whiche pei haue here conseil take.  
 At alle tyme whan pei myhte.  
 His faure mayden tesbeo hite.  
 And he whom pat she loued hote.  
 Was Piramus be name hote.  
 So lout here lesson pei recorder.  
 In at pe laste pei accorder.  
 He nyhtes tyme for to wende.  
 At one out fro pe toynes ende.  
 Where was a welle vnder a tre.  
 And who cam ferst or she or he.  
 He sholde seile pere abide.  
 So it besel be nyhtes tyde.  
 His maiden whiche disguised was.  
 At pynely pe softreus.  
 Goy purgh pe lunge toum vnfuolke.  
 Til pat she cam wyw june a prolle.  
 Wher pat she liker for to dwelle.  
 At pilke unhappi fresshe welle.  
 Which was also pe forest wyh.  
 Where she conynged a leon fih.  
 In to pe feld to take his prap.  
 In haste and she po fleth a way.  
 So as fortune sholde fülle.  
 For fere and let here wympul fülle.  
 Neith to pe welle vpon perbare.  
 His leon in his wilde rage.  
 A bester which pat he foud oute.  
 Hap slayn and his bloddy suolbre.  
 Whan he hap eten what he wolde.  
 To drynke of pe streemes colde.



Com to ye welles pere he found.  
 The Wimpul Which out of here hand.  
 Was fülle and he it hay to dulle.  
 Gobled aboute and al fordualle.  
 And panne he strauht hym for to drife.  
 Vpon ye fressh welles byrke.  
 And after pat out of ye pleyne.  
 He turney to ye wode a yen.  
 And Tisbee durst nought remelde.  
 But as a bird Which were in melle.  
 Wip yme a busshe she kept here dos.  
 So stille pat she nought aros.  
 Vnto hure self and pleyney ay.  
 And fel whil pat she pere lay.  
 The Quarnus cam after sone.  
 On to ye welles and by ye mone.  
 He found hure Wimpul bloody pere.  
 Cam neuere yit to mannes ere.  
 Tidinge ne to mannes sight.  
 merueile Which so sore a fite.  
 A mannes herte as it po dede.  
 To hym Which in ye same stede.  
 Wip many a woful compleynunge.  
 Seem his hond for to bringe.  
 As he Which demey fikerly.  
 pat she be ded and foderly.  
 his swerd al naked out he bryde.  
 In his fulhaste and yus he seide.  
 I am cause of yis fellowe.  
 So it is reson pat I dye.  
 And she is ded be cause of me.  
 And Wip pat word vpon his kne.  
 He felle and to ye goddes alle.  
 Vp to ye heuene he gan to calle.  
 And praide syon it was so.  
 pat he may houbt his loue as po.  
 haue in yis world pat of here quene.  
 He miht here haue in ower place.  
 For here wolde he noubt abide.  
 He seip but as it shal beide.  
 ye pomel of his swerd to grounde.  
 he sette a yuagh his herte al bounde.  
 he made vp to ye hure hilt.  
 And in yis wise him self he spilt.  
 Wip his folhaste and dep he nam.  
 Forp she Wip yme a while cam.  
 Where he lay ded vpon his knyf.  
 So woful yit was neuere yif.  
 As Tisbee was whan she hym fih.  
 She myht noubt o word on his.  
 Speke out for here herte sette.  
 pat of hure luf no prys she sette.  
 Bot ded slouynng down she fett.  
 Til after when it so befel.  
 pat she out of here transe al boof.  
 Wip many a woful pitous look.  
 But she al they among she caste.

Vpon hure loue and at ye laste.  
 She caught brye and seid yus.  
 O you Which cleped art Venus.  
 Goddes of loue & you Cupido.  
 Which Loues cause hast for to myde.  
 I bot nolt wel pat ye be blynde.  
 Of yilke vnhapp pat I nolt fynde.  
 Only be thewne my loue and me.  
 yis Quarnus Which here I se.  
 Sledynge what hay he deserued.  
 For he youre heste hay kept & fued.  
 And was yong and I bope also.  
 Allas whi do ye Wip de so.  
 ye sette oure hertis bope ofyre.  
 And maden vs such ying desire.  
 Wher of pat we no kile koupe.  
 But yus oure fressh Rusey youpe.  
 Wip oure yore is al despende.  
 Which ying may neuere ben amende.  
 For as for me yis wol I seie.  
 pat me is leuere for to deie.  
 pan yue after yis sorowful day.  
 And Wip yis word pere as she lay.  
 Here loulou in armes she embrasye.  
 Here olbue dey and so purchasoy.  
 pat nolt she wepte and nolt she kide.  
 Til at ye laste er she it wised.  
 So gret a sorowe is to hure falle.  
 Which ouerroy here wites alle.  
 And she Which myht it noubt after.  
 ye swerdes point a yen hure herte.  
 She sette and fell down yer vpon.  
 Wher of pat she was ded a non.  
 And yus on o swerd bledende.  
 yis were founde ded liggende.  
 Nolt you my sone hast herd yis tale.  
 Be war of pat yin olbue hale. *castell*  
 you be noubt cause in yis folhaste.  
 And kep pat you yis wite ne waste.  
 Vpon yis poult in auenture.  
 Wher of yis yues forfeiture.  
 may falle and if you haue so poult.  
 Er yis tel on and hude it noubt.  
 I y fader vpon Loues side. *Amanus*  
 my consaunce I wole noubt hude.  
 Hoth pat for loue of pure wo.  
 I haue ben often moeued so.  
 pat Wip my wisses if I myhte.  
 A yousand tymes I you plighete.  
 I hadde seouen in a day.  
 And yet of I me schriue may.  
 yous loue fully me ne slouh.  
 my wil to dye was ynouh.  
 So am I of my witt couprable.  
 And yit is she noubt mercurable.  
 Which may me yue luf and hele.  
 Bot pat hure luf noubt Wip me de.



I wot he whos counseil it is.  
 And him wolde I long tyme er pis.  
 And yet I wolde and eare shal.  
 Sten and destourie in special.  
 ye gold of myne fynnes londes.  
 It sholde hym saue fro myn bondes.  
 In my poller if pat he were.  
 But yet hym stant of me no fere.  
 For nouht pat euere I can manace.  
 He is pe hynder of my grace.  
 Til he be ded I may nouht spede.  
 So mot I nedes taken hede.  
 And shap hold pat he were alweie.  
 If I yer to may fynde a weie.  
 y sone telle me now for pi.  
 Which is pat mortel enemy.  
 For you manacest to be ded.  
 My fader it is such a quod.  
 For wher I come he is to fore.  
 And so pat my cause is fore.  
 What is his name it is daunger.  
 Which is my lady counseiler.  
 For I was neuere yet so sleih.  
 To come in eny place myh.  
 Wher as she was be myht or day.  
 pat daunger ne was redy ay.  
 Wip whom for speche ne for mede.  
 yet myht I neuere of loue spede.  
 For euere pis I fynde sor.  
 Al pat my lady seip or sor.  
 To me daunger shal make an ende.  
 And pat maky al my world myshende.  
 And euere I axe his helpe. but he.  
 may wel be cleped sainte pite.  
 For ay pe more I to hym bolde.  
 ye lasse he wole my tale a lode.  
 he hay my lady so engined.  
 She wol nouht pat he be remuned.  
 For euere he honoure on here feil.  
 And is so prync of counseil.  
 pat euere whan I haue dunt bede.  
 I fynde daunger in here stede.  
 And myn answere of hym I haue.  
 For for no mercy pat I aune.  
 Of mercy neuere o poynt I hadde.  
 And pus daunger my fortune lade.  
 pat wese myht it neuere be.  
 And pus be elbene daunger and me.  
 I euere were til he dre.  
 For myht I ben of such maistrie.  
 pat daunger hadde ouer come.  
 Wip pat were al my ioye come.  
 pus wolde I woude for no synne.  
 ye yet for al ye world to hymne.  
 If pat I myhte fynde a sleihre.  
 To ley al myn astat in weihre.  
 I wolde hym fro ye court deseuere.

So pat he come a renbard neuere.  
 perfore I wysche and wolde fayn.  
 pat he were in som wysse slayn.  
 For whil he stant in pulke place.  
 ye gete I nouht my lady grace.  
 pus hate I dedly pulke vice.  
 And wolde he stod in non office.  
 In place where my lady is.  
 For if he do I wot wel pis.  
 pat oyer shal he die or I.  
 Wip him a while a nouht for pi.  
 On my lady ful ofte I muse.  
 how pat she may hir self excuse.  
 If pat I se in such a plit.  
 ye penke she myht nouht be quyt.  
 pat she ne were an homicide.  
 And if it sholde so betide.  
 As god forkede it sholde be.  
 ye double were it is pite.  
 For I which all my will and wit.  
 haue yone and serued euere yet.  
 And pan I shuld in such a wise.  
 In retarding of my seruice.  
 Se ded me penke it were roupe.  
 And ferper more I telle troupe.  
 She pat hay euere be wel named.  
 Were worpi panne to be blamed.  
 And of reson to ben appeled.  
 Whan wip o word she myht haue heled.  
 A man. and suffrey hym to dye.  
 ha. Who sal euere such a weie.  
 ha. Who sal euere such a distresse.  
 Wip oute pite gentillesse.  
 Wip oute mercy womanhede.  
 pat wol so quite a man his mede.  
 Which euere hay be to loue trelle.  
 in gode fader if ye welbe.  
 Upon my tale tell me now.  
 And I wole feyne and herke ye wold.  
 y sone attempere pi corage.  
 For whyppe and let yin heet assuage.  
 For who so wol him vnderfonge.  
 he may his grace abyde longe.  
 For he of loue be receyued.  
 And eke also bot it be weyued.  
 per myht mochel ying befall.  
 pat sholde make a man to falle.  
 For loue pat neuere after ward.  
 ye durst he loke piderward.  
 In harde times men gon softe.  
 And er pei chynbe a dyse hem ofte.  
 anen sen alday pat rape redy.  
 And who so wikes ale beley.  
 ful ofte he mot ye wese drynke.  
 wene is to flete pan to synke.  
 Betre is upon ye bridel chelle.  
 pan if he felle and ouer prolle.



he. hors and staked in pe mire.  
 To castre water in pe fire.  
 Lettre is not brene by al pe hous.  
 pe man which is malitious.  
 And folhastif ful ofte he faller.  
 And seldom is when loue hym calleth.  
 For in bette is to suffice a prowe.  
 pan be to wilde and ouer prowe.  
 Suffraunce hap euere be pe beste.  
 To wissen hym pat sechey refre.  
 And yit if you wolt loue prede.  
 my sone suffice as i pe rede.  
 What may pe mous a yen pe cat.  
 And for pis cause i axe pat.  
 who may to loue make a werre.  
 pat he ne hay hym self pe werre.  
 Loue axep pes and euere schal.  
 And who pat feiltey most wy al.  
 lest shal conquere of his enprise.  
 For no yit tellen pat len wise.  
 Wike is to strue and haue pe werse.  
 To haften is nouht wory a kerse.  
 my pat a man may nouht a cheue.  
 pat may nouht wel be don at eue.  
 it mot a bide til pe morwe.  
 ite haste nouht pin owen sorwe.  
 Al y sone and take pis in pi wit.  
 he hay nouht lest pat wel a bit.  
 Ensample pat it fulle pius.  
 you myht wel take of pyrrus.  
 when he in haste his swerd out drew.  
 And on pe point hym selue slough.  
 For loue of dyssee pitously.  
 for he his wympul foud bloody.  
 And wende a beste here hadde slayn.  
 wher as hym ouhte haue be riht fayn.  
 for she was pere as sauf beside.  
 for he wolde nouht a bide.  
 his meschef fell for pi be war.  
 my sone as i pe wyne dar.  
 do you no ping in such a res.  
 for suffraunce is pe welle of pes.  
 poun you to loues court pourfye.  
 yit sit it wel pat you eschue.  
 pat you pe court nouht ouerhaste.  
 for so myht you pi tyme waste.  
 for if pin happ per to be shap.  
 it may nouht helpe for to rape.  
 perfore atempte pi corage.  
 folhaste dy noon auunture.  
 for ofte it sette aman behynde.  
 i cause of loue and pat i fynde.  
 So olde ensample as you shalt here.  
 Touchend of loue in pis matere.  
 The point Confessor exempli con  
 tra illos qui in amoris causa nimia  
 festinacione concupiscentes cordis

expediunt. Et uariat qualiter pro  
 qd phobus quondam virginem pul  
 cherissimam nomine Daphnem nimia a  
 moris aceleracione insequatur.  
 prout Cupido cor phobi sagitta au  
 rea ignita ardentius vulnerauit.  
 Et contra cor Daphne quadam sa  
 gitta plumbea refrigidissima fuit  
 sobrius pforauit. Et sic quanto ma  
 ius phobus ardentior in amore  
 Daphne pfectus est. tanto magis  
 ipa frigidior phobi concupiscentia  
 toto corde fugitiua deducit.  
**E** maiden Whilom per thus on.  
 Which Daphne hight a y was non.  
 Of beaute panning as it was said.  
 Phobus his loue hay on here layd.  
 And per vpon to hure he souhte.  
 In his folhaste and so besouhte.  
 pat she wy hym no teste hadde.  
 for euere vpon here loue he gradd.  
 And she seide euere vnto hym nay.  
 So it beset vpon a day.  
 Cupide which hay euere chance.  
 Of loue vnder his gouernance.  
 Sph phobus hasten hym so fore.  
 And for he sholde hym haste more.  
 And yit nouht speden at pe laste.  
 A dart purth out his herte he caste.  
 Which was of gold and al a fre.  
 pat made him many fold desire.  
 Of loue more pan he drede.  
 To Daphne eke in pe same stede.  
 A dart of led he caste and mot.  
 Which was al cold and no ying hot.  
 And yus phobus in loue brene.  
 And in his haste about renney.  
 To loke if pat he myht wyne.  
 For he was euere to be gyne.  
 for euere a way fro hym she fledde.  
 So pat he neuer his loue prede.  
 And for to make him ful beleue.  
 pat no folhaste myht a cheue.  
 To gete loue in such degre.  
 his Daphne in to a lozer tre.  
 Was turned which is euere grene.  
 In colur as yit it may be seue.  
 pat she shal dwelle a maiden stille.  
 And phobus faulen of his wille.  
 He such ensamples as per soude. Conf  
 my sone you myht vnderstoude. Conf  
 To haue loue is ying in vein.  
 when pat fortune is pere a yem.  
 To take where aman hay loue.  
 Good is and elles he mot leue.  
 for whanne a mannes happes faulen.  
 per is non haste may auailen.



**W**hyader graunt mercy of pis. **mans.**  
 Bot whil I se my lady is.  
 To tre. But halt hure olde forme.  
 per may me no man so enforme.  
 To wher per fortune wende.  
 pat I vn to my hures ende.  
 To wol hir seruen euerno.

**W**hy sone sypen it is so. **Confessor.**  
 I seie no more bot in pis cas.  
 Be hur holb it wip phebun was.  
 trouht only vpon boues caunce.  
 Bot vpon euery gouernaunce.  
 Which falleth vn to mannes dede.  
 folhafte is euere for to dede.  
 And pat a man good counseil take.  
 Er he his purpos vndertake.  
 For counseil puttey folhafte alwey.  
 folw god fader I yold ppey. **Amas.**  
 pat for to wisse me pe more.  
 Son good cunseple vpon pis lore.  
 pe wolden telle of pat is write.  
 pat I pe better myhte wite.  
 folw I folhafte sholde eschme.

**W**hy sone pat you miht enforme. **Confessor.**  
 In paaence vpon pe forme.  
 Of olde cunseples as pe felle.  
 folw vnderstonde what I shal telle.

**Hic ponit confessor exemplū con-**  
**tra illos qui nimis furore accensi**  
**vindictam ne suo vltimū qui deest**  
**sequi affectant. Et narrat qualiter**  
**Athemias et Demophon Reges cu-**  
**ius de bello troiano ad propria reme-**  
**issent et de suis ibidem pacifice re-**  
**cepti non fuissent congregato ali-**  
**unde pugnatore exercitu regiones**  
**non solum incendio vastare sed et om-**  
**nes in eisdem habitantes a mun-**  
**do usque ad maiorem impetuum**  
**vindictae memoria gladio interfice-**  
**re furore iracundie posuerunt. Sed**  
**rex a restor qui senex et sapiens**  
**fuit ex sapientia tractatus ut ipos**  
**Reges et eorum regna iuxta pacem et con-**  
**cordia huiusmodi impetuositatem**  
**incaus pacificauit.**

**W**han noble troie was beleyn.  
 And ouercome and home ayein.  
 pe gregoye torned fro pe seyn.  
 pe kynge founde hure olde heyn.  
 In many places as men seide.  
 pat hem for sol and dysbelde.  
 A moung pe whiche fel pe cas.  
 To demophon and athemias.  
 pat were kynge bope elbo.  
 And bope were serued so.

Here heges wolde hem nouht receyue.  
 So pat pei mote algetes weyue.  
 To seche lond in ower place.  
 For pei fond pei no grace.  
 Wher of pei token hem to rede.  
 And souhten frendes ate nede.  
 And eche of hem assurey ower.  
 To helpe as to his olde biouer.  
 To vengen hem of pille outrange.  
 And wynnne ayein here heritange.  
 And pus pei rde aboute faste.  
 To gete hem helpe. and ate laste.  
 pei hadden polver suffisant.  
 And madden pame. a couenant.  
 pat pei ne sholde no liff saue.  
 ne prest ne clert ne lord ne knaue.  
 ne wif ne child of pat pei fynde.  
 Whiche berey visage of mannes kynde.  
 So pat no liff shal be socoured.  
 Bot wip a dedly word deuoured.  
 In such folhafte here ordenaunce.  
 pei shapen for to do vengance.  
 Whan pis purpos was wif and knolde.  
 A moung here oft so was pei blode.  
 Of wordes many a speche a boue.  
 Of younge men pe lusty route.  
 Wher of pis tale glad I nouh.  
 per was no care for pe plouh.  
 As pei pat were folhous.  
 pei ben accorded to pe scryf.  
 And seyn it may not be to gret.  
 To vengen hem of such forfet.  
 pus seyn pe wilde bulhise tinge.  
 Of hem pat were pei honage.  
 Bot a restor whiche was olde and hoz.  
 pe saue seih to fore pe for.  
 As he pat was of counseil wys.  
 So pat a noon be his ays.  
 pei was a pryue counseil nome.  
 pe lordes ben to gedre come.  
 pis demophon and athemias.  
 Here purpos tolden as it was.  
 pei seten alle stille and heide.  
 Was non bot a restor hem ansuerde.  
 He bad hem if pat pei wolde wynnne.  
 pei sholden se er pei begynnne.  
 Here ende and sette here ferste entente.  
 pat pei hem after ne repente.  
 And axer hem pis question.  
 To what final conclusioun.  
 pei wolde wege kynge pei.  
 If pat no peple in londe were.  
 And seyn it was a wonder word.  
 To sen a kynge become an herde.  
 Wher no liff is bot only beste.  
 vnder pe ligauce of his beste.  
 For who pat is of man no kyng.



The remenant is as no ying.  
 He seip eke if ye pourpos holde.  
 To do ye people as yei the wolde.  
 Whan yei it miht nouht restore.  
 Al grece it sholde a benne soze.  
 To se ye Wilde beste done.  
 Wher Whilon dilleles mannes sone.  
 And for pat cause he bad hem tete.  
 And stunte of ye manaces grete.  
 Sette is to Wyne be fure speche.  
 He seip ym such a dargunne seche.  
 For Whan a man is is most a boue.  
 hym nedep most to gete hym loue.  
 Whan a lester hay his tale seid.  
 A yen hym Was no ying Wy seid.  
 It pouht hem alle he seide wel.  
 And yus fortune here dedly Whiel.  
 fro Werre to turne in to pees.  
 Got fory yei Werten napeles.  
 And Whan yei contrees herden seyn.  
 How pat here kynges be beseyn.  
 Of such a polter as perladde.  
 Was non so bold pat hem ne dradde.  
 And for to seche pes and with.  
 yei sende and preyede a non fory Wy.  
 So pat ye kynges be appeled.  
 And eueri mannes herte is esed.  
 Al Was foryete and nouht recorded.  
 And yus yei ben to gedre accorded.  
 ye kynges Were a yen receyued.  
 And pes Was take and Wapye beyned.  
 And al purgh counsel Which Was good.  
 Of hym pat reson vnderstood.  
 By his ensample sone attempte.  
 ym hert. and let no wil distempre.  
 ym wit. and do no ying be myht.  
 pat may be do be loue and myht.  
 folhaste is cause of mochelewo.  
 for ym sone do nouht so.  
 And as toucheunde of homicide.  
 Whiche touchen on to lones side.  
 ffyl ofte it faller yn auised.  
 purgh wil Which is nouht assised.  
 Whan Wit and reson ben a Weie.  
 And pat folhaste is in ye Weie.  
 Wher of hay falle grete vengeance.  
 for ym take in to remembrance.  
 To lone in such a manere wise.  
 pat you deserue no gnyse.  
 for Wel I Wot you myht not lette.  
 pat you ne shall ym herre sette.  
 To lone wher you Wolt or noon.  
 Got if ym Wit be ouer gon.  
 So pat it torne into malice.  
 yet Wot no man of yille vice.  
 What perel pat per may be falle.  
 Wher off a tale amonges alle.

Which is met pite for to here.  
 I yente for to tellen here.  
 pat you such moorde myht Wyfonde.  
 Whan you pe tale hafe vnderfonde.  
 And point Confessor exempte.  
 coram illos qui ob sue concupiscen  
 cie desideriu homicide efficiuntur. Et  
 narrat qualiter elimestra deor  
 regis Agamenonis ad ype a belle  
 Troiano domi redisset consilio Em  
 ti quem adultere pamanit spon  
 sum suu in cubili dormientem sub  
 noctis silencio cruciabat. Cuius  
 morte filius eius horesces tunc in  
 noris etatis postea dyo admonitus  
 crudelissima seueritate iudicauit.  
 Troie at ylle noble toum.  
 Whos faine frant zit of iroum.  
 And eueri shal to mannes ere.  
 ye sege Last Long yere.  
 So pat ye Wykes it myhten Wyne.  
 Whil priamus Was kyng per yme.  
 Got of ye Wykes pat seye a boue.  
 Agamenon laded al ye route.  
 yus ying is knollen ouer al.  
 Got ym I ynte in special.  
 To my matere per yon.  
 Tell in What Wyse Agamenon.  
 yurth chance Which may not be theyde.  
 Of lone vntrolle Was decyued.  
 In olde salbe is. Who pat is fleih.  
 In place Where he may be myht.  
 He may ye ferst leest lop.  
 Of lone. and yus ful ofte it nop.  
 per While Agamenon batailey.  
 To Wyne Troie and it assailey.  
 fro hom and Was Long yme fere.  
 Eustus drouh his queene netre.  
 And With ye Leiser Which he hadde.  
 yus Lady at his Wille he laded.  
 elimestre Was hir myht name.  
 Shewas per of myhtly to blame.  
 To lone pere it may not laste.  
 Got fel to meschef at ye laste.  
 for Whan yus noble Worp kynght.  
 fro Troie cam ye ferste myht.  
 pat he at hom a hom a bedde lay.  
 Eustus Long er it Was day.  
 As yus elimestre him hadde assent.  
 And Weren bope of con assent.  
 Be reson slothly hym in his bed.  
 Got moorde Which may not ben hid.  
 Sprong out to eueri mannes ere.  
 Wher of ye lound Was ful of fere.  
 Agamenon hay be yus queene.  
 A sone and pat Was after seue.  
 At ym ad yume he Was of roupe.



**I** have which no reson coupo.  
 And as god wolde it fel him yus.  
 A wyrti knyght & altabius.  
 His yowng chylde hap in kepynge.  
 And whan he herde of his tidinge.  
 Of his treson of his mysde.  
 He gan wyrti him self co drede.  
 In myner if his falsse & giste.  
 Upon him come er he wiste.  
 To take and mordre of his malice.  
 His chylde which he hap to noyce.  
 And for pat cause in alle haste.  
 Out of pe lond he gan him haste.  
 And to pe kyng of Crete he strauhte.  
 And hym his yowng lord betauhte.  
 And preide him for his fader sake.  
 pat he his chylde wolde vnder take.  
 And kepe him til he be of age.  
 So as he was of his lynage.  
 And told him ouer al pe cas.  
 How pat his fader mordre was.  
 And how & giste as men seide.  
 Was kyng to whom pe lord obede.  
 And whan ydomeneus pe kyng.  
 Hap vnderfoude of his yng.  
 Which pat his knyght him hadde told.  
 He made so lye many fold.  
 And tok his chylde to his warde.  
 And seid he wolde hym kepe and warde.  
 Til pat he were of such a myght.  
 To handle a swerd and ben a knyght.  
 To venge hym at his owne wille.  
 And his horestes dwellep stille.  
 Such was pe chylde's ryst name.  
 Which after brouhte moche shame.  
 In vengeance of his fader dey.  
 pe tyme of yeres ouerney.  
 pat he was man of brede and leughe.  
 Of wit of manhod and of strenghe.  
 A fair yfone amoures alle.  
 And he began to clepe and calle.  
 As he which come was to man.  
 In to pe kyng of Crete pan.  
 Forgyng pat he wold him make.  
 A knyght and polver wyrti him take.  
 For leuger wold he nouht beleue.  
 He seip. but preyre pe kyng of Leue.  
 To non and cleyne his heritage.  
 And venge hym off yll outinge.  
 Which was in to his fader do.  
 pe kyng assentei wel per to.  
 Wyrti met honour and knyght he make.  
 And gret polver to hym betake.  
 And gane his money for to caste.  
 So pat horestes at pe laste.  
 His leue took and for he goy.  
 As he pat was in heve wroty.

**H**is firste pleynte to demene.  
 In to pe cite of Athene.  
 He goy hym fory and was receyued.  
 So per was he nouht deceyued.  
 pe sub and so pat weren wise.  
 pei profreu hem to his seruise.  
 And hem pouker of here profre.  
 And sey him self he wil gon offre.  
 In to pe goddes for his sped.  
 As alle men him yeven red.  
 So goy he to pe temple fory.  
 Of yfrees pat ben melkel wry.  
 His sacrifice and his offryng.  
 He made and after his axinge.  
 He was answered if pat he wolde.  
 His stat recouere pan he sholde.  
 Upon his moder do vengeance.  
 So cruel pat pe remembrance  
 per of myght euere abide.  
 As she pat was an homicide.  
 And of here owne lord mordre.  
 Horestes of pe which office.  
 Was no ying glad. as per he preide.  
 In to pe goddes per and seide.  
 pat per guement deuise.  
 How she shal take pe ruse.  
 And per upon he hadde answe.  
 pat he he papres sholde of cere.  
 Out of here brest his owne honde.  
 And for ensample of alle bondes.  
 Wyrti horestes sholde be to dralber.  
 Till horestes hadde hire body gualbe.  
 Wyrti outen eny sepulture.  
 His was a woful aventure.  
 And whan horestes hap al herd.  
 How pat pe goddes haue ansuerd.  
 For wyrti streng which he lusse.  
 pe Duc and his polver he hadde  
 And to a cite fory per gon.  
 pe which was cleped Trophoeon.  
 Where as Phogous was lord & sire.  
 Which profreu hym wyrti outen hire.  
 His helpe and al pat he may do.  
 As he pat was vnto glad per to.  
 To greue his mortel enemy.  
 And tolde him certeyn cause why.  
 How pat giste in mariage.  
 His daughter whilom of ful age.  
 For lay. and after ward forso.  
 Whan he horestes moder tok.  
**I**n fory old synne nelle shame.  
 pus more and uore a ros pe blame.  
 A ven giste on euery side.  
 Horestes wyrti his hoste to ride.  
 Begun. and phogous wyrti him wente.  
 I tolde giste hym shal repente.  
 pei riden fory in to mycene.



Ther lay chynestur pulke queene,  
 pe whiche horestes moder was.  
 And when she herd telle of his cas.  
 pe mates weren faste shet.  
 And pei were of here purpos let.  
 A noon pei crie was wyproute.  
 Belegyn and seged al aboute.  
 And euere a mount pei it assaile.  
 ffor day to nyght and so trauaile.  
 Tu at pe laste pei it wonne.  
 Tho was pei sorlbe ynowh begonne.  
**H**orestes dede his moder calle.  
 A noon to fore pe lordes alle.  
 And eke to fore pe peple also.  
 To here and tolde his tale so.  
 And seide o cruel beste vnkynde.  
 How myghtest thou in ym herte fynde.  
 ffor eny lust of loues daunt.  
 pat pou accordest to pe schant.  
 Of hym was ym ollen lord.  
 pe trefon stant of such record.  
 pou myght pe werkes nouht for sake.  
 So mot I for my fader sake.  
 Vengeance vpon thy body do.  
 As I comanded am per to.  
 Subyndely for pou hast wrought.  
 Subyndelych it shal be bought.  
 The sone shal pe moder sle.  
 ffor pat whilom pou seidest me.  
 To pat pou sholdest nay haue seyde.  
 And he wyprut his hond hay leyde.  
 vpon his moder brest a noon.  
 And went out ffor pe bare bon.  
 hure pyppes bope and cast a wey.  
 A myddem pe carte weye.  
 And after took pe dede corse.  
 And let it dralbe a weie wyprut hors.  
 vnto pe hound and to pe rauen.  
 She was noon oper wise manen.  
 mistus which was elles where.  
 Edynges comen to his ere.  
 How pat mycenes was belegyn.  
 For what was more herd he not sem.  
 wyprut manace an mekel lost.  
 he drolwh polwer and mad an host.  
 And cam in rescousse of pe toun.  
 For al pe sleight of his trefon.  
 Horestes whist it be asprie.  
 And of his men a greet partie.  
 he made in buschement abide.  
 To waite on hym at such a tide.  
 pat he no myght here hond aschape.  
 And in pe wise as he hay shape.  
 pe ying beset so pat Enyste.  
 Was take er he him self it wiste.  
 And was fory brought hys houndes boude.  
 Als whanne men ham a trefon founde.

And so pat were wyprut hym take.  
 Whiche of pe trefon were ouer take.  
 To gedre in o sentence falle.  
 For false Enyste aboute hem alle.  
 Was deined to diuerse peryne.  
 pe worste pat men coupe ordeyne.  
 And so fory after be pe lalbe.  
 he was vnto pe Gebet dralbe.  
 Where he aboute alle oper honney.  
 As to a trefon it belonge.  
**H**e fume wyprut he swift wynges.  
 Aboute flech and bare tynges.  
 And made it boupe in alle loundes.  
 Tholwh pat horestes wyprut his houndes.  
 chynestur his ollen moder slouh.  
 Som sem he dede wel ynowh.  
 And som men sem he dede amys.  
 Driue opinion per is.  
 pat she is ded pei spoken alle.  
 For pleyuly how it is befall.  
 pe mater in so litel prowe.  
 In so per myght no man knolbe.  
 For pei pat weren at pe dede.  
 And communliche in euery nede.  
 pe worst speche is rapest heyd.  
 And leued til it be all swerd.  
 pe hymes and pe lordes grete.  
 Begonne horestes for to prete.  
 To putten hym out of his regne.  
 he is nouht worpi for to regne.  
 pe child which slouh his moder so.  
 pei seiden and per vpon also.  
 pe lordes of commun assent.  
 A tyme sette of parlement.  
 And to Arhenes kyng and lord.  
 to gedre comen of don acord.  
 to knolbe how pat pe sope was.  
 So pat horestes in his cas.  
 pei senden after and he com.  
 kyng menelay pe wordes nom.  
 And axep hym of pe matere.  
 And he pat alle it myhten here.  
 Auswerde and tolde his tale at large.  
 And how pe goddes in his charge.  
 Comanded hym in such a wise.  
 his ollen hond to do myse.  
 And wyprut his tale a Duc aros.  
 which was a worpi knyght of los.  
 his name was mynestens.  
 And seide vnto pe lordes pus.  
 pe wreche whiche horestes dede.  
 It was ying of pe goddes dede.  
 And no ying of his cruelte.  
 And if per were of my degre.  
 In al his place such a knyght.  
 pat wolde sem it were no vnto.  
 I wol it wyprut my body proue.



And no per upon he caste his gloue.  
 And eke his noble swa alleide.  
 ful many an ope skil and seide.  
 She hadde wel deserued wreche.  
 first for ye cause of spousebreche.  
 And after wrouht in such a wyse.  
 pat all ye world it ouhte arise.  
 Whan pat she for so foul a vice.  
 Was of here owne lord morderice.  
 per seten alle stille and herde.  
 Bot per to was no man answerde.  
 It pouht hem alle he seide skile.  
 per is no man wyf sit hit wille.  
 Whan per upon ye reason misen.  
 horestes alle per excusen.  
 So pat wyf met solennite.  
 he was in to his dignite.  
 receyued and coroned kyng.  
 And so beset a wonder prync.  
 Emoua whan she was wyte.  
 Whiche was ye daughter of Emste.  
 And sister on ye moder side.  
 To his horeste at pilke tye.  
 Whan she herde how hire wyf speide.  
 for pure sorwe whiche hire ledde.  
 pat he ne hadde ben exiled.  
 She hay here owne luf begiled.  
 A non and hyng hire self so.  
 It hay and shal ben enueuo.  
 To mordre who pat wole assente.  
 he may nouht faile to repente.  
 his fals Emoua was on.  
 Which for to mordre Ammenon.  
 yaf here accord and here assent.  
 So pat be goddes gynnemint.  
 pouht pat noon ope man wolde.  
 She tof hire iurse as she scholde.  
 And as she to an ope wrouhte.  
 Venyance vpon hit self she souhte.  
 A mordre wyf a mordre quyt.  
 And hay of here dushappi wit.  
 Such is of mordre ye venyance.  
 For pi my sone in remembrance.  
 Of pis ensample take good hede.  
 For who pat peulsey his loue speide.  
 wyf mordre. he shal wyf worldes shame.  
 hym self and eke his loue shame.  
 My fader of pis auenture Amans.  
 Whiche ye haue told I you assure.  
 any herre is fori for to here.  
 Bot only for I wolde here.  
 Sic queritur quibz de causis licet  
 homini hominem occidere.  
 What is to done What is to leue.  
 And ouer pis noll be poure leue.  
 pat ye me wolde telle I preyre.  
 If pere be lecessul eny weie.

ms.

Wyf oute yune a man to fleo.  
 My sone in sondry wyse ye. *Confess.*  
 What man pat is of trayterie. *for.*  
 Of mordre or elle robbery.  
 Aterit. ye iurme shal not lette.  
 Bot he shal sleen of pure dette.  
 And dox gret synne if pat he woude.  
 for who pat lalbe hay vpon hounde.  
 And sparey for to do iustice.  
 for mercy dox nouht his office.  
*Seneca. Index parat Olasa mul-*  
*to improbos facit.*  
 pat he his mercy so le warey.  
 Whan for a schreille whiche he sparey.  
 A prouand good men he greuey.  
 Wyf such mercy who pat beleuey.  
 To please god he is deceyued.  
 Or elles weson mot be deuyed.  
 ye lalbe stod er we were bore.  
 holl pat a kynges word is bore.  
 In higne pat he shal defende.  
 his trelle peple and make an ende  
 of such as wolden hem deuoure.  
 So pus my sone to socoure.  
 ye lalbe and comen riht to synne.  
 A man may fleo wyf oute synne.  
 And do ver of a gret almesse.  
 So for to keep riht wysnesse.  
 And ouer pis for his cottre.  
 In tyme of werte a man is fre.  
 hym self his hous and eke his lond.  
 Defende wyf his owen hound.  
 And sleen if pat he may no bet.  
 After ye lalbe whiche is set.  
 I will fader pan I will besече. *A.*  
 Of hem pat dedly werres seche. *mas.*  
 In worldes cause and sheden blod.  
 Is such an homicide good.  
 My sone vpon pi question. *Confessor.*  
 ye troupe of myn oppymion.  
 As ferforz as my wit rechey.  
 And as ye pleyu lalbe it rechey.  
 I wolde ye telle in euidence.  
 To reule wyf pi conscience.  
*Quod erat ipse deus necat homo*  
*homicida creatum. Dicitur et huma-*  
*no sanguine spargit humum. Et pec-*  
*us sic est hois cruoz heu modo fu-*  
*sus. Vita iacet pietas et furor di-*  
*git opus. Angelus in terra. Pax*  
*dirit etultima xpi. Verba sonant*  
*pacem. quam modo guerra fugat.*  
*Et sic loquitur contra motores guer-*  
*re que no solum homicidij sz diuine*  
*mundi desolacis mat existit.*  
 He hihe god of his iustice.  
 pat ille foule horrible vice.



Of homicide he hay forbode.  
 To moyses as it was bode.  
 Whan goddes sone also was bore.  
 He soude his amgel down perfore.  
 Whan pe shepdes herden frunge.  
 Dees to pe men of wel willunge.  
 In erpe be among vs here.  
 So for to speke in pis matere.  
 After pe lalwe of charite.  
 per shal no dedly werre be.  
 And eke nature it hay defendes.  
 And in here lalwe pes comended.  
 Whiche is pe chief of mannes welthe.  
 Of mannes lyf of mannes helpe.  
 But dedly werre hay his couyne.  
 Of pestilence and of fannynge.  
 Of pouerte and of alle wo.  
 Wher of pis world we blamen so.  
 Whiche hold pe werre hay vnderfote.  
 Til god him self per of do bote.  
 For alle ping which god hay brouht.  
 In erpe. Werre it bynyng to nouht.  
 pe churche is brent pe prest is slayn.  
 pe wif pe maydons eke for leyn.  
 pe lalwe is lore and god vnserued.  
 Not what mede he hay deservied.  
 pat suche werres dede ynne.  
 If pat he do it for to wyne.  
 For to accompyse his grette cost.  
 Forp wip pe folk pat he hay lost.  
 As to pe worldes rekennynge.  
 per shal he fynde no wyngynge.  
 And if he do it to purchase.  
 pe heuene mede of such a grace.  
 I can nouht speke and napeles.  
 Crist hay commanded loue and pes.  
 And who pat worcher pe reuerse.  
 I tolde his mede is ful diuers.  
 And futen pen pat we fynde.  
 pat werres in here of hie kynde.  
 Ben tollard god of no deserte.  
 And eke per beynge in pouerte.  
 Of worldes good it is merueile.  
 Among pe men what it may cyle.  
 pat per a pes ne bonne sette.  
 I tolde syme be pe lette.  
 And euery mede of syme is dey.  
 So dot q neuere hold pat it gey.  
**Aplis. Stipendium pccati mors est.**  
 For we ptt ben of o beleue.  
 Among vsself pis world. I leue.  
 pat bettre it wele pes to chese.  
 Than so be double wele lese.  
 Not if pat it nold so stonde.  
 For pis a man may vnderfonde.  
 Who pat pese olde loket redey.  
 pat couetise is on which dede.

And brouht ferst pe berres ynne.  
 At grece if pat I shal begynne.  
 per was it proued hold pat it god.  
 To perce which was full of good.  
 per maden werre in special.  
 And so per deden ouer al.  
 Where gret richesse was in londe.  
 So pat per lestren no ping stonde.  
**Arcta qd greca omne terram fer-**  
**tilem debellabant sed ad archa-**  
**diam p eo qd paup & sterilis fuit**  
**pacifice diuiserunt.**  
 Bulwerred bot only archade.  
 For pere per no werre made.  
 He cause it was barryn and pouere.  
 Wher of per myht nouht recouere.  
 And pis pouerte was forbore.  
 He pat nouht hadde nouht hay lore.  
 Bot yit it is a wonder ping.  
 Whan pat a riche worpt kyng.  
 Or oper lord what so he be.  
 Wol axe and cleyne ppete.  
 In ping to whiche he hay no right.  
 Bot only of his grette myht.  
 For pis may euery man wel wite.  
 pat bope kynde and lalwe wite.  
 Expressly stonden a yen.  
 Bot he mot nedes sou what seyn.  
 Al pouh pere be no reson qme.  
 Whiche sether cause for to wyne.  
 For whir pat is wip witt oppressed.  
 Whan couetise him hay adressed.  
 And alle reson pat alwe.  
 He can wel fynde such a weie.  
 To werre where as enere hym likey.  
 Wher of pat he pe world entrey.  
 pat many a man of hym compley.  
 Bot yit alwey som cause he forney.  
 And of his wrongful cause he deuy.  
 pat all is wel what enere him seme.  
 So so pat he may wyne I nold.  
 For as pe trelle man to pe plough.  
 Only for pe gaignage encoudey.  
 Right so pe werreour deppoudey.  
 his tyme and hay no consaunce.  
 And in pis poynt for eydenge.  
 Of hem pat suche werres make.  
 you mist a gret ensample take.  
 Hold per here tyrannye excusen.  
 Of pat per wrongful werres vfen.  
 And hold per stonden of on acord.  
 pe souleour forp wip pe lord.  
 pe pouere man forp wip pe riche.  
 As of outrage per ben liche.  
 To make werres and to pile.  
 For duere and for noon ower stile.  
 Wher of a propre tale I rede.



**I**ch to his poynt of Which I mene.  
Was vpon Alsauudre sene.  
Whiche hadde sette all his entente.  
So as fortune wip hym vntente.  
pat veson miht hym non gouerne.  
Bot of his wil he was so sterne.  
pat al pe worlds he ouer ran.  
And what hym luste he toke a van.  
In gode pe supiour.



Whan pat he was ful conquerour.  
 And hadde his myful purpos wone.  
 Of all his erpe vnder pe sonne.  
 His kynge homeward to iracedorne.  
 Whan pat he cam to babylone.  
 And wende most in his Empire.  
 As he which was hool lord & sire.  
 In honour for to be receyued.  
 Most sodeynly he was deceyued.  
 And wyf strong pryson enbenned.  
 And as he hap pe world mistuned.  
 Thought as he scholde with his wit.  
 Thought as he wolde it was quyt.  
**Thus** was he slayn pat whilostlous.  
 And he which riche was ynough.  
 His day. to morthe hadde nouht.  
 And in such wise as he hap brought.  
 In distourbanche of worldes pes.  
 His werre he founde punne endeles.  
 In which he for euere dyscomfit.  
 He was. so nold for what profit.  
 Of werre it helpe for to vnde.  
 For couetise of worldes prido.  
 To sle pe worldes men aboute.  
 As bestes which upon per oute.  
 For euery lyf which reson can.  
 Owe wel to knowe pat a man.  
 He scholde purghe no tyrannye.  
 Nych to pese opere bestes die.  
 If kynde wolde for hym sende.  
 I not holt he it may amende.  
 Which takep a wey for euermore.  
 He lyf pat he may nouht restore.  
 For in my sone in alle weye. **co**  
 He wel abuses I pe preye. **fessor.**  
 Of flauht er pat you be culpable.  
 My oute cause resonable.  
**W**yfader vnder stound it is. **Amas.**  
 Pat ye haue seyd. but ouer pis.  
 I preye you telle me nay or ye.  
 To passe ouer pe grette see.  
 To welre. and sle pe Sarazyn.  
 He pat ye talke. sone myn. **cofessor.**  
**O**b preche and suffre for pe seyn.  
 Pat haue I herd pe gospel seyn.  
 Bot for to sle pat here I nouht.  
 Crist wyf his owne dech hap bouht.  
 Alle oper men and made hem fre.  
 In tokne of parfit charite.  
 And after pat he tauht him selfe.  
 Whan he was ded pese oper welue.  
 Of his apostles went aboute.  
 He holy seyn to prechen oute.  
 Wher of ye dey in sondry place.  
 ye suffre. and so god of his grace.  
 ye seyn of Crist hap mas arise.  
 Bot if ye wolde in oper wise.

He werre haue brought in pe crance.  
 It hadde yit stonde in balance.  
 And pat may prouen in pe dede.  
 For what man pe croniges rede.  
 His ferst pat holicherche hap weyded.  
 To preche and hap pe swerd receyued.  
 Wher of ye werres be begonne.  
 A gret part of pat was wonne.  
 To cristes seyn stant nold mistunt.  
 God do per of amendement.  
 So as he bot what is pe beste.  
 Bot sone if you wolt hne in wste.  
 Of conscience wel assised.  
 Er pat you see be wel amised.  
 For man as tellen vs pe clerkes.  
 Hay god aboue alle erpeli werres.  
 Orderned to be principal.  
 And eke of soule in special.  
 He is made lich to pe godhede.  
 So fitte it wel to taken hed.  
 And for to lott on euery side.  
 Er pat you falle in homicide.  
 Which synne is nold in general.  
 Pat it wel myh stant ouer al.  
 In holicherche and elles where.  
 Bot al pe while it stant so pore.  
 pe world mot nege fare anye.  
 For whanne pe welle of pite is.  
 purgh couetise of worldes good.  
 Defouled wyf shedynge of blood.  
 ye rememur of folk aboute.  
 Dnepe stonden eny doute.  
 To weye eche oper and to sle.  
 So is it al nouht worth a stre.  
 pe charite wher of we prechen.  
 For we do no yngas we techen.  
 And pus pe blinde conscience.  
 Of pes hap lost pilke euendence.  
 Which crist vpon his erpe tauht.  
 Rold men may se moerdre & manslaht.  
 Lich as it was be dayes olde.  
 Whan men pe synnes bouht a soldo.  
**ffualitas venie omi sionem plet.**  
**delinquendi.**  
**I** for grece a fore cristes seyn.  
 rede as pe croniges seyn.  
 Touchend off pis matere pus.  
 In pilke tyme holt pe deus.  
 His ouhne broper phocus flous.  
 For he hadde nold ynough.  
 To yone his synne was depensed.  
 Wyf gold wher of it was compensed.  
 Achastus which wyf venus was.  
 His prest assouled him in pat cas.  
 Al weid pebe no repentance.  
 And as pe book maky remembrance.  
 It telles of medee also.



Of the slouthe here sones tith.  
 Eneus in ye same plit.  
 Hay mad hie of here synne quyt.  
 ye sone eke of Aphrodis.  
 Whos riht name Aeneas was.  
 His moder slouh Eriphile.  
 For Achile ye prest and he.  
 So as ye booke it recorden.  
 Of certeyn somme of gold accorden.  
 yit yille horrible synful dede.  
 Assailed was and yus for mede.  
 Of wordes good it faller ofte.  
 yit homicide is set a losse.  
 here in yis byt for after pis.  
 yer shal be knowe how pat it is.  
 Of hem pat such yunges werehe.  
 And how also pat holy cherche.  
 For such synnes passe quyt.  
 And how yis wol hem self acquit.  
 Of dedly werres pat yis make.  
 For who pat wolde ensample take.  
 ye shalbe whiche is naturel.  
 He were of kynde it shewer wel.  
 yit homicide in no demer.  
 Whiche werrey a yen charite.  
 A mong yis men ne sholde dwelle.  
 For after pat ye booke telle.  
 To seche in al yis world riche.  
 men shal nout fynde yon his liche.  
 A beste for to take his prey.  
 And fichen kynde hay such a weye.  
 yis is it wonder of a man.  
 Whiche kynde hay and reson can.  
 yit he wole ower more or lasse.  
 his kynde and reson ouerlasse.  
 And fle pat is to hym semblable.  
 So is ye man nout resonable.  
 yre kynde. and pat is nout honeste.  
 Whan pat he is worse yis a beste.  
**A**rora sedm solium contra ho-  
 minadas de natura cuiusdam dms  
 faciem ad similitudinem humana  
 habentis. que cu de yda sua hoien  
 in flumid occidit siderit qz in aqua  
 simile sibi oculi sui p dolore motu.  
**A**mong ye booke whiche i fynde.  
 Solus speker of wonder kynde.  
 And sey of foules yer is con.  
 Which hay a face of blod and bon.  
 ych to amon in resemblaunce.  
 And if it falle hym so parchaunce.  
 As he which is a foul of preie.  
 yit he a man fynde in his weie.  
 he wol hym slen yf pat he may.  
 For after ward ye same day.  
 Whan he hay eten al his fille.  
 And pat shal be beside a welle.

In whiche whan he wol drynk take.  
 And of his visage he sey ye make.  
 yit he hay slayn anon he yit take.  
 Of his mysdede and it for yit take.  
 So gretly pat for pure sorwe.  
 he huyep nout til on ye morwe.  
 He yis ensample it may wel suye.  
 yit man shal homicide eschelle.  
 For euere is mercy good to take.  
 But if ye lalbe it hay for sake.  
 And pat justice is yer a yem.  
 ful of ce tyme i haue herd sem.  
 A monges hem pat werres hadden.  
 yit yis son while her cause ladden.  
 He mercy whan yis nout haue slain.  
 Wher of pat yis were after fayn.  
 And sone if pat yis wold recorde.  
 ye veru of misericorde.  
 yon sibe neuere yille place.  
 Where it was yed. lak of grace.  
 For euery lalbe and euery kynde.  
 ye mannes wit to mercy bynde.  
 And namely ye wozn Euytes.  
 Whan pat yis stonden most vpristes.  
 And ben most myht for to greue.  
 yis sholden yis most releue.  
 yis whom yis myhten ouerproue.  
 As be ensample aman may knowe.  
**T**he point confessor exemplum  
 de pietate contra homicidam in guer-  
 ris habenda. Et narrat qualiter A-  
 chilles vna cu Thelapho filio suo  
 contra Regem mesee qui tunc tunc  
 vocabatur bellum inierat. Et cu  
 Achilles deum Regem in bello pstra-  
 cu occidere voluisset. Thelaphus  
 pietate motus. ym clipeo suo co-  
 piens. Verba pro Rege a pre postu-  
 lant. pro quo facit yis Rex ad-  
 huc viuens Thelaphum regem sui  
 heredem libera voluntate constituit.  
**E**may nout faile of his mede.  
 yit hay mercy for yis i rede.  
 In a croniz and fynde yis.  
 Whan Achilles wy Thelaphus.  
 his sone toward Troie were.  
 It fel hem er yis comen yere.  
 A yen Thene ye kyng of messe.  
 To make werre and for to se.  
 his lond as yis pat wolden reque.  
 And Thence yit out of his regne.  
 And yis ye marches yis assaile.  
 yit Thene yit to hem battaille.  
 yis fouhte on bope sides faste.  
 For so it happed at ye laste.  
 yis wozn Grek yis Achilles.  
 ye kyng among alle oye ches.



As he pat was cruel and fell.  
 Wyth sword in honde on him he fell.  
 And smot hym wyth a depe wounde.  
 pat he vnhorsed fell to grounde.  
 Achilles vpon him alighte.  
 And wolde a noon as he wel myghte.  
 haue slayn hym fullich in pe place.  
 Bot Thelapheus his fader grace.  
 for him besouht and for pite.  
 Precep pat he wolde let him be.  
 And cast his shield be tvene hem elbo.  
 Achilles axep hym whi so.  
 And Thelapheus his cause tolde.  
 And sey pat he is mechel holde.  
 for whilom Thene in a stede  
 Gert grace and socour to hym dede.  
 And sey pat he hym wolde aquite.  
 And precep his fader to respite.  
 Achilles yb wyth drouh his hond.  
 Bot all pe power of pe lond.  
 Whan pat pei seih pe kyng pustake.  
 pei fledde and hau pe feld forsake.  
 pe grece vnto pe chace falle.  
 And for pe most part of alle.  
 Of pat contrie pe lordes met.  
 pei toke and womed a met beyete.  
 And anon after pe victorie.  
 pe kyng which hadde good memorie.  
 vpon pe grece mercy pouhte.  
 Whiche Thelapheus tollard hi vrought.  
 And in pience of al pe lond.  
 he toke him fadre by pe hond.  
 And in pe wise he nam to seie.  
 my sone i mot be double weie.  
 Loue and desyre ym euere.  
 first for y fader Achilles.  
 whilom ful many a day er yis.  
 Whan pat i shulde haue fare anys.  
 Rescoule dede in my querels.  
 And kept al myn estat in hele.  
 how so yer full nold dispaunce.  
 A monyes ys yit remembraunce.  
 i haue of metey whiche he dede.  
 As panne. and pou nold in yis stede.  
 Of gentilesse and of faunichesse.  
 Hafe do mercy pe same wise.  
 So wol i nouht pat er yime.  
 Be lost of pat pou hafe do by me.  
 for how so yis fortune falle.  
 yit stant my toun abouen alle.  
 for pe mercy whiche i nold fynde.  
 pat pou wolt after yis bekynde.  
 for pat such is myn espreu.  
 As for my sone and for myn heu.  
 i ye receyue. and all my lond.  
 i yeue and seie in to ym hond.  
 And in yis wise pei acorde.

pe cause was unferceide.  
 pe lordes dede hure oberaunce.  
 So Thelapheus and pouruaunce.  
 was mad. so pat he was coroued.  
 And pus was mercy requeredoued.  
 Which he to Thene dede a fore.  
**T**o pe cysample is mad perfore.  
 pat pou myht take remembraunce.  
 in sone. and whan pou seist achance.  
 Of ower memies passio.  
 Take pite and compassio.  
 And let no ying to pe be leest.  
 Which to an ower man is greest.  
 And aser yis if pou desyre.  
 To stonde a yen pe vice of iure.  
 Counseille pe wyth pacience.  
 And take in to y consience.  
 mercy to be y gouernour.  
 So shalt pou fele no rancour.  
 wher of ym herte shal debate.  
 Wyth homicide ne wyth hate.  
 for cheste or for malencolie.  
 yow shalt be soft in compaignie.  
 wyth oure conseil or folhaite.  
 for elles myght pou longe wast.  
 y tyme er pat pou haue y wille.  
 of loue. for pe weder stille.  
 men preise and blame pe tempestes.  
**M**y fader i wole do yowre besces.  
 And of yis poynt ye haue taunte.  
 Toward my self ye better saunte.  
 i penke be whil pat i lyue.  
 Als for as moche as i am schirue.  
 Of drapye and al his ardaunace.  
 zif what pou liste to my penance.  
 And aser fer per of my dys.  
 If ower wile i be milis.  
 Of eny ying pat touchet yme.  
**M**y sone er we departe a thymme.  
 i shal behinde no ying leue.  
**M**y good fader be yowre leue.  
 yme axep for what so you list.  
 for i haue in yow such a trist.  
 As ye pat be my soule hele.  
 pat ye fro me wol no ying hele.  
 for i shal telle you ye troupe.  
**M**y sone artoll compable of sloupe.  
 In eny poynt which to hym longer.  
**M**y fader of ye poyntz me longer.  
 To wite pleyntly what pei mene.  
 So pat i may me schirue clene.  
**N**ow herke i shal ye poyntz deuse.  
 And vnderstond wel myn apyse.  
 for schirfe stant of no value.  
 To hym pat wol him nouht deuse.  
 To loue of vice ye folie.  
 for word is wynd be maustre.



So pat aman hym self defende.  
Of ying which is nouht to comende.  
Wher of ben felle nold a day.  
And napeles so as may.  
make vnto pi memoire knolle.  
pe popintz of sloupe pou shalt knolle.

Explicit Liber Tertius.

Incipit Liber Quartus.

*Incipit Liber Quartus. Dicitur Acadian fore muticem di-  
conum. Torpet et in cunctis tauda qz  
Lenta lous. Que fieri possent hodie  
transfert pinger in tras. ffuante qz  
pimus ostia claudit equo. Poscenti  
tando negat emolumenta cupido.  
Sz Venus in celeri ludet amore viri  
Hic in quarto libro loquitur con-  
fessor de specialz acacie quaru pma  
tardacione vocat amur condicionem  
pertrahans amantem sup hoc conse-  
quenter opponit.*

**W**hen pe vices  
to procede. Af-  
ter pe cause of  
mannes dede.  
The ferste point  
of sloupe I calle.  
Lachesse. and  
is pe chief of  
alle. And hay  
pis pliche of  
ende. To leue all ying behynde.  
Of pat he myht do nold here.  
He carrey al pe long yere.  
And euere more he seip to morthe.  
And so he wole his tyme borthe.  
And wyschen after god me sende.  
pat Whan he wener to haue an ende.  
pan is he ferpest to begynne.  
pus brynges he many a mescheyfune.  
bulwar to pat he be myscheued.  
And may nouht panne be relieued.  
And vnt so nouper more ne lesse.  
It scant of loue and of lachesse.  
Som tyme he sloupey in a day.  
pat he neuere after gete may.  
I tolde sone as of pis ilke ying.  
If yow haue eny knowlechyng.  
pat you to loue hast don ev pis.  
Sel on any goode fader vis. *Confessor.*  
as of lachesse I am beknolle. *mans.*  
pat I may stonde vpon his rolle.  
as I pat am clad of his suite.  
ffor Whanne I pouhte my poursuite.  
To make. and yer to sette a day.

To speke vnto pat swete may.  
Lachesse had abide yit.  
And bar an honde it was no wit.  
Ne tyme for to speke as po.  
pus Wip his tales to and fro.  
vnto tyme in tarynge he dwouh.  
Whan yer was tyme good ynouh.  
He seide an ower tyme is better.  
yow shalt nold senden here a letter.  
And parcas write more pleyu.  
pan you be moupe dut seest seyn.  
pus haue I lete tyme slide.  
ffor sloupe. and kept nouht my tide.  
So pat Lachesse Wip his vice.  
fful ofte hay had my wit so nyce.  
pat What I pouhte speke or do.  
Wip taryng he held me so.  
Du Whanne I wolde and myht nouht.  
I not what ying was in my pouht.  
Or it was dres or it was shame.  
ffor euere in earnest and in game.  
I wot it is longe tyme passed.  
But yit is nold he pe loue lassed.  
Whiche I vn to my lady haue.  
ffor pouh my tynge is slouh to craue.  
Alle tyme as I haue bede.  
my herte stant euere in o stede.  
And axey besliche grace.  
pe Whiche I may nouht yit embrace.  
And god wot pat is mangre myn.  
ffor pis I wot right wel a fyt.  
my grace comy so selde a boute.  
pat is pe sloupe of Whiche I doute.  
Wore pan of al pe remenant.  
Whiche is to loue appourtenant.  
And pus as touchend of lachesse.  
As I haue told I me confesse.  
To yow my fader and beseeche.  
pat ferper more pe wolle me teche.  
And if yer be to pis matere.  
Som godly tale for to here.  
holy I may do lachesse a weie.  
pat ye it wolde telle I prey.  
To wysse pe my sone and rede. *Confessor.*  
Among pe tales Whiche I rede.  
An olde ensample per vpon.  
I tolde herke and I wol telle on.  
*Whiche point Confessor exemplum  
contra istos qui amoris causa tur-  
bantes delinquit. Et narrat qua-  
liter Didus Regina Cartaginis Ene-  
am ab incendio Troie fugitum in  
amorem suu gansa suscepit. qui ad  
postea in partes ytalie a cartagine  
bellaturo se transtulit nuntiam qz  
ibidem morans faciens tempus red-  
dens sui ad Didonem vltra modum*



*transiit ipa in tollerabili dolore &  
cussa sui cordis in tina mortali gla-  
dio transiit...*

**H**em Lachesse in Loues cas.  
I. fynde holi Whilom Eneas.  
Whom Achilles to sone hadde.  
Wip gret name Whiche he hadde.  
ffro Troie aruuey at Cartage.  
Wherfore a While his herbergage.  
he coke. and it becidde so.  
Wip hie Whiche was queene po.  
Of ye Eue. his queyntance.  
he wan. Whos name in remembrance.  
Is yit. and Dido she was hore.  
Whiche Louer Eneas so hore.  
Upon ye wordes Whiche he seide.  
pat al here herte on hym she leide.  
And dide al holi pat he wolde.  
**E**t after pat as it be sholde.  
ffo pens he gop colward ytaile.  
The shipe and pere his aruuaile.  
Hay take and hope hym for to ride.  
Bot she Whiche may nouht long abide.  
ye hore peyne of Loues prowe.  
Anon Wip gime a liuel prowe.  
A letre vn to hie knyght hay wite.  
And dede hym pleyntly for to wite.  
If he made eny tarynyng.  
To dreache of his a yen comynge.  
pat she hun myhte fele and so.  
She sholde stonde in such deure.  
As Whilom stood a dan to fore.  
Of pat she hadde here make lore.  
ffor sorwe a feyere in to here brynn.  
She hof and hay hie self slayn.  
As kyng ariender in a day.  
ye sope hay founde wher she lay.  
Sprentlende Wip hie Wpnynges tibeie.  
As she Whiche sholde paimme deye.  
ffor Loue of hym Whiche was her make.  
And so shal I do for in sake.  
The queene seide Wel I wot.  
To to Euee pus she wrot.  
Wip many an ope word of pleynte.  
Bot he Whiche hadde hie pouhtes feinte.  
Tolwardes Loue and ful of sloupe.  
His tyme lette. and pat was woupe.  
ffor she Whiche Louer hym to fore.  
Desire enere more and more.  
And whan she she him tarye so.  
here herte was so ful of wo.  
pat compleynende many a folde.  
She hay hie olone take colde.  
vn to hie self and pus she spak.  
A who fond enere such a tak.  
Of sloupe in eny Wozyn knyght.  
A toly wot I Wel my dep is diht.

*Liber.*

purgh hym Whiche shuld haue be myht.  
Bot for to styntyn all pis stynt.  
pus whan she she noon ope lode.  
fyt euene vn to here herte rote.  
A naked Werd anoon she preste.  
And pus she gat hie self wote.  
In remembrance of alle sloupe.  
Wher of my sone you myht knosse.  
holi tarynyng vpon ye nede.  
In Loues cause is for to drede.  
And pat hay Dido sore abouht.  
Whos shal enere be berouht.  
And ouermore If I shal seche.  
In pis matere an ope speche.  
In a cronik I fynde wite.  
A tale Whiche is good to wite.  
**Q**ue laquitur sup eodem qualiter  
Penelope vixit maritum suum in ob-  
sidione Troie diuinus morantem ob  
fuit ibidem transiit in epistola  
sua redarguit.  
**E**t Troie Whan kyng vixes.  
Upon ye fere a moyn ye pres.  
Of hem pat Wozyn knyghtes Wex.  
A god long tyme scalle pere.  
In pilke tyme a min may see.  
holi goodly pat Penelope.  
Whiche was to him his chelle wyf.  
Of his Lachesse was pleyntly.  
Wher of to troie she to hym leide.  
Here wil be letre pus spekende.  
**Q**y Wozyn Loue and Lord also.  
It is an hay ben enere so.  
pat wher a woman is a lone.  
It makep aman in his persone.  
ye more hardy for to wolde.  
In hope pat she wolde solde.  
To such ying as his wille were.  
Whil pat here lord were elles wher.  
And of my self I telle pis.  
ffor it so longe passed is.  
Sip ferst pat ye from home wente.  
pat Wel myh euery man his wente.  
To pere I am whil ye ben oute.  
Hay mad and eche of hem aboute.  
Whiche Loue can my Loue seche.  
Wip gret preyere and me beseech.  
And some maken gret manace.  
pat if ye myhten come in place.  
Wher pat ye myhte here wille haue.  
per is no ying me sholde saue.  
pat ye ne wolde werche ynges.  
And somme tellen me tynnynges.  
pat ye be ded and some seyn.  
pat certeynly ye be beseyn.  
To Loue a nolle and leue me.  
Bot holi as enere pat it be.



I praye you to be gooddes alle.  
 As yet for ought pat is befulle.  
 may no man do my cheskes rede.  
 For mycelles it is to drede.  
 pat lachesse in continuance.  
 foraine myht such achauunce.  
 Whiche no man after sholde amende.  
 To pus me ladi compleynde.  
 A letre to my lord hay write.  
 And preyde hym pat he wolde write.  
 And penke how pat she was at his.  
 And pat he tarye nouht in pis.  
 For pat he wolde his loue requyte.  
 To hire a penning and nouht write.  
 Som com hym self in alle haste.  
 pat he noon oper paper waste.  
 So pat he kepe and holde his troupe.  
 Myr oute letre of myr troupe.  
 To her lord and loue liege.  
 To Troye where ye gret siere.  
 Was leyd me letre was conuied.  
 And he whiche wisdom hay pouied.  
 Of al pat reson to be longer.  
 Myr gentyl herce it vnderfouger.  
 And whan he hay it ouerlad.  
 In partie he was iuly glad.  
 And in parte he was dysheled.  
 For loue his herce hay so pynish fessed.  
 Myr pure ymaginacion.  
 pat for non occupacion.  
 Whiche he can talke an oper side.  
 He may nouht flite his herce a side.  
 For pat his wif had hym enformed.  
 Wher he hay hym self conformed.  
 Myr al ye wil of his corage.  
 To shap and take ye viage.  
 homeward what tyme pat he may.  
 So pat hym myrky of a day.  
 A thousand yer til he may se.  
 The visage of penelope.  
 Whiche he desyre most of alle.  
 And whan ye tyme is so befulle.  
 pat Troye was destrued and brent.  
 He made no delayement.  
 For god hym home in alle hys.  
 Wher pat he found to fore his yho.  
 his woful wif in good estat.  
 And pus was cessed ye debat.  
 Of loue and troupe was excused.  
 Which god gret harme wher it is used.  
 And hundreth many a cause honeste.  
 To of ye gret clerk Greste.  
 A loca adhuc sup eodem de quo  
 dam astrologo qui quoddam opus in  
 gemosum quasi complementum sep-  
 temio pducens huius momenti  
 tardacione omne sui opis diligen-

iam penitus frustrant...  
 I rede how best pat he was.  
 Upon clerke an hed of bras.  
 To forge and make it for to telle.  
 Of such pynge as befulle.  
 And seuen yeres befinesse.  
 He leide bot for ye lachesse.  
 Of half a mynute of an houre.  
 For ferste pat he began laboure.  
 He lost al pat he hadde do.  
 And oper while it fawey so.  
 In loues cause who is folwe.  
 pat he be myhte vnder ye wolwe.  
 He myhte stant ful ofte a colde.  
 Whiche myht if pat he hadde wold.  
 his tyme kept hane be myr tyme.  
 For troupe may no profit winne.  
 A loca adhuc contra tardacione  
 de quibus virginibus fatuis quem  
 inuam moram facientes inueniunt  
 spurs ad nuptias cum non tardauerunt...  
 For he may synne in his carole.  
 For lachesse com to ye dore.  
 Wher he no good receyue myhte.  
 And it was proued wel be myhte.  
 Whilom of ye maydened true.  
 Whan pulke lord cam for to wryue.  
 For pat here oyle was a were.  
 To lichte he lampes in his were.  
 here troupe brought it so a bote.  
 For hym pat ye be shet myr oute.  
 Wher of myr sone be you war.  
 Als fer for as I telle dar.  
 For loue moste ben a wanted.  
 And if you be nouht wel affaured.  
 In loue to eschue troupe.  
 myr sone for to telle troupe.  
 you myht nouht of ye self ben able.  
 To wryue loue or make it stable.  
 Al pouh you myrthrest long achue.  
 For fader pat I may wel lieue.  
 For me was neuere assigned place.  
 Wher yet to geten any grace.  
 For me was noon such tyme appoynted.  
 For pame I wolde I were vniouged.  
 Of euery tyme pat I hane.  
 If I ne sholde leue and saue.  
 myr honour bote and ete myr stede.  
 If my lady it hadde bede.  
 But she is oper wise auised.  
 In myrthrest such a tyme assised.  
 And uayles of my lachesse.  
 yer hay be no defaute I wisse.  
 Of tyme lost if pat I myrthrest.  
 For yet hire lachesse nouht a lichte.  
 For no luche which I caste.  
 For ay ye more I ere faste.



ye lusse my lutey for to here.  
 So for to speke of his matere.  
 I seche pat I may nought fynde.  
 I haste and euere I am behinde.  
 And wot nought what it may amounte.  
 For fader vpon myn accompte.  
 Which ye besette to examine.  
 Of schryfte after ye discipline.  
 Sey what youre besce counseil is.  
**Q**y sone my conseil is pis.  
 How so it stonde of tyme go.  
 To fory in bynesse so.  
 pis no lachesse in ye be founde.  
 For sloupe is myght to confounde.  
 ye sped of euery mannes werk.  
 For many a vice as seiy ye clerk.  
 yer honre vpon sloupe lappe.  
 Of such as make a man mishappe.  
 As plenne and telle of hadde I wist.  
 And yer vpon if pat ye liste.  
 To knowe of sloupes cause more.  
 In speccal yit ouer more.  
 yer is a vice ful greuable.  
 To him which is yer of couppable.  
 And scant of alle vertu bare.  
 Hier after as I shal declare.  
**Q**ui nichil attemptat nichil ex  
 pedit ore qz muto. **min** amicitie  
 vir sibi raro caput. Et modus in  
 verbis sed ei qui parat amori. Ver  
 ba refert sua non faret illius amor.  
**Q**uia loquitur confessor de quadā  
 specie accide que pusillanimitas  
 data est: cuius imaginaria formi  
 do neqz virtutes aggredi neqz vicia  
 fugere audet sic quod vniu'saqz vice  
 tui actiue qui contemplatiue p  
 mūd non attingit.  
**D**uchende sloupe in his degre.  
 yer is yit pusillanite.  
 Which is to seie in pis language.  
 he pat is litel of corage.  
 And dar no mannes werk begynne.  
 So may he nought be reson wyne.  
 For who pat nought dar vnder take.  
 he riht he shal no profit take.  
 For of pis vice ye nature.  
 dar no ying sette in auenture.  
 hym lutey bore word and dede.  
 wher of he holde his cause spede.  
 he wole no manhode vnder coude.  
 For euere he hay dres vpon honde.  
 At is perel pat he shal seie  
 hym penke ye wold is in his weie.  
 And of ymagination.  
 he maky his excusacion.  
 And feruency cause of pure drede.

And euere he failey at ye uede.  
 Til al bespilt pat he wyf deley.  
 he hay ye for which no man heley.  
 ye which is cleped lacke of herce.  
 pouh euery grace aboute hym sterte.  
 he wol nought ones sterte his for.  
 So pat be reson lese he mote.  
 pat wol nought aunter for to wyne.  
**A**nd so fory sone if ye begynne.  
 To speke of loue and his seruice. **Confessor.**  
 yer ben trauantz in such a wise.  
 pat lacken herce whan best there.  
 To speke of loue and riht for fere.  
 yer wayen downbe and dar nought tell.  
 wyf oute soun as dop a belle.  
 which hay no claper for to chyme.  
 And riht so rei as for ye tyme.  
 ken herces wyf oure speche.  
 Of loue and dar no ying bescehe.  
 And pus rei lese and wyne nought.  
 For in my sone if you art ouht.  
 Couppable as touchyng of pis sloupe.  
 shryfe ye yer of and telle me troupe.  
**Q**ui fader I am al beknowe. **Amas.**  
 pat I haue ben on of ye folwe.  
 as for to telle in loues cas.  
 myn herce is yit as euere it was.  
 As thouh ye wold sholde al to breke.  
 So ferfor pat I dar nought speke.  
 Of what purpos pat I haue nome.  
 whan I to ward my lady come.  
 For let it passe and ouer go.  
**Q**y sone to homore so. **Confessor.**  
 For after pat a man pursuey.  
 To loue. fortune suey.  
 ful ofte and yeuery here happy chaunce.  
 To hym which maky continuance.  
 To preie loue and to bescehe.  
 As be ensample I shal ye teche.  
**Q**uia in amoris causa loquitur  
 contra pusillanimes et dicit qd a  
 mans pre timore verbis obmutat  
 cere non debet sed continuando pro  
 ces sui amoris expedicionem tuans p  
 sequatur. Et vult confessor exem  
 plum qualiter pignaleon pro  
 eo qd preces continuauit quadā  
 ymagine eburneam cui pulariū  
 dūis concupiscencia illaqueatus  
 extitit in carne et sanguine ad la  
 cus suū transformatum fuit.  
**S**ynde holl whilom I was on.  
 whos name was pignaleon.  
 whiche was a lusty man of youye.  
 ye werkes of curail he dore.  
 A boue alle all ower men as ye.  
 And purgh fortune hit fel hym so.



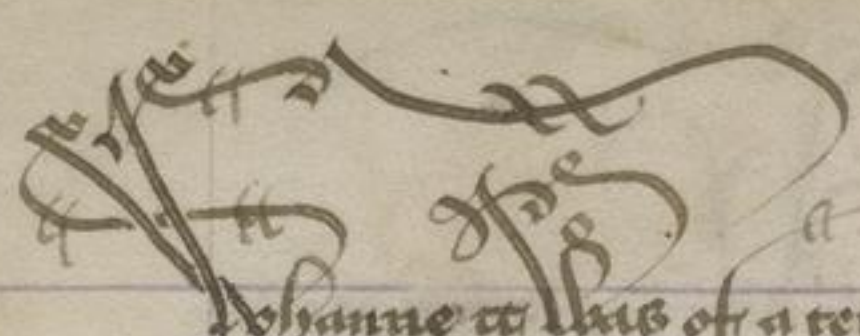
As he whom loue hal trauaile.  
 He mad an ymage of curtail.  
 Rich to a woman in semblance.  
 Off feare and of contenance.  
 So fair yit neuere was figure.  
 Right as a lyues creature.  
 She semed for of yuor whir.  
 He hap her wrouht of such delit.  
 pat she was rody on pe cheke.  
 And rede on bope here lippes eke.  
 Wher of pat he hym self beguilep.  
 For wip a goodly look she smylep.  
 So pat purgh pure impressioun.  
 Of his ymagynacioun.  
 Wip alle pe herre of his corage.  
 His loue vpon his faire ymage.  
 He sette and here of loue preide.  
 Bot she no word ayeuillid seide.  
 pe long day what ying he dede.  
 his ymage in pe same seide.  
 Was euere by. pat at pe mete.  
 He wolde hire serue and priered her etc.  
 And put du to his mouy pe aipe.  
 And whan pe lord was take vnye.  
 He hap hire in to his chambreneome.  
 And after whan he nyght was come.  
 He lode hire in his bed al naked.  
 He was forwep he was forwaked.  
 He kiste hire colde lippes ofte.  
 And wishep pat pei weren softe.  
 And ofte he rouney in here eue.  
 And ofte his arm nold hier nold peue.  
 He leide. and he hire wolde embrace.  
 And euere among he axep grace.  
 As pouh she wite what he mente.  
 And yus hym self he gann torment.  
 Wip such dyshe of loue peyne.  
 pat ho man myht hym more peyne.  
 But how it were of his penance.  
 he made such continuance.  
 ffor day to nyght and prier so longe.  
 pat his prier is vnderfonge.  
 Which Venus of here grace herde.  
 He nyghte and whan pat he worst ferde.  
 And it lay in his naked arm.  
 pe colde ymage he felep warm.  
 Of flesch of bon and ful of lyf.  
 To yus he was a dusy wyf.  
 Which obeisant was at his wille.  
 And if he wolde haue holde hym fulle.  
 And no ying spoke he sholde haue faile.  
 But for he hap his word trauaile.  
 And durste speke his loue he spedde.  
 And hadde al pat he wolde a lede.  
 ffor er pei wente ym a tle.  
 A knave child be tylene hem tle.  
 pei gete. Which was after hote.

my

Paphus of whom yit hap pe note.  
 A certeyn ple which paphos.  
 men clepe. and of his name it ros.  
 The ple ensamplid pou myht fynde.  
 pat word may worche aboue fynde.  
 ffor yit my sone if pat pou fynde.  
 To spekec lost is al yit fynde.  
 ffor loue bynyng in all wo.  
 And ouer pis to lode also.  
 The god of loue is fauorable.  
 To hem pat ben of loue stable.  
 And many a wonder hap befall.  
 Wher of to speke amonges alle.  
 If pat pe list to taken hede.  
 per of a solem tale i rede.  
 Which i shal telle in remembrance.  
 vpon pe sort of loues chaunce.  
*Qualiter Rex Ligdus dei sue uelut  
 alicuius pignora inuoluntate qd si  
 filium pareret infans occideret que  
 in postea ad filiam ediderat ius  
 dea partus tunc plene filiam noie  
 filij pphie appellam. ipam qd mo  
 to in alicui educari adinonuit qua  
 pater filium credens ipam in marite  
 quid filie cuiusdam principis etate  
 solita copulauit. Et ad pphie de  
 bitu sue coniugi unde solvere non  
 habuit deos in sui adiutoriu suscep  
 labati. qui sup hoc misert fenuit  
 genit in masculinu ob effectu natu  
 re in pphie p oia transmutauit.*  
 The King Ligdus vpon a strif.  
 Spak vn to Thelacuse his wyf.  
 Which pame was wyf childe drete.  
 He woz it shuld nouht be lete.  
 pat if she haue a doughter bore.  
 pat it ne sholde be forlore.  
 And slayn wher of she soz was.  
 So it be fel vpon his cas.  
 Whan she deliuered sholde be.  
 yf he be nyghte in pryete.  
 Which of childing is pe goddesse.  
 cam for to helpe in pat distresse.  
 Til pat his lady was al final.  
 And hadde a doughter fory wyf al.  
 Which pe goddesse in alle weie.  
 And fepe and pat pei shulden seie.  
 It were a sone. and yus iphis.  
 pei named hym and vpon pis.  
 pe fader was mad so to wene.  
 And yus in chambere wip pe qwe.  
 his iphis was fory drulle po.  
 And doped and draped so.  
 ffor er pei wente ym a tle.  
 A knave child be tylene hem tle.  
 pei gete. Which was after hote.

Confessor





Dohanne to this of a ten yer age.  
 hym was betake in marriage.  
 A Dukes daughter for to wedde.  
 Whiche yante highte and ofte a bedde.  
 his children Leien he and she.  
 Which of one age lope be.  
 So pat wyf yune tyme of yeres.  
 To gedre as pei ben plethiers.  
 Dignende a bedde vpon a nyght.  
 Nature Whiche doy euey wyht.  
 vpon here lally for to nuse.  
 Constreynen hem so pat pei dse.  
 yung Which to hem was al but knolbe.  
 Wher of Cupido yulle prollbe.  
 Tok yate for pe grete loue.  
 And lett do sette kynde a loue.  
 So pat here lally may ben dse.  
 And pei vpon hire lust excused.  
 for loue hatep no yung more.  
 yung Which stant a yen pe lore.  
 Of pat nature in kynde hay set.  
 for in cupide hay so beset.  
 his grace vpon his auenture.  
 pat he acordant to nature.  
 When pat he seih pe tyme best.  
 pat eche of hem hay oper best.  
 Transformen yhe in to a man.  
 Wher of pe kynde loue he wan.  
 Of lust yonge yante his wyf.  
 And so pei lally a myere lyf.  
 Whiche was to kynde noon offence.  
 And yus to take an euendence. **Confessor.**  
 It semer loue is wel willende.  
 To hem pat ben continuende.  
 Wyf bes herce to poursuie.  
 yung Which pat is to loue due.  
 Wher of my sone in yis matere.  
 you myht esample taken here.  
 pat wyf in gret bysynesse.  
 you myht atteigne in richesse.  
 of loue if pat yer be no floure.  
 And wel seie be my troupe. **Amas.**  
 As fer as my wit can seche.  
 any fader as for lac of speche.  
 Bot so as i me schrof to fore.  
 yer is non oper tyme lore.  
 Wher of yer myht ben non obstande.  
 To lette loue of his myracle.  
 Which i beseeche day and nyht.  
 Bot fader so as it is rih.  
 In forme of schryfte to be knolbe.  
 What yung be longer to pe stolve.  
 youre faderhode i wolde pree.  
 If pere be ferpere any weye.  
 Touchende vn to yis ille vice.  
 By sone ye of yis office. **Confessor.**  
 yer seruey on in special.

Which lost hay his memorial.  
 So pat he can no wit wypholde.  
 In yung Which he to kepe is holde.  
 Wher of hym self ful ofte he greuey.  
 And who pat most vpon hym leuey.  
 Whan pat his wites ben so weyued.  
 He may ful whetly be deceyued.  
**mentibz obliuiz alienis Labitur**  
**ille. Quem pbat acedia non memi**  
**nisse sui. Sic amor incautus que**  
**non memoratur ad oras. perdit**  
**offendit qd cupere nequit.**  
**tractat Confessor de vicio obliuionis**  
**quum mater eius acedia ad omnes**  
**virtutis memorias necnon in amoris**  
**causa inmemorem constituit.**  
**Q** serue acedie in his office.  
 yer is of floure an oper vice.  
 Whiche cleped is forgettellesse.  
 pat nouht may in his herte myssse.  
 Of vertu Whiche reson hay.  
 So clene his wites he foryet.  
 for in pe tellyng of his tale.  
 No more his herte ran his male.  
 Hay remembraunce of yulle forme.  
 Wher of he sholde his herte chorme.  
 As ran i yit ne dot he whi.  
 yus is his purpos nouht for pi.  
 for lore of pat he wolde bidde.  
 And scarcely if he seip pe priede.  
 To loue of pat he hadde ment.  
 yus many a loue hay be shent.  
 Tel on yer fore haston ben on.  
 Of hem pat floure hay so be non.  
 The fader ofte it hay be so. **Confessor.**  
 pat Whan i am my lady fro. **manus.**  
 And yente vnto ward hire dwalle.  
 ran cast i many a nethe lalle.  
 And all pe world corne by so doun.  
 And so recorde i my lessou.  
 And write in my memorial.  
 What i to here telle shal.  
 Rih al pe matere of my tale.  
 Bot al yis worth a note shale.  
 for Whan i come yer she is.  
 I haue it al foryet i wis.  
 Of pat i yough for to telle.  
 I can nouht pamine vnnepes spelle.  
 pat i wende al yer best haue red.  
 So fore an i of here a dres.  
 for as a man pat sodeynly.  
 A goost be helte so fure i.  
 So pat for feere i am nouht gete.  
 in wit but i my self foryet.  
 pat i wot neuer what i am.  
 The whider i shal ne when i cam.  
 But muse as he pat were a mased.



rich to ye book in which is rased,  
 ye letter and may no ping be rad.  
 So be my wates ouer rad.  
 pat what so euere I pouht haue spoken,  
 it is out of my herte stoken.  
 And stonde as who seip dounbe a def.  
 pat al nys worth an yue les.  
 Of pat I wende wel haue seid.  
 And at ye laste I make a breide.  
 cast vp myn hed and loke a bonte.  
 pat as a man yam were in doute.  
 And wot nouht where he schal become.  
 pus am I ofte al ouer come.  
 yere as I wende best to stonde.  
 Bot after whan I vnderstonde.  
 And am in oper place al one.  
 I make many a woful mone.  
 pu to my self and speke so.  
 Ha fool wher was ym herte y.  
 Whan you ym worpi lady she.  
 Were you a fered of hure yhe.  
 For of here hond per is no drede.  
 So wel I knolbe here womanhede.  
 pat in here is ne maner outunge.  
 ym in a child of yre yre age.  
 Whi hastow dres of so good on.  
 Whom al vertu has begon.  
 pat in here is no violence.  
 Bot goodlihed an innocence.  
 Wy outen spot of eny blame.  
 Ha nyce herte fy for shame.  
 Ha colward herte off loue vndered.  
 Wher of artow so soze a fered.  
 pat you ym tynge suffre fise.  
 And wolt ym gooder wordes lese.  
 Whanne you hast found tyme a space.  
 how sholdest you deserue grace.  
 Whan you ym selue darst aye non.  
 Bot al you hast foryete a noon.  
 And pus despyte I loues lore.  
 But helpe ne fynde I nouht ye more.  
 But trouble vpon myn ouer tyme.  
 And make an etyng of my payne.  
 For euere whan I penke among.  
 how al is on my self a long.  
 I seie. O fol of alle folles.  
 you furest as be tibenue tuo stoles.  
 pat wolde sitte on gop to grounde.  
 It was ne neuere it shal be founde.  
 Betibene foryetelesse and dres.  
 pat man sholde eny cause spede.  
 And pus myn holy fader seie.  
 Toward my self as ye may here.  
 I pleyne of my foryetelesse.  
 Bot elles al ye besynesse.  
 pat may be take of manes pouht.  
 myn hert taky and is purgh souht.

To penken euere vpon pat wete.  
 Wy oute sloupe I yoll behete.  
 For what so fulle or wel or wo.  
 pat yout for yere I neuere mo.  
 wher so I laghe or where I loue.  
 a tounth half ye minuyt of an houre.  
 ite myht I let out of my mynde.  
 Bot if I pouht vpon pat hende.  
 per of me shal no sloupe lette.  
 Til dep out of yis world me sette.  
 Al pouh I hadde on such a ryng.  
 As moyses purh his enchauntyng.  
 Som tyme in ethiope made.  
 Whan pat he tharbis wedded hadde.  
 Which ryng bar of obliuion.  
 ye name. and pat was be reson.  
 pat where it on a fnyger sat.  
 A noon his loue he so for yut.  
 As pouh he hadde it neuere knolbe.  
 And so it felt pat ilke proube.  
 Whan tharbis hadde it on hure hond.  
 ite knolblechynge of hym she found.  
 Bot al was clene out of memoire.  
 As men may rede in his histoure.  
 And pus he wente quyt a day.  
 pat neuere after yllke day.  
 She pouhte per was suchon.  
 Al was for yere and ouer gon.  
 But in good fere so may nouht.  
 For she is euere faste by.  
 So myh pat she myn herte touchen.  
 pat for no ping pat sloupe touchen.  
 I may foryete Lief ue loy.  
 For ouer al wher as she goy.  
 myn herte foldey here a bonte.  
 pus may I seie why oute doute.  
 For better for wote for ouht for nouht.  
 She passen neuere fro my pouht.  
 Bot whanne I am yere as she is.  
 at ym herte as I yoll seide er yis.  
 Som tyme of here is soze adrad.  
 And som tyme it is ouer glad.  
 Al out of reule and out of space.  
 For whan I se he goodly face.  
 And penke vpon hure prys.  
 As pouh I were in paradyse.  
 I am so raueshit of ye sht.  
 pat speke vn to here I ne myht.  
 As for ye tyme pouh I wolde.  
 For I ne may my wit vufolde.  
 To fynde o word of pat I mene.  
 But al it is foryete clene.  
 And pouh I stonde yere a myle.  
 Al is foryete for ye while.  
 A tynge I haue and wordes none.  
 And pus I stonde and penke al one.  
 Of ping pat helpey ofte nouht.



Bot what I hadde a fore pout.  
 To speke when pat I com here.  
 It is foryete as nouht ne were.  
 And stonde amased and affored.  
 pat of no ying which I haue noted.  
 I can nouht punie a note fympe.  
 Bot all is out of knowlechyng.  
 yus what for Ioye and what for drede.  
 All is foryeten at ye nede.  
 So pat my fader of his souye.  
 I haue you seid ye plegyn trouye.  
 ye may it as you list redresse.  
 for yus stant my forgetelnesse.  
 And lke my pusillanite.  
 Sai nold for what yow list come.  
 for I wol only do be yow. *confessor.*  
 y sone I haue wel herd how you.  
 hast seid z pat you moste amende.  
 for loue his grace wol not fende.  
 To pat man which dar age noon.  
 for his we knolven ouerichon.  
 A mannes pouhe wy oute speche.  
 God wor and yet pat men besche.  
 his will is. for wy oute bedes.  
 he dop his grace in felbe sedes.  
 And what man pat for yet him elue.  
 A moug a pouand be nouht eldelue.  
 pat wol him take in remembraunce.  
 Bot let hym falle and take his chaunce.  
 for y pul vp a best herre.  
 y sone and let us ying a sterre.  
 Of loue fiv ye besilese.  
 for touchend of foryetelesse.  
 Whiche many a loue hay set behinde.  
 A tale of gret ensample q fynde.  
 wher off it is writ to write.  
 In ye manere as it is write.  
*In amoris causa contra obli-  
 uiosos ponit confessor exemplum.  
 qualiter Demophon deus bellu  
 troianu inuenerando a phyllide po-  
 dopee regina non tantu in hospia-  
 um s etiam in amorem gaudio  
 magno susceptus est qui postea  
 ob ipa et robie discedens reddidit  
 infra certu tempus fidelissime se  
 compromisit. s quia huiusmodi  
 pmissionis diem statutu postmodu  
 oblitus est phyllis obliuione de-  
 mophonis lacrimis primo deplan-  
 gens tandem cordula collo suo cir-  
 cūligata in quadā corulo p dolo-  
 re se mortuam suspendit.*  
**R**ying Demophon when he be shipe.  
 To troielland wyfelaschip.  
 Seilende goy vpon his wele.  
 It happen hym at Podopere.

As Solus hym hadde blouwe.  
 To londe and rested for a prouwe.  
 And fel pat ilke tyme yus.  
 ye doughter of Lymurgus.  
 Whiche qweene was of ye contr.  
 Was sojournd at pat cite.  
 Wy June a castel nyh ye stonde.  
 Where Demophon cam wy to londe.  
 Whillie she highte and of young age.  
 And of seature and of visage.  
 She hadde al pat hire best be semer.  
 Of Demophon vnt wel here quemer.  
 When he was come and made hym chere.  
 And he pat was of his manere.  
 A lusty knyght ne myht a sterre.  
 pat he ne sette on hire his herre.  
 So pat wy June a day or tuo.  
 he pouht holl euere pat it go.  
 he wolde assene ye fortune.  
 And gan his herte to commune.  
 Wy goodly wordes in here fre.  
 And for to put here out of fere.  
 he stoz and hay his twylf plyht.  
 To be for euere here ouhne knyht.  
 And pat wy hire he stille a bod.  
 per while his ship an anker rod.  
 And hadde I nouh of cyme and spae.  
 To speke of loue and seche grace.  
 This lady herde al pat he seide.  
 And he stoz and holl he preide.  
 Which was as an enchantement.  
 To here pat was al ymoucent.  
 As yowh it were touye and fey.  
 she leuey al pat euere he sey.  
 And as hire infortune sholdo.  
 she grauntey hym al pat he wolde.  
 yus was he for ye tyme in ioye.  
 Til pat he sholdo go to Troye.  
 Bot ye she made moche sorwe.  
 And he his troupe ley to worwe.  
 To come if pat he hie may.  
 A yen wy June a money day.  
 And per vpon ye besten boye.  
 Bot were hem deue or were hym loye.  
 To shipe he goy and for ye wente.  
 To Troye as was his ferste entente.  
 The dayes gon ye ayoyng passer.  
 Hire loue encresey and his passer.  
 for hym she leste sleep and mere.  
 And he his tyme hay al foryete.  
 So pat his woful yonge qweene.  
 Whiche bot nouht what it miht mene.  
 A letre sente and preied hym come.  
 And sey holl she is ouercome.  
 Wy strengye of loue in such a wyse.  
 pat she lony may nouht suffice.  
 To lyuen ou of his pseyse.



And put vpon his consaunce.  
 ye twayne Whiche he hap behote.  
 Wherof she loue hym so hote.  
 She sen pat if he longer lette.  
 Of such a day as she hym sette.  
 She wolde sterue in his sloupe.  
 Which were a schame vnto his twayne.  
 His lette is for vpon his soude.  
 Wherof somdel comfort on honde.  
 She took as she pat wolde abide.  
 And waite vpon pat ilke tide.  
 Which she hap in hire lette write.  
**N**ot now is pite for to write.  
 As he dede erste so he for pat.  
 His tyme est sone and ouer sat.  
 For she Whiche miht nouht do so.  
 ye tyme a wynter euermo.  
 And caue hire yhe vpon ye see.  
 Som tyme may som tyme yee.  
 Som tyme he cam som tyme nouht.  
 Thus she dispute in here pough.  
 And wor nouht what she pen may.  
 For fastende al ye longe day.  
 She was in to ye derke nyht.  
 And so she hap do set vpon light.  
 In a lantern on his a losse.  
 Vpon a tour wher she goy ofte.  
 In hope pat in his conynge.  
 He wolde se ye lit breynynge.  
 Wherof he myht his weies rith.  
 To come where she was be nyht.  
 For al for nouht she was decoued.  
 For Venus hay here hope weyued.  
 And schelbede here vpon ye sky.  
 How pat ye day was faste by.  
 So pat wy tyme a luel wrothe.  
 ye dayes lit she myht knowe.  
 So she beheld ye see at large.  
 And whan she schy per was no lunge.  
 ze ship als ferte as she man kenne.  
 So to ye tour she gan to renne.  
 In to an herber al here one.  
 Wher many a wonder woful moue.  
 She made pat no luf it wiste.  
 As she Whiche al here goye miste.  
 pat now she stouey now she pleynuey.  
 And all here face she destenuey.  
 Wy cetes which as of a welle.  
 ye streues from hire yhen felle.  
 So as she myht and euere in on.  
 She cleped vpon Demophon.  
 And saide helas you sloupe wite.  
 Wher was per euere such a ligh.  
 pat so pish his vngentillesse.  
 Of sloupe and of foryetelnesse.  
 A yen his troupe brak his streuene.  
 And so here yhe vpon ye heuene.

She caste and seide. o you vntynde.  
 hier shalton purnh pi sloupe fynde.  
 If pat ye liste to come and se.  
 A lady ded for loue of ye.  
 So as I shal my selue spille.  
 Whom if it hadde be pi wille.  
 you my hest saue wel ynowh.  
 Wy pat vpon a grene bolwh.  
 A seynt of ilk which she pere hadde.  
 She knette and so her self she lade.  
 pat she a boue he wille there.  
 It dede and henn her self pere.  
 Wher of ye goddes were amoued.  
 And Demophon was so reprovied.  
 pat of ye goddes prouidence.  
 was shape such an euidence.  
 Euer after ward a yen ye sloupe.  
 pat whillie in ye same prouie.  
 was shape in to a note tre.  
 pat alle men it miht se.  
 And after whillie whilliberde.  
 pis tre was cleped in ye verde.  
 And vit for Demophon to shame.  
 In to pis day it berey ye name.  
 pis woful chaunce holt pat it ferde.  
 A non as Demophon it herd.  
 And euery man it hadde in speche.  
 his soule was nouht for co seche.  
 He gan his sloupe for co blame.  
 For it was al to late yanne. *Confessor*  
 So pus my sone myht you wite.  
 A yen pis dlee holt it is wite.  
 For no man may ye hawmes gesse.  
 pat fallen purnh foryetelnesse.  
 Wher of pat I pi schynste haue herd.  
 For vit of sloupe holt it hap ferd.  
 In ower wile I teute opose.  
 If you haue mult as I suppose.  
*Sum plantore licet cultor qui n*  
*hant ortu. Si desint fructus impu*  
*ret ipse sibi. Poterit ista dies bona*  
*nec valeat illa secula. Hoc caret exem*  
*plo Venus amoro suo. Sic trac*  
*tat Confessor de vicio illudencie. cu*  
*ius condicio acidiu amplexens*  
*omnes artes sciencie tam in amoris*  
*causa qui aliter ignominiosa pret*  
*mittens ad nullu potit imingere re*  
*mediu sui ministery diligenciau ex*  
*post facto i bacu atreptare psumit*  
**A**nd he is cleped hecyligence.  
 Which wol nouht lobe his euidence.  
 Wher of he may be war to fore.  
 For whan he hap his cause lore.  
 yanne is he wye after ye hord.



Whanne helpe may no maner bond.  
 ponne at ye felleste wolde he bynde.  
 yus euermore he scant be hynde.  
 Whanne he se pryncing nought amende.  
 ponne is he war and seih at ende.  
 ha wolde god I hadde knolke.  
 wher of be Iaped wyf amolke.  
 he god for whom ye grette scode  
 is stole ponne he takep hede.  
 And makp ye stabul dore fast.  
 yus euere he pleier an after cast.  
 Of al pat he shal seye or do.  
 he has a maner eke also.  
 him lyst nought lerne to be wys.  
 for he set of no vertu pps.  
 for as hym liker for ye while.  
 so felepe he ful of te guile.  
 Whanne pat he wenep liker stonde.  
 And yus you miht wel vnderstonde.  
 my sone if you are sich in loue.  
 you miht nought come at ym aboue.  
 Of pat you woldest wel a cheue.  
 In holy fader as I leue. **Amaus.**  
 I may wel wyf sauf conscience.  
 Exaue me of uecligence.  
 Towarde loue in alle wise.  
 for pouh I be noon of ye wise.  
 I am so twelshy amorous.  
 pat I am euere curous.  
 Of hem pat come best enforme.  
 to knolke and witen al ye forme.  
 What fallay vn to loues craftis.  
 for yit ne fonde I nought ye hufte.  
 Which miht vn to pat blad accorde.  
 for neuere herde I man recorde.  
 What ping it is pat miht anaille.  
 to Wynne loue wyf oute faile.  
 yit so fer coupe I neuere frunde.  
 man pat be erson ne be kynde.  
 me coupe teche such an art.  
 pat he ne faile of a part.  
 And as tollard myn ollen wit.  
 Contreue coupe I neuere yit.  
 to frunde eyn sikernesse.  
 pat me miht ouer more or lesse.  
 Of loue make for to speche.  
 for leuep wel wyf oute drede.  
 If pat yere were such a weie.  
 As certynlich as I shal seye.  
 I hadde it leuend loue a go.  
 for I wot wel yere is noon so.  
 And naxles it may wel be.  
 I am so ruide in my degre.  
 And eke my wytes ben so dulle.  
 pat I ne may nought to ye fulle.  
 Atteygne to so my a lore.  
 But yus I dar sei euermore.

Al pouh my wit ne be nought strong.  
 It is nought en my wil a long.  
 for pat is besy nyht and day.  
 to lerne al pat he lerne may.  
 holw pat I miht loue Wynne.  
 for yit I am as to begynne.  
 Of pat I wolde make an ende.  
 And for I not holw it shal wende.  
 pat is to me my moste sorbe.  
 for I dar take god to borbe.  
 As after myn enteuement.  
 noon opep wise uecligence.  
 pan I you seie haue I nought be.  
 for yit pat seinte charite.  
 Tel me my fader what yow semey.  
 In good seip sone wel me quemei. **con fessoi.**  
 pat you yiselue haue yus a quit.  
 Toward yus vice in which no wit.  
 A bide may for in an houre  
 he lest al pat he may laboure.  
 ye loue yere so pat men sein.  
 What euere he doy it is in deyn.  
 for yurgh ye floure of uecligence.  
 yere was yet neuere such science.  
 I re vertu which was bodili.  
 pat mys destyned and lost yere by.  
 Ensample pat hit hay be so.  
 In boke I frunde write so.  
**Thic contra viciu uecligencie qd  
 nat confessor exemplid. Et narrat  
 qd ad pheton filius solis curru pa  
 tris sui p aem regere debuerat ad  
 montis a patre ut equos ne dema  
 rent equa manu diligencia refre  
 uaret. ipe consiliu patris sua uecl  
 gencia pterens equos ad curru ui  
 mis basse errare pmissit. Vn non so  
 lu inculdio orbeu inflammat s a  
 scipm de curru cadente. in quenda  
 mium demerxi ad interitu causant.**  
**Thabus** which is ye sone hote.  
 pat shynop ypon ye erpe hote.  
 And causep euere lyues helpe.  
 he hadde a sone in all his helpe.  
 which pheton highte and he deurep.  
 And wyf his moder he conspuep.  
 ye which was cleped Olement.  
 for help and conseil pat he sent.  
 his fader carre vede mihte.  
 ypon ye faue dures brite.  
 And for yus ping yere bope preide.  
 vn to ye fader and he seide.  
 he wold wel bot fory wyf al.  
 yere poyntz he hadde in special.  
 vn to his sone in all wise.  
 pat he hym sholde wel amuse.  
 And take it he be weie of lore.



First was put he his hors to fore.  
 To prike. and ouer put he tolde.  
 put he pe reynes faste holde.  
 And also put he be inht war.  
 In what maner he dede his char.  
 put he mistake nouht his gate.  
 For by amusement algate.  
 he sholde bere a sifer yhe.  
 put he to tolde ne to lihe.  
 his carre dyne at any proude.  
 wher of put he myht ouer proude.  
 And put he phetous ordenaunce.  
 Toke phetous in to gouernaunce.  
 pe somes carre which he ladde.  
 put he such deyn gloire hadde.  
 Of put he was set vpon his.  
 put he his olue asat ne seih.  
 purgh negligence and tof non seide.  
 So myht he nouht longe wel spede.  
 for he pe hors wy oute talde.  
 pe carre sette a boute dralde.  
 where as hym liker wantounly.  
 put at pe laste sodeynly.  
 for he no reson wolde knolde.  
 pe firy carre he drof to tolde.  
 and firy al pe world aboute.  
 wher of pei weren alle in doute.  
 And to pe god of helpe cryden.  
 Of such charyte as benidden.  
 phetous which sife the necligence.  
 how phetous ayeu his diffence.  
 his char hay dyne out of pe weie.  
 Ordeney put he fel a lye.  
 Out of pe cart in to a fode.  
 And dyne to noll hold it fode.  
 wy him put was so necligent.  
 put fye pe heih furmament.  
 for put he wold go to tolde.  
 he was a noon down ouerproude.  
 In his asat it is a dice.  
 To go to tolde and in fince.  
 It cryen for to go to lihe.  
 wher of a tale in poeie.

**Exempli sup edem de Icharo de**  
**dili filio in carcere amonitum ex**  
**istentem dedalus de inde euadent**  
**alas compones sumit inuixit no**  
**minis alte ppter solis ardorem as**  
**cenderet quod ycharus sua necligen**  
**cia postponens ad alius sublimi**  
**atus fuisse subito in terram cor**  
**ruens explant.**

And holl whilom dedalus.  
 which hadde a sone and ycharus.  
 he hite and pouh hym pouhte lope.  
 In such yson pei weren lope.  
 wy mynotaurus pat aboute.

.m.

pei myhten nollhere wende onto.  
 So pei begonne for to shape.  
 pei dedalus which fye his wyue.  
 was tauht and many craftes coupe.  
 of seperes and of ower pynnes.  
 hay mad to fle diuerse wynges.  
 for hym and for his sone also.  
 To whom he yaf in charge so.  
 And had hym yente per vpon.  
 how pat his wynges ben set on.  
 wy wex and if he took his flechte.  
 To hite all sodeynliche he myhte.  
 make it to melle wy pe sone.  
 And pus pei haue hite flecht begonne.  
 Out of pe prison faire and softe.  
 And whom pei weren bope on loste.  
 pei icharus began to mouite.  
 And of pe counseil noon accompte.  
 he sette which his fader tauhte.  
 To pat pe sone his wynges tauhte.  
 wher of it melle and fye pe heite.  
 wy outen helpe of any flechte.  
 he fel in to destruction.  
 And uch to pat condicion.  
 were fallen ofte tymes fele.  
 for lakke of gouernaunce in wele.  
 Als wel in loue as ower weie.  
 how goode fader i you prey.  
 If pei be more in pe mite.  
 Of sloupe pat i myht it here.  
 wy sone and for pe diligence.  
 wy euery mannes conscience.  
 he reson scholde reule and kepe.  
 If pat pe liste to taken kepe.  
 whole pe telle a bouen alle.  
 In whom no veru may be falle.  
 which peuey du to pe vices reste.  
 And is of sloupe pe sloupeste.  
**Abas Labor vagus vir nullis**  
**da plectens. resio quid pscus in**  
**ta valebit ei. non amor in cali**  
**mifero vigeo inno valoris. Qui**  
**faciunt opa clamant habere suos.**  
**hic loquitur Confessor sup illa**  
**pece a cordis que oad dicitur au**  
**condio in virtuti cultum nullius**  
**occupacionis diligencia admittes**  
**anctiqz expedicionis cause no attigit.**

**H**ow pei se ope of sloupe bynde.  
 which al labour set behinde.  
 And hite al besynesse.  
 pe is on which pat ydellesse.  
 Is cleped and is pe noice.  
 In mannes bynde of euery vice.  
 which sechey eses many fold.  
 In wynter dop he nouht for cold.  
 In somer may he nouht for hete.



So whether pat he frese or swete.  
 Or be inne or be he oute.  
 He wole ben ydel at a bouthe.  
 Bot if he pleie out at pe dees.  
 For who pat euery take fees.  
 And penkep worship to deserue.  
 per is no Lord whom he wole serue.  
 As for to dwelle in his seruice.  
 But if it were in such a wise.  
 Of pat he seip par aventure.  
 pan be Lordship and conuerue.  
 he may pe more stonde stille.  
 And vse his ydelhess at wille.  
 For he ne wole no timent take.  
 To ride for his Lady sake.  
 Bot liuey al vpon his wiffhes.  
 And as pe cat wolde ete ffishes.  
 Wip oute wetyng of here flesch.  
 So wolde he do. but napeles.  
 he fauley ofte of pat he wolde. *con.*  
 my sone if you of such a molde. *scff.*  
 et mud noll tel me plen in schrifte.  
 Under god I wene a yifte. *Amans.*  
 pat towarde Loue as be my wite.  
 Al ydel dwelheuerie vit.  
 ne neuere schal whil I may go.  
 Now sone telle me pammes. *confess.*  
 What hast you don of befishipe.  
 To Loue and to pe Ladyshippe.  
 Of mye which in Lady is. *confessio.*  
 My fader euere vit er vis. *Amans.*  
 In euery place in euery stede.  
 What so my Lady hap me bede.  
 Wip all myn herte obedient.  
 I haue yed to be diligent.  
 And if so is she bidde nouht.  
 What ping pat pammes to my pouht.  
 Comp ferst of pat I may suffise.  
 I bolde and profite my seruice.  
 Som tyme in chumbrer somtyme in halle.  
 Right as I se pe tymes falle.  
 And whan she hoy to here masse.  
 pat tyme shal nouht ouer passe.  
 pat I napproche here Ladyhede.  
 In cunter if I may here dede.  
 But to pe chapel and a yeyn.  
 pan ik nouht al my weie in beyn.  
 Soudel I may pe better fare.  
 Whan I pat may nouht fele her bare.  
 may dede here cloyed in myn arm.  
 Bot afterwar it dop me harm.  
 Of pure ymaginacion.  
 pamine vis collacion.  
 I make vn to my setuen ofte.  
 And say ha Lord how she is softe.  
 how she is wound how she is final.  
 Now wolde god I hadde here al.

Wip oute daunger at my wille.  
 And pan I fare and sike stille.  
 Of pat I se my besy pouht.  
 I b torned ydel in to mouht.  
 Bot for al pat lette I ne may.  
 Whan I se tyme an ower day.  
 pat I ne do my besinesse.  
 vn to my Lady wozpinesse.  
 For I yer to my wit affluie.  
 To se pe tymes and a dwite.  
 What is to done and what to seue.  
 And so whan tyme is be hire leue.  
 What ping she bidde me don I do.  
 And wher she bidde me gon I go.  
 And whan hire liste to clepe I come.  
 pus hap she fullich ouercome.  
 myn ydelhess til I serue.  
 So pat I mot here nodes serue.  
 For as men sem nede hap no lalle.  
 pus mot I nedely to here dwille.  
 I serue I bolde I lode I loute.  
 myn yhe folowep here aboute.  
 What so she wole so wole I.  
 Whan she wole sate I knelo by.  
 And whan she stant pan wole I stonde.  
 Bot whan she taky here werf on hounde.  
 Of wedyng or elz brouderie.  
 pan can I nouht but unise and pe.  
 Upon here fynghes longe and snale.  
 And noll I penke and noll I take.  
 And noll I synge and noll I fike.  
 And pus my contenance I pyke.  
 And if it falle as for a tyme.  
 hire likey nouht abyde by me.  
 But bisien hire in ower puges.  
 pan make I ower tarynges.  
 To dreache for pe longe day.  
 For me is wo to paxce a way.  
 And pan I am so simple of porte.  
 pat for to ferme soln disporte.  
 I plare wip hire luel hound.  
 Now on pe bed noll on pe ground.  
 Now wip here briddes in pe cage.  
 For per non so drel pame.  
 Ie vit so simple a chambrew.  
 pat I ne make hem alle chere.  
 Al for per sholde speke wel.  
 pus may pe seen my besy whiel.  
 pat nop nouht ydelich a bouthe.  
 And if here list to ride oute.  
 On peluinau or ower seide.  
 I come poun I be nouht bede.  
 And take hire in myn arme a losse.  
 And sette hir in hire sadel softe.  
 And so forp dede here by pe bridel.  
 For pat I wolde nouht ben ydel.  
 And if her liste to ride in char.



And pan I may per of be bar.  
 A non I shay me for to fide.  
 Right euene be ye chares fide.  
 And I may I fete a mount.  
 And oper wille I finge a song.  
 Whiche Guide in hys boke mnde.  
 And seide O Whiche forlorn glade.  
 O Whiche Woful pspite.  
 Belonger to ye pspite.  
 Of Loue who so wol hym serue.  
 And yet per fro may no man serue.  
 pat he ne mot his lalle obeie.  
 And pus I rde for my weye.  
 And am right best ouer al.  
 Wip herte and wip my body al.  
 Als I haue seide you hiew to fore.  
 my gode fader tel per fore.  
 Of Idelnesse if haue wilt. **confess**  
 Of lone blit if pou telle wilt. **for**  
 Dult elles pame I may nold here.  
 pou shalt haue no penance here.  
 And napeles amant may se.  
 How nold a dayes pat per se.  
 ful many a ppyche hertes flou.  
 pat wol nouht besyden hem to knowe.  
 What pyn lone is but at ye laste.  
 pat he wip strempe hem ouer caste.  
 pat maugre hem per mote ober.  
 And don al ydell chynge a weye.  
 To serue wel and bestliche.  
 Bot lone pou art non of such.  
 For lone shal ye wel excuse.  
 For oper wise if pou refuse.  
 To lone pou myht so par cas.  
 Ben ydel as som tyme was.  
 A kynges daughter vn auised.  
 Til pat Cupide hore hap chafised.  
 Wher of pou schalt a tale hiew.  
 Accordant vn to pis matere.  
**Adic point confessor exemplum**  
**tra istos qui amoris occupatione o-**  
**mittentes grauioris infortunij casus**  
**expectaret. Et narrat de quadam**  
**armonie regis filia que huiusmodi**  
**condicionis in principio iuuentutis**  
**onosa pfectens mirabili postea visi-**  
**one castigata in amoris obsequio**  
**et ceteris diligencis efficitur.**  
**A**rmonie I rede pus  
 Ther was a kynge which Cupus.  
 Was hore. a he a lufeymaye.  
 To daughter hadde and as men saide.  
 here name was Josephile.  
 Which po was of greet renome.  
 For she was bope wys and fair  
 And sholde ben here fader hert.  
 For she hadde o defaute of floupe.

Dollard Lone and pat was roupe.  
 For so wel coupe noman seie.  
 Whiche myhte sette here in pe weye.  
 Of Loues occupation.  
 purth noon ymaginacion.  
 pat so le wolde she nouht knowe.  
 And pus she was oone of pe flou.  
 Als of such hertes bespnesse.  
 Til Whanne Venus pe goddesse.  
 Which Loues Court hap for to reule.  
 hap brouht here into hure reule.  
 For wip Cupide and wip his myht.  
 For per merueille hore such a myht.  
 Which po was in hure lufey age.  
 Desuier nouper mariage.  
 To wit pe loue of paramours.  
 Which euere hap ben pe comon cours.  
 A monyes hem pat lufey were.  
 So as it schelwed after pere.  
 For he pat hure hertes lufey.  
 Wip syli drettes whiche he poulde.  
 Cupide which of lone is god.  
 In chafising hap mad arod.  
 To dride a waie hure wantounesse.  
 So pat wip yune a while I gesse.  
 She hadde on such a chaunce spored.  
 pat all hure mood was ouertorned.  
 Which ferst she hadde of flou manere.  
 For pus it fel as pou shalt here.  
 Whan come was pe money of may.  
 She wolde walke vpon a day.  
 And pat was er pe some ariste.  
 Of women bot a felde it wiste.  
 And for she wente pryncely.  
 On to pe park was faste by.  
 Til softe walkyng on ye gras.  
 Til she cam pere pe launde was.  
 purth which per van a greet ouere.  
 It pouht hure fair and seide hure.  
 I wold abyde vnder pe shalwe.  
 And had hure women to wip dulle.  
 And pe she stode al one stille.  
 To pente what was in hure wille.  
 She sihe pe wote floures spryng.  
 She herde glade foules syng.  
 She sihe pe bestes in hure kynde.  
 pe bucke. pe doe. pe herte. pe hynde.  
 pe male goy wip pe female.  
 And so be am pere a queerele.  
 Betwene lone and here oone herte.  
 fro whiche she coupe nouht a ferte.  
 And as she caste hure yhe aboute.  
 She sihe clad in a fute a route.  
 Of ladies where per come rde.  
 A long vnder pe wode side.  
 On fure amblende hore per se.  
 pat weren all white fute a reue.



**W**nd enerichon pei ride on syde.  
pe faderles were of such a prude.  
Wip perle and gold so wel begon.  
So riche she she neuere non.  
In kirtles and in copes riche.  
pei were cloped alleliche.  
Depurced ouene of white and blew.  
Wip alle lusteres pat she knew.  
pei were embrouded ouer al.  
here bodies were long and smal.  
pe beaute of here face shon.  
Wel brighter pan pe cristall ston.  
corones on here hedes pei bere.  
As eche of hem a gowne were.  
pat alle pe gold of crepus halle.  
pe beste coronal of alle.  
re myht haue bouht after pe story.  
pus come pei ridende fory.

**T**he knyghtes doughter which was she.  
for pure abasshet dwollh in adrehe.  
And held here clos vnder pe bolsh.  
And let hem passen stille ynolsh.  
for as hire pouhte in here adre.  
to hem pat were of such apys.  
she was nouht worthi axen pere.  
for when pei come oz what perere.  
for leuer pan pis worldes good.  
she wolde haue wist how pat it stod.  
And put hire hede a kiel oute.  
And as she loket here aboute.  
she she comende vnder pe hynde.  
A woman by an hors be hynde.  
pe hors on which she wold was blak.  
all leue an galles on pe bak.  
And halted as he wold encloyed.  
Wher of pe woman was amayed.  
pus was pe hors in soz plyn.  
for for al pat a sterre whir.  
a myddes in pe front he hadde.  
here sadel ete was wonder laded.  
A which pe woful woman sat.  
And naples pat was wip pat.  
A riche bridel for pe none.  
of gold and of preous stones.  
here cote was soundel to tore.  
A bonte here myddel abeynt score  
of horsen attres and wel mo.  
were hyngen ate tyme po.  
Whan she cam pe lady nyhe.  
pan took she better hede and she.  
pe woman was rihit faure off face.  
all pouh her lacked ower myce.  
And so pis lady where she stod.  
she pouht here wel and vnder stod.  
pat pis which cam ridende po.  
A doughter coupe telle of po.  
which as she she to fore ride.

**Lib. 1**

And put hire fory and preide abide.  
And seide ha softer let me here.  
What ben pei pat now riden here.  
And ben so richeliche armed.  
**T**his woman which cam so esmaied.  
And seide madame I shal you teche.  
rese ar of po pat whilom were.  
Seruants to loue and troupe bere.  
pere as pei hadde here herte sette.  
fare wel for I may nouht be lette.  
ma dame I go to my seruice.  
So most I haste in alle wise.  
for pi ma dame yene me leue.  
I may nouht longelvy you leue.  
A good softer I will praye.  
Telle me whi pe be so be seie.  
And wip rese haltes so begon.  
A dame whilom I was oon.  
pat to my fader hadde a kyng.  
But I was slowe and for no pring.  
me lyste nouht to loue obere.  
And pat I nold ful soze abere.  
for I whilom no loue hadde.  
my hors is nold so felle and badde.  
And al to tore is myn aray.  
And eueri yere pis fresh may.  
rese lusey ladies ride a bonte.  
And I mot nedes sue here route.  
In pis manere as pe nold see.  
And trusse here attres fory wryme.  
And am but as here hors knabe.  
Aron oper office I ne haue.  
hem penkes I am worpi no more.  
for I was slowe in loues lore.  
Whane I was able for to lere.  
And wolde nouht pe tales here.  
of hem pat coupe loue teche.  
Telle me pan I will besede.  
Wher of pat riche bridel sequey.  
Wip pat here chier a wip she sberuey.  
And gan to wepe and pus she tolde.  
pis bridel which yemow beholde.  
So riche upon myn hors hed.  
ma dame afoze er I was ded.  
Whan I was in my lusey luf.  
per fell in to myn herte a styf.  
of loue which me ouer com.  
So pat per after hiede qnom.  
And pouht I wolde loue a fuyght.  
pat laste wel a fourte nyht.  
for it no leugere nyhte laste.  
So nyh my luf was atte laste.  
for now alas to late war.  
pat I ne hadde him lound ar.  
for dey cam so in haste byme.  
for per to hadde eny tyme.



That it ne myghte ben ached.  
 Bot for al pat I am relieued.  
 Of pat my wiff was good per to.  
 pat Loue suffrey it be so.  
 pat I shal such a bridel were.  
 row haue ye herd al myn an swere.  
 To god ma dame I wol beake.  
 And warney all for my sake.  
 Of Loue pat pei ben nouht ydel.  
 And biddo hem penke vpon my bridel.  
 And wip pat world al sodeynly.  
 She passy as it were a fly.  
 Al cleue out of pis Lady syt.  
 And po for fere here herte aslyte.  
 And seide to here selue helas.  
 I am rih in pe same cas.  
 Bot if I hyle after pis day.  
 I shal amende it if I may.  
 And pus hounldour pis Lady wente.  
 And chaunged al here ferste entente.  
 Wip yme here herte and gan to swere.  
 pat she noon altres wolde bere.  
 For sone hiere myht you taken seide.  
 How ydelnesse is for to drede.  
 Traunliche of Loue as I haue write.  
 For you myht vnder soude au write.  
 Among pe gentyl nacioun.  
 Loue is an occupacion.  
 Whiche for to kepe hys lufes saue.  
 Sholde euery myght herte haue.  
 Non qz sic se hec ditas s opimo amato.  
 For as pe Lady was chafised.  
 Fright so pe knyght may ben auised.  
 Which ydel is and wol nouht serue.  
 To Loue. he may parcas deserue.  
 A mettere perne pan she hadde.  
 Whan she aboute wip here ladde.  
 pe hore altres and for pi.  
 Good is to ben wel wip per by.  
 Bot for to loke a bouen alle.  
 These maydenes hold so pat it falle.  
 hei sholden take ensamplo of pis.  
 Which I haue told for so it is.  
 My Lady Venus whom I serue.  
 What man wole here poult deserue.  
 She may nouht pulke Loue eschue.  
 Of pamonys bot she mot fure.  
 Eufides lalle and napeles.  
 men seen suche Loue fiede in pees.  
 pat it mys enere vpon aspie.  
 Of Jantelyng and of fals enue.  
 flul ofte medlet wip dysese.  
 But pike Loue is wel at ese.  
 Which sett is vpon marriage  
 for pat dar shelden pe disage.  
 In alle places oppynly.  
 A gret merueyle it is for pi.

Hold pat a maiden wold lette.  
 pat she hire tyme ne be sette.  
 To caste vpon to pat ille fete.  
 Wher of pe Loue is al honeste.  
 men may recouere lost of good.  
 But so wys man yet nehere stood.  
 Which may recouere tyme Lore.  
 So may a mayden wel per fore.  
 Eufamyle take of pat she chaungey.  
 Here Loue and Loue er pat she chaungey.  
 Here herce vpon here lufes grene.  
 To marriage as it is sene.  
 For pus a yer or tibo or yre.  
 She lest er pat she wedded be.  
 Whil she pe charge myghte bere.  
 Of children Whiche pe world for bere.  
 It may but if it sholde faile.  
 Bot what mayden her espousale.  
 Wol tane whan she take may.  
 She shal parchalme an ower day.  
 Be lette whan pat she leuest were.  
 Wher of a tale vpon to hys ere.  
 Whiche is coupable vpon pis dede.  
 I penke telle of pat I rede.  
*hic ponit exemplum sup eodem.*  
*Et narrat de filia Iepth que ad ex-*  
*su patris nota in holocaustu deo oc-*  
*adi et offerri deberet pro eo quod*  
*virgo fuit et prole ad augmentand-*  
*ne populi dei non diu genuisset quadra-*  
*ginta diebus spaciis de ad suis sodalibz*  
*virginibz suis defleret virginitate*  
*pruinquu moretetur in exemplum a-*  
*lioz a patre postulauit.*  
 Among pe jelles as men tolde.  
 yer was whilom be dayes olde.  
 A noble duk Whiche Iepth highte.  
 And fell he sholde go to feighte.  
 A ven Timon pe cruel knyght.  
 And for to speke vpon pis myght.  
 Wip yme hys herce he made a wold.  
 To god. and seid ha Lord if yold.  
 Wol graunte vpon to pi man victoire.  
 I shal in tokne of pi memoire.  
 pe ferste luf pat I may se.  
 Of man or woman wher it be.  
 A noon as I come home ayeen.  
 To pe Whiche art god souereyn.  
 Sleen in pi name and sacrificie.  
 And pus wip hys chivalrie.  
 he goy him forp wher pat he sholde.  
 And wan all pat he wryme wolde.  
 And ouer cam hys foimen alle.  
 May woman lette pat shal faile.  
 Jns duk a lufy duhter hadde.  
 And faine whiche pe wordes spradd.  
 hay brouht in to pis Lady ere.



Holf pat hire fader hap do pere.  
 She waurep vpon his comynge.  
 Wyf dunnung and wyf karolunge.  
 As she pat wolde be tofore.  
 Alle oþere. and so she was perfore.  
 In mishap at here fader gate.  
 pe ferste. and whan he come p ate.  
 And she his doughter he to bryde.  
 His cloþes. and wepende he seide.  
 O myght god among vs here.  
 I tolf not I pat in no manere.  
 pis wordes ioye may be pleyu.  
 I hadde al pat I coude seyn.  
 A yen my fomen be pi grace.  
 So whan I cam towarþ pis place.  
 per was no gladder man þan I.  
 Bot nolf my lord al soþerly.  
 my ioye is tozned in to sorþe.  
 For I my doughter shal to morþe.  
 To helþe and brenne in pi seruice  
 To loenge of pi sacrifice.  
 myght any abow so as it is.  
 The mayden whan she wiste of pis.  
 And seih pe sorþe hir fader made.  
 So as she may wyf wordes glade.  
 Comforter him a blis him holde.  
 pe couenant which he is be holde.  
 Towardes god as he behyhte.  
 Bot napelos here herce aþlyhte.  
 If pat she seih here dep comende.  
 And þanne vn to pe ground knelende.  
 To fore hire fader seih is falle.  
 And seip so as it is be falle.  
 vpon pis point pat she shal deie.  
 Of o þing ferst she wolde hym þre.  
 pat fourty dayes of respit.  
 he wolde hire graunte vpon pis plat.  
 pat she pe while may be wepe.  
 hire maydenhode which she to kepe.  
 So long hap had and nouht beset.  
 wher of here lusti youre is let.  
 pat she no children hap forþ dralþe.  
 In marriage after pe talþe.  
 So pat pe people is nouht encresed.  
 Bot pat it myht be releffed.  
 pat she hire tyme hap lore so.  
 she wolde be his leue go.  
 wyf oþer madenes to conpleigne.  
 And after ward vn to pis peyne.  
 Of dep she wolde come a yeyn.  
 pe fader herde his doughter seyn.  
 And per vpon of on assent.  
 pe maydenes were a non assent.  
 pat sholden wyf pis mayden wende.  
 so for to speke wh to pis ende.  
 per gon pe dovnos and pe sales.  
 wyf wepyng and wyf woful cales.

And eueri whil hire maydenhode.  
 conpleigne vpon pulke nede.  
 pat she no children hadden had þore.  
 whel of she hap here youre lore.  
 wheche heuere she reconere may.  
 for so fell pat here lasteday.  
 was come in whiche she shold take.  
 here dep which she may nouht for sale.  
 so þus she diede a woful mayde.  
 for pulke cause which I seide.  
 As þou has vnderstonde aboue.  
 My fader as towarþ pe loue. *Amans.*  
 Of maydenes for to telle troupe.  
 pe haue pulke vice of troupe.  
 we penþer vnt wonder wel declared.  
 pat pe pe women haue nouht spare.  
 Of hem pat carien so behinde.  
 But vit it fulþer in my mynde.  
 Toward pe men holf pe speke.  
 Of hem pat wole no trauail seke.  
 In cause of loue vpon desert.  
 To speke in wordes so couerte.  
 A. not what trauail pat pe mente.  
 My sone and after myn entente. *Coste*  
 I wolle pe telle what I pouthe.  
 holf whilom men haue loues bouthe.  
 myght met trauail in strange lordes.  
 wher pat pei brouhten wyf hire honde.  
 Of armes many a worþi dede.  
 In sondri place as men may rede.  
 Quem probet armor pbius ven?  
 approbat e quem. *Corpor her rep*  
 dum reprobat illa viru. *Decoris*  
 sequaces insignia nescit amoris.  
 Iam piger ad brauium cardius ne  
 venit. *hic loquitur qd in amoris*  
 causa milicie probitas qd armoris  
 laboris exercitum nullatenus corpuscat.  
 That eueri loue of pure kynde.  
 so ferst forþ dralþe wel fynde.  
 Bot napelos vit ouer pis.  
 Decerte dep so pat it is.  
 pe rapere had in many place.  
 for in who sechey loues grace.  
 whete pat pese worþi women are.  
 he may nouht panne him selue spare.  
 vpon his trauaile for to serue.  
 wher of pat he may þouht deserue.  
 pere ad pese men of armes be.  
 som tyme ouer pe grete see.  
 so pat be longe and ek be shipe.  
 he mot trauaile for worshippe.  
 And make many hastif codes.  
 som tyme in þreis som tyme in fodes.  
 And som tyme in to tartarie.  
 so pat pese heraulds on hem crie.  
 Ballant ballant so where he goy.



And yanne he yeeuy hem gold & clop.  
 So pat his name myghte forpruge.  
 And to his lady ere bymyte.  
 Soum tyme of his woynnesse.  
 So pat she myghte of his prouesce.  
 Of pat she herde men recorde.  
 Of pat she herde men recorde.  
 Of pat she herde men recorde.  
 And daunger put out of hure mood.  
 Whanne alle men recorden good.  
 And pat she wot wel for hire sake.  
 pat he no trauaile wol for sake.  
 my sone of his trauaile I mene.  
 arowl shide pe for it shal be sene.  
 If yow art ydel in this cas.  
 My fader ye and euere was.  
 For as me penkei trewly.  
 pat euery man doo more pan I.  
 Als of his poynit and if so is.  
 pat I haue ouht so don er his.  
 It is so lyeel of to acompte.  
 As who seip it may nouht amoute.  
 To wyne of loue his lusty myte.  
 For his I tolle yow in schryfte.  
 pat he were leuere here loue wyne.  
 pan fuyr and al pat is per june.  
 And for to leu ye hepen alle.  
 I not what good per myghte fulle.  
 So mechel blod yowh per be shad.  
 his frute I witten holb crist bad.  
 pat no man ope sholde stee.  
 What sholde I wyne ouer ye see.  
 If I my lady lost at hom.  
 Bot passe pei ye salte fom.  
 To whom crist bad pei sholden pche.  
 To all ye world and his fey ceche.  
 But now pei rucken in here nest.  
 And resten as hem liken best.  
 In alle ye swetnesse of delices.  
 pus pei defenden oue ye vices.  
 And hitte hem seluen al amitte.  
 To leu and fechten pei oue bidden.  
 To whom pei sholde as ye boot seip.  
 Comierten in to cristes feip.  
 Bot her of haue I gret meruante.  
 holb pei wol bidde me trauaile.  
 Al Savazyn if I shal.  
 I se ye soule forp wy al.  
 And pat was neuere cristes lore.  
 Bot uolt ho pere I sai no nomore.  
 Bot I wole speke yow in schryfte.  
 And to cupide I make a ynfte.  
 pat who pat euere prye deserue.  
 Of armes. I wole loue ferue.  
 And yowh I sholde hem bope lepe.  
 Als wel yet wolde I take lepe.  
 Whan it were tyme to abide.  
 Als for to trauaile and for to ride.

For holb as euere a man laboure.  
 Cupide apoynted hay his houre.  
*In allegat amans en sui exausa  
 signem qualiter Achilles apud tro-  
 iam ppter amorem polixenen ar-  
 ma sua p aliquod tempus dimisit.*  
 For I haue herd it telle also.  
 Achilles leste hisse armes so.  
 Bope of him selue and of his men.  
 At Troie for polixenen.  
 Upon here loue whan he fel.  
 pat for no chaunce pat be fel.  
 Among ye grekes or up or down.  
 He wolde nouht a yen ye town.  
 Ben armed for ye loue of here.  
 And so me penkei loue sire.  
 A man of armes may hym veste.  
 Soum tyme in hope for ye beste.  
 If he may fynde a weie ner.  
 What sholde I yanne go so fer.  
 In strauinge londes many amile.  
 To ride and lese at hom ye while.  
 my loue. it were a short beyete.  
 To wyne chaf and lese where.  
 But if my lady bidde wolde.  
 That I for here loue sholde.  
 Trauaile me penkei trewly.  
 I myght flee yowh out ye sky.  
 And go yowh out ye depe se.  
 For al ne sette I at a se.  
 What yowh pat I myght elles gete.  
 What helpey it a man haue mete.  
 Wher dynt lackey on ye bord.  
 What helpey eny mannes word.  
 To seie hold I trauaile faste.  
 Where as me failey at ye laste.  
 pat thynge which I trauaile fore.  
 In good tyme were he bore.  
 pat myht atteigne such a mede.  
 Bot certes if I myght speede.  
 wy eny maner besynesse.  
 Of worldes trauaile pan I nesso.  
 per sholde me non ydelshipe.  
 Departen fro here ladi shipe.  
 Bot his I se ou daies now.  
 ye blynde hop I not nouht hold.  
 Cupido which of loue is lord.  
 He sette ye ynyges in descord.  
 pat pei pat lest to loue entende.  
 ful ofte he wol hem yue and sende.  
 host of his grace and pus I fynde.  
 pat he which sholde to behynde.  
 Gop many a tyme for to fore.  
 So pat I not rite wel per fore.  
 On wherper bord pat I shal seie.  
 pus can I nouht my self consue.  
 Bot al I sette on auenture.



And am as who seip out of cure.  
 For ouht pat I can seie or do.  
 For euermore I fynde it so.  
 The more besynesse I love.  
 Ye more pat I knole and proue.  
 Wy goode wordes and wy soft to.  
 Ye more I am refused ofte.  
 Wy besynesse and may nouht wynn.  
 And in good feip pat is gret synne.  
 For I may seie of dede and polht.  
 Pat ydel man haue I be nouht.  
 For hold as euere I be doctored.  
 Sit euere more I haue assued.  
 Bot pouh my besynesse laste.  
 As is but ydel at ye laste.  
 For Whan peffect is idelnesse.  
 Not what pyn is besynesse.  
 Say what auailer al ye dede.  
 Which no pyn helpey at ye nede.  
 For ye fortune of euery faine.  
 Shal of his ende bere a name.  
 And pus for ouht is yit befall.  
 In ydel man I wol me calle.  
 As after myn entendement.  
 But vpon poure amendement.  
 myn holy fader as ye seney.  
 myn reson and myn cause deney.  
 yf one I haue herd in matere. *cofel*  
 Of pat pou hast ye schriuen here. *for*  
 And for to speke of ydel fare.  
 we seney pat pou parst nouht care.  
 Bot only pat pou myht nouht spede.  
 And per of sone I wol ye rede.  
 A bide. and hast nouht to faste.  
 Thi dees ben euery day to caste.  
 you nost what chauce shal be tide.  
 Better is to warte vpon ye tide.  
 pan wolben a yen ye farnes swinge.  
 for pouh so be you yente longe.  
 Parcas ye reuolucion.  
 Of heuene and in condicion.  
 ye be nouht yit of con acord.  
 Bot I dar make pis record.  
 To Venus Whos prest pat I am.  
 pat syen pat I heder cam.  
 To here as she me bad in lif.  
 Wher of you elles be multif.  
 you unht hier of pi consaunce.  
 Excuse and of gret diligence.  
 Which you to loue hast so dependes.  
 you ouhtest wel to be comended.  
 Bot if so be pat per ouht faile.  
 Of pat you loupest to trauaile.  
 In armes for to ben assent.  
 And for you makest all argument.  
 Of pat you seidest hier aboue.  
 How Achilles pyngh stronge of loue.

his armes leste for a yrolle.  
 you schalt an oyer tale knolle.  
 Whiche is contraire as you shalt wite.  
 For pis aman may fynde wite.  
 Whan pat knythode shal be wored.  
 Just may nouht pynne be pferred.  
 ye bed inot pynne be for sake.  
 And schield and spere on honde take.  
 Which pyngh shal make hem after glade.  
 Whan ye ben worpi knythes made.  
 Wher of so as it comey to honde.  
 A tale you schalt vnderstonde.  
 How pat a knyht shal armes suye.  
 And for ye while his ease eschuye.  
*Whiche is ad amoris delectamentum*  
*postposito miles arma sua pferre de*  
*bet. Et quod ponit exemplum de vlyce*  
*ad ipe a bello troiano ppter amorem*  
*penelope remanere dum voluisset*  
*et rumpere pater palamades eid tan*  
*tis sermonibus allocutus est ad vlyce*  
*tho suo coniugis relicto labores ap*  
*mor vna ad alijs troie magnanimul*  
 Don knythode I rede pus. *sbibac*  
 How whilom Whan ye knygh rampul.  
 ye fader of palamades.  
 Cam for to prayen vlyce.  
 Wy oyer Gregois eke also.  
 pat he wy hem to troie go.  
 Where pat ye siege scholde be.  
 A noon vpon penelope.  
 his wyf Whom pat he louey hote.  
 yentende wolde hem nouht behote.  
 Bot he shap pynne a wonder wile.  
 How pat he sholde hem best beuyle.  
 So pat he myhte dwelle scille.  
 At hom and welde his loue at wille.  
 Wher of eoly ye moorde day.  
 Out of his bed wher pat he lay.  
 Whan he was up he gan to fare.  
 In to ye feld and loke and fare.  
 As he pat feigney to be wod.  
 he took a plough where pat it stod.  
 Wher inne anon in stede of pres.  
 he leet doon yoken yere sores.  
 And wy gret salt ye lond he selde.  
 Bot rampul Whiche ye cause knelle.  
 A yen ye sleht Whiche he feigney.  
 In oyer sleht a non orderney.  
 And fel pat tyne vlyce hadde.  
 A child to sone. and rampul radde.  
 How men pat sone take sholde.  
 And setten him vpon ye molde.  
 Wher pat his fader held ye plough.  
 In pille fourgh Whiche he ye diouhe.  
 For in such wise he nouht assare.  
 How in vlyce sholde paie.



15

my?

If pat he were a good or noon.  
 His knyghtes for his child gon.  
 Helimachus a noon was fet.  
 To fore pe plough and eueie sette.  
 Wher pat his fader sholde dyne.  
 But whanne he seih his child als blyue.  
 He drof pe plough out off pe weie.  
 And a tampus pe began to seie.  
 And hap half in a iape crie.  
 O whives you are assied.  
 What is al pis pat you woldest mene.  
 For oppynlich it is now sene.  
 Pat you have feryed al pis prync.  
 Which is a gret shame to a kynng.  
 Whan pat for lust of eny loue.  
 you wolt in a querel of troupe.  
 Of armes pille honour forsake.  
 And dwelle at home for lones sake.  
 For better it were honour to dwyne.  
 van loue which knyng is in fyne.  
 For pi take worship vpon honde.  
 And elles you shalt vnderfonde.  
 pe ope worpi knynges alle.  
 Of gre which vnto pe calle. a  
 Towrdes pe wol be rite wryp.  
 A greue pe parchaunce bope.  
 Which shal be to pe double shame.  
 most for pe hyndryng of pi name.  
 pat you for loue of eny loue.  
 Shalt so in lustes sette a boue.  
 And loue of armes pe knyghthode.  
 Which is pe pris of pi manhode.  
 And outhe first to be desired.  
 But he which hadde his herte fyred.  
 vpon his wyf whan he pis herde.  
 nought o word per a pen anwerde.  
 For cornep hom halynge aschamed.  
 And hap halynge hym self so tamed.  
 his herte pat al pe sorne.  
 Of loue for pe chualre.  
 He leste. and be hym lief or loy.  
 To dwie fory wyf hem he goy.  
 pat he hym myht nought excuse.  
 pus scant it is a knyht refuse.  
 pe list of armes to trauaile.  
 per may no wordes esd auale.  
 But if worship be wyf al.  
 And pat hap shelled ouer al.  
 for it sit wel in alle wise.  
 A knyht to be of his enyryse.  
 And putten all dued a weie.  
 for in pis wise i haue herd seie.  
*But narrat sup eodem qualiter*  
*Leodonia Regis protheselai vxor*  
*volens puid a bello Troiano secum*  
*recursu facere sibi mortem in por*  
*tu troie puidant sed ipe milita*

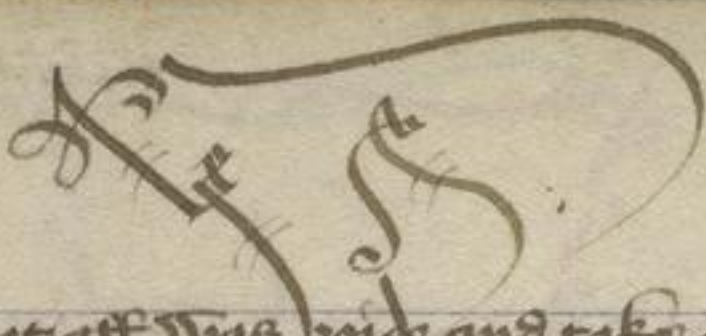
*potius qm oia affectans troia abijt*  
*bi sue mortis pio ppetue laudis*  
*troicam ademit*  
**T**he worpi kynng protheselay.  
 On his passage wher he lay.  
 Towrdes Troie pille siege.  
 She which was al his owne liege.  
 Leodonia his lusty wyf.  
 Which for his loue was pensif.  
 As she which al here herte hadde.  
 vpon a prync wher of she dwade.  
 A letter for to make hym dwelle.  
 from Troie sende hym pus to telle.  
 how she hap axed of pe wyf.  
 Touchyng of hym in such a wyse.  
 pat pei han don here vnderfonde.  
 Towrdes ope holl so it stonde.  
 pe destine it hap so shape.  
 pat he shal nought be dep aschape.  
 In cas pat he aryue at Troie.  
 for pi as to hir wordes joye.  
 wyf al here herte she hym preyede.  
 And many an ope cause alleide.  
 pat he wyf here at hom abide.  
 For he hap cast his letter a side.  
 As he which no no maner hiede.  
 Toke of hire womanliche drede.  
 And fory he goy as nought ne were.  
 To Troie and was pe ferste pere.  
 Which London and trost avynale.  
 for hym was leue in bataille.  
 He seip to deien as a knyht.  
 van for to lyue in al his myht.  
 And be reproved of his name.  
 To pus vpon pe wordes fame.  
 Knyhthode hap eueie pi beset.  
 Which wyf no cowardie is sette.  
*Adhuc sup eodem qualiter rex*  
*saul non obstante qd p Samuellem*  
*a phitonissa suscitatum z conuira*  
*ad responsu quod ipe in bello more*  
*retur accepisset hostes tamen suos*  
*aggrediens milicie famam amictis*  
*huius vite blandimentis proposuit*  
**S**aul also i fonde.  
 Whan Samuel out of his kynde.  
 purgh pat pe phitonisse hap lered.  
 In Saularidde arered.  
 Long tyme after he was ded.  
 pe kynng Saul axep hym red.  
 If pat he shal gon feryte on noon.  
 And Samuel hym seide anon.  
 pe ferste day of pe bataille.  
 you shalt be slayn wyf outh faile.  
 And Jonathas pi sone also.  
 For holl as eueie it fell so.  
 pis worpi knyht of his corage.



Hay vnder take ye viage.  
 And wol nouht his knyghthode lette.  
 For no peril he coupe sette.  
 Wher of pat bope his sone and he.  
 Upon ye mountz of Gelbee.  
 Assemblen wyf here enemyes.  
 For pei knyghthode of such appys.  
 He olde dayes yanne helden.  
 pat pei non oper pynge behelden.  
 And yus pe fader for worschipe.  
 For wyf his sone of fela schipe.  
 yurgh lust off arme weren dede.  
 As men may in pe bible rede.  
 pe Whos knyghthode is yit in mynde.  
 And shal be to pe wordes ende.  
**¶** *Pro loquitur qd miles in suis pmo-  
 ris ad audacia prouocari debet. Et  
 narrat qualiter chiro Centaurus  
 Achillem que sead ab infancia in  
 mouce puleon educant de audax  
 efficeretur pmitus edocuit qd ad  
 pe Venacolis ibidem inficeret leo-  
 nes et tringites huiusmodi qd aiaha si  
 bi resistentia et nulla alia fugitiua  
 agnauit. Et sic Achilles in iuuentu-  
 te diatius famosissime milicie pro-  
 bitatem postmodum adoptauit.*  
 And for to loken ouermore.  
 pat hay and shal ben euermore.  
 pat of knyghthode ye prowlsece.  
 is groundes vpon hardiesce.  
 Of hem pat dar wel vnder take.  
 And wo pat wolde ensample take.  
 vpon ye forme of knyghtes sake.  
 How pat Achilles was fory dradde.  
 Wyf chiro whiche Centaurus hihte.  
 Of many a wonder here he mihte.  
 For it scod yllke tyme yus.  
 pat pis chiro pis Centaurus.  
 Wyf yune a range wilderness.  
 Wher was Leon and Leonesse.  
 pe Abard and ye Tigre add.  
 Wyf hert and hynde and bul and do.  
 hadde his dwellyng as po besett.  
 Of puleon vpon ye heft.  
 Wher of was yanne mochel speche.  
 per hay chiro pis child to teche.  
 What tyme he was of twelue yer age.  
 Wher of to maken his corage.  
 ye more hardy by oper weie.  
 In ye forest to hunte and pleye.  
 Whan pat achille walke wolde.  
 Centaurus bad pat he ne holde.  
 After no bestomake his chus.  
 Whiche wolde fleu out of his place.  
 And bucke and do. and herte. and hynde.  
 Wyf which he may no weie fynde.

For po pat wolde him wyf stonde.  
 per scholde he wyf his darre on honde.  
 vpon ye Tigre and ye Leon.  
 Dourchace and take his veneson.  
 As to a knyght is accordant.  
 And per vpon a couenant.  
 pis chiro wyf Achilles sette.  
 pat euery day wyf outen sette.  
 he sholde such a cruel beste.  
 Of leen or wounden at ye lette.  
 So pat he myhte a token bringe.  
 Of blis vpon his hom comyng.  
 And yus of pat chiro hym tauhte.  
 Achilles such an herte tauhte.  
 pat he no more a Leon dradde.  
 Whan he his dart on honde hadde.  
 pan if a Leon were an asse.  
 And pat hay mad hym for to passe.  
 Alle opre knyghtes of his dede.  
 Whan it cam to ye grette uede.  
 As it was afterward wel knolde.  
 To yus myf sone poss myht knolde.  
 pat ye corage of hardiesse.  
 is of knyghthode ye prowlsece.  
 Which is to loue sufficient.  
 A boue all ye remenant.  
 pat vnto lones coure pour sue.  
 pat who pat wole no sloupe eschue.  
 vpon knyghthode et nouht trauaile.  
 Not what loue him sholde auaille.  
 For euery labour axep whi.  
 Of som reward wher of pat.  
 ensample coupe telle ynoue.  
 Of hem pat toward lobe drolle.  
 He olde dayes as pei sholde.  
 Wyf fader per of hiece y wolle.  
 Wyf sone it is wel resonable.  
 In place which is honourable.  
 If pat a man his herte sette.  
 pat he pan for no sloupe lette.  
 To do what longer to manhede.  
 For if you wolt ye lokes rede.  
 Of lancelot and oper mo.  
 per miht you seel how it was po.  
 Of arines for ye wold atteigne.  
 To loue loue whiche wyf oute peyne.  
 may nouht be gete of ydelnesse.  
 And pat I take to witness.  
 An old cronynge in special.  
 pe whiche in to memorial.  
 is write for his lones sake.  
 How pat a knyght shal vnder take.  
**¶** *He dicit qd miles p usqu anno  
 ris amplexu dignus efficitur e-  
 uentus bellicos Victoriois amplex-  
 uer debet. Et narrat qualiter her-  
 cules et achelous de ianuo calidum*





*Regis filiam singulare duellum ad  
vincem inuenit cui? Victor Hercu-  
les existens armoz inuis amore  
virtutis laudabiliter conquestauit.*

**F**her was a kyng which deues,  
was hote and he vnder his pes,  
held Calidoyne in his Empire.  
And hadde a doughter Deianire,  
men wyte in yllke tyme noon.  
So fair a wyht as she was on.  
And as she was a lusty wyht.  
Fyt so was yume a noble knyght.  
To whom mercurius fader was.  
his knyght pe two pilers of bras.  
pe whiche hit a man may funder  
sette by in pe desert of ynde.  
pat was yis wyrti Hercules.  
Whos name shal ben endeles.  
for pe merueilleles whiche he brouhte.  
his hercules pe loue souhte.  
Of Deianire and of his prync.  
So to hure fader which was kyng.  
he spak toucheunde of marriage.  
pe kyng knolynge his hie langage.  
And draide also his myhtes sterue.  
To him ne dorste his doughter weue.  
And napeles pis he him seide.  
How Achelous er he ferde preide.  
To wedde hure and in acord.  
pel stode as it was of record.  
Bot for al pat pis he hym grauntey.  
pat which of hem pat oper dauntey.  
In armes she hym sholde take.  
And pat pe kyng shay vnder take.  
pis Achelous was a geant.  
A soubtil man and deceyuant.  
Which purgh manyz and forcerie.  
coupe ut pe world of trecherie.  
And whan pat he yis tale herde.  
How vpon pat pe kyng ansuerde.  
Wyt Hercules he moste feiste.  
Be trusty nouht vpon his fleiste.  
Al ony whan it comy to nede.  
Bot pat whiche boidey alle drede.  
And eueri noble herce stery.  
pe loue pat no list forberay.  
for his lady whom he desiray.  
Wyt hardiesce his herce ferey.  
And sende hym word wyoute faile.  
pat he wole take pe bataille.  
pei setten day pel chosen felde.  
pe knyghtes couered vnder shield.  
To gedre come at tyme set.  
And eche is wy oper mot.  
It felt pel foushten bope afofe.  
per was no ston per was no rote.  
Which myhte setten hem pe weie.

Bot att was boide and take a weie.  
pei smeten strokes but a felde.  
for hercules whiche wold shalbe.  
his gret strengye as for pe honos.  
He stert vpon hym al at ones.  
And caust hym in his armes stronge.  
his geant wot he may not longe.  
Endure vnder so harde bondes.  
And pouhte he wold out of hys hondes.  
He flehte in som manere asape.  
And as he coupe him self for schape.  
In liknesse of an edre he slepte.  
Out of his hond and fory he slepte.  
And ofte as he pat feinte wole.  
He tomyer him in to a bole.  
A gan to belde of such a sou.  
As pouh pe world sholde all go dw.  
pe ground he sporny and he tynsey.  
his large hornes he auancey.  
And set hem here and yere a bout.  
Bot he whiche stant of hym no doute.  
A wyrti wel whan pat he cam.  
And hym be bope hornes nam.  
And att at ones he hym caust.  
So to pe ground and hiel hym faste.  
pat he no myhte wy no fleiste.  
Out of his hond gret out of heiste.  
Til he was ouercome and volde.  
And Hercules hay what he wold.  
pe kyng hym grauntey to fulfille.  
his axing at his ouhile wille.  
And she for whom he hadde serued.  
Hure pouht he hay hure wel deserued.  
And pis wyrti gret decerte of armes.  
he whan him for to ligge in armes.  
As he whiche hay it dere aboute.  
for oper wise scholde he nouht.  
*Nota de pantaflia Amazonie fe-  
mina que hectoris amore colligata  
contra prium Achillis filium apud  
Troiam arma ferre etiam psonalit  
non recusant.*  
And ouer pis if you wolt here.  
vpon fuythod in pis matere.  
How loue and armes ben aqueynted.  
A man may se bope write and perynted.  
So ferfor pat pantafile.  
Whiche was pe aldecne of feminine.  
The loue of Hector for to seche.  
And for ponour of armes eke.  
To Troie cam wy fere and schield.  
And vod here selue in to pe felde.  
Wyt maidenec armed al apoute.  
In rescousse of pe town a bout.  
Which wylt pe Gregois was de Lorn.  
*Nota qualis philemeus pe mi-  
nac famam a finibz terre in dese-*



Of manhode and of gentileſſe.  
 For ye gentiles ben moſt deſired.  
**Whic** dicte qd generoſi in amore  
 cauſa ſepius pferuntur. Sup que  
 rit Amans. quid ſit generoſitas. cu  
 ius veritatem queſtionis Confefſor  
 p ſingula diſſoluit. Amans  
 y fader bot q Were enſpired.  
 prough ſore of yoll q Bot no Woe.  
 What gentileſſe is for to ſeie.  
 Wher of to telle I ye beſeche.  
**Th**e ground my ſone for to ſeche.  
 ypon his diſſinacion.  
 The Worldees conſtitucion.  
 Hay ſet the name of gentileſſe.  
 ypon ye fortune of Richeſſe.  
 Which of Long tyme is falle in age.  
 yanne is aman of his language.  
 After ye forme as pou myght here.  
 Bot no yllig after ye matere.  
 For Who pat reſon vnder ſtonde.  
 ypon richereſſe may nouht ſtonde.  
 For pat is yung Which fauley ofte.  
 For he pat ſtant to day a poſte.  
 And all ye World hay in his Wones.  
 To morre he fauley all at ones.  
 Out of Richeſſe in to pouerte.  
 So pat per of is no decerte.  
 Which gentileſſe maky a byde.  
 And for to loke an oyer ſide.  
 Hold pat a gentil man is bore.  
 Adam ye Whiche al Was to fore.  
 Wyf Eue his Wyf as of hem tbo.  
 Al Was aliche gentyl w.  
 So pat of generation.  
 To make declaracion.  
 per may no gentileſſe be.  
 For to ye reſon if we ſe.  
 Of mannes berpe ye meſure.  
 It is ſo comoun to nature.  
 pat it yeney eueri man aliche.  
 As wel to pouere as to riche.  
 For naked rei ben bore bope.  
 The Lord no more hay for to clope.  
 As of hym ſelf pat ilke wolbe.  
 yan hay ye pouereſt of ye rolbe.  
 And Whan rei ſhulle bope paſſe.  
 I not of hem Which hay ye laſſe.  
 Of Worldees good but yit of charne.  
 ye Lord is more for to charne.  
 Whan god ſhal his accomptes here.  
 For he hay had hiſe Luſtes here.  
**Omnes quidem ad vnu fine tendi**  
**mus ſed diuerſo tramite.**  
 Bot of ye body pat ſhal deie.  
 Al pouh per be diuerſe Weie.  
 To dep yit is per bot on ende.



**T**o Whiche pat every man shal stonde.  
As wel pe better as pe Lord.  
Of o nature of on acord.  
She Whicheoure Eldemoder is.  
pe erpe. bope pat and pis.  
Receyver and aliche deuourey.  
pat she to nouper part fauourey.  
So wor I no ying after kynde.  
Wher I may gentyllesse fynde.  
For Lacke of Vertu Lackey grace.  
Wher of richesse in many place.  
Whan men Wene best to stonde.  
Al sodeynly gooy out of honde.  
For Vertu set in pe corage.  
per may no worlde be so saunge.  
Whiche myht it take and don a weie.  
Til Whanne pat pe body deye.  
And panne he shal be riched so.  
pat it shal faile neuere mo.  
So may pat wel be gentyllesse.  
Whiche yuey so gret a siberlesse.  
ffor after pe condicion.  
Of resonable entencion.  
pe Whiche out of pe soule growey.  
And pe Vertu sit vice knouey.  
Wher of a man pe vice eschuey.  
Wyn oute Louye and Vertu suiey.  
pat is verray gentil man.  
And no ying elles Whiche he can.  
re Whiche he hay ne Whiche he may.  
For for al pat yit nob a day.  
In Loues Court to taken hede.  
pe pouere Vertu shal not spede.  
Where pat pe riche vice wolbey.  
ffor fiede it is pat Loue alowbey.  
pe gentil man Wyn oute good.  
pouh his condicion be good.  
For if a man of bope tibe.  
Be rithe and Vertuous also.  
pan is he wel pe more wozy.  
For yet to put hym self fory.  
he mozte don his besynesse.  
ffor noblyer good ne gentyllesse.  
Wai helpen hym Whiche ydel be.  
**G**ot who pat Wole in his degre.  
Trauaile so as it be longey.  
It happye ofte pat he founey.  
Worschipe and ofe bope tibe.  
ffor euey yit it hay be so.  
pat Loue honest in sondry weie.  
Profitoy for it doy a weye.  
pe vice. and as pe boles seyn.  
It maky curtesy of vileyn.  
And to pe collyard hardiesce.  
It yuey so pat verrey prouesce.  
It caused vpon Loues reule.  
To him pat can manhode reule.

**A**nd ek to lhard pe Woman hede.  
Who pat per of Wole taken hede.  
ffor pei pe better affaired be.  
In euey ying as men may se.  
ffor Loue hay eile his lystes grene.  
In gentil folk as it is sene.  
Whiche ying per may no fynde areste.  
Irolbe pat per is no beste.  
If he Wyn Loue sholde a queynte.  
pat he ne Wold make it queynte.  
As for pe While pat it laste.  
And yus I conclude at pe laste.  
pat pei ben ydel as me seme.  
Whiche vnto ying pat Loue seme.  
ffor Louen pat pei sholden do.  
**A**nd ouer pis my sone also. *Confessor.*  
*Tota de amore caritatis ubi dicit.*  
*Qui non diligit manet in morte.*  
**A**fter pe Vertu moral eke.  
To speke of Loue if I shal seke.  
Among pe holy boles wise.  
I fynde I write in such a wise.  
Who Louey nouht is here as ded.  
ffor Loue aboue alle oper is hed.  
Whiche hay pe Vertus for to lede.  
Of alle pat vnto mannes dede.  
Belouey. for of ydel shipe.  
He hascey alle felaschipe.  
ffor stowpe is euey to despise.  
Whiche in desdem hay all apprise.  
And pat acordy nouht to man.  
ffor he pat Wit and reson can.  
It sit hym wel pat he trauaile.  
vpon som ying pat myht auale.  
ffor ydel schip is nouht comended.  
For euey talbe it hay defended.  
And in ensample per vpon.  
**T**he noble Wise Salomon.  
Whiche hadde of euey ying insyte.  
Seip as pe briddes to pe fleyte.  
Ben made. so pe man is bore.  
To Labour Whiche is nouht forbore.  
To hem pat penken for to pryue.  
ffor we Whiche are now alyue.  
Of hem pat bes Whilom were  
*Plus. Quicunq; scripta sunt ad*  
*mundum doctum scripta sunt.*  
Alis Wel in scole as elles where.  
Wolde euery ensample take.  
pat if it were now to make.  
ying Whiche pat pei ferst fouden oute.  
It sholde nouht be brouht aboute.  
Here lynes panne were longe.  
Here Wittes grete here myhtes stronge.  
Here hertes ful of besynesse.  
Wher of pe Worlde rednesse.  
In body bope and in corage.



Stant euere upon his auantage.  
 And for to dralbe in to memoire.  
 Hine names bope and here hystoie.  
 Upon pe vertu of here dede.  
 In sondri bokes you myght rede.  
**E**xpediunt manibz labor vt de co-  
 tidianis. Actibz ac vita sincere pos-  
 sit homo. Sz qui doctrine causa fer-  
 mente labores. preualentz in p-  
 petuata parat. Cinc loquitur co-  
 tra ociosos quoscuqz z maxime con-  
 tra istos qui excellentis prudentie in-  
 geniu habentes absqz fructu opū  
 torpescent. Et ponit exemplum  
 de diligencia pdecessoz qui ad totius  
 humani genis doctrina z auxillu  
 suis continuis laboribz z studiis  
 qd mediante diuina artes z scien-  
 tias pmutuo inuenerunt.  
**E**f euery wisdom ye parfit.  
 Ye hure god of his spirit.  
 Pat to ye men in erpe here.  
 Upon ye forme and ye matere.  
 Of pat he wolde make hem wise.  
 And rus cam in ye ferste apprise.  
 Of bokes and of alle gode.  
 purgh hem pat wisdom vnderstode.  
 Ye lore which to hem was yene.  
 Wher of yese opre pat noblyue.  
 Sen euery day to lerne nobe.  
 Bot er ye tyme pat men helde.  
 And pat ye labour forp it brouhte.  
 per was no corn pouh menit souhte.  
 In noon of alle ye feldes oute.  
 And er ye wisdom cam aboute.  
 Of hem pat ferst ye bokes write.  
 pis may wel euery wis man wite.  
 per was gret labour eke also.  
 pus was non ydel of ye tho.  
 pat on ye plough hay vnder take.  
 Wip labour which ye hond hay take.  
 pat oper took to faldie and muse.  
 As he which wolde nouht refuse.  
 ye labour of hise wites alle.  
 And in pis wise it is besulle.  
 Of labour which pat per begonne.  
 We be now tauht of pat we bonne.  
 Here besinesse is yit so sene.  
 pat it stant euere aliche grene.  
 Al be it so ye body deie.  
 ye name of hem shal neuere a beie.  
 In ye croniques as I fynde.  
 Chan whos labour is yit in mynde.  
 Was he which ferst ye letters fond.  
 And wrot in hebreu wip his hond.  
 Of naturel philosophie.  
 He fond ferst also ye cleergie.

**Q**admus re lettres of Gregoys.  
 ferst made upon his ouhne choys.  
**O**heges of ying which schal besulle.  
 ye was ye ferste auguure of alle.  
 And philomen by ye dysant.  
 fond to destrue ye corage.  
**C**ladus Eldras and Sulprices.  
 Tormegis Pandulf ffrigidilles.  
 menander Ephiloquozus.  
 Solus Pandas and Josephus.  
 ye ferste were of enditours.  
 Of olde croniques and eke auctours.  
 And herodot in his scienc.  
 Of metre of ryme and of cadence.  
 ye ferste was of which men note.  
 And of musiqz also ye note.  
 In mannes boys of softe or shupe.  
 That fond iulab and of ye harpe.  
 ye myrie sound which is to like.  
 pat fond Doulus forp wip phisqz.  
 Senis fond ferst ye pourtreiture.  
 And promothens ye sculpture.  
 A stel what forme pat hem pouhte.  
 ye resemblance anon per wrouhte.  
 Iubal in yren and in stel.  
 fond first ye forge z wrouht it wel.  
 And iadad as sen ye boke.  
 ferst made net and fischees took.  
 Of honymy eke he fond ye chace.  
 Which now is knothe in many place.  
 And tence of cloy wip corde and stake.  
 he sette vp ferste and dede it make.  
 Heronius of of cokerie.  
 ferst made ye delicacie.  
**C**he craftmanerie of wolfe fond.  
 And made cloy wip hure ouhne hond.  
 And delbora made it of lyne.  
 yomen weren of gret engyn.  
**E**t ying which yene ye mete z dryn.  
 And dop ye laborer to wynt.  
 To tild lond and sette dynes.  
 Wher of ye cornes and ye dynes.  
 Sen sustenance to man fynde.  
 In olde bokes as I fynde.  
 Saturnus of his olde wit.  
 hay founde first and more yit.  
 Of chapmanhede he fond ye weie.  
 And eke to conue ye monie.  
 Of sondry metal as it is.  
 he was ye ferste man of pis.  
 Bot hold pat metal am a place.  
 purgh mannes wit and golles gra.  
 ye ource of philosophie wise.  
 Controueneden de sondri wise.  
 ferst for to gete it out of myne.  
 And after for to tre and fyne.  
 z tota de Alconia.



**E**so wyv gret diligence.  
 For founden yllke experience.  
 Whiche cleped is Alconomie.  
 Wher of ye siluer multiplie.  
 For made and eke ye gold also.  
 And for to telle how it is so.  
 Of bodies seuene in special.  
 Wyv foure spiritz ioynt wyv al.  
 Stant ye substance of yis matere.  
 Ye bodres whiche I speke of here.  
 Of ye planetes ben begonne.  
 Ye gold is tyled to ye soune.  
 Ye monye of siluer hap his part.  
 And yven pat stant vpon mart.  
 Ye led after Saturne growey.  
 And subter ye bras bestolley.  
 The copre set is to Venus.  
 And to his part mercurius.  
 Hay ye quik siluer as it fallay.  
 Ye whiche after ye booke in calley.  
 Is first of yllke fourme named.  
 Of spiritz whiche ben proclamed.  
 And ye spirit whiche is secounde.  
 In salarmonage is founde.  
 Ye priddy spirit Sulphur is.  
 Ye ferre flyend after yis.  
 Arcanum be name is hote.  
 Wyv blouyng and wyv fyres hote.  
 In yese ynges whiche I seie.  
 For worchen be diuerse weie.  
 For as ye philosophre tolde.  
 Of gold and siluer ye ben holde.  
 Two pryncipal extremities.  
 To whiche alle opre be degrees.  
 Of ye metalls ben accordant.  
 And so purgh fynde ressemblant.  
 For what man couye a weie take.  
 Ye rust of whiche ye woren blake.  
 And ye salour and ye hardnesse.  
 Ye sholden take ye liknesse.  
 Of gold or siluer purfely.  
 For for to worche it sikelly.  
 Betwene ye corpe and ye spirit.  
 For pat ye metall be purfite.  
 In seuene formes as it is set.  
 Of lalle and if pat on be let.  
 Ye remenant may nouht auale.  
 For opre wyse it mai nouht faile.  
 For ye be whom yis art was founde.  
 To euery poynt a certeyn bounde.  
 Orderned pat a man shal fynde.  
 Yis craft is wrouht be weye of fynde.  
 So pat yer is no fallas yme.  
 But what man pat yis weyl begyne.  
 He mot a waite at euery tyde.  
 So pat no ying be lest a fyde.  
 First of ye distillacioun.

m.  
**F**ory wyv ye congelacioun.  
 Solucioun descencioun.  
 And kepe in his entencioun.  
 Ye poynt of sublimacioun.  
 And for wyv calcinacioun.  
 Of verrey approbacioun.  
 To pat yere be fixacioun.  
 Wyv tempred hetes of ye fyr.  
 Til he ye parfit elixer.  
 Of yllke philosophres ston.  
 May gete of whiche pat mayon.  
 Of philosophres whilom write.  
 And if yowd wold ye name write.  
 Of yllke ston wyv opre tuo.  
 Whiche as ye clerkes maden yo.  
 So as ye booke it recorden.  
 The fynde of hem I shal recorden.  
*Nota de tribz Rapidibz quos phi-  
 losophi composuerunt quoz pmi  
 dicitur Lapis Vegetabilis qui sam-  
 tate conseruat. Secus dicitur La-  
 pis alalis qui membra e virgines  
 sanabiles fortificat. Tercius dicit  
 purificat in suu pferu naturali  
 uerencia deducit.*  
**T**hese olde philosophres wise.  
 Of weie of fynde in sondy wise.  
 For seones maden purgh cleargie.  
 For firste if I shal specifie.  
 Was Lapis Vegetabilis.  
 Of which ye propre vertu is.  
 To mannes hele for to serue.  
 And for to kepe and to preserue.  
 Ye body fro seknesses alle.  
 Til dey of fynde vpon him falle.  
**T**he ston secunde I ye behote.  
 Is Lapis alalis hote.  
 Ye whos vertu is ywe and couy.  
 For ere and yhe and nase and mouy.  
 Wher of a man may here and se.  
 And swelle and tiste in his degre.  
 And for to fele and for to ro.  
 It helpey a man of boye also.  
 For vites fyue he vnderfougey.  
 To kepe as it to hym belougey.  
 The priddy ston in special.  
 The name is cleped hymeral.  
 Whiche ye metalles of euery myn.  
 Attemptey til pat ye be fyn.  
 And pure hem be such a weye.  
 Til al ye filre be a weye.  
 Of rust of synke and of hardnesse.  
 And whome ye ben of such cleynesse.  
 Yis armeral so as I fynde.  
 Transformey al ye ferre fynde.  
 And make hem able to conceyne.



**I**n his vertu and to receyue.  
Hope in substance and in figure.  
Of gold and silver ye nature.  
For ye shal ben pextremities.  
To which after ye pxtremes.  
Hay euery metal his desir.  
Wip helpe and comfort of ye fyr.  
For wip ye soon as it is seid.  
Which to ye some and none is leid.  
For to ye red and to ye white.  
His ston hay powder to profite.  
It makey multiplicacion.  
Of gold and ye fixacion.  
It causey and of his habit.  
He doy ye wort to be parfit.  
Of pilke elixer which men calle.  
Alconomie which is befall.  
To hem pat whilom wen wise.  
But now it stant al ower wise.  
Ye speken fyre of pilke ston.  
But how to make it now dot non.  
After ye sope experience.  
And napeles met diligence.  
Ye setten vpon pilke dede.  
And spille more pan ye speide.  
For alwey ye fynde a lette.  
Which byngeth in pouer and dette.  
To hem pat riche were afor.  
Ye lost is had ye Lucr is Lore.  
To getten a pound ye spenden fyue.  
Not how such a craft shal prime.  
In ye maner as it is used.  
It were better be refused.  
Pan for to werchen vpon Wene.  
In ying which stant nouht as ye Wene.  
Bot nouht for ye who pat it shelle.  
Ye science of hym self is trelle.  
Vpon ye forme as it was founded.  
Wher of ye names ye be grounded.  
Of hem pat ferst it founden oute.  
And yis ye fame hop a bout.  
To such as souhten be smesse.  
Of vertu and of wormesse.  
Of whom if ye names calle.  
Thermes was on ye ferste of alle.  
To whom pis art is most applied.  
Geber p of was magnified.  
And Ozealan and Mozeu.  
Among ye which is Amoen.  
Which found and wrot a gret partie.  
Ye prating of Alconomie.  
Whos booke pleyntly as ye stonde.  
Vpon pis craft felbe vnderstonde.  
But ye to ptehem in assay.  
Per ben ful manye now a day.  
Pat buoluen luel what ye mene.  
It is nouht on to write and Wene.

*liber.*

**I**n forme of wordes ye it trote.  
But ye ye faile of ye biyete.  
For of to moche or of to lite.  
Here is algate founde a Wite.  
So pat ye folde nouht ye line.  
Of ye parfit medecyne.  
Which grounded is vpon nature.  
But ye pat Writen ye scripture.  
Of geber Avabee and of Caldee.  
Here were of such auctorite.  
Pat ye ferst founden out ye weie.  
Of al pat pou hast herd me seie.  
Wher of ye Croniqz of here Lore.  
Shal stonde in pris for euere more.  
Bot toward oure marches here.  
Of ye Latyn if Wolt here.  
Of hem pat whilom vertuous.  
Were and per to laborious.  
Carmente made of hire engyn.  
Ye ferste Lettres of Latyn.  
Of which ye tunge Romeyn cam.  
Wher of pat Aristarchus nam.  
For wip Donat and Syndymus.  
The ferste reule of scole and pus.  
How pat Latyn shal be compoed.  
And in what wyse it shal be soned.  
Pat euery word in his degre.  
Shal stonde vpon congruite.  
And yis cyme at some also.  
Was Tullius wip Cethero.  
Pat Writen vpon rectoriqz.  
How pat men shal ye wordes pite.  
After ye forme of eloquence.  
Which is men sch a gret prudence.  
And after pat out of hebreu.  
Jerom which ye Langage Euell.  
Ye bible in which ye lalle is clo sed.  
In to Latyn he hay transposed.  
And many an ower Writen eke.  
Out of Caldee Arabe and Greeke.  
Wip gret labour ye boke wyse.  
Translateden and ower wyse.  
Ye Latyn of hem self also.  
Here studie and yis cyme so.  
Wip gret traualle of scole toke.  
In sondry forme for to boke.  
Pat we may take here euidences.  
Vpon ye Lore of ye sciences.  
Of craftes bope and cleuene.  
Among ye which in poesie.  
To ye Louers Quide Wrot.  
And tauht if Loue be to hot.  
In what manere it sholde a be.  
For ye my sone if pat pat fiele.  
Pat Loue bring ye to Lore. *fessoz*  
Behold Quide and take his Lore.  
My fader if ye mihte speide. *Amant*



My loue. I wolde here bores rede,  
And if yei teche to restyngue,  
My loue it were an ydel perye.  
To leue a ying which may not be.  
For rich vnto ye greue tre.  
If pat men toke his rote a weye.  
Fyt so myn heret sholde deye.  
If pat my loue be wyf dralbe.  
Wher of toucheude vnto pis salbe.  
Ther is but ony to puryfye.  
My loue and ydel schipe eschipe.  
A good sone sop to seie. *confessor.*  
If per be sikev eny weie.  
To loue you hast seid ye beste.  
For who pat wold haue al his reste.  
And do no trauail at ye nede.  
It is no reson pat he pedy.  
In loues cause for to wryne.  
For he which dur no ying begyime.  
Not what ying he sholde achene.  
Bot ouer pis you shalt be leue.  
So as it sit ye wel to knolle.  
pat pere ben oper vices folle.  
Whiche vnto loue don gret lette.  
If wold ym heret vpon hem sette.  
*Perdit homo causa lingue sua  
in somno. Et quasi diuidit  
sua mortis habet. Et in amore  
vigilat. Quod hec diuiliant.  
obsequium thalamis ferit vigilata  
suis. Quid loquitur de somno  
lencia que accidia canariaria dea  
est cui natura semimortua ali  
cui negotij vigilias obseruare  
sopori ferro corpore recusat vnde  
quatinus amorem concebit. Et  
fessor amant diligencius apponit.*  
**S**o wold ye wolbe progeme.  
per is yet on of compaignie.  
And he is cleped somnolence.  
Whiche doo to soup his reuerence.  
As he which is his chaubir leyn.  
pat many an hundred tyme hap leyn.  
To sepe when he sholde wake.  
He hap wyf loue twibes take.  
pat wake who so wake wole.  
If he may couche a down his bile.  
He hap al wolled what him liste.  
pat ofte he gop to bedde dukeste.  
And seip pat for no druerie.  
he wol not leue his slouardie.  
for pouh no man it wole a lolle.  
To sepe leuere pan to wolbe.  
Is his manere and pus on nyhtes.  
Whan pat he seip ye lusti knyhtes.  
Fenelen where pose women are.  
A wey he skulley as an hare.

And gop to bedde and leip him softe.  
And of his sloupe he dremey ofte.  
Holl pat he staley in ye mire.  
And holl he staley by ye fyre.  
And clalbey on his bare schankes.  
And holl he chymbey vpon ye bankes.  
And fulley in to plades depe.  
Bot panne who so take kepe.  
Whanne he is falle in such a drem.  
Fyt as a schip a yem ye streem.  
The router wyf a sepy nyse.  
And brustley as a monkes froyse.  
Whan it is proude in to ye panne.  
And oper while selde whanne.  
pat he may dreme a lusty sweene.  
Hun penker as pouh he were in heuene.  
And as ye world were holly his.  
And panne he speker of pat and pis.  
And maky his expositioun.  
After ye disposicioun.  
Of pat he wolde and in such wise.  
He doo to loue al his prync.  
Not what yonk he schal deserue.  
Bot sone if wold wold loue serue.  
I wold pat you do nowht so.  
A good fader certes no.  
I hadde leuere be my trolle.  
Er q were sette on such a folle.  
And bere such a sepy suolte.  
Sepe yhen of myn hed were oute.  
for me were beate fully deye.  
pan q of such a slouardie.  
hadde eny name god me shelde.  
for whan my moder was wyf childe.  
And I lay in here wombe clos.  
I wold vaper attropos.  
Which is goddesse of all dey.  
A non as I hadde eny brep.  
me hadde fro my moder cast.  
Bot I am now no ying a hase.  
I yonke god for lacheis.  
Ire cloto which here felalbe is.  
me shopen no such destine.  
Whan yei at my natyuite.  
my weordes setten as yei wolde.  
Bot yei me shopen pat I sholde.  
Eschue of seep ye trauandise.  
So pat I hope in such a wise.  
To loue for to ben excused.  
pat I no somnolence haue vfed.  
for certes fader Genus.  
yt in to now it hap be pus.  
At alle tyme if it be felle.  
So pat I myht come and dwelle.  
In place where my lady were.  
I was nouht sloupe ne sepy pere.  
for pan q dat wel vnder take.



That Whanne hir list on nyght take,  
In Chambr as to karole and amice.  
me penkeþ I may me more auance,  
þat I may gon vpon hire hond.  
þanne þat I wolme a þynges londe,  
for Whanne I may here hond beþynde.  
Wip such a gladnesse I daunce & skipe.  
me penkeþ I touche nouht þe floze.  
þe which rennep on þe moze. decr.  
þe panne nouht so lichte as I.  
So moþe þe witten wel þer by.  
þat for þe tyme ſlep I hure.  
And Whan it fulleþ oþer gate.  
So þat it like hire nouht to daunce.  
But on þe dees to caſte a chaunce.  
Or axe of Love ſom demaunde.  
Or elles þat hir liſt comaunde.  
To rede and here of Troylus.  
Fyght as ſhe wolde or ſo or þus.  
I am al redy to conſente.  
And if ſo is þat may hente.  
Som tyme among a good reſur.  
So as I dar of my deſir.  
I telle a part but Whanne I prey.  
A noon ſhe biddeþ me go my weye.  
And ſey it is fer in þe nyght.  
And I ſwere it is euen lichte.  
Bot as it fulleþ at þe laſte.  
þer may no worldes joye laſte.  
So mot I nedes ſto here wende.  
And of my wathe make an ende.  
And if ſhe panne hede hede toke.  
Holt þitoullych on hire I love.  
Whanne þat I ſchal my leue take.  
Hure ouhte of mercy for to ſake.  
Hure daunger which ſey eue nay.  
But he ſey often haue good day.  
þat þe is for to take his leue.  
þer fore Whil I may beleue.  
I tariſor þe nyght a loun.  
for it is nouht on me a loun.  
To ſlep þat I ſo ſone go.  
þat þat I mote alhure ſo.  
And þan I bidde god here ſe.  
And ſo doun kneching on my kne.  
I take leue. and if I ſhal.  
I kiſſe hire and go forþ wip al.  
And oþer While if þat I doze.  
Er I come fully to þe doze.  
I come a yen and feryne a þing.  
þat þouh I hadde loſt a rying.  
Or ſom what elles for I wolde.  
Kiſſe here of t ſoncs if I ſholde.  
But ſeelden is þat I ſo ſpede.  
And Whanne I ſe þat I mot nede.  
Depart. and I departe þanne.  
Wip al myn herce I curſe and banne.

That euere ſlep was mad for þe.  
for as me penkeþ I moſt drihe.  
Wip outen ſlep to wakou euere.  
So þat I ſholde nouht diſſeuere.  
fro hire in Whom is al my liſt.  
And þanne I curſe alſo þe nyght.  
Wip al þe wil of my corage.  
And ſay a þey þou blaſe þyng.  
Which of þi derke cloude face.  
maketh al þe worldes light deſace.  
And cauſe ſe þu to ſlep a weye.  
þe which I mot go now a weye.  
Out of my Lady compaignie.  
I ſlep nyght I þe deſte.  
And wolde þat þou ſey in preſſe.  
Wip proſerpyne þe goddeſſe.  
And Wip þe lute þe helle þyng.  
for til I ſe þe dapes ſpyng.  
I ſete ſlep nouht at a ryſſe.  
And Wip þat word I ſike and Wiſſe.  
And ſere. ha Whi ne were it day.  
for þit my Lady panne I may.  
Beholde þouh I do no more.  
And eft I penke feryne more.  
To ſom man holt þe nyght doze.  
Whan he hay þyng þat nyght he ple.  
þe longe nyghtes be his ſide.  
Where as I ſaule and go biſide.  
Bot ſlep I not Wher of it ſeruey.  
Of which no man his þouh deſeruey.  
To gete hym loue in eny place.  
Bot is an hinder of his grace.  
And makþ hym ded as for a proſe.  
þit as a ſcol were ouer proſe.  
And ſo my fader in þis Wiſe.  
þe ſlep nyghtes I deſpiſe.  
And euere amides of my tale.  
I penke vpon þe nyghtyngale.  
Which ſlepeþ nouht be þere of þynde.  
for loue in hokes as I fynde.  
þus atte laſte I go to bedde.  
And þit myn herce lych to wedde.  
Wip hire where as I cam fyw.  
þouh I departe he wol nouht ſo.  
þer is no lok may ſet him oute.  
hym nedey nouht to gon aboute.  
þat þerce may þe harde wal.  
þus is he Wip here ouer al.  
þat be hire leſt or be hire lop.  
In to hire bed myn herce moþ.  
And ſoftly caſþ hire in his arm.  
And ſeþer holt þat ſhe is þam.  
And Wiſſer þat his body were.  
To ſiele þat he ſeþer þere.  
And þus my ſelfe I tozmente.  
þat þat þe deſte ſlep me houte.  
But panne be a þouſand ſore.



Wel more pan I. Thus to fore.  
 I am tormentid in my slep.  
 For pat I dreine is nouht of slep.  
 For I ne penke nouht of wille.  
 For I am drechted to pe fülle.  
 Of loue pat I haue to lepe.  
 pat nold I laue I nold I wepe.  
 And nold I lese and nold I wyne.  
 And nold I ende and nold I bynne.  
 And ower while I dreine and mete.  
 pat I al one wyf hire mete.  
 And pat daunter is left behinde.  
 And panne I slepe such joye I fonde.  
 pat I ne bidde neuere a wake.  
 But after Whanne I hede take.  
 And schal arise vpon pe morwe.  
 pan is al corned in to sorwe.  
 rrouht for pe cause I schal arise.  
 For for I mete in such a wise.  
 And at pe laste I am be pouht.  
 pat al is dem and helper nouht.  
 But pat me penke be my wille.  
 I wolde haue leue and slepe stille.  
 To meten euere of such a weene.  
 For panne I hadde a slepy heuene.  
 For sone and for you tellet so. **con.**  
 A man may fonde of tyme a ho. **fessoz.**  
 pat many a weene has be corren.  
 al be it so pat som men sem.  
 pat sweneches been of no credence.  
 For for to shewe in euidence.  
 pat pei ful ofte sope pinges.  
 For othe I penke ommy wrytinges.  
 To telle a tale per vpon.  
 Which fel be olde daves gon.

**Alcione exemplum qualis sop-**  
**ma puosice veritatis quaz certu**  
**dine figurant. Et narrat qd ad**  
**celix Rex Troiane p reformaco**  
**frans sui Dedalionis in anapiae**  
**transformatu peregre pfiatens**  
**in mari longius a patria diuisus**  
**fuerat. Iuno miteris in dem in**  
**in sua in parcos chimere ad so**  
**miu sompny iussit quod ipse Alce-**  
**ne da Regis vxori hui rei euentu**  
**p sompna certificaret. Alceona**  
**tem pscutans corpus mariti**  
**fui ubi sup fluit? iactabatur inue-**  
**nit que pte dolore angustatu ai-**  
**apiens corpus amplectere in al-**  
**am mare sup ipm pfluit vnde**  
**du mpeti aulbox cocti in aues que**  
**adhuc Alceones dei sunt subico**  
**nuerterunt.**

This fonde I write in poesie.  
 For pe kynge of Troiane.

hadde Alceone to his wyf.  
 Which as here olwe heretis hyf.  
 hym louep. and he hadde also.  
 A boyer which was cleped io  
 Dedalion and he par cas  
 fro kynde of man for schape was.  
 In to a Goshawk of whynesse.  
 wher of pe kynge gret heuynesse.  
 Hay take. and pouht in his corage.  
 To gon vpon a peltynage.  
 In to a straunge region.  
 wher he hay his deuocion.  
 To don his sacrifice and preye.  
 If pat he mihte in eny weie.  
 Toward pe goddes fynde grace.  
 his broyeres hele to purchase.  
 So pat he mihte be reformed.  
 Of pat he hadde be transformed.  
 To his pourpos and to his ende.  
 his kynge is redy for to wende.  
 as he whiche wolde go by shipe.  
 And for to don hym felaschipe.  
 his wyf vn to pe see hym brouste.  
 wyf all here heret and hym besouste.  
 pat he pe tyme here wolde seyn.  
 whan pat he wolde come a yem.  
 wyf june he seip tuo monpes day.  
 And pus in al pe haste he may.  
 he took his leue and for he seilep.  
 wepyng and she hire self be weylep.  
 And towey hom per she cam fro.  
 For whanne pe monpes were a go.  
 pe whiche he sette of his comynge.  
 And pat she herde no tydyng.  
 per was no care for to seche.  
 wher of pe goddes to besече.  
 so she began in many wise.  
 And to juno here sacrifice.  
 A boue alle ower most she dede.  
 And for here lord she hay so bede.  
 To wite and knolwe how pat he ferde.  
 pat juno pe goddesse here herde.  
 A noon and vpon his matere.  
 she had pris hire messagere.  
 To sepes hous pat he shal wende.  
 And bidde him pat he make an ende  
 of weene. and shewen al pe cas.  
 vnto his lady how it was.  
 This prys fro pe hihe stage.  
 which vnder take hay pe message.  
 pe verry corpe dede vpon.  
 pe whiche was wonderly be gon.  
 wyf colours of diuerse helles.  
 An hundred mo pan men it knelwe.  
 pe heuene lich vn to alowe.  
 she bende and so she cam down towe.  
 pe god of slep wher pat she fond.



And pat was in a fraunge lond.  
 Which marchep vpon chymerie.  
 For yere as seip y Poete.  
 The god of slep hay mad his hous.  
 Whiche of chauce is merueilous.  
 Under an hulle yere is a caue.  
 Whiche of yre sonne may nouht haue.  
 So pat no man may knowe aright.  
 Yre poynt be eue day and nyght.  
 Yere is no fyr yere is no sparke.  
 Yere is no bore whiche may charke.  
 Wher of an yhe scholde vnschete.  
 So pat in ward yere is no lette.  
 As for to speke of pat wyf oute.  
 Yere stant no met tre nyl a bonte.  
 Wher on yere myght crolle or pie.  
 A lyte for to clepe or crye.  
 Yere is no col to crolle day.  
 Yre beste noon whiche noise may.  
 Yre hulle but all a bonte round.  
 Yere is growyng vpon yre ground.  
 Copy whiche bette yre seed of sheep.  
 Wyf ope herbes rich an hep.  
 A fülle water for yre nones.  
 Yemmyng vpon yre finale stones.  
 Whiche hille of reches yre riuere.  
 Under pat hulle in such manere.  
 Yere is whiche yere yre met appetit.  
 To slepe and yis ful of delit.  
 Slep hay his hous 2 of his couche.  
 Wyf iune his chambere if I shal couche.  
 Of hebenus pat slepy tre.  
 Yre bordes alle a bonte be.  
 And for he sholde slepe softe.  
 Vpon a fettherbed a softe.  
 He lyf wyf many a pilde of dohn.  
 Yre chambere is sturled by 2 dohn.  
 Wyf sweneues many pouland fold.  
 Yis cam iys in to his hold.  
 And to yre bed whiche is al blak.  
 She goy and yere wyf slep she spat.  
 And in yre wyf pat she was bede.  
 Yre message of iune she dede.  
 Ful ofte here wordes she rehersey.  
 Er she his slepy swes persey.  
 Wyf mochel wo but at yre laste.  
 His slombryng yhen he vp caste.  
 And seid hir pat it shal be do.  
 Wher among a pouland yo.  
 Wyf iune his hous pat slepy were.  
 In special he ches out yere.  
 Yre whiche sholden do his dede.  
 Yre first of hem so as I rede.  
 Was morpheus yre whos nature.  
 Is for to take yre figure.  
 Of what yone pat hym lyk.  
 Wher of pat he ful ofte curley.

Yre lyf whiche slepe schal be nyght.  
 And thecuse pat ope hille.  
 Whiche hay yre doys of chere sou.  
 Yre chere and yre condicioun.  
 Of eueri lyf what so it is.  
 Yre priddy sumyng after yis.  
 Is panthasas whiche may transfor.  
 Of eueri ying yre vylte forme.  
 And chaunge it in an ope brynde.  
 Vpon hem yre so as I fynde.  
 Of sweneues stant alle yapparence.  
 Whiche ope while is euidence.  
 And ope while but a jape.  
 But matheles it is so shape.  
 Pat morpheus be nyght al one.  
 Apperey in to Alceone.  
 In lyknesse of here housebonde.  
 Al naked ded vpon yre stonde.  
 And how he dreymt in special.  
 Yre ope tibe it shewen al.  
 Yre tempeste and yre blake cloude.  
 Yre wode see yre wynd lorde.  
 Al yis he mette and shen him dore.  
 Wher of pat she began to crye.  
 Slep yis a bedde yre she lay.  
 And wyf pat noise of hire affray.  
 Hir women starten vp aboute.  
 Whiche of hire lady were in doute.  
 And axen hire how pat she ferde.  
 And she vith as she shol and herde.  
 Her sweneue hay tolde hem eueri tale.  
 And yre it hassen alle wel.  
 And sen it is a to fue of gowde.  
 But til she wist how pat it stode.  
 She hay no comfort in here herte.  
 Vpon yre morthe and by she sterre.  
 And to yre see wher pat she mette.  
 Yre body lay wyf oute lette.  
 She drolle and whan pat she cam my.  
 Start ded his armes sprad the shes.  
 Here lord slepyng vpon yre waller.  
 Wher of here wytes ben wyteable.  
 And she whiche took of dey no lepe.  
 A noon for yre lepe in to yre depe.  
 And wols haue caught hym in here arm.  
 This infortune of double harm.  
 Yre goddes fro yre heuene aboue.  
 Beheld. and for yre trolle of loue.  
 Whiche in yis woful lady stode.  
 Yre hille vpon yre fulte flood.  
 Hire dreymt lord and here also.  
 Fro dey to hille torned so.  
 Pat yre were shapen in to brides.  
 Wyf iune vpon yre walde amplyde.  
 And whan she shen hire lord hymge.  
 In lyknesse of a bryd wyf iune.  
 And she was of yre same sort.



So as he miht do despoite.  
Upon ye Jone Which he hadde.  
Here Wynges bope a brod the spraddle.  
And hym so as he may suffice.  
Beclipte and lyste in such a wyse.  
As she was whilom wout to do.  
Hir Wynges for here armes also.  
She cook and for hire lippes softe.  
Hir harde blis and so ful of to.  
She fonder in here briddes forme.  
Gif pat she miht here self conforme  
To do ye plesaunce of a wif.  
As she dede in pat ower luf.  
For pouh she hadde here polver Lore.  
Here wit stood as it was to fore.  
And servey hym so as she may.  
Wher of in to ye ilke day.  
To gedre vpon ye see ye wone.  
Where many a daughter and a sone.  
yei brynren for of briddes kynde.  
For as men sholden take in mynde.  
yei Alceone ye trewe queene.  
Hir briddes wit as it is sene.  
Of Alceone ye name bere.  
To pus my sone it may ye sterve.  
Of swenees for to take kepe. **Confessor.**  
For ofte tyme a man may slepe.  
May se what after shal be tido.  
For pi it helpey at som tyde.  
A man to slepe at it belougey.  
Bot wol ye ye luf vnderfougey.  
Which is to lone appourtenaunce.  
Ye fader vpon couenant. **Confessio.**  
I dar wel make ye a wolwe. **Amatis.**  
Of all my luf pat in to now.  
Als fer as I can vnderfoude.  
yei toke I neuere slepe on honde.  
Whan it was tyme for to wake.  
For pouh myn yhe it wolde take.  
Myn herte is euere here apon.  
But napeles to speke in pleyr.  
Al ye pat I haue seid ye w here.  
Of my walkyng as ye may here.  
I touchy to my lady swete.  
For ower wise I wol be here.  
In seruante place wher I go.  
yei lust no ying to wake so.  
For whan ye women listen pleyr.  
And I here se nouht in ye weie.  
Of whom I sholde merke take.  
yei lust nouht longe for to wake.  
But if it be for pite shame.  
Of pat I wolde leschute a name.  
pat yei shulde haue cause noon.  
To seie to where goy such on.  
pat hay for Lore hie contenauce.  
And pus amoung I spryng and daunce.

And ferne lust per as noon is.  
For ofte fyre I fele me.  
Of pouht which in myn herte fulle.  
Whan it is nyht myn hede appelle.  
And pat is for I se here nouht.  
Which is ye waker of my pouht.  
And pus as tymelech as I may.  
ful of te Whanne it is brod day.  
I take of alle ye ower leue.  
And go my weie and yei beleue.  
pat seen parcas here Loues pere.  
And I go for as nouht ne were.  
On to my bed so pat allone.  
I may here linge and sihe and grone.  
And wischen all ye longe nyht.  
Til pat I se ye dayes ligh.  
I not if pat be sompno lence.  
Bot vpon your conscience.  
myn holy fader demoy ye  
yei sone I am wel pained wy ye. **Confessor.**  
Of sleep pat yei ye slumardie.  
yei nyht in Loues compaignie.  
Eschued hast and do ye peyne.  
So pat yei soule pat nouht pleyne.  
For lone vpon his lust wakende.  
yei euere and wold pat noon ende.  
were of ye longe nyhtes set.  
Wher of pat yei be war ye bet.  
To telle a tale. I am be pouht.  
Hole lone and sleep accorden nouht.  
**Hic dicit quod virgilia in amara  
tubz et no sompno lencia laudanda  
est. Et ponit exemplum de Cepha  
lo filio Phebi qui nocturno silen  
cio aurora amica sua diligencia  
us amplexatus solem et luna in  
terpellabat videlicet. qd sol in  
circulo ab oriente discedens cur  
rit cu luce sua recedare. Et qd  
luna spora sua longissima orbe  
circulens noctem continuaret ita  
ut quid Cephalus quiplexibz au  
rore voluit pugnare dies illa  
luciferec suis delictis adqui scere  
diuino punire dignaretur.**  
**H**ere lone who so lust to wake.  
yei nyht he may ensample take.  
Of Cephalus whan pat he lay.  
wy aurora pat swete may.  
In armes all ye longe nyht.  
But whan it drowd to ward ye ligh.  
pat he wy linge his herte sihe.  
yei day which was a morde in he.  
A noon on to ye sone he preyed.  
For lust of lone and pus he seide.  
Phobus which ye dayes ligh.  
Gouernest til pat it be nyht.



*Handwritten initial 'H' in blue ink.*

*Libec.*

*Handwritten flourish in blue ink.*

And gladdest every creature.  
 After ye lalbe of pi nature.  
 But nyteles per is a ring.  
 Which only to ye knygthechynge.  
 Belonges as in prynceto.  
 To loue and to his duete.  
 Which assey nouht to ben apert.  
 But in silens and in couert.  
 Desyre for to be be shadde.  
 And thus whan pat pi lyht is faded.  
 And vesper shellyp hym a losse.  
 And pat ye lyht is lounge & softe.  
 Under ye clowdes derke and stille.  
 ym hay pis ring most of his wille.  
 for pi vn to pi myhtes shio.  
 As you which art ye dapes yhe.  
 Of loue and myht no counseil hide.  
 ypon pis derke nyhtes tyde.  
 Wy all myn herte i ye beseeche.  
 pat i plesance myht seche.  
 Wy here which lich in myn armes.  
 Wy dralbe ye bumer of ym armes.  
 And let pi lyhtes ben vylborne.  
 And in pi signe of capricorne.  
 ye hous appropied to saturne.  
 yzere pat poli wolt sojorne.  
 wher ben ye nyhtes derke and lounge.  
 for i my louehime vnderfonge.  
 which ly here by my side naked.  
 As she which wolde ben a waked.  
 And me lust no ping for to slepe.  
 So were it good to take slepe.  
 ynow at pis nede of my pleyere.  
 And pat ye like for to stete.  
 Thi firy carre and so ordeyne.  
 pat you pi swyfte hors resteyne.  
 Colde vnder erpe in vandenit.  
 pat yei tolwardes orient.  
 Becerle go ye lounge weye.  
 And eke to ye drame i preyre.  
 which cleped art of pi holdesse.  
 ye nyhtes mone and ye goddesse.  
 pat you to me be gracious.  
 And in canore ym ouhne hous.  
 A yen i thebus in opost.  
 Scoude all pis tyme and of delit.  
 Behold Venus wy a glad yhe.  
 for panne vpon asynoune.  
 Of duhe constellation.  
 you makest proliferation.  
 And dost pat pi children ben gete.  
 which grace if i myhtes gete.  
 Wy al myn herte i wolde serue.  
 Be nyht and in sigle obserue.  
 To yus pis lysti Cephalus. *et esser.*  
 yzende vn to thebe & to thebus.  
 ye lyht in lounge for to dralbe.

So pat he myht do ye lalbe.  
 In pilke point of Loues heste.  
 which cleped is ye nyhtes feste.  
 Wy out slep or slumardie.  
 which Venus out of compaignie.  
 Hay putte a weie pilke same.  
 which lustles fer from alle game.  
 In chambre dop ful ofte wy.  
 A bedde whanne it falley so.  
 That loue sholde be adayted.  
 But sloupe which is yuel a fured.  
 Wy slep hay magd his retenu.  
 pat what ymngis to loue due.  
 Of alle his dette he paye non.  
 he wot nouht how ye nyht is gon.  
 ye hold ye day is come a bouce.  
 Bot only for to slepe and rouse.  
 Ta hyhe luydday pat he arise.  
 Bot delayus dede oper wise.  
 As you my sone hast herd aboue.  
 A fader who pat hay his loue.  
 A bedde naked by his side. *Amans.*  
 And wolde pame hys phen hie.  
 Wy slep i not what man is he.  
 Bot certes as touchend of me.  
 pat sel me neuere yit er his.  
 Bot byer while whan so is.  
 pat i may caache slep on honde.  
 Dignende al one panne i fonde.  
 To dreame a mery sbeuente er day.  
 And if so fulle pat i may.  
 ay pouht wy such a weuene plese.  
 ye penke i am som del in ease.  
 for i non oper comfort haue.  
 So nedey nouht pat i shal craue.  
 ye somes carre for to tarie.  
 ye yit ye mone pat she caue.  
 hure cours a lounge vpon ye heuene.  
 for i am nouht ye more in euene.  
 Tolwardes loue in no deare.  
 Bot in my slep yit panne i se.  
 somwhat in sbeuene of pat me lise.  
 which afterward myn herte entrey.  
 whan pat i fynde it oper wise.  
 So wot i nouht of what seruise.  
 pat slep to mannes ese dop.  
 A y sone certes you seist soy. *con.*  
 Bot only pat it helpes fynde. *fess.*  
 Som tyme in phisic as i fynde.  
 whanne it is take by mesure.  
 Bot he which can not slep mesure.  
 ypon ye reule as it belounges.  
 ful ofte of sodeyn chance it founges.  
 Such infortune pat him greuey.  
 Bot who yese olde bokes reuey.  
 Of sompnolense how it is wryte.  
 yet may a man ye sope wite.



ffat he wolde ensample take.  
pat oper while is good to wake.  
Wherof a tale in poeie.  
I penke for to speche.

*Quic loquitur in amoris causa  
in istos qui sompnolencie dedit ca  
que seruare tenentur amittit. Et  
narrat qd ad yu puella pulcher  
ma a iulione in vacam entuffor  
mata et in angli custodia sic de  
posita fuisset supueniens mercu  
rius angli dominicem occidit z  
ipam vacam a pastura rapiens  
quo voluit sciam pduxit.*

**C**orde teller in his salves.  
Howe Iuliter by olde salves.  
I say be a mayde whiche yo.  
Was cloyed wherof yaguno.  
His wyf was drope and yu goddesse.  
Of hem pat turnen yu liffnesse.  
In to a colde to gon per oure.  
ye large felde al aboute.  
And gece here mete ypon ye grene.  
And yer ypon ye hie queene.  
Betoke here floures for to kepe.  
for he was filden wout to kepe.  
And yit he hadde an hundred yhen.  
And all aliche wel yel shen.  
I tolde herke hold pat he was beguiled  
mercurie which was al affiled.  
his colde to feele he cam disguised.  
And hadde a pipe wel deuised.  
ypon ye notes of musiqz.  
Wer of he mihte his eres like.  
And ouer pat he hadde affited.  
his lufy tales and a wayted.  
his tyme and yus in to ye feld.  
he cam wher floures he beheld.  
Wyt yo. whiche beside hym wente.  
Wyt pat his pipe on honde hente.  
And gan to pipe in his maner.  
yngt which was sepy for to here.  
And in his pypynge euer anon.  
he tolde hym such a lusti song.  
pat he yu fool hap brouht a sepe.  
yere was non yhe mihte kepe.  
his hed which mercurie of smot.  
And for yu al a noon foot hoot.  
he feal ye colde which thurus kepe.  
And al yu felt for pat he sepe.  
ensample it was to many mo.  
pat mochel sepe doy ofte wo.  
for whanne it is tyme for to wake.  
for if a man yu vice take.  
in sompnolence and hym delite.  
men sholde ypon his dore write.  
his epitaph as on his graue.

for he to spille and nouht to saue.  
so shape as yowh he were ded.  
for yu my sonne heue yu ym hed.  
And lat no slep ym yhe engue.  
for whanne it is to resoh due.  
y fader as touchyng of yu.  
pat so as yu tolde it is.  
pat ofte a bedde whanne y shulde.  
I may nouht sepe yowh y wolde.  
for loue is euer faste by me.  
which takey noon heed of due tyme.  
for whanne y shal myn yhen close.  
A noon my herte he wole opose.  
And holde his scole in such a wise.  
at it be day pat y aryse.  
pat feld it is whan pat y sepe.  
And yus fyo sompnolence y sepe.  
myn yhe. and for yu if yu be.  
dout elles more in yis deye.

*Quod accepit for yu my sonne yu. Confessor.  
for stowpe whiche as moder is.  
ye for yu dulle and ye uorice.  
To man of many a dredful vice.  
Hay yit an oper last of alle.  
Whiche many a man hay mad to falle.  
Wher pat he myhte neuere arise.  
Wher of for yu ye shalt auise.  
for yu so wy yu self misfate.  
What vice it is y wole declare.  
Nul fortuna mutat ubi despaco  
radit. Quo desiat humor ubi di  
in desat humor. anaguanum? 3 a  
mor spe polt z inde salute. Con  
sequitur qd ei ppa facta fauent.  
Whic loquitur sup ultiua spe  
acacie que tristitia sine despaco  
dicatur cuius obfata condicio  
toctus consolacionis spem deyo  
nens alligatus remedi quo libe  
rar potit fortuna sibi euenire  
impossibile credit.*

**W**han stowpe hay don al yu may.  
to dyue for yu longe day.  
at it become to ye uede.  
pat at ye laste ypon ye dede.  
he lokep hold his tyme is lore.  
And is so wo begon yu fore.  
pat he wyne his yowht conceyuep.  
tristesse and so hym self deceyuep.  
pat he wan hope bryngyng yu.  
Wher is no comfote to begynne.  
Bot euer yu him is destined.  
So pat wyne his herte affraied.  
A yousand tyme wy o blyp.  
Weryng he wische after dey.  
whan he fortune frut aduerse.  
for pan he wole his happe beherde.



Al pouh his world were al forlore.  
 And seip helas pat he was bore.  
 How that a hys holl schal I do.  
 For noll fortune is pus my fo.  
 Bot wel god me wol nouht helpe.  
 What sholde I panning of joyes yelpe.  
 Whan pere no bore is of my care.  
 So ouercast is my wel fare.  
 pat I am shapen al to strif.  
 helas pat I nere of pis lyf.  
 Er I be fullich ouer take.  
 And pus he wole his sorwe make.  
 As god hym myht nouht auaille.  
 Bot yet ne wole he nouht trauaile.  
 To helpe hym self at such a nede.  
 Bot sloupy vnder such a drede.  
 Which is affermed in his herte.  
 Right as he myht nouht a sterte.  
 The worldes wo which he is gonne.  
 And so whan he is falle in synne.  
 hym penkeþ he is so fer couppable.  
 pat god wol nouht be merciable.  
 So met a synne to for riue.  
 And pus he leueþ to be schipue.  
 And if a man in ylle prowle.  
 Wolde hym counseile he wol not knoþe.  
 ye soþe pouh a man it fonde.  
 for tristesse is of such abynde.  
 pat for to meynene his folie.  
**Obscuracio est contradiccio utraque arguitur.**  
 he say wyþ hym obscurnacio.  
 which is wyþinne of such a sloupe.  
 pat he for sakeþ alle troupe.  
 And wole vn to no reson bolde.  
 And yet ne can he nouht a bolde.  
 his ouhne stile bot of hed.  
 pus dwynep he til he be ded.  
 In hyndryng of his owne estat.  
 for where a man is obscurnat.  
 whan hope foldeþ atte laste.  
 which may nouht after longe laste.  
 Til sloupy make of hym an ende.  
 Bot god wot whider he shal wende.  
 By lone and riht in such manere.  
 he be louers of heuy chere. **Confessio.**  
 pat soþen more pan it is nede.  
 whan þei ben caried of here spede.  
 And can nouht hem seluen rede.  
 Bot lesen hope for to spede.  
 And senten lone to pursupe.  
 And pus þei faden hlyde and helde.  
 And lustles in here herces waye.  
 Hier of it is pat I wol axe.  
 If þow my lone art on of þo.  
 a good fader it is so. **Confessio.**  
 Outake oþoynt I am be knoþe. **Confessio.**  
 for elles I am ouer prowle.

In al pat euere ye haue seid.  
 my sorwe is euermore vntreid.  
 And secheþ ouer al my beyues.  
 Bot for to conseil of my peynes.  
 I can no bore do þer to.  
 And pus wyþ outen hope I go.  
 So pat my wites ben enuoyed.  
 And I as who seip am despayred.  
 To wyne lone of ylle mete.  
 Wyþoute whom I you bohere.  
 myn herte pat is so bestad.  
 Right inly neuere may be glad.  
 for be my troupe I shal nouht haue.  
 Of pure sorwe which I dyue.  
 for pat þe seip þe wol me nouht.  
 Wyþ dreethyng of myn owne pouht.  
 In such a wan hope I am falle.  
 pat I ne can vneyes calle.  
 As for to speke of euy grace.  
 my lady mercy to purchace.  
 Bot yet I seie nouht for þis.  
 pat al my defaute it is.  
 for I can neuere yet in seide.  
 whan tyme was pat I me bede.  
 to seide and as I dorste tolde.  
 Bot neuere foud I pat þe wolde.  
 for ouht þe knelle of myn entente.  
 To speke a goodly word assente.  
 And napeles þis day I seie.  
 pat if a synful wolde þreie.  
 To god of his foryeuertesse.  
 Wyþ half so gret a besynesse.  
 As I haue do to my lady.  
 In þat of axing of mercy.  
 he shulde neuere come in helle.  
 And pus I may vobly soþly telle.  
 Saue only pat I crye and bidde.  
 I am in tristesse al amidd.  
 And fulfille of desesperaunce.  
 And þer of yst me my penance.  
 myn holi fader as þe seip. **Confessio.**  
 any lone if pat þu herde þe seip. **Confessio.**  
 Wyþ sorwe myht þou nouht amende.  
 Til þou his grace wol þe sende.  
 for þou þu owne cause empernest.  
 What tyme as þow þu self despenest.  
 I not what oper þing anauyle.  
 Of hope. whan þu herte faileþ.  
 for such a sor is inauyle.  
 And eke þe goddes ben vengeable.  
 And pat a man may riht wel fynde.  
 þese blde bokes who so rede.  
 Of þing which hay befall euy þis.  
 Now here of what ensample it is.  
**Whic narrent qualiter iphis re-**  
**me theueri filius ob amore am-**  
**dam puelle nomine araxanthen**



qua neqz domis aut pabz vincere  
potuit despons ante pns xpus pu  
elle iannas noctant se suspendit in  
de di comori deam puellam i capi  
dem durissimū transmutavit.  
qua Rex Thene vna cu filio suo  
apud Timitate Salamina in tem  
plo Venus p ppetua memoria sepe  
lire et locum fecit.

**W**hilom be olde dayes fer.  
Of messe Was ye kynghene.  
Which hadde a myght to soue pphie.  
Of Loue and he so myghted is.  
pat he hay set al his corage.  
As to requyre of his lyngage.  
Upon a mayde of Lorde astat.  
For youh he were a potestat.  
Of wordes good he was subit.  
To Loue and put in such a pht.  
pat he exceder ye mesure.  
Of resou pat hym self assure.  
he can nouht for ye more he ppede.  
ye Lasse Loue on hym she leide.  
he was with Loue vnydys constryned.  
And she wyf resou was restrayned.  
ye Lustes of his herte he fley.  
And she for drede shame eschuey.  
And he she scholde toke good hede.  
To saue and kepe here womanhede.  
And yus ye pnt stood in debat.  
Betwene his lust and here estat.  
he pas he sende he spak be mouye.  
But yit for ouht pat euere he couye.  
In to his good he fond no weye.  
So pat he cast his hope alweye.  
Wip yme his herte and gan despyre.  
fro day to day and so enpyre.  
pat he hay lost al his delit.  
Of lust of slep of appetit.  
pat he myght felyce of Loue Lassey.  
his wit and resou ouerpasser.  
As he which of his lyf ne couhte.  
his dey upon hym self he souhte.  
So pat be nyht his weye he nam.  
he wist non where he be cam.  
ye nyht was derk per shon no mone.  
To fore ye gates he cam sone.  
where pat his yonge mayden was.  
And wip his woful word helas.  
his dedly pleyntes he began.  
So stille pat per was no man.  
It herde and ran he seide yus.  
O you Cupide o you Venus.  
ffortuned be whos ordinaunce.  
Of Loue is euery mannes chaunce.  
ye knouen al myn hole herte.  
pat I ne may yollre hound asterte.

On yoll is euere pat I arie.  
And yit yoll deigney nouht to phie.  
ye to ward me yollre ere encline.  
yus for to see no medecyne.  
To make an ende of my querele.  
my dey schal be in stede of hele.  
Ha yoll my woful lady dere.  
Which dwellest wyf in fader here.  
And slepest in pi bed at ese.  
you wost no pting of my dyshe.  
Holl yoll and I be holl vnyte.  
Ha Lord what swene shalt you mete.  
What dreines hystow noll on honde.  
pat slepest yere and I here stonde.  
yous I no dey to ye deserue.  
Here shal I for pi Loue sterue.  
Here shal a kynges sone die.  
for Loue and for no felonie.  
Wher you yer of haue joye or sorwe.  
Here shalt yoll se me ded to morwe.  
O herte hard abouen alle.  
pis dey which schal to me befall.  
for pat you wost nouht do me grace.  
yt shal be told in many a place.  
Holl I am ded for Loue of trolpe.  
In pi deserte and in pi stollpe.  
Thi daimger shal to many mo.  
Susample be for euermore.  
Whan pei my woful dey recorde.  
And wip pat word he took a corde.  
Wip which vpon a grate tre.  
he byng hym self pat was pite.  
The morwe cam ye nyht is gon.  
men comen out an shen anon.  
Wher pat pis yong Lord was ded.  
per was an hous wyf oute red.  
for no man kelle ye cause whi.  
per was wepyng and yere was ai.  
his maiden whanne pat she it herde.  
And she pis pnt holl it unferde.  
A non she wiste what it mente.  
And al ye cause holl it wente.  
To al ye world she told it oute.  
And preyed to hem pat were aboute.  
To take of hire ye vengeance.  
for she was cause of yulle chaunce.  
Whi pat pis kynges sone is spilt.  
She takep vpon here self ye gylte.  
And is al redy to ye peyne.  
Which eny man hire wole ordeyne.  
And bot if ony oper wold.  
She seip pat she hir self sholde.  
Do breche wip hir owne hound.  
purgh out ye world in euery lond.  
pat euery yf of shal speke.  
Holl she hire self it sholde wreke.  
She wepeth she cryeth she swonep of ce.



She cast to hir phen by a losse.  
 And sold a moung ful piteously.  
 A god wold wote wel it am I.  
 For whom Iphis is pus beseyn.  
 Ordynne so pat men may seyn.  
 A prouand wynter after pis  
 holl such a mayden dede amys.  
 And as I dede do to me.  
 For I wode no pite.  
 To hym which for my loue is lore.  
 So no pite to me perfore.  
 And wyf me wold she set to grounde.  
 A swone and per she lay a stonde.  
 ye goddes which hire pleyntes herde.  
 And she holl wofully she ferde.  
 Here byt per toke a wey a non.  
 And schopen hire in to a ston.  
 After pe forme of here ymage.  
 Of body bope and of dysaite.  
 And for the merueille of pis ymyg.  
 In to pe place cam pe kyng.  
 And ek quene and many mo.  
 And when per wisten it was so.  
 As I haue told here aboue.  
 How pat Iphis was ded for loue.  
 Of pat he hadde be refused.  
 per helden alle men exaused.  
 And wondren vpon pe vengeance.  
 And for to kepe in remembrance.  
 pe faire ymyge amiden liche.  
 Wyf compaignie noble and riche.  
 Wyf torche and gret solennite.  
 To salamine pe cite.  
 per dede and carie for wyf al.  
 pe dede corps and sein it shal.  
 Beside pilke ymyge haue.  
 his sepulture and be graue.  
 pis corps and pis ymyge pus.  
 In to pe cite to Venus.  
 Wher pat goddesse here temple hadde.  
 To gedre bope tithes per ladde.  
 pis ilke ymyge as for miracle.  
 Was sette vpon an hys ymyge.  
 pat alle men it myghte knolle.  
 And vnder pat per maiden tolde.  
 A tumbelliche for pe nones.  
 Of marbre and ek of jaspur ston.  
 Where pis Iphis was beloken.  
 pat euere more it shal be spoken.  
 And for men shal pe sope wite.  
 per haue hire epitaphie write.  
 As ymyg which sholde abide stable.  
 pe letters grauen in a table.  
 Of marbre were and seiden pis.  
 hier by which stowh hym self Iphis.  
 For loue of araxathen.  
 And in Ensample of pe women.

That Iustven men to deie so.  
 Hire forme aman may sen also.  
 holl it is corned flesch and bon.  
 In to pe figure of a ston.  
 He was to nesch and she to hard.  
 Be war for y her after ward.  
 ye men and women bope tithes.  
 Ensample yof of pat was po.  
 To pus my sone as I pe seye. **con.**  
 It meuey be diuerse weie. **fessoz.**  
 In desespere a man to falle.  
 Which is pe laste braunch of alle.  
 of stowpe as yof hast herd deuse.  
 Wher of pat yof in self aulse.  
 Good is et pat yof be deceyued.  
 Wher pat pe grace of hope is weyued.  
 Wyf fader holl so pat it stonde. **Amor.**  
 yof haue I pleyntly vnder stonde.  
 of stowpes court pe ppece.  
 Wherof touchyng in my degre.  
 for euere I yente to be war.  
 For euere pis so as I dar.  
 Wyf al myn herte I yof beseeche.  
 pat ye me wold enforme and teche.  
 What per is more of yofre apyse.  
 In loue als wel as oyer wise.  
 So pat I may me cleue shoue.  
 yofne whil yof art alpye. **con.**  
 And hast also in fulle mynde. **fessoz.**  
 A moung pe vices which I fynde.  
 per is yit on such of pe schene.  
 Which al pis world hyf set vneue.  
 And cause many ynges wrouge.  
 Where he pe cause hap vnderfouge.  
 Wherof hier after yof schalt here.  
 ye forme bope and ye matiere.

**Explicit liber quartus.**

**Incipit liber quintus.**

**Obstat auaricia nature Regibus et**  
**que. Tunc amor poscit seruitus**  
**illa vetat. Omne quod est nimis**  
**diuersum dicitur auri. Vellea fiant**  
**ones seruat auarus opes. Non**  
**dicet ut soli seruabitur es s. amo**  
**ri. Debet homo solam solus hanc**  
**nam. Hic in quinto libro in**  
**terdit Confessor tacitare de auari**  
**cia que omni malorum radix dicitur**  
**nequiti a de eiusdem dicti speculz.**  
**Sz primo ipius auaricie natura**  
**describens amantem quattuor**  
**amorem conicerit super hoc**  
**specialius opponit.**



**W**hen god began  
his world and  
pan ye kinde of  
man. Was fulle  
in to no grete  
are. ffor worldes  
was no pres.  
But al was sette to ye comune.  
pei spoken pime of no fortune.  
Or for to lese or for to winne.  
Til auarice brought it inne.  
And pat was when ye world thus was.  
Of man of hors of shep of oxe.  
And pat men kenne ye moneye.  
po went ped out of ye were.  
And were cam on euery side.  
Whiche alle loue leide on side.  
And of comune his propp made.  
So pat in stede of schouere and fide.  
ye scharpe swerd was take on hunde.  
And in his wise it cam to londe.  
Wher of men maken riches depe.  
And hihe walles for to kepe.  
ye gold whiche auarice elchlosep.  
But al to ditel hym supposen.  
pouh he miht al ye world purchute.  
for what ping pat he may enbrace.  
Of gold of catel or of lond.  
he let it neuere out of his hond.  
But get him more and halt it faste.  
As pouh ye world sholde euere laste.  
So is he liche vn to ye helle.  
Wher gime it mooste nedes dwelle.  
What conyng gime lasse or more.  
It shal departe neuere more.  
pus when he hay his cofre loket.  
It shal nouht after be vnstoket.  
But when him list to haue a shir.  
Of gold hold pat it shiner brist.  
pat he per on may lokke a muse.  
for opor wise he dar nouht vse.  
to take his part or lasse or more.  
So is he pouere and euere more.  
him laker pat he hay ynough.  
And oxe dralder in ye plough.  
Of pat him self hay no profit.  
A sheep riht in ye same plit.  
his wille berep but on a day.  
An opor taker ye flees away.  
for he per of his part ne tap.  
But kepe to an opor pat it hath.  
to say hold such a man hay good.  
whib pat so resoun vnder stood.  
It is inpropeliche seid.  
for god hay him a halt hitel.  
pat he no glader nouht wy al.

But is vn to his good a prul.  
And as a sugit pus swep he.  
per pat he sholde maistel be.  
Such is ye kinde of pauarous.  
**W**hy sowe as you art auerous. *Confessor.*  
tell if you fare of loue so.  
**W**hy fader as it semey no. *Amas.*  
pat auarous pat neuere i was.  
So as ye setten me ye cas.  
for as ye tolden here aboue.  
In ful possession of loue.  
ye was i neuere hier to fore.  
So pat me penker wel perfore.  
I may excuse wel my dede.  
But of my wil wy oute drede.  
If i pat tresor miht gete.  
It sholde neuere be foryete.  
pat i ne wolde it faste holde.  
Til god of loue hym self wolde.  
pat he scholde departe a til.  
for leuey wel i loue here so.  
pat euene wy myn owene yf.  
If i pat swete lusty wyf.  
miht ones welden at my wille.  
for euere i wolde here holde stille.  
And in pis wise taker kepe.  
If i here hadde i wolde here kepe.  
And vit no friday wolde i faste.  
to holde hit whil my lyf may laste.  
ffor on ye bagges in ye kiste.  
I hadde ynough if i here kiste.  
for certes if she were myn.  
I hadde hit leuere pan a myn.  
Of gold for al pis worldes riche.  
a te miht make me so riche.  
As she pat is so my good.  
I sette liouht of opor good.  
for myht i gete such a ping.  
I had a tresor for a kyng.  
And pouh i wolde it faste holde.  
I were pan wel beholde.  
But i mot pipe uold wy lasse.  
And suffre pat it ouer passe.  
I couht wy my wil for pis i wolde.  
pen auarous if pat i sholde.  
But fader i wold hebbe seie.  
how pauarous hay som weie.  
Wher of he may be glad for he.  
may when hym list his tresour se.  
And grope and seche it al aboute.  
But ofte i am shet per oute.  
per as my wozyn tresor is.  
So is my lyf lych vn to pis.  
pat ye me tolden hier to fore.  
how pat an oxe his wolk hay bore.  
for ping pat scholde hym nouht auale.  
And in pis ping i may trauaile.



For who pat euer hay pe Welfare.  
 For who pat I haue pe care.  
 For I am had and nouht ne haue.  
 And am as who seip Loues knaue.  
 And demer in your othline pouht.  
 If his be amare or nouht.  
**M**y sone I haue of pe no wonder.  
 Youh yow to serue be put vnder.  
 Wip Loue which to kynde accordet.  
 For so as eueri boof recorder.  
 It is to kynde no plesunce.  
 Wip man aboue his sustenance.  
 En to pe gold shal serue & lorde.  
 For pat may no reson a bolle.  
 But auarice napeles.  
 If he may geten his enars.  
 Of gold pat wole he serue & kepe.  
 For he taky of nouht elles kepe.  
 But for to fille his bagges large.  
 And al is to him but a charge.  
 For he ne partey nouht wip al.  
 But kepy it as a seruant schal.  
 And yus pouh he to multiplie.  
 His gold wip oute tresorie.  
 He as for man is nouht amended.  
 Wip gold but if it be depended.  
 To manes vs wher of frede.  
 A tale and taky per of good hede.  
 Of pat bifell by olde tyme.  
 As telley vs pe clerk Duido.  
**H**ic loquitur contra istos auaros.  
 Et narrat qualiter audiens  
 fratre cillemd. Zach. sacerdotem  
 quem iustici. vinctis ferreis alligauit  
 vult dissoluit & in hospitium suum  
 inuigilans recolligit. pro quo zach.  
 chus quodcumque munus rex ei  
 gere vellet. dulari concessit. Vnde  
 de rex auaricia ductus. ut quicquid  
 mingeret in aurum conuiteretur  
 tur indigere pecunie. quo facto post  
 tea conuincit qd. cibos ad ip. su  
 mere vellet in aurum conuicere man  
 ducare non potuit. et sic pauperis  
 aurum p. tunc no posse sibi valere  
 illud auferri. et tunc ea que dicitur  
 sufficerent necessaria iterum  
 precabz a deo postulauit.  
**Z**achus which is pe god of Wym.  
 Accordant vnto pls dnm.  
 A prest is which cillems hite.  
 He hadde. and fel so pat he be nite.  
 His prest was drunke and gop astraid.  
 Wher of pe men were yuele apaid.  
 In ffrigelond wher as he wente.  
 But atte laste a cherl him hente.  
 Wip farenge of ower felaschipe.

So pat vpon his drunken schipe.  
 pei bounden him wip chernes faste.  
 And for pei laden him also faste.  
 Vnto pe kyng which hite ande.  
 But he pat wold his vice hite.  
 His curteis kyng took of him hede.  
 And bad pat men him sholde rede.  
 In to a chambze for to kepe.  
 Til he of leisir hadde a slepe.  
 And so his prest was soone vubounde.  
 And kep a couche fro pe grounde.  
 To kep he was led softe ymounde.  
 And whan he wook pe kyng hi droun.  
 To his presence and did him there.  
 So pat his prest in such manere.  
 Wip pat hym liker yere he dwelle.  
 And al his he to zachus telley.  
 Whan pat he cam to hym a gent.  
 And whan pat zachus herde seyn.  
 How ande hay don his curtesie.  
 Him penkyt it were a vileme.  
 But he wellede hym for his dede.  
 So as he myhte of his godhede.  
 Vnto pe kyng his god appere.  
 And clepy and pat ower him here.  
 His god to ande pouhten fair.  
 Of pat he was so debonaire.  
 Toward his prest and bad him seie.  
 What ying it were he wold preie.  
 He sholde it haue of worldes good.  
 His kyng was glad and stille stood.  
 And was of his askyng in doute.  
 And al pe world he caste aboute.  
 What ying was best for his astat.  
 And wip him self stood in debat.  
 Vpon pe popur which I fynde.  
 Ben leuest vnto mannes kynde.  
 pe felst of hem it is delit.  
 pe the ben worschepe and profit.  
 And pan he pouht if pat I crane.  
 Delit. pouh I delit may haue.  
 Delit shal passe in myn age.  
 That is no siber amantage.  
 For eueri yore bodily.  
 Shal ende in wo. Delit for y.  
 Wol I nouht chese. and if worschepe.  
 I axe and of worldes lord schipe.  
 pat is an occupation.  
 Of proude ymagination.  
 Which maky an herte deyn wip yme.  
 per is no certeyn for to yme.  
 For lord and luanie al is on wye.  
 Whan pei be bore and whan pei dye.  
 And if I profit axe wold.  
 I not in what manere I sholde.  
 Of worldes good haue sbernesse.  
 For eueri peef vpon richesse.



Winter for robe and stole.  
 Such good is cause of harmes fele.  
 And also pouh a man at ones.  
 Of all his world by inne his bones.  
 The tresor hadde euer del.  
 yet hadde he but a mannes del.  
 Told him self so as I penke.  
 Of cloping and of mete and drinke.  
 for more outake thanite.  
 per hap no lord in his degre.  
 And thus upon po pointz diuerse.  
 Diuersely he gan rehearse.  
 What point him yowhte for pe beste.  
 But pleyntly for to gete him reste.  
 he can no sike weye caste.  
 And unpeles pat atte laste.  
 he fel upon pe coueytise.  
 Of gold and pan in sondry wise.  
 he pouht as I haue seid to fore.  
 how tresour may be sone lore.  
 And hadde an nily gret desire.  
 Touching of such reconer.  
 how pat he mihte his cause auail.  
 To gete him gold by oute faile.  
 by gume his herte and pus he preiser.  
 pe gold and sey hold pat it paiser.  
 A boue al ower metal most.  
 pe gold he sey may lese most.  
 To make werre a pen a kyng.  
 pe gold put vnder alle ying.  
**Salon. pe come obedunt omnia.**  
 And set it whan him list aboue.  
 The gold can make of hate loue.  
 And werre of pes 2 vnt of wrong.  
 Wry oute gold may be no feste.  
 Gold is lord of man 2 beste.  
 And may hem bope bre and selle.  
 So pat a man may sopli telle.  
 pat al pe world to gold ober.  
 for pi his kyng to Bachus preier.  
 To graunte him gold but he exced.  
 mesure more pan him nedey.  
 men telle pat pe maledie.  
 which cleped is ydropisie.  
 Resembled is vn to his vice.  
 Be weye of kynde of auarice.  
 pe more ydropisie drinker.  
 pe more him preier for hi penker.  
 pat he may neuere drinke his fille.  
 So pat per may no ying fulfille.  
 pe lustes of his appetit.  
 And vnt in such a maner plit.  
 Stant auarice and euer stod.  
 pe more he hap of worldes good.  
 pe more he wolde it kepe strete.  
 And euer more and more couete.  
 And vnt in such condiclon.

Wry oute good discrecion.  
 his kyng by auarice is fuyte.  
 pat al pe world it myhte wite.  
 for he to Bachus paine preide.  
 pat wher vpon his hous he leide.  
 It shuld yurgh his touche a noon.  
 become gold and per vpon.  
 his gold him graunte as he bad.  
 so was his kyng of frige glad.  
 And for to put it in assay.  
 he touchet al pat by him lay.  
 he touchet pat he touchet pis.  
 And in his hond al gold it is.  
 pe ston pe tre pe leef pe gras.  
 pe flour pe fruit al gold it was.  
 his touchet he whil he may laste.  
 To go. but hunger at pe laste.  
 him took so pat him moste nede.  
 he weie of kynde his hunger fede.  
 pe clop was leid pe bord was set.  
 And al was for to fore him fet.  
 his dysch. his cuppe. his drinke. his mete.  
 But whan he wold or drynk or ete.  
 A non as it his mouy cam nyh.  
 It was al gold and pan he sh.  
 Of auarice pe folie.  
 And he by pat began to crye.  
 And preide Bachus to foryue.  
 his gilt and suffre him for to huc.  
 And be such as he was tofore.  
 So pat he weie nouht for lore.  
 his god which herde of his greuance.  
 Took wnthe vpon his repentance.  
 And bad him go forthedily.  
 vn to a flood was faste by.  
 which paciote pan hight.  
 In which he as cleue as euer he miht.  
 he sholde him wasschen ouer al.  
 And seide him paine pat he shal.  
 Recouer his ferste astat a rem.  
 his kyng vnt as he herde sem.  
 Into pe flood goy fiv pe lond.  
 And wryth him bope foot and hond.  
 And so for al pe remenant.  
 As him was set in couenant.  
 And pan he seih merueles straunge.  
 pe flood his colour gan to chaunge.  
 pe gravel wry pe finale ston.  
 To gold pei towe bope at ones.  
 And he was quyt of pat he hadde.  
 And thus fortune his chaunce lade.  
 And whan he seih his touche al day.  
 he goy him pan pe righte way.  
 And hucy for as he side er.  
 And putte al auarice a fer.  
 A pe richesse of gold depiser.  
 And sey pat mete and clop suffiser.



thus hay his kynge experience.  
 Holle foolles don pe reuerence.  
 To gold. Which of his oylhne kynde.  
 Is passe wozp pan is pe kynde.  
 To sustenance of mannes foode.  
 And pan he made laltes goodde.  
 And all his myght set vpon skile.  
 And gad his weple for to tile.  
 Her loud and lme vnder pe lalle.  
 And pat pei sholde also fory dralle.  
 Bestal and seche noon oueres.  
 Of gold which is pe braunche of pes.  
 For pis amian may fynde wyte.  
 To fore pe tyne to hold this myte.  
 In Cough. pat men pe floren knelle.  
 per Was Wel myh no man vntrelle.  
 no Was per noyner shield ne spere.  
 ne dedly wepen for to bere.  
 no Was pe coun wy outen wal.  
 Which now is closed ouer al.  
 no Was per no blocage in loude.  
 Which now taky euery cause on londe.  
 So may men knolle pat pe floren.  
 Was moder ferst of malengyn.  
 And brunger in of alle weire.  
 Wher of pis world feant out of heire.  
 purgh pe conseil of auarice.  
 Which of his oylhne pyre vice.  
 Is as pe helle wonder ful.  
 For it may neuere more be ful.  
 pat What as euere comp p june.  
 A wey ne may it neuere wyme.  
 But some myn do pou notht so.  
 Per al such auarice go.  
 And tak in part of pat pou hast.  
 I bidde noliht pat pou do wast.  
 For holde largesse in mesure.  
 And if pou se a creature.  
 Which pouergh pouert is falle in nede.  
 zif him som good for pis I rede.  
 To him pat wol noliht yuen here.  
 What peyne he shal haue elles where.  
**Ar tota de pena tantali culania**  
**in fitis dāpnatos torquet auarus.**  
 Ther is a peyne amonges alle.  
 Greuey in helle which men calle.  
 pe woful peyne of Tantaly.  
 Of which I shal pe redily.  
 Cause hold men for june seonde.  
 And for no dresd holl wole woude.  
 per is a flood of yllke office.  
 Which seruey al for auarice.  
 What man pat seonde schal perinne.  
 he stant by euene to pe chynne.  
 A boue his hed also per honget.  
 A fruyt which to pat peyne longet.  
 And pat fruyt touchet euere in con.

his ouer lype and per vpon.  
 Such purst and hunger him assailey.  
 pat neuere his appetit ne failey.  
 But Whan he wolde his hunger fede.  
 pe fruyt wydralley him at nede.  
 And pouh he heue his hed on hih.  
 pe fruyt is euere aliche nyh.  
 So is pe hunger wel pe more.  
 And also pouh hym purste fore.  
 And to pe water bolle adoun.  
 pe flood in such condicion.  
 Ailaley pat his drink areche.  
 he may noliht. so noliht which aliche.  
 pat mete and drait is him so couy.  
 And yit per comp noon in his mouy.  
 rich to pe peynes of pe flood.  
 Stant auarice of worldes good.  
 he hay ynough and yit him nede.  
 pe more he hay pe more he gredey.  
 And euere his hunger after more.  
 Trauaileth him aliche sore.  
 So is he peyned ouer al.  
 For in thi goodes fory wy al.  
 my sone loke pou despende.  
 Wher of pou myht in luf amende.  
 Bore here and eke in ower place.  
 And also if pou wolt purchace.  
 To be bloued pou most dse.  
 largesse. for if pou refuse.  
 To yue for pi lones sake.  
 It is no reson pat pou take.  
 Of loue pat pou woldest craue.  
 For pi if pou wolt grate haue.  
 be gracious and do largesse.  
 Of auarice and pe siknesse.  
 Eschue aboue al ower pyng.  
 And tak ensample of ayde kyng.  
 And of pe flood of helle also.  
 Wher is ynough of alle wo.  
 And pouh per were no matere.  
 But bouh pat we fynde here.  
 men ousten auarice eschue.  
 For what man yllke vice sue.  
 he get him self but litel reste.  
 For holl so pat pe body reste.  
 pe herce vpon pe gold traualley.  
 Whom many anyhees drede assailey.  
 For pouh he lighe a bedde naked.  
 his herce is ouercome allaked.  
 And dreney as he hy to slepe.  
 holl besy pat he is to kepe.  
 his tresor pat no ref it seke.  
 thus hay he but a woful wele.  
 And who so in pe same wise.  
 If pou in self wolt wel amuse.  
 Ther be louners of suche ynolue.  
 pat wole vnto no reson bolle



If so be pat pei come aboue.  
 Whan pei ben maistres of here loue.  
 And pat pei sholden be most glad.  
 Wip loue pei be most besed.  
 So fynn pei wolde it holden al.  
 Here herte, here yhe, is ouer al.  
 And wenen euery man be pef.  
 To seke alwey pat hem is lief.  
 But purgh here oldhne fantasie.  
 pei stullen in to jelousie.  
 Ihan hap pe schip to bloke his cable.  
 Wip euery wynd and is moeuable.  
**I** y fuder for pat ye nold telle.  
 I haue herd oft tymes telle.  
 Of jelousie but what it is.  
 It vnder stood I neuere er pis.  
 Wherfore I wolde yow beseeche.  
 pat ye me wolde enforme and teche.  
 What manner ying it myght be.  
 Wip sone pat is hard to me.  
 For naples as I haue herd.  
 Herfue and you schalt be answered.  
**Nota de Jelousia an fantasica**  
**suspicio amore quinis fidelissimum**  
**multoq; sine causa corruptum**  
**imaginatur...**  
**I** young ye men lat of manhode.  
 In mariage vpon wyfthode.  
 maky pat a man hym self deceyue.  
 Wher of it is pat he conceyue.  
 pat ille busely maladie.  
 ye whiche is cleped jelousie.  
 Of whiche if I ye pprete.  
 Shal telle after ye meete.  
 So as it worchep in a man.  
 A feure it is colidian.  
 Which euery day wol come aboute.  
 Wher so a man be in or oute.  
 At home if pat a man wole wone.  
 his feure is pan of conuin wone.  
 most greuous in a mannes yhe.  
 For pan he maky him tote and pte.  
 Wher so euere his loue go.  
 She shal nouht wip hire luel to.  
 and scepe but he se it al.  
 his yhe is walkyng ouer al.  
 Wher pat she synge or pat she dounce.  
 he seep ye leest contenauice.  
 If she loke on a man a side.  
 Or wip him vome at any tide.  
 Or pat she laughe or pat she loue.  
 his yhe is pere at euery houre.  
 And whan it dwaldep to ye nyht.  
 If she pan is wip oute lht.  
 A noon is al ye game shent.  
 For pan he set his patlement.  
 To speke it whanne he comey to bedde.

And seip if I were nold to wedde.  
 I wolde neuere more haue wyf.  
 And so he towey in to stuf.  
 ye list of loues duete.  
 And al vpon diuersite.  
 If she be fresch and wel draued.  
 he seip here baner is displaied.  
 To clepe in gastes by ye weie.  
 And if she be not wel besed.  
 And pat hir lust to be glad.  
 he berep on honde pat she is mad.  
 And louep nouht here housebonde.  
 he seip he may wel vnderfonde.  
 pat if she wolde his compaignie.  
 she sholde pame a foru his yhe.  
 she lde al ye plesir pat she myht.  
 So pat by danc ne by nyhte.  
 she not what ying is for ye bestie.  
 But luep out of alle reue.  
 For what as euere him luste seyn.  
 she dar nouht speke a word a yern.  
 For weper and holder here lypes clos.  
 she may wel write sanz repos.  
 ye wyf which is to suchon married.  
 Of alle women be he married.  
 For wip his feure of jelousie.  
 his eche dayes fantasie.  
 Of sorwe is euere aliche grene.  
 So pat yer is no loue sene.  
 Whil pat him lust achom abide.  
 And whan so is he wole out rde.  
 pan hap he redy his affie.  
 A biding in his compaignie.  
 A gangelor an yuel mouped on.  
 pat sche ne may ne wheder goon.  
 he speke a word ne ones lode.  
 pat he ne wole it wende and crofe.  
 And forue after his owne entente.  
 pouh she no ying but honour meite.  
 Whan pat ye lord comp hom apem.  
 ye gangelor most souidhat sein.  
 So what wip oute and what wip inne.  
 his feure is euere to begynne.  
 For wher he comy he can not ende.  
 Til dey of him haue made an ende.  
 For pouh so be pat he ne here.  
 he see ne wite in no manere.  
 But al honour and womanhede.  
 Wher of ye jelous taky noon hede.  
 But as a man to loue vnkryde.  
 he cast his seaf as dop ye blynde.  
 And hnt defaue wher is nam.  
 As who so dremey on a stoon.  
 how he is leyd and groney ofte.  
 Whan he is on his pilwee softe.  
 So is per nouht but seint and cheste.  
 Whan loue scholte make his feste.



It is greet pynnyng he hir kisse.  
 pus hap she lost ye nyghtes blisse.  
 for at such tyme she greuchep euere.  
 And berp on hond per is a leuere.  
 And pat she wolde an opey were.  
 In stede of him a bedde pear.  
 And wip po wordes and wip mo.  
 Of jelousie he tourneye fro.  
 And lip vpon his opey side.  
 And she wip pat dralkep hire a side.  
 And pere she wepye al ye night.  
 ha to what peyne she is dight.  
 pat in here youye hap so beset.  
 ye lond which may not ben vnknet.  
 Not ye tyme is ofte aised.  
 pat euere was ye gold unpursed.  
 ye which was leyd vpon ye hook.  
 Whan pat alle opey she forsook.  
 for loue of hym but all to late.  
 she pleighep. for as pan aluare.  
 she mot for bere and to hym bolde.  
 wuh he ne wole it nouht alote.  
 for man is lord of yllke feire.  
 so mot ye woman but empyre.  
 If she speke out a yen his wille.  
 And pus she berep here peyne stille.  
 But if ye feuer a woman take.  
 she shal be wel more hard shake.  
 for wuh she hope se and here.  
 And fynde pat ye is matiere.  
 she dar but to hir selue pleyne.  
 And pus she suffer double peyne.  
 So pus my sone as I haue wrote.  
 you myht of jelousie wite.  
 his feuer and his condicioun.  
 which is ful of suspicioun.  
 For whee of pat his feure growep.  
 who so sepe olde lokes trobep.  
 per may he fynden how it is.  
 for ye vs teche and telle us.  
 how pat his feure of jelousie.  
 soundel it growep of sone.  
 Of loue and soundel of vntrust.  
 for as a soundel of vntrust.  
 for as a sek man lost his lust.  
 And whan he may no sauour gete.  
 he hatep pan his owne mete.  
 Eht so his feuerous maladie.  
 which caused is of fantasie.  
 makp ye jelous in feble plat.  
 To lese of loue his appetit.  
 pyngh feyned enformacion.  
 Of his ymaginacion.  
 For finally to taken hede.  
 men may wel make a liklihed.  
 Seiden him pat is auarous.  
 Of gold and hym pat is jelous.

Of loue for in oon deare.  
 yei stonde boye as seimey me.  
 pat on wolde haue his burnes falle.  
 And not departen wip his wille.  
 And not for ye peues slepe.  
 So faren he wolde his twisoz kepe.  
 pat opey may not wel be glad.  
 for he is euere more a drad.  
 Of pese louers pat noon a boute.  
 In aliter if yei put him oute.  
 So haue yei boye ihel ioye.  
 A stel of loue as inonore.  
 How hast you sone at my teching  
 Of jelousie a knolblechmyng.  
 pat you myht vnderstonde pis.  
 fro whenne he comy and what he is.  
 And eke to whom pat it is like.  
 Be war for pi you be nouht sike.  
 Of yllke feuer as I haue spoke.  
 for it wole in hym self be wreke.  
 for loue hatep no pyn more.  
 as men may fynde be ye lore.  
 Of hem pat whilom were wise.  
 how pat yei speke in many wyse.  
 My fader sop is pat ye seyn.  
 For for to loko per a yen.  
 To fore pis tyme how it is fulle.  
 wher of per myght ensample fulle.  
 To suche men as be jelous.  
 In what maner it is greuous.  
 Eht farn I wolde ensample here.  
 My good sone at pi preiere.  
 Of such ensamples as I fynde.  
 So as yei comen nold to mynde.  
 vpon pis point of tyme gon.  
 I penke for to tellen oon.  
 This point exemplid contra istos  
 maritos quos jalousia maculauit.  
 Et narrat qualiter Vulcanus cum  
 vxor Venus extitit suspitione in  
 ipm et marce concupiens eoz gest  
 diligencius explorabat. Vn com  
 git qd ipe quadam vice ambos in  
 se pnter amplexantes in lecto  
 nudos inuenit et exclamans cecidit  
 deoz et deard ad tanta spectacu  
 lum andocant. sup quo tm deside  
 riu potius qui remedium a tota  
 cohorte consecutus est.  
 Side Wrot of many pynnes.  
 Amour ye which in his wryng  
 he tolde a tale in poeie.  
 Which touchep in to jelousie.  
 vpon a certeyn cas of loue.  
 Amour ye goddes alle adoue.  
 To fel at yllke tyme pus.  
 ye god of fur which Vulcanus.



**I**s hore. and hay a craft fory Wy.  
 Assigned for to ben a myrth.  
 Of iupiter and his figure.  
 Hope of visage and of stature.  
 Is lofly and malgracious.  
 But yit he hay Wynne his hous.  
 Al for ye hysing of his Wyf.  
 ye faine Venus to his Wyf.  
 But wars which of batayles is.  
 ye god an yhe hadde yn to pis.  
 As he which was chivalrous.  
 It fel him to ben amorous.  
 And youht it was a gret pite.  
 To se so lusty one as she.  
 He coupled to so lorde a Wyf.  
 So pat his peyne day and nyght.  
 He dede if he hure Wynne myghte.  
 And she which hadde a good insighte.  
 Toward so noble a knyghtly lord.  
 In loun fel of his acord.  
 per laker youht but tyme & place.  
 pat he wye siber of here grace.  
 But when also heres falle in con.  
 so wys a wayt was neuere noon.  
 pat at som tyme ye ne mete.  
 And pus pis faine lusey swete.  
 Wyf mars hay ofte compaignie.  
 But yllke vulkynde jelousie.  
 Which euere more ye herte exposey.  
 makey Vulcanus pat he supposey.  
 pat it is nouht wel ouer al.  
 And to him self he seide he shal.  
 A spie bettre if pat he may.  
 And se it fel vpon a day.  
 pat he pis ying so slyly dede.  
 he found hem bope abedde.  
 Altham echon Wyf ower naked.  
 And he Wyf craft al redy made.  
 Of strunge cheynes hay hem bounde.  
 As he to gedre hem hay founde.  
 And lest hem bope lighe so.  
 And gan to clepe and crye so.  
 yn to ye goddes alle aboute.  
 And yei assembled in a route.  
 Come alle at ones for to se.  
 But noon amende hadde he.  
 But was rebuked here and yere.  
 Of hem pat lounes frendes were.  
 And seiden hold pat he was to blame.  
 for if ye fel hym eny shame.  
 It was purgh his myshouernance.  
 And pus he loste conuenance.  
 pis god and let his cause falle.  
 And yei to storne hym liden alle.  
 And losen mars out of his bondes.  
 wherof yei cryly house bondes.  
 for euere myghte ensample take.

**I**f such a chaunce hem ouertake.  
 for Vulcanus his Wyf be breide.  
 ye blame vpon him self is leide.  
 wherof his shame was ye more.  
 which ouhte for to ben alore.  
 for euere man pat dyuey here.  
 To rulen hym in pis metiere.  
 youht such an happ of loun a sterte.  
 yit shuld he nouht apointe his herte.  
 Wyf jelousie of pat is wrouht.  
 But feigne as youht he wist it nouht.  
 for if he lete it ouerpasse.  
 ye standre shal be wel ye passe.  
 And he ye more in ese stonde.  
 for pis you myght wel vnder stonde.  
 pat wher a man shal nedes lese.  
 the beste harm is for to chese.  
 But jelousie of his vntrust.  
 makey pat ful many a harm arys.  
 which elles sholde nouht arys.  
 And if a man hym wolde adyse.  
 Of pat besel to Vulcanus.  
 hym ouht of reson yeuke pus.  
 pat sypp a god per of was shamed.  
 wel schulde an erpeli man be blamed.  
 To take vpon hym such a vice.  
 for pi my sone in ym office.  
 he war pat you be nouht jelous.  
 which ofte tyme hay shent ye hous.  
 Wyf fader pis ensample is hard.  
 how such ying to ye heuene ward.  
 A mount ye goddes myghte falle.  
 for per is but o god of alle.  
 which is ye lord of helene and helle.  
 But if it like you to telle.  
 how such goddes come a place.  
 ye myght mochel poult purchase.  
 for i shal be wel taust wyf al.  
 by sone it is pus ouer al.  
 Wyf hem pat stonden mysbelened.  
 pat such goddes ben be leued.  
 In sondry place sondry wise.  
 Among hem which are vndyise.  
 per is betaken of credence.  
 wherof pat i ye difference.  
 In ye manere as it is write.  
 shal do ye pleyntly for to write.  
**A**menibz illustis signant tepla  
 deoz. Sude deos cecos nacio ceca  
 colit. i nulla creatori nacio facit  
 esse creatu. Equiperaus q' adhuc  
 inu pagana fouent. **A**dina  
 secundu poetaru fabulas in hui  
 libelli rois q' pluribz noia & res  
 tus deoz falsor intulancur quo  
 rd in fidelitas ut xpianis clarius  
 innotescat. Intendit de ipoz ori



gine secundum varias paganorum  
sectas scribere consequenter. Et  
primo de secta Chaldeorum tracta-  
re proponit.

**E**t existit dicitur hoc among be here.  
Of pe belienues pat po were.  
In foure formes pus it was  
pei of Chaldee as in pis cas.  
Hadde a belienue by hem selue.  
Which stood vpon pe signes tibelue.  
For eke vpon pe planetes seuene.  
Which as pe sihe vpon pe heuene.  
Of sondry constellation.  
Of here ymaginacion.  
Vpon sondry beif of purtiture.  
pei made of goddes pe figure.  
In thelemontz and eke also.  
pei hadden a belienue po.  
And al was pat vnesonable.  
For pelementz ben falsable.  
To man and ofte of accidene.  
As men may se experience.  
pei be corrupt by sondry were.  
So may no mannes reson seye.  
pat pei ben good in ony wise.  
And eke if men wil hem abuse.  
pe soune pe mone eclipse bope.  
pat be hem lees or be hem zo po.  
pei suffice and what ymag is passible.  
To ben a god is impossible.

**E**t nota qd rembroth quarens  
a noe ignem tangit deum in chal-  
dea prius adorari.

These elementes ben creatures.  
So ben pese heuenu figures.  
Wher of may wel be justified.  
pat pei may not be deified.  
And who pat taky a wey ponour.  
Which due is to pe creatour.  
And yess it to pe creature.  
he dop to gett a forfeiture.  
But of Chaldee napeles.  
vpon pis feip pouh it be les.  
pei holde affermed pe creaunce.  
So pat of helle pe penaunce.  
As folk which stant out of belene.  
And woln noon oper maner leue.

**D**e secta Egipciarum.  
Of pe Chaldeus lo in pis wise.  
stant pe bileue out of assise.  
But in Egypt worst of alle.  
pe feip is fals hold so it falle.  
For pei diuerse bestes peie.  
honoure as pouh pei goddes were.  
And napeles yit feip vpon al.  
vix goddes most in special.  
pei haue forp vpon a goddesse.

In whom is al here sbernesse.  
po goddes be yit cleped pus.  
Orus Typhon and Jhus.  
pei were breperen alle pre.  
And pe goddesse in hir degre.  
heo suster was and Jhis hite.  
Whom yhus for lay be hite.  
And held hir after as his wyf.  
So it beset pat vpon scif.  
Typhon hay Jhe his breper Rayn.  
Which a child to sone Orayn.  
And he his fader dep to herte.  
So took pat it may nouht a sterre.  
pat he Typhon after ne slouth.  
Whan he was ripe of age ymouh.  
But yit vegipiens twouh.  
For al pis etrouw which pei knouh.  
pat pese breperen ben of myht.  
To sette and kepe Egypte vpon rih.  
And ouerprolde if pat hem like.  
But Jhis he seip pe croniz.  
ffro alexa in to Egypte cam.  
And she pan vpon honde nam.  
To teche hem for to solde and eue.  
Which no man knell to fore pere.  
And whan pe Egipcians sihe.  
pe feltes fulle a fore here phe.  
And pat pe lond be gan to greue.  
Which whilom hadde be barene.  
For perpe bar after pe kynde.  
his due charge pis Jfunde.  
per she of berpe pe goddesse.  
he cleped so pat in distresse.  
pe women per vpon childyng.  
To he clepe and here offryng.  
pei beren whan pat pei be lichte.  
To holl Egypte al out of sighte.  
Of reson stant in mysteliue.  
For sake of lore as I belienue.

**D**e secta Greecorum.  
Among pe greks out of pe weie.  
As pei pat reson put a weie.  
pei was as pe croniz seip.  
Of misbelienue an oper feip.  
pat pei here goddes and goddeses.  
As who seip tooken al to gesses.  
Of such as weren ful of vice.  
To whom pei made hir sacrificas.  
pe hite god so as pei seide.  
To whom pei most worschipe reide.  
**N**ota qualiter Saturnus deor su-  
mus appellabatur.  
Saturnus and kyng of Crete.  
he hadde be. but of his sete.  
he was put down as he which scod.  
In frenesie and was so wood.  
pat fro his wyf which fea hite.



His oulyne children al to p[re]sente.  
 And sette hem of his comoun wone.  
 But Iubiter which was his sone.  
 And ful of age his fader bond.  
 And kunge wy his oulyne hond.  
 His genitall which also faste.  
 In to pe depe see he caste.  
 Wher of pe greke afferme and seie.  
 pus whan pei were cast adweie.  
 Cam Venus for by wepe of kynde.  
 And of Saturne also synde.  
 How afterward in to an yle.  
 vis Iubiter did hym exile.  
 Wher pat he stod in greet myschese.  
 To which a god pe made chiese.  
 And suppen pat such con was he.  
 Which stood most hih in his degre.  
 A mony pe goddes how myght knowe.  
 pese opere pat ben more lowe.  
 Sen litel worth as it is founde.  
**Iubiter. Deus Delictorum.**  
 For Iubiter was pe secounde.  
 Which Iuno hadde in to his wyf.  
 And yet a lechour al his lyf.  
 He was and in adouterie.  
 He wrouht many a treacherie.  
 And for he was so ful of vices.  
 pei cleped hym god of Delices.  
 Of Whom if pou wolt more wite.  
 Ovide pe poete hap writte.  
 But yit here scerres bope also.  
 Saturne and Iubiter also.  
 pei haue al pouh pei be to blame.  
 Attitiled to here owne name.  
**Mars. Deus belli.**  
 Mars was an oper in pat lalle.  
 pe which in face was forp dralle.  
 Of Whom pe clerk degeous.  
 Wrot in his booke and seide pus.  
 How he in to ytaile cam.  
 And such fortune per he nam.  
 pat he amaiden hap oppressed.  
 Whiche in here ordre was professed.  
 As she which was pe prioresse.  
 In Vestes temple pe goddesse.  
 So was she wel pe more to blame.  
 Dame ylia vis Lady name.  
 men clepe and eke she was also.  
 pe fynge doulter pat was po.  
 Whiche amitor by name highte.  
 So pat a yem pe lalles richte.  
 wabs yll tyme vpon here pat.  
 Venus and Pomilius be gat.  
 Which after whan pei come in age.  
 Of Enythode and of Bassallage.  
 ytaile al hool pei ouercome.  
 And foundeden pe grete Rome.

In armes and of such emprise.  
 pei weren pat in yllle wyse.  
 here fader wars for pe interuall.  
 pe god was cleped of bataille.  
 pei were his children bope also.  
 purh hem he took his name so.  
 per was non oper cause whi.  
 And yet a sterre vpon pe sky.  
 He hap vn to his name applied.  
 In which pat he is signified.  
**Appolo. Deus sapientie.**  
 An oper god pei hadden eke.  
 To Whom for counseil pei besete.  
 pe which was broper to Venus.  
 Appollo men him clepe pus.  
 He was an hunte vpon po helles.  
 per was wyf him no vertuelles.  
 Wher of pat eny boke carpe.  
 But ouly pat he coupe hatpe.  
 Which whan he walked ouerlaude.  
 ful ofte tyme he took on honde.  
 To gete him wyf his sustenance.  
 For lack of oper purueance.  
 And of While of his falshede.  
 He feyned him to come arede.  
 Of ying which after sholde falle.  
 Wher of among his peihies alle.  
 He hap pe leded men deceyued.  
 So pat pe bettre he was receyued.  
 To noll purth what creation.  
 He hap deificacoun.  
 And cleped is po god of wit.  
 To such as bes pe soles yit.  
**Mercurie. Deus**  
 An oper god to Whom pei souhte.  
 Mercurie highte and him ne wouhte.  
 What ying he dide ne Whom he stouht.  
 Of forterle he coupe ynouht.  
 pat whan he wolde him self traufforme.  
 ful ofte tyme he took pe forme.  
 Of woman and his owne lestre.  
 So dede he wel pe more yestre.  
 A greet speker in alle yntes.  
 He was also and of lesynges.  
 And auctor pat men wysen noon.  
 An oper such as he was con.  
 And vis pei maiden of vis yest.  
 A god which was vn to hem leef.  
 And cleped hym in po belienes.  
 pe god of archauntz and of yenes.  
 But yit a sterre vpon pe heuene.  
 He hap of pe planetes seune.  
**Vulcanus. Deus ignis.**  
 But Vulcanus of Whom I spak.  
 He hadde a courbe vpon pe bak.  
 And per to he was hye halt.  
 Of Whom pou vnderstoude shalt.



He was a shrelbe in al his poupe.  
 And he noon oper vertu coupe.  
 Of cluist to help hym self wy.  
 But only pat he was a synth.  
 Wy. iuliter which in his forge.  
 Diverse ynyges made him forge.  
 So bot I not for what desir.  
 yclepen him god of ye fyr.

**Colus. Deus Victorium.**  
 Kyng of Eizile ypolitus.  
 A soue hadde and Colus.  
 He hylte. and of his fader graunt.  
 He hield be weie of couenunt.  
 ye gouernaunce of euery yle.  
 Which was longynge vnto Eizile.  
 Of hem pat fro ye lond foron.  
 Lei open vnto ye wynd al pleyne.  
 And fro ylle vles to ye lond.  
 ful ofte cam ye wynd to honde.  
 After ye name of hym for pi  
 ye Wyndes cleped Coli.  
 ye were. and he ye god of Wynd.  
 To uolt hold ye vlene is blynd.

**Iuliter. Deus Deliciarum.**  
 He kyng of Erete iuliter.  
 ye same which I spak of er.  
 On to his broyer which vceptime.  
 Was hote it lyste him to continue.  
 Part of his good so pat by shipe.  
 He made him seroung of ye lordshipe.  
 Of al ye see in ye parties.  
 Wher pat he wrouht his tynnyes.  
 And ye seruynge yles al aboute.  
 He wan pat euery man hay doute.  
 vpon his marche for to saile.  
 for he anoon wolde hem assaile.  
 And robben what ynyng pat ye ladden.  
 His saucondyrt but if ye hadden.  
 Wher of ye comyn boys aros.  
 In euery lond pat such a los  
 He caught al nere it wory a stre.  
 pat he was cleped of ye see.  
 ye god by name and ye he is.  
 Wy hem pat so belienon amys.  
 ye vceptime eek was ylle also.  
 Which was ye ferste foundour po.  
 Of noble Troie and he for pi.  
 Was wel ye more lere bi.

**Pan. Deus nature.**  
 He lordesman of ye sheperdis.  
 And eek of hem pat ben retherdis.  
 Was of Archade and hylte Pan.  
 Of whom hay spoke many a man.  
 for in ye wode of yrouarinhue.  
 Enclosed wy ye trees of Pigne.  
 And on ye mount of Parnassie.  
 He hadde of bestes ye baillie.

And eek benepen ye daleie.  
 Wher ylle rruere as men seie.  
 Which radon hylte made his cours.  
 He was ye chief of gouernours.  
 Of hem pat kepten tyme bestes.  
 Wher of ye maken vit ye festes.  
 In ye citee stinsalides.  
 And for wy al vit napeles.  
 He tauhte men ye fory dradwyng.  
 Of besial and eek ye makynge.  
 Of oxen and of hors ye same.  
 How men hem sholde ride and tame.  
 And Douglas eek so as he fynde.  
 ful many a subtil craft of kynde.  
 he found which no man kuel to fore.  
 men dide him worscheip eek per fore.  
 pat he ye ferste in ylle lond.  
 was which ye melodie found.  
 Of feedes whan ye weten ripe.  
 Wy double pipes for to pipe.  
 yet of he yast ye ferste lere.  
 Til afterward he coupe more.  
 To euery craft for mannos helpe.  
 he hadde a redy wit to helpe.  
 purgh naturel experience.  
 And pus ye wyce reuerence.  
 Of foolles whan pat he was ded.  
 ye foot hay turned to ye hed.  
 And clepen hym god of nature.  
 And so ye madden his figure.

**Sachus. Deus Vini.**  
 In oper god so as ye feele.  
 Which iuliter vpon Samuele.  
 Begat in his ambouterie.  
 Whom for to hide his lecherie.  
 pat noon per of shal take kepe.  
 In amontaigne for to kepe.  
 Which Dion hylt 2 was in ynde.  
 He seide in boles as I fynde.  
 And he by name Sachus hylte.  
 Which afterward whan pat he mist.  
 A wastour was and al his rente.  
 In Wyn and bordel he despende.  
 But vit al were he wonder hadde.  
 A mount ye Grekes a name he hadde.  
 ye cleped ye god of Wyn.  
 And pus a glotoun was sluin.

**Esculapius. Deus medicine.**  
 Her was yet Esculapius.  
 A god in ylle tyme as pus.  
 His craft stood vpon surgerie.  
 But for ye lust of lecherie.  
 pat he to Dantes daughter drouh.  
 It fel pat iuliter hym slouh.  
 And vit ye made him nouht for pi.  
 A god. and was no cause why.  
 In Rome he was long tyme also.



And among the Pomeyns po.  
 For as he seide of his presence.  
 Yet was destroyed a pestilence.  
 Whan he to yse of Delphos went.  
 And pat Apollo wyth him sente.  
 His Esculapins his sone.  
 A mony ye Pomeyns for to done.  
 And yere he dwelte for a while.  
 Til after ward in to pat yle.  
 Fro whence he cam a yen he towey.  
 Where al his lyf pat he sojourned.  
 Among the Grekes til pat he dede.  
 And yet upon him yanne leide.  
 His name and god of medecine.  
 He hatte after pat ilke lyne.  
**Hercules. Deus fortitudinis.**  
 An ower god of Hercules.  
 Yet made which was napeles.  
 A man but pat he was so strong.  
 In al this world pat brod and long.  
 So myghti was no man as he.  
 meruelles tibelue in his demer.  
 As it was couy in sondry londes.  
 He dede wyth his owne hondes.  
 A yem greantz and monstres bope.  
 ye which horrible were and lope.  
 But he wyth strengthe hem ouercam.  
 Wher of so gret appys he nam.  
 pat yet him clepe amonges alle.  
 ye god of strengthe and to hym calle.  
 And yet per is no reson quene.  
 For he alman was ful of syme.  
 Which proued was upon his ende.  
 For in arage hym self he brende.  
 And such a cruel mannes dede.  
 Herde no ying wyth godhede.  
 Hei hadde of goddes yet an ower.  
 Which pluto hunte and was yebroy.  
 Of Iubiter and he fwo youthe.  
 Wyth euery word which com to moupe.  
 Of euery ying whan he was wrope.  
 he wold stwe his comun op.  
 he lothen and by flatterid.  
 he Cochitun and Achivon.  
 ye which after ye bokes telle.  
 Ben ye chief flodes of helle.  
 By Segne and Stige he stow al so.  
 pat ben ye depe pitres tbo.  
 Of helle ye most principal.  
 Pluto yose ower ouer al.  
 Sbor of his comun custumance.  
 Tu it besel vpon achaimae.  
 pat he for Iubiteres sake.  
 Du to ye goddes yet do make.  
 A sacrifice. and for pat dede.  
 Don off ye pitres for his mede.  
 In helle of which I spat er.

Was graunted hym 2 pus he per.  
 vpon ye fortune of his ying.  
 ye namo took of helle kyng.  
 So yse goddes and wel mo.  
 Among the Grekes yet hadden po.  
 And of goddes many one.  
 Vos name you shalt here anon.  
 And in what wyse yet decernen  
 ye soles which he yet decernen.  
**A tota qualiter Sibelea deor ma-  
 ter 2 origo quinaquitur.**  
 As Saturne is souerain.  
 Of alle goddes as yet sein.  
 So is Sibele of goddes.  
 ye moder whom wyth oute gesse.  
 ye folk paene honoure and serue.  
 And yet which hre lalles obserue.  
 But for to knowe vpon ye.  
 fro when he cam and what she is.  
 Echinia ye coure hite.  
 wher she cam first to mannes sight.  
 And after was Saturnes wyf.  
 By whom ye children in here lif.  
 she bar. and yet were depe po.  
 Iuno Neptunus and Pluto.  
 ye which of vice fantasie.  
 ye peple wolde desie.  
 And for hire children were so.  
 Sibele yanne was also.  
 made a goddesse and yet hir calle.  
 ye moder of ye goddes alle.  
 So was pat name bore forp.  
 And yet ye cause is litel forp.  
 And vnto Saturne tolde.  
 how pat his owne sone him sholde.  
 Out of his regne put alweie.  
 And he be cause of yllke weie.  
 pat him was shap such a fate.  
 Sibele his wyf began to hate.  
 And eke here promeye bope.  
 And pus whil pat yet were wrope.  
 By yohilerem vpon a day.  
 In his auouterle he lay.  
 On whom he Iubiter begat.  
 And yllke child was after pat.  
 Which dwouht al pat was apphead.  
 As it to fore is speafied.  
 So pat whan Iubiter of Crete.  
 Was kyng a wyf vnto his mete.  
 The doughter of Sebele he took.  
 And pat quino as seip ye boke.  
 Of his deificacion.  
 After ye full opinioun.  
 pat haue I told so as yet mene.  
 And for his quino was ye queene.  
 Of Iubiter and fuster eke.  
 ye foolles vnto here seke.



And sem pat she is ye goddesse.  
 Of regnes hope and of richesse.  
 And eke she is ye vnderfonde.  
 Ye water nymphes hay on honde.  
 To leden at here outhe heste.  
 And whan here life ye sty tempestee.  
 Ye reyn bolde is here messager.  
 To which a mysbeliue is here.  
 pat she goddesse is of ye sty.  
 Not noon ower cause whi.  
**Minerva. Dea sapientiarum.**  
 An ower goddesse of mynerue.  
 To whom ye grekes obeie and serue.  
 And she was nyh ye grete day.  
 Of Triton founde wher she lay.  
 A chylde for cast but what she was.  
 per knew no man ye sope cas.  
 But in dufriqz she was led.  
 In ye maner as I haue seid.  
 And caried fro yke place.  
 In to an yle fer in trace.  
 Ye which palone pame hitte.  
 wher a horite here fepre and dhte.  
 And after pat for she was wyf.  
 pat she found first in here a vis.  
 To clop makyn of wolfe & lyn.  
 men seiden pat she was diuin.  
 And ye goddesse of sapience.  
 ye clepen here in pat credence.  
**Of ye goddesse which pallas. pal.**  
**is cleped. sonde speche was. lat. dea**  
**Don sey hir fader was wallant. kellyr.**  
 Which in his tyme was geant.  
 A cruel man a batallous.  
 An ower sey hold in his hous.  
 She was ye cause whi he dede.  
 And of ye pallas some eke seide.  
 pat she was martes wyf and so.  
 A mong ye men pat welen po.  
 Of mysbeliue in ye riote.  
 ye goddesse of batayles hote.  
 She was. and yit she berey penance.  
 grow lode hold ye be for to blame.  
 Saturnes after his evil.  
 fro Certe cum in gret pil.  
 In to ye londes of ytaile.  
 And pere he dede gret meruaile.  
 wher of his name dwelley yit.  
 for he fond of his outhe wit.  
 The ferste craft of plough tilyng.  
 Of cryng and of corn sowyn.  
 And how men shulden sette vynes.  
 And of ye graxe make wyne.  
 Al pis he taught and it fel so.  
 his wyf ye which cam whi hym po.  
 Was cleped Sereres by name.  
 And for she taught also ye same.

And was his wyf pat ilke prowe.  
 As it was to ye people knowe.  
 ye made of ceteres a goddesse.  
 In whom her tilpe yet ye blesse.  
 And sem pat Dicolonus.  
 here sone goy a monges vs.  
 And mak ye corn good cheep or deere.  
 Right as her life fro yeer to yeer.  
 So pat ye wyf be cause of ye.  
 Goddesse of cornes cleped is.  
**Diana. Dea monid & siluarum.**  
 yng iupiter which his libyng.  
 whilom fulfilld in alle ying.  
 So prynceliche aboute he ladede.  
 his lust pat he his wille hadde.  
 Of Latona and on hir pat.  
 Diana his doughter he begat.  
 Dufuolven of his wyf quito.  
 And after whan she knew it so.  
 pat Latona for brede fledge.  
 In to an yle wher she hedde.  
 hir wombe which of childe awo.  
 pulke yle cleped was Delphos.  
 In which Diana was for brouht.  
 And kept so pat here lakkep nouht.  
 And after whan she was of age.  
 She took noon hede of marriage.  
 But ouht of mannes compaignie.  
 She took here al to venerie.  
 In forest and in wilderness.  
 for per was al hir besynesse.  
 By day and eke nyghtes tyde.  
 wyf arwes brode vnder ye side.  
 And bolde in honde of which she fowt.  
 And took al pat hir life ynough.  
 Of bestes which ben chaceable.  
 wher of ye crowing off ye fable.  
 Sey pat ye gentils most of alle.  
 worshipen here and to hte calle.  
 And goddes of hte helles.  
 Of greue trees of freische welles.  
 ye clepen here in pat bilene.  
 which pat no resoun may achene.  
**Proserpina. Dea infernoz.**  
 Proserpina which doughter was.  
 Of Sereres besel ye cas.  
 which was dwelmyng in erize.  
 hir moder in pat ilke while.  
 upon hir blyssyng and here hste.  
 And pat she sholde ben honeste.  
 And lerne for to weue and hymne.  
 And dwelle at home and lere hte.  
 But she cast al pat lore awei.  
 And as she wente out to pleye.  
 To gadre floures in a playne.  
 And pat was vnder a mountayne.  
 Of Ethna. fel ye same tide.



pat pinto cam pe weie vdo.  
 And so depnly co she was dar.  
 He toke hie up in to his char.  
 And as pei viden in pe feld.  
 Here were beaute he beheld.  
 Which was so plesant in his yhe.  
 pat for to holde in compaignie.  
 He wedder here and toke hie so.  
 To ben his wif for euer mo.  
 And as pou hast to fore herd telle.  
 how he was cleped god of helle.  
 So is she cleped pe goddesse.  
 By calise of hyr ne more ne lasse.  
 To pus my sone as i ye tolde.  
 pe greke whilom by dayes olde.  
 her goddes hadde in sondry wyse.  
 And purh pe lore of here apprise.  
 pe Romans helden eke pe same.  
 And for pe worship of hie name.  
 To euer god in special.  
 pei made a temple fory wy al.  
 And eke of hem his yeres day.  
 Attiled hadde and of array.  
 pe temples were panne ordeyned.  
 And eke pe poeple was constrained.  
 To come and don here sacrifice.  
 pe prestes eek in here office.  
 Sollempne maden yllke festes.  
 And pus pe greke lich to pe bestes.  
 pe men in stede of god honoure.  
 Which mishten noulte hem self socoure.  
 Whil pat pei were a lyue here.  
 And ouer pis as pou shalt here.  
**Tota qd dy monium Saturni vocat.**  
 The greke fulful of fantasie.  
 Sem eke pat of po hulles hie.  
 pe goddes ben in special.  
 But of her name in general.  
 pei haten alle Saturni.  
 per ben of triumphes ptey.  
**Orades. rumphe monium.**  
 In pe believe of hem also.  
 Orades pei seiden po.  
 Attiled ben to pe mountaynes.  
 And for pe wodes in demeynes.  
 To kepe per ben Orades. **Orades fil**  
**Off fresh Welles Orades. uard. rana**  
**de fouard. rereides mariu.**  
 And of pe triumphes of pe see.  
 I fynde a tale in preprete.  
 how Donus whilom kyng of Grece.  
 which hadde of infortune a pece.  
 his wif wyf hie doughtres alle.  
 So as pe happyes schulden falle.  
 wyf many a gentyl woman pere.  
 Dremt in pe salte see pei were.  
 wher of pe greke pat tyme seiden.

And such a name vpon hem Leiden.  
 rereides pat pei ben hote.  
 po triumphes which pei note.  
 To regne vpon pe firemes satte.  
 To nobl if pis beleue halte.  
 But of triumphes as pei telle.  
 In eueri place where pei dwelle.  
 pei ben al redi obeisant.  
 As Damiselles entendaunt.  
 To pe goddesse wos seruise.  
 pei mote obere in alle wyse.  
 wher of pe greke to hem besече.  
 wyf po pat ben goddeses eke.  
 And haue in hem a gret ardeuce.  
**manes. dy mortuoz.**  
 And yet wyf oure experience.  
 Sauf only of illusion.  
 Which was to hem dampnacion.  
 for men also pat were dede.  
 pen hadden goddes as i rede.  
 And po by name manes hiden.  
 To whom ful gret honour pei dihen.  
 So as pe grekes lalbe seip.  
 Which was a yen pe night seip.  
 hus haue i told a gret partie.  
 But al pe hole pynome.  
 Of goddes in pat ilke tyme.  
 To longe it were for to ryme.  
 But yet of pat which pou hast herd.  
 Of wys beleue how it hap ferd.  
 per is a gret diuersite.  
 My fader riht so penke me.  
 But yet as yma i pow besече.  
 Which stant in alle memles speche.  
 pe god and pe goddesse of Loue.  
 Of whom pe no pinyt here aboue.  
 haue told ne spoken of here faue.  
 pat pe me wolden nobl declare.  
 how pei ferd comen to pat name.  
 y sone i haue it lest for shame.  
 pe cause i am here outhe prest.  
 But for pei stonden nyh pe brest.  
 vpon pe shifte of y mater.  
 pou shalt of hem pe sope here.  
 And vnderstond nobl wel pe cas.  
 Venus Saturnes doughter was.  
 Which all daunger pat a waie.  
 Of Loue. mid fond to lust a waie.  
 So pat of here in sondry place.  
 diuerse men felle in to maie.  
 And such a lusti hyf she lade.  
 pat she diuerse children hadde.  
 To on by pis nobl oon by pat.  
 Of hie it was pat mars begat.  
 A child which cleped was arnone.  
 Of hie also cam Androgene.  
 To whom mercurie fader was.



Lucius be gat Eneas.  
 Of here also and erichon.  
 Seten be gat and yet upon.  
 Whan pat she sh per was non oyer.  
 By iubiter here olue broyer.  
 She lay and he be gat cupido.  
 And pilke sone upon a tyde.  
 Whan he was come in to his age.  
 He hadde a wonder visage. *faue*  
 And foud his moder amercous.  
 And he was also lecherous.  
 So whan pei were boye alone.  
 As he whiche yhen hadde none.  
 To se resou his moder kiste.  
 And she also pat no ymyn wiste.  
 But pat which dnt lust beloungy.  
 To ben here loue him vnderfoungy.  
 pus was he blind and she dylly.  
 But uapulis his cause it is.  
 Whi cupido is he god of loue.  
 For he his moder doxte loue.  
 And she which pouht hire lustes fonde.  
 Diverse loues toke in hounde.  
 Wel more yenne i tolde here.  
 And for she wold hir selfe keere.  
 She made comun pat desport.  
 And sette a lalbe of such a port.  
 pat ouer woman myghte take.  
 What man hire luste and nouht forsake.  
 To ben as comoun as she wolde.  
 She was pe firste also which tolde.  
 pat women shulde here body selle.  
 Semiramus so as men telle.  
 Of Venus keppe pilke apprise.  
 And so dede in pe same wise.  
 Of Rome faire reabole.  
 Which lust hire body to rigole.  
 She was to euery man felalbe.  
 And huld pe lust of pilke lalbe.  
 Which Venus of hire selfe began.  
 Wher of pat she to name wan.  
 Whi men here clepon pe goddesse.  
 Of loue and of gentillesse.  
 Of worldes lust and of pleasaunce.  
 Se now pe foule mistreuaunce.  
 Of greke in pilke cyne po.  
 Whan Venus took here name so.  
 pe was pe cause vnder pe moue.  
 Of which pei hadden po to done.  
 Of wele or woo wher so it was.  
 pat pei ne token in pat cas.  
 A god to helpe or a goddesse.  
 Wher of to take my witnesse.  
*Nota de epla Sindim Regis*  
*Bragmannor Alexandri magi*  
*no directa. Vbi dicit qd greca tilc*  
*ad corporis conseruatione p sin*

*multis membris singulos deos specia*  
*liter appropriari credunt.*  
**C**he King of Bragmas Sindim.  
 Writ in to Alisandre pus.  
 In bramping of ye grekes fey.  
 And of ye unbelieve he sey.  
 How pei for eueri membre hadden.  
 A sondry god to whom pei spradden.  
 Here armes and of helpe besoughten.  
 Myneue for pe heed pei souhten.  
 For she was wys and off a man.  
 The wit and resou whiche he can.  
 Is in ye celles of ye brayn.  
 Wher of pei made hire souerayn.  
 Mercurie which was in his salves.  
 A grete spekere of alle salves.  
 On hym pei kepyn of the tynge.  
 Ther leide whan pei speke or singe.  
 For achus was a plotoun de.  
 Him for pe wrote pei beset.  
 pat he it wolde wasshen ofte.  
 Any soote drynkes and wy soft.  
 The god of scholdres and of armes.  
 Was hercules for he in armes.  
 pe myghtiest was to feite.  
 To hym pei lynes pei beliste.  
 Che whom pei clepen myr.  
 pe breste to kepen hay for his part.  
 For wy pei herre of his ymage.  
 pat he adresse pei corage.  
 And of ye quille pei goddesse.  
 For she was ful of hastinesse.  
 Of braype and lht to greue also.  
 pei made and seide it was iud.  
 Cupido which pei brond of fyre.  
 In his hond he was pei fyre.  
 Of pe stomak which bouley euere.  
 Wher of pei lustes ben pei leuere.  
 To pei goddesse Cerere.  
 Which of pei corn yaf here euere.  
 Upon pei sey pat po was take.  
 The woules cure was by take.  
 And Venus purgh pei lecherie.  
 For which pei per here deifie.  
 She keppe al down pei remenaunt.  
 To pilke office apptenauit.  
*Nota de pma ydoloz cultura*  
*ex tribz papue statuis exorta est*  
*quarum pma fuit illa qua in filij*  
*in memoriam quida princeps et*  
*vphanez a sculptore promothie*  
*fabricari constituit*  
**C**hus was disperse in sondry wyse.  
 pei myn belieue as i deuise.  
 Wy many an ymage of curule.  
 Of such as myht hem not auale.  
 For pei wy once lynes chere.







**E**uer defeat.  
 After ye stood for which pice.  
 Was sauf ye world in his deure.  
 Was made as who seip nelle apem.  
 Of flour of fruit of gras of greyn.  
 Of beste of bird & of man kynde.  
 Which euere hay be to god vnsynde.  
 For nouht byf stounginge al ye sure.  
 Of pat ye world was made so sure.  
 And after ward it was restored.  
 A mong ye men was no ying mored.  
 Towardes god of good bynyng.  
 But al was turned to lityng.  
 After ye flesch so pat for yete.  
 Was he which yaf hym byf a mete.  
 Of heuene and erpe creatour.  
 And yus cam for ye myght errou.  
 pat ye ye hys god ne knelle.  
 But madden ower goddes nelle.  
 As yow hys heid me said to fore.  
 pere was no man pat tyme bore.  
 pat he ne hadde after his choyse.  
 A god to whom he yaf his voyse.  
 Wher of ye misbelleue cam.  
 In to ye tyme of Abraham.  
 But he foud out ye rith weie.  
 how ouly pat man sholde obeye.  
 ye hys god which weldep al.  
 And euere hay done & euere shal.  
 In heuene in erpe and eke in helle.  
 yer is no tynge his myht may telle.  
 ye patriarch in his ymage.  
 For bad pat yei to non ymage.  
 Encline shulde in no wise.  
 But here offryng and sacrifice.  
 Wry al ye hole herres loue.  
 In to ye myht god a boue.  
 yei scholde yeue and to no mo.  
 And yus in pulke tyme yo.  
 began to sette vpon ye erpe.  
 Whiche of bileues was ye ferpe.  
 ye right wysnesse it was conuerued.  
 So moste it nedes be receyued.  
 Of hym pat all right is yune.  
 The hys god which wolde wyne.  
 A people vn to his owne ferth.  
 In Abraham ye ground he leith.  
 And made hym for to multiplie.  
 In to so gret a proueme.  
 That yei Egypte al ouer spradde.  
 But pharao wry wrong hem lade.  
 In seruitude a ven ye pees.  
 Til god late sende moyses.  
 To make ye deliuerance.  
 And for his poeple gret benygnde.  
 ye took which is to hem alwonder.  
 ye kyng was slayn ye lond put vnder.

God bad ye rede see diuide.  
 Which stood by rith on euery side.  
 And yaf vn to his peple a weie.  
 pat yei on fore it passe dreie.  
 And gon so fory in to desert.  
 Where for to kepe hem in couert.  
 The dayes whan ye soune breute.  
 A large cloude hem buer wente.  
 And for to wisseu hem be nyhte.  
 A fyr piler hem alighte.  
 And whan pat yei for hunger pleigne.  
 ye misseu god began to feyne.  
 manna fro heuene down to grounde.  
 Wher of pat eche of hem hay founde.  
 his fode such rith as hym hys te.  
 And for ye shold vpon hym truste.  
 Fith as who sette a tonne a broche.  
 He percede ye harde roche.  
 And proung out water all at wille.  
 pat man and beste hay dronke his wille.  
 And after ward he yaf ye salve.  
 To moyses. pat hem wrydralle.  
 yei sholde not fyv pat he bad.  
 And in ye wise yei be lad.  
 Til yei took in possession.  
 ye londes of promission.  
 Wher of Caleph and hose.  
 The marches vpon such deure.  
 Departen after ye lignage.  
 pat eche of hem as heritage.  
 his purpartie hay vnderfonge.  
 And yus stood his beleue longe.  
 Whiche of whetes was gouerned.  
 And yei hadde eke ye poeple lerned.  
 Of gret honour pat sholde he fülle.  
 But at ye most nede of alle.  
 yei fauledon whan crist was bore.  
 But how pat yei here fey haue lore.  
 It nedep nouht to tellen all.  
 ye matere is so general.  
 whan lucifer was best in heuene.  
 And ouht most haue stonde in heuene.  
 Towardes god he took debat.  
 And for pat he was obstinat.  
 And wolde nouht to trouye endme.  
 He fel for euere in to ruyne.  
 And Adam eke in paradys.  
 whan he stood most in his prys.  
 After pe state of innocence.  
 A yen ye god brak his defence.  
 And fel out of his place a weie.  
 And rith be such a manere weie.  
 ye gelles in here beset plite.  
 whan pat yei sholden most payte.  
 haue stonde vpon ye prophete.  
 ye fallen yei to most folle.  
 And hym which was fro heuene com.



And of a mayde his flesshly name.  
And was among hem boze and fed.  
His men pat nolden not ben freed.  
Of goddes sone wyf oo boys.  
wei heng and flouhe vpon a croys.  
Wher of ye pat fit of hire lalbe.  
ffor yenne fory hem was wydrulle.  
So pat wei stonde of no merit.  
But in twilage as folk subgit.  
Wif oute proprete of place.  
wei lyuen out of goddes grace.  
Tissers in alle bondes oute.  
And yus ye fey is come aboute.  
pat whilom in ye jelles scod.  
Which is nouht farfietliche good.  
To speke as noll it is befallle.  
wei is a fey abouen alle.  
In which ye troupe is conpounded.  
Wher of pat we ben alle amended.  
**De fide xpiana in qua pfecte  
no complementum sunt miseris sa  
lumentum ut q saluacionis funda  
mentum infulibiter consistit edim?**  
**G**he hihe almighty mageste.  
Of right wysnesse z of pite.  
Of yime which pat Adam wrouhte.  
Whan he seih crine a yen he bouhte.  
And sende his sone ffor ye heuene.  
To sette mannes soule in euene.  
Which yanne was so sore falle.  
Vpon ye point which was befallle.  
pat he myht hym self arise.  
**G**regorie seip in his apprise.  
He helpey nouht a man be boze.  
ffor goddes sone were dufore.  
ffor yanne purgh ye ferste yime.  
Which Adam whilom brouht vs yme.  
wei sholden alle men be lost.  
Bot Crist restored milke lost.  
And bouht it wif his flessh z blood.  
And if we penken holt it stood.  
Of yille raunson which he payede  
**Gregorius... O necessarium ad p  
catum. O felix culpa que talem ac  
tand meruit habere redemptorem...**  
As seint Gregorie it wrot z seide.  
Also was behouely to ye man.  
ffor that wherof his wo began.  
Was after cause of alle his welye.  
Whan he which is yewelle of helpe.  
ye hihe creatour of lyf.  
Vpon ye nede of such a strif.  
To wolde for his creature.  
Take of him self for faulture.  
And suffre for ye mannes sake.  
yus may no reson wel for sake.  
pat ilke yime original.

Re was ye cause in special.  
Of mannes worschepe attelaste.  
Which shal wif outen ende laste.  
ffor by pat cause ye godhede.  
Assembled was to manhede.  
In ye virgine wher he nom.  
Pure flessh and verray man becom.  
Of bodis fraternite.  
Wher of ye man in his degre.  
Stant moze wozy as I haue told.  
yan he scod eist be manyfold.  
purgh baptysme of ye uelle lalbe.  
Of which Crist lord is z felalbe.  
And yus ye hihe goddes myht.  
Which was in ye virgine a lilt.  
The mannes soule hay reconfuld.  
Which hadde longe be exiled.  
So stant ye fey vpon beleue.  
Wif oute which may noman acheue.  
To gete hym paradys a yern.  
But pis beleue is so certeyn.  
So ful of grace and of vertu.  
pat what man clepey to ihu.  
In clene lyf ffor wif good dede.  
he may not falle of heuene mede.  
Which taken hay ye rihte fey.  
ffor elles as ye gospel seih.  
Saluacion per may be noon.  
And for to preche yer vpon.  
Crist had to hys apostles alle.  
The whos power as noll is falle.  
On ye pat ben of holy church.  
If we ye goodnesse wiche.  
**Jacobus. ffides sine opibz mortua e.**  
ffor fey only suffisey nouht.  
But if good dede also be wrouht.  
ffor were it good also for pi.  
Which purgh baptysme properly.  
Bot du to cristes fey professed.  
He war pat you be nouht oppressid.  
**Nota hic contra istos qui iam  
collaudant dicitur...**  
**W**hy Antecristes collaudie.  
ffor as ye jelles prophete.  
Was sette of god for auantage.  
Rht so pis nolle capmage.  
Of collaudis goy aboute.  
To sette cristes fey in doute.  
The sentes pat weren vs to fore.  
ffor whom ye fey was first by boze.  
pat holi church scod relieved.  
wei ouhten better be believed.  
yan yese which pat men knolde.  
Touht holi pouh men feigne z blolde.  
Here collaudie in mennes eere.  
But if you wolt lyue out of fere.  
Such nolle Lore I rede eschelde.



And holde forp riht pe weye & fure.  
As pat ancestres dede er pis.  
So shalt pou nouht beleue anye.  
**Incipit Ihu facere & docere...**  
Criste wrouht first and after taulhte.  
So pat pe dede his word amauhte.  
He gaf ensample in his pson.  
As the pe wordes haue alone.  
Ich to pe tre wyf Deues grene.  
Upon pe whiche no fruit is sene.  
**Nota qd cu Antenor pulladiu**  
**Troie a templo mynerue abstulit**  
**Thoas ibidem sum sacerdos auro**  
**corrupto oculos auertit et sic ma**  
**lum quasi non videns facienter re**  
**re permissit...**  
The prest Thoas which of mynerue  
pe temple hadde for to serue.  
And pe pulladiu of Troie.  
Kept vnder keye for monie.  
Of Antenor which he hay nome.  
Hay suffred Antenor to come.  
And pulladiu to stele.  
Wherof pe worschip and pe wele.  
Of pe Troiens hay ouer prowe.  
But Thons at pe same prowe.  
Whan Antenor his euil took.  
Wynkyng cast a weye his look.  
For a deceyte and for a wile.  
As he pat sholde hym self begile.  
He hidde his yhen fro pe sight.  
And wende wel pat he so myhte.  
Excuse his false conscience.  
I wot not if yllke eydence.  
Now at pis tyme in here estat.  
Excuse myhte pe prelates.  
Knowyng how pat pe fey dycresser.  
And all moral vertu cesser.  
Wherof pat pei pe keies beu.  
But yit hem aler nouht to stere.  
Hure goostliche yhe for to se.  
pe world in his aduersite.  
pei wole no labour vnder take.  
To feye pat hem is betake.  
Crist dede hym self for pe fey.  
But now oure feerful prelat seip.  
pe lyf is swet and pat he keper.  
So pat pe fey enholpe sleper.  
And pei va to here ese entenden.  
And in here lust here lyf despenden.  
And eueri man do what hym list.  
yus stant pis world fulfild of myste.  
And no man seep pe riht weie.  
pe wordes of pe chirche keye.  
yurath misshadlyng ben misbreynt.  
pe wordes walke hay wel myh dreyn.  
pe ship which pater hay to freyn.

pe forme is kept but pe matiere.  
Transformed is in oper wise.  
But if pei were goostly wise.  
And pat pe prelates were goode.  
As pei bel olde dayes frode.  
It were yanne litel uede.  
Amog pe men to taken hede.  
Of pat pei heren pendo telle.  
Which now is come for to dwelle.  
To solwe colfel wyf pe corne.  
So pat pe tille is nyh forlorne.  
Which crist selve first his olue  
oroll stant pe colfel in pe lond.  
Wher stood whilom pe goode greyn.  
For pe prelates now as men seyn.  
For solyten pat pei sholden tile.  
And pat i trolle be pe stile.  
Whan yere is lakke in hem a boue.  
pe poeple is strongyed to pe loue.  
Of troupe in cause of ignoraunce.  
For wher yere is a purueaunce.  
Of lit men euen in pe deke.  
But if pe prelates wolden werke.  
Upon pe fey which pei vs teche.  
men sholden noti here weye seche.  
With oure lit and now is vied.  
men sen pe charge alday refused.  
Which holychirche hay vnder take.  
But who pat wold ensample take.  
**Gregorius. Qu petrus cu iudea.**  
**Andreas cu achia. Thomas cum**  
**iudea et paulus cu gente venient.**  
**Quid dicimus nos moderni quoz**  
**fulsum talentu p nichilo expulsi.**  
Gregoire vpon his smelle.  
A yen pe sloupe of prelacie.  
Complemyne hym and yus he seip.  
Whan peter fader of pe fey.  
At domesday shal with hym bringe.  
Iudeam whiche purgh his pchynge.  
he wan. and andrew wyf achia.  
shal come his dette for to paie.  
And Thomas eke wyf his byete.  
Of iude. and poule pe voutes grete.  
Of sondry bondes schal pteute.  
And we fulfild of lond and reute.  
Whiche of pis world we holden here.  
wyf boyde bondes shal appere.  
Touchyng oure cure spiritual.  
Which is oure charge especial.  
I not what ping it may amounte.  
Upon yllke ende of oure accompte.  
Wher crist him self is auditor.  
Whiche touchen non hede of veyn honoure.  
proffice of pe chauceillarie.  
Or of pe prynces tresorie.  
No for pe writ ne for pe taile.



To thurant may not pame aduile.  
 ye world which noll so wel we wille.  
 shal make vs pame but a molle.  
 So passe we wyf oute mede.  
 pat we noon ower wise spede.  
 But as we rede pat he spede.  
 ye whiche his lordes besant hedde.  
 And per upon nat non ences.  
 But at pis tyme napeles.  
 What ower man his yonk deserue.  
 ye world so lusty is to serue.  
 pat we wyf him ben alle accorded.  
 And pat is wist and wel recorded.  
 purch out pis erpe in alle bondes.  
 For knyghtes wyne wyf her hondes.  
 For oure tyme shal be stille.  
 And stonde upon ye flesshes wille.  
 It were a trauaile for to precho.  
 ye fey of crise and for to teche.  
 ye folk knowe it wol not be.  
 But euery prelat holde his so.  
 Wyf al such ese as he may gete.  
 Of lusty drem and lusty mete.  
 Wherof ye body fat and ful.  
 Is vnto gofthly labour dull.  
 And pouh to handle pilke plovsh.  
 But elles we be swif ynobsh.  
 To wardes ye worldes auarice.  
 And pat is as a sacrifice.  
 Which after pat papostel seip.  
 Is opynly a ven ye feip.  
 Vnto ye ydoles yowe and gnuited.  
 But napeles it is noll haunted.  
 And vertuchauunged in to vice.  
 So pat lantesse is auarice.  
 In whos chapitre noll we trete.  
 y fader pis matere is so bete.  
 So fer pat elier whil g hne. **Amas**  
 g shal ye bette hede yeue.  
 Vnto my self be many weie.  
 But ouer pis noll wolde i prey.  
 To wite what ye braunches are.  
 Of auarice and how yei fare.  
 As wel in loue as in ower wise.  
 y sone as i ye shal deuise. **confes**  
 In such a manere as yei stonde. **for.**  
 So pat pou shalt hem vnderstonde.  
**Agos aut agis cupidus domi**  
**lz qz domosqz. possideat totam sic qz**  
**solis humani. Solus z innumeris**  
**inlicitis spirat amores. De sacramul**  
**leus sic tibi culta Venus. A hic**  
**tuncat confessor sup illa spate a**  
**uaricie que cupiditas dicitur qui**  
**amoris causa ptraquis amant**  
**super hoc opponit.**  
**A**me Auarice is not soleyne.

Which is of gold the capiterne.  
 But of his court in sondri wise.  
 After ye scole of hire apprise.  
 She hay of seruantz many on.  
 Wherof pat couetise is con.  
 Which hoy ye large world aboute.  
 To seche ye vantages oute.  
 Where pat he may ye pfit wyne.  
 To auarice and bynyng it inne.  
 pat con hat and pat ower dralber.  
 per is no day pat hym by dalber.  
 To more ye some pan ye more.  
 When per is eny pting to done.  
 And namely wyf couetise.  
 For he stant out of alle assise.  
 Of resohable mannes fare.  
 Where he purpoyer hym to fare.  
 Upon his lucie and his biyete.  
 ye finale path ye large strete.  
 ye forloun and ye longe myle.  
 All is but con for pilke while.  
 And for pat he is such on holde.  
 Same auarice hym hay wyf holde.  
 As he whiche is ye pryncipal.  
 Outward for he is ouer al.  
 A purdioner and a spie.  
 For rih as of an hylingri pye.  
 ye storde bestes ben assaied.  
 Rih so is couetise assaied.  
 To loken where he may purchace.  
 For he his wille wolde embrace.  
 Al pat pis wilde world bechypen.  
 But euere he soull what ouerhappen.  
 pat he ne may not all fulfille.  
 ye lustes of his gredy wille.  
 But where it failer in a londe.  
 pat couetise in myhti honde.  
 Is sette it is ful hard to fede.  
 For pan he takey non ower hede.  
 But pat he may purchace and gete.  
 his conscience hay all foryete.  
 And not what pting it may amouute.  
 pat he shal after ward a compte.  
 But as ye lace in his degre.  
 Of po pat lasse ben pan he.  
 ye fyllhes gredily deuourey.  
 So pat no water hem socourey.  
 Rih so no lalde may rescourey.  
 For him pat wole no rih a lorde.  
 For where pat suchon is of myht.  
 his wille shal stonde in stede of rih.  
 pus ben ye men destroyed ful of rih.  
 Til pat ye grete god a lorde.  
 A yen so gret a couetise.  
 Redresse it in his owen wise.  
 And in ensauple of alle po.  
 I fynde a tale write so.



The which for it is good to law.

Here afterward you shall it here.

**O**ne point exemplum contra mag-  
nates cupidos. Et narrat de orasso

Romanorum Imperatore qui currit in qua

speculum virtutis Rome fixit extitit.

Solosa circumstantis cupiditate erat

Sinde non solum in ipse pdaonem

set totius civitatis intollemibile

saupum concingere causam.

**W**hen Rome stood in noble plit.

Surge which was so pfit.

In myrour made of his dervie.

And sette it in ye towne of the.

Of marble on a piler by oute.

pat pei by pritty myle a boute.

By day and eke also by nyghte.

In pat myrour he holde myghte.

Here enemyes if any were.

Wip al here ordenance pere.

Which pei a ven pe cite caste.

So pat while pille myrour laste.

per Was no lond which myghte achue.

Wip were Rome for to greue.

Wherof Was gret enue po.

And felle pat ille tyme so.

pat Rome hadde werres stronge.

A ven cartage and stoden longe.

pe also citees vpon dekar.

Cartage seeth pe stronge estat.

Of Rome in pille myrour stonde.

And pouht al pryncely to fonde.

To ouerproolde it by som wile.

And ham bald Was pille while.

The pryncce and ledere of cartage.

Which had set al his corage.

Vpon knyghthode in such a wise.

pat he be worpi and be wise.

And be noon oper Was conseilless.

Wherof pe world is pe moruilled.

Of pe maystres pat he wrouhte.

Vpon pe marches which he souhte.

And fel in pille tyme also.

pe kyn of Doyl which Was po.

pouhte a ven Rome to Rebelles.

And pus Was take pe querelle.

How to destruye pe mytour.

**O**f Rome pe Was Emperour.

Crassus which Was so couetous.

pat he Was euere desirous.

Of gold to gete pe pllane.

Wherof pat Doyl and eke cartage.

Which philosophres wise a grete.

Gerome of his manere to tete.

And at pe laste in his demer.

pere were philosophres pre.

To do pe ping which vnder took.

And per vpon pei Wip hem took.

A gret tresour of gold in coffres.

To Rome and pus pe philosophres.

To gedre in compaignie wente.

But noon wise what pei mente.

Whan pei to Rome come were.

So pryncely pei dwelled pere.

As pei pat pouhten to deceyue.

Was noon pat myghte of hem perceyue.

Til pei in sondry stedes haue.

Here gold vnder pe ground be graue.

In also tresors pat by holde.

pei sholde seme as pei were olde.

And so fory pame vpon a day.

Al opeilly in good array.

To permyceur pei hem presente.

And tolde it Was here entente.

To dwellen vnder his seruice.

And he hem axep in what wise.

And pei him tolde in such a plit.

pat eche of hem hadde a spirit.

pe which sleppunge amht apper.

And hem be sondry dreines leue.

After pe world pat hay betis.

Vnder pe ground if ouht ben hid.

Of old tresour at any wolde.

pei sholde it in here shewenes knolde.

And vpon pis condition.

pei seyn pat what gold vnder pe town.

Of Rome is hid pei wolde it fonde.

per sholde nouht be leste be hynde.

By so pat he pe haluendel.

hem graunte. and he assentep wel.

And pus cam seith for to dwelle.

Wip couetise as i pe telle.

pis Emperour had redily.

pat pei be lorned faste by.

Where he his owne body lay.

And whan it Was a morowe day.

pat oon of hem seyn pat he mette.

Wher he a gold horde sholde fette.

Wherof pis emperour Was glad.

And per vpon a lion he had.

his amour for to go and myne.

And he hym self of pat corne.

Goop fory Wip al and at his hond.

pe tresour redy pere he fonde.

Where as pei seide it sholde be.

And who Was pame glad but he.

pat pon pat oper day secounde.

pei haue an oper gold horde fonde.

Which pe secounde myster took.

Vpon his shewene and vnder took.

And pus pe sope experience.

To permyceur pat such credence.

pat al his trust and al his feith.

So slyerliche on hem he leith.



**O**f pat he found hym so relieved,  
pat pei ben perfectly beleued.  
#As pouh pei were goddes pre.  
#Nol herke pe subtilite.  
#He proude maister sholde mete.  
#Whiche as pei seide was vnniete.  
#Aboue hem alle and coure most.  
#And he wyf oure noyse or dost.  
#Al pryncely so as he wolde.  
#Upon pe moorde his shewene tolde.  
#To pemyerour rike in his ere.  
#And seide hym pat he wiste where.  
#A tresour was so plentebous.  
#Of gold and eke so precious  
#Of jelweles and of riche scoues.  
#pat yn to alle his hois at ones.  
#It were a charge sufficient.  
#his lord vpon his couenant.  
#his glid and lerep where it was.  
#pe maister seide vnder pe glas.  
#And told hym eke vnder pe myn.  
#He wolde ordeyne such entyn.  
#pat pei pe werk sholde vnder sette.  
#Wip tymber pat wip outen sette.  
#we may the tresour safely delue.  
#So pat pe myrour by hym selue.  
#Wip oute empyement shal seonde.  
#And pus pe maister vpon honde.  
#Hap vnder take in alle weie.  
#his lord which had his wit a weie.  
#And was wip couetise blent.  
#A noon per to yaf his assent.  
#And pus pei myne forp wip al.  
#The tymber set vp ouer al.  
#Wher of pe piler stood vp riht.  
#Til hit be fel vpon a nyht.  
#pe clerkes whan pei were dar.  
#how pat pe tymber ouly bar.  
#pe piler where pe myrour stood.  
#here sleithe no man vnder stood.  
#pei wou be nyhte yn to pe myn.  
#Wip rich and fulphre and wip rosyn.  
#And whan pe que was a slepe.  
#And wilde fire in to pe depe.  
#pei caste among pe tymber werk.  
#And so forp whil pe nyht was deok.  
#Desayned in a pouere aray.  
#pei passed pe coun er day.  
#And whan pei come vpon an hell.  
#pei siben hold pe myrour fell.  
#Wher of pei made iope 3 nouh.  
#And eche of hem wip opey loubh.  
#And seiden so what couetise.  
#may do wip hem pat be nouht wise.  
#And pat was proued after ward.  
#for enery lond to Rome ward.  
#Whiche hadde be subgit to fore.

**W**han pis myrour was so forlore.  
#And pei pe wonder hope seie.  
#Anon begonne desobere.  
#Wip werres vpon euen side.  
#And pus hap some lost his proude.  
#And was defouled ouer al.  
#for pis 3 synde of hambal.  
#pat he of Romeyns in a day.  
#When he hem found out of a ray.  
#So gret a multitude slouh.  
#pat of goldrynnes whiche he drouh.  
#Of gentil hondes pat ben dede.  
#Busshele full pre 3 rede.  
#he felde and made a brunge also.  
#pat he myht ouer tybre go.  
#vpon pe corpe pat dede were.  
#of pe romaynes pat he slouh pere.  
#Is it nol to speke of pe iurse.  
#The whiche after pe couetise.  
#was take vpon his emperour.  
#for he destruyed pe metour.  
#It is a wonder for to here.  
#pe romayns made a chepere.  
#And sette here Emperour per June.  
#And seiden for he wolde wynn.  
#Of gold pe supfluite.  
#of gold he sholde such plente.  
#Receyue til he seide ho.  
#And wip gold whiche he hadde po.  
#Soplyng hot wip iule a panne.  
#In to his mouth pei poueru panne.  
#And pus pe parst of gold was queynt.  
#Wip gold whiche had be atteynt.  
#Wher of my sone you myht here.  
#Whan couetise hap lost pe sciene.  
#Of resonable gouernance.  
#per fulley ofte gret vengeaunce.  
#for per may be no worse ying.  
#pan couetise a bente a kyng.  
#off it in his persone be.  
#It dox pe more aduersite.  
#And if it in his counseil seonde.  
#It bringey alday myschies to honde.  
#of comune harme and if it wolle.  
#Wip June his court it wol be knolle.  
#for pan shal pe kyng be puled.  
#pe man which hap his londs tiled.  
#A waitey not more redily.  
#pe heruest pan pei gredily.  
#re make panne warde and warche.  
#Wher pei pe profit myhten caache.  
#And yit ful ofte it falley so.  
#As men may sen among hem po.  
#pat he which most couetey faste.  
#hap leost auantage at pe laste.  
#for whan fortune is per a yem.  
#pouh he couete it is in veyn.



**T**he happes ben nouht alle aliche.  
 Don is made pouere an ower riche.  
 The court to some it doy profit.  
 And som ben euer in ower pit.  
 And yit pei hope aliche fore.  
 Couerte but fortune is more.  
 Su to pat o part fmozable.  
 And pouh it be nouht resonable.  
 pis ying a man may seen alday.  
 Wher of pat 9 pe telle may.  
 A faire ensample in remembrance.  
 How euery man mote take his chance.  
 Of richesse or of pouert.  
 How so it stonde of pe decerte.  
 Here is not euery ying a quyt.  
 Ful ofte a man may se pis yit.  
 Pat who best do lest pouh shal haue.  
 But helpey not pe world to craue.  
 Which out of rule and of mesure.  
 Hay euere stonde in auenture.  
 As wel in court as alle where.  
 And how in olde daies yere.  
 It stood so as pe yingres felle.  
 I penke a tale for to telle.  
**Thic point confessor exemplum**  
**contra illos qui in domibz regu ser**  
**uientes pro eo qd ipi secundu cupid**  
**tatem pignora non erant de reglo p**  
**uicio quibus in cor defectu indisce**  
**te murmurant.**  
**A** cronig: pis 9 rede.  
 A bonte a ying as moste nede.  
 Wer was of knyghtes & squiers.  
 Ower route and oke of officers.  
 Som of long tyme shyn hadde sued.  
 And pouhten pat pei haue deserued.  
 Auancement and non wy oute.  
 And som also ben of pe route.  
 Pat comen but a while a non.  
 And pei auanced weye anon.  
 pise olde men upon pis ying.  
 So as pei dorste a yen pe ying.  
 Among hem self compleynen ofte.  
 But per is no ying seid so softe.  
 Pat it ne comey out at pe laste.  
 pe ying it wite and also faste.  
 Als he whiche was of hem prudence.  
 He shoy per fore an euidence.  
 Of hem pat pleyuen in pat cas.  
 To knolle in whos defaute it was.  
 And all wy ying his owne entente.  
 Pat no man wite what it mente.  
 A noon he lete tly cofres make.  
 Of so semblaunce and of so make.  
 So lich pat no liff yille prollie.  
 Pat oon may fto pat ower knolle.  
 pei were in to his chambrie brouht.

But no man wot whi pei be wrouht.  
 And napeles pe ying hay bede.  
 Pat pei be sette in pryueste.  
 Als he pat was of wisdom sihe.  
 Whan he per to his tyme sihe.  
 Al pryuehly pat noon it wiste.  
 His owne hondes pat oo liste.  
 Of syn gold and of syn perrie.  
 pe whiche out of his tresorie.  
 Was take a noon he filled fulle.  
 Pat ower cofre of schawd and mulle.  
 Wy stones meynd he fulde also.  
 pus be pei fulle bope tly.  
 So pat erliche upon a day.  
 He bad wy ying pene he lay.  
 pene schulde be to fore his bed.  
 A bozd up set and faire spred.  
 And pan he leet pe cofres sette.  
 Upon pe bozd and dede hem sette.  
 He knelle pe names wel of yo.  
 pe whiche a yen him gnyched so.  
 Bope of his chambrie and of his halle.  
 A noon and sende for hem alle.  
 And seide to hem in pis wise.  
 per shal no man hls hay desprise.  
 per wel ye haue longe serles.  
 And god wot what ye haue deserued.  
 But if it is a longon me.  
 Of pat ye vn auanced be.  
 Or elles it be longon yow.  
 pe sope shal be proued noll.  
 To stoppe wy yowre yuel word.  
 To here tly cofres on pe bozd.  
 These whiche yow lifte of bope tly.  
 And witey wel pat oon of yo.  
 Is wy tresour so ful begon.  
 Pat if ye haye per yow.  
 pe schulle be riche men for euer.  
 Now ches and take pat yow is leuen.  
 But be wel war er pat ye take.  
 For of pat oon 9 vnder take.  
 per is no maner good per ying.  
 Wher of ye misten profit wyne.  
 A loll goop to gredre of on assent.  
 And take yowre quise ment.  
 For but 9 yow pis day auance.  
 It stant upon yowre ouhne chaunce.  
 Al only in defaute of grace.  
 So shal be tholte in pis place.  
 Upon yow alle wel and syn.  
 pat no defaute shal be myn.  
 pei knellen alle and wy o boys.  
 pe ying pei pouken off his choye.  
 And ascer pat pei up arise.  
 And gon a side and hem adyse.  
 And atte laste pei accorde.  
 Wher of here tale to recorde.



To what issue ye be falle.  
 A knyght shal speke for hem alle.  
 He kueleth down to ye kyng.  
 And seih pat ye vpon his prync.  
 Or for to hymne or for to lese.  
 Seen alle redy for to chese.  
 So took his knyght a yerde on honde.  
 And gowp yere as ye cofres stonde.  
 And wy assent of euerychon.  
 He seih his yerde vpon pat oon.  
 And seih ye kyng how yllke same.  
 ye chese in aucton by name.  
 And preier him ye mot it haue.  
 And he which wolde his honde saue.  
 Whan he hay herd ye comyn boys.  
 He graunted hem here olue choyse.  
 And took hem yere vpon ye fere.  
 But for he wolde it were fere.  
 What mood ye haue as ye suppose.  
 He had anon ye cofre vnclose.  
 Which was filled wy straw and stones.  
 yus ben ye serued al at ones.  
 yus kyng pan in ye same stede.  
 A non pat oper cofre vnclose.  
 Where as ye fihel gret richesse.  
 Wel more pan ye coupon gresse.  
 So seih ye kyng now may ye se.  
 pat ye is no defaute in me.  
 For in my self I wol acquite.  
 And berer ye youre olue wite.  
 Of pat fortune yold hay refused.  
 yus whis his wise kyng excused.  
 And ye lesce of here yuele speche.  
 And mercy of here kyng bescehe.  
*Arto hic de clauis accidentia ubi nar  
 rat qualiter fredericus romanor  
 penitor duos pnyes auduit liaga  
 tes quoz unus dixit. Ene potest di  
 cari que rex vult dicare dices. Et  
 alius dixit. Quem deus vult dicare  
 dices erit. que res ad expunentiu  
 postea prolata fuisse. ille qui deu  
 inuocabat pascellum nro plenu  
 dicitur est alius vero caponis pas  
 cellum pcelegit...*  
**S**undel to his matere like.  
 I fynde a tale how frederike.  
 Of fome pat tyme emperour.  
 herd as he wente a gret clamour.  
 Of eldo beggers vpon ye weie.  
 pat oon of hem began to seie.  
 A lord wel may ye man be riche.  
 Whom pat a kyng list for to riche.  
 pat oper seide no prync so.  
 But he is riche and wel be go.  
 To whom pat god wole seide wele.  
 And yus ye made wordes fele.

Wher of his lord hay hede nome.  
 And dede hem bope for to come.  
 To ye paleys wher he shal ete.  
 And had ordyne for here mete.  
 To pastees which he lette do make.  
 A capow and pat oon was bake.  
 And in pat oper for to hymne.  
 Of floreyne al pat may wyprune.  
 He lette do putte. and gret richesse.  
 And euene aliche as a man may gesse.  
 Outward ye were bope alio.  
 yus begger was comaunded so.  
 He pat which helde him to ye kyng.  
 pat he ferst chese vpon his prync.  
 He sihe hem but he felte hem nouht.  
 So pat vpon his olde pouht.  
 He ches ye capow and forsook.  
 pat oper which he felde took.  
 But whan he wiste how it ferde.  
 He seide a lordde pat men it herde.  
 It olde haue I certenly conceyued.  
 pat he may lightly be deceyued.  
 pat trusty in to mannes help.  
 But wel is him whom god wole help.  
 For he stant on ye sifer side.  
 Which elles shulde go byde.  
 I see my felaw wel recouere.  
 And I mot dwelle stille pouere.  
 yus spak his begger his entent.  
 And pouere he cam and poue he went.  
 Of pat he hay richesse souht.  
 his infortune it wolde nouht.  
 So it may schelle it sondry wise.  
 Betwene fortune and couetise.  
 ye chaunce is cast vpon ye dee.  
 But yit ful of to a man may see.  
 I wolde of such napeles.  
 Which euere put hem self in pzees.  
 To note hem good and yit ye fule.  
 And for to speke of his entale.  
 Touchyng of loue in ye matere.  
 my good sone as you miht here.  
 Fih as it wy po men stood.  
 Of infortune of worldes good.  
 As you hast herd me telle a boue.  
 Fyht so ful of ce it stant by loue.  
 youh you coueite it euere more.  
 yow shalt uolunt haue o del penore.  
 For only pat which ye is shape.  
 The remenant is but a jape.  
 And napeles I nolde of po.  
 yer ben pat noll conceyten so.  
 pat where as ye a woman se.  
 Or ten or elvelue youh ye be.  
 ye loue noll so vnayysed.  
 pat where ye beaute stant assied.  
 ye mannes herte anon is yere.



And proolbey tales in here ere.  
 And seip how pat he louep streite.  
 And put he sette him to couite.  
 An hundred pouh he seih a day.  
 So wolde he more pah he may.  
 But for ye grete couetise.  
 Off soltre and of fool emprise.  
 In eche of hem he fytte somwhat.  
 pat plesep hym or vis or pat.  
 Som oon for she is white of skyn.  
 Som oon for he is noble of kyn.  
 Som oon for he hap wys chere.  
 Som oon for pat semep meke.  
 Som oon for he hap cyhen greye.  
 Som oon for she can lalwe and pleye.  
 Som oon for he is long and final.  
 Som oon for she is litel and tall.  
 Som oon for he is pale and bleche.  
 Som oon for she is softe of speche.  
 Som oon for pat she is amysed.  
 Som oon for she hap nouht ben ysed.  
 Som oon for she can dauce & synge.  
 So pat som prync to his lityng.  
 he fytte and polle no more he fele.  
 But pat she hap a litel hele.  
 It is I now pat he perfore.  
 He loue and pus in hundred score.  
 Whil per be newe he wolde he hadde.  
 Whom he for sakep she shal be ladde.  
**Ecce non indicat de coloribus...**  
 The blynde man no colour demey.  
 But al is oon rite as him semey.  
 So hap his lust no inament.  
 Whom couetise of loue bleut.  
 hym penbey pat to his couetise.  
 how pat ye world he may suffice.  
 for by his wil he wolde haue al.  
 If pat it myghte so befall.  
 pus is he comoun as ye strete.  
 I sette nouht of his byette. **Confess.**  
 My sone hastow such couetise. **for.**  
 My fader such loue I despise. **Amas.**  
 And whil I lyue shal don ouere.  
 for in good feip yit had I leuere.  
 pan to coueite in such a weie.  
 To ben for euere til I deye.  
 As pouere as Job and Loueles.  
 Outaken oon for hameles.  
 his poukes is no man a lyue.  
 for pat a man sholde al vnyoue.  
 Theb ouht no wysman coueyte.  
 ye lalwe was not set so secrete.  
 for pi my self wy al to same.  
 Such oon per is I wolde haue.  
 And noon of alle yese oper mo.  
 My sone if pat pou woldest so. **co.**  
 I am not wyop blit ouer pis. **fessoz.**

I wolde ye tellen how it is.  
 for yere be men whiche oper wise.  
 fytte only for ye couetise.  
 Of pat per seen a woman riche.  
 per wole per al here loue affiche.  
 I ouht for ye beaute of here face.  
 I reyt for vertu ne for grace.  
 whiche she hap elles rite I nouht.  
 But for ye pat and for ye plott.  
 And oper prync pat per to louep.  
 for in noon oper wise hem louep.  
 To loue but per profit frude.  
 And if ye profit be behynde.  
 here loue is euere lesse and lesse.  
 for after pat she hap richesse.  
 here loue is of porcion.  
 If pou hast such condicioun.  
 My sone telle rite as it is.  
**My** holy fader nay I wys. **Amas.**  
 Condicioun such haue I noon.  
 for treuly fader I loue oon.  
 So wel with al myn hertes pouht.  
 for certes pouh she hadde nouht.  
 And were as pouere as medea.  
 whiche was exiled fro trena.  
 I wolde here nouht ye lasse loue.  
 I te pouh she were at here a boue.  
 As was ye riche queene sandre.  
 which to deserue loue and grace.  
 Do Alisaundre pat was byng.  
 yaf many a wyrti riche prync.  
 or elles as Pantafiler.  
 whiche was ye queene of femine.  
 And gret richesse wy hyn nam.  
 Whan she for loue of Etor cam.  
 To Troye in rescow of ye towne.  
 I am of such condicioun.  
 pat pouh my lady of here selue.  
 were as riche asliche tibelue.  
 I coupe nouht pouh it were so.  
 I to bettre loue here pan I do.  
 for I loue in so pleyh a wyse.  
 pat for to speke of couetise.  
 As for pouert or for richesse.  
 my loue is nouper more ne lesse.  
 for in good feip I trolle pis.  
 So coueitous no man per is.  
 for whi and he my lady syhe.  
 pat he purgh to byng of his yhe.  
 Ie shuld haue such astrook wyng.  
 pat for no gold he myghte wyng.  
 he sholde not here loue a strete.  
 But if he leste yere his herte.  
 So so it were such aman.  
 pat coupe stile of a woman.  
 for yere ben men so rude of some.  
 Whan per among ye women come.



prei noon vnder protectioun.  
 pat Loue and his affection.  
 he schal nouht take hem by ye steue.  
 for prei ben out of pat bylene.  
 them lustey of no lady chere.  
 But euere penken here and here.  
 wher pat here gold is in ye cofre.  
 And wol noon ower loue profite.  
 But who so bot what loue amoute.  
 And by reson trewly acountey.  
 pan may he knowe and taken hede.  
 pat all ye lust of womanhede.  
 which may be in a lady face.  
 my lady hay and eke of grace.  
 If men shul yeue here aprise.  
 prei may wel seye howe she is wys.  
 And so be and symple of countenance.  
 And all pat good gouernance.  
 Bylonge vnto a worthy wyte.  
 She hay plenty for yllke myght.  
 pat she was bore as for yonnes  
 nature sette in here attones.  
 Seante wyte bounte so beseyn.  
 pat I may wel afferme and seyn.  
 of saluys yit neuere creature.  
 of comeliche and of fetter.  
 In euy kynges region.  
 Be hit here in comparisoun.  
 And yet to as I haue yow told.  
 yet hay she more a thousand fold.  
 of bounte. and shortly to telle.  
 She is ye pure hed and Welle.  
 And myght and ensample of good.  
 who so here vertues vnderstand.  
 me penke it ouhte a noth suffise.  
 wyte ouren ower couetise.  
 To loue suche one and to serue.  
 which wyte here chere can deserue.  
 To be beloued better I wys.  
 pan she parcas pat richest is.  
 And hay of gold a milio.  
 Such hay ben my opiniow.  
 And euere shal but napeles.  
 of seie nouht she is haueles.  
 pat she mye riche and wel at ese.  
 And hay puolsh wher wyte to plese.  
 of wordes good whom pat hire hysie.  
 But o ying wolde I wel ye wysse.  
 pat neuere for no wordes good.  
 hym herre en toward hire stode.  
 But only vnto for pure loue.  
 pat bot ye hysie god a loue.  
 Now fader what seie ye per to.  
 why lone I seie it is wel to.  
 for take of his vnt good belene.  
 what man pat wole hym self releue.  
 To loue in any ower wysse.

he schal wel fynde his couetise.  
 shal fore greue him atte laste.  
 for such a loue may not laste.  
 But now men seye in oure dayes.  
 men maken but a felwe assayes.  
 But if ye cause be richesse.  
 for ye loue is wel ye lesse.  
 And who pat wolde ensample telle.  
 By olde dayes as ye felle.  
 pan myht a man wel vnderstonde.  
 Such loue may nouht longe stonde.  
 Now herkene sone and yow shalt here.  
 A grete ensample of his matere.  
 This point exemplum contra istos  
 propter amorem set propter diuicias pro  
 talia sumit. Et narrat de quodam  
 Regi Aquilie seue scillo qui no solu  
 propter pecuniam uxorem duxit set et  
 am pecunie comerao uxorem sibi dis  
 conlatam vendidit.

**S**o crete vpon ye cas of Robe.  
 So as he tolden here a bove.  
 frude wite a wonder ying.  
 Of Duple Whilom was a kyngh.  
 A man of his complexion.  
 And yowt but his affection.  
 After ye nature of his age.  
 Was yit not fulle in his corage.  
 ye lust of women for to knowe.  
 So it lead vpon a probo.  
 his lord felt in to grete siknesse.  
 Whilke hay done ye besynesse.  
 of sonder cures many one.  
 To make hym hole and per vpon.  
 A worthy maister which per was.  
 pat hym to counseil in his cas.  
 pat if he wolde han parfit hele.  
 he sholde wyte a woman dele.  
 A flesch a yowt a lusty wyte.  
 To don hym compaignie a myht.  
 for pan he seide him redili.  
 pat he shal be al hool per by.  
 And ower wise he knew no cure.  
 his kyngh which stood in auenture.  
 of hys of dey for medecyne.  
 Assented was and of todyne.  
 his steward whom he trustey wel.  
 he toke. and tolde hym euery del.  
 how pat his maister hadde seide.  
 And pere vpon he hay hym preyde.  
 And chargey vpon his lineage.  
 pat he do make purueance.  
 of suchone as be couenable.  
 for his plesance and delitable.  
 And bad hym how pat euere it stode.  
 pat he shal haue no gawde.  
 for his wille is vnt wel to paye.



**T**he Steward seide he wolde assaie.  
 But now herd after you shall wite.  
 As I fynde in pe booke wite.  
 Whiche couetise in Loue dop.  
 His Steward for to telle so.  
 A monyes alle pe men a lye.  
 A lusty Lady hay to Wyse.  
 Whiche napeles for gold he toke.  
 And nouht for Loue as seip pe boke.  
 A riche marchaunt of pe Lond.  
 Here fader Was and he hire fond.  
 So Worshyly and such richesse.  
 Of Worldees good and such Luygesse.  
 Wyf hire he yaf in marriage.  
 That only for yllke auantage.  
 Of good his Steward hay hire take.  
 For hire and not for Louessake.  
 And pat Was after Ward wel sene.  
 How herfue What I Wolde mene.  
 His Steward in his olde herte.  
 Sih pat his Lord may nouht a sterte.  
 His maladie but he haue.  
 A lusty Woman hym to saue.  
 And yowht he Wolde yene yuo Wh.  
 Of his tresour Wher of he dwollh.  
 Gret couetise in to his mynde.  
 And set his honour fer behynde.  
 Yuo he Whom gold hay ouer set.  
 Was trapped in hys olde net.  
 pe gold hay made his Wities Lame.  
 So pat sechynge his olde hame.  
 He toldey in pe Kynges Cw.  
 And seide hym pat he Wyte Where.  
 A gentyl Woman a lusty one.  
 yo Was. and ynder Wolde he gone.  
 But he mote yene yistes mete.  
 For but it be purgh gret biyete.  
 Of gold he seip he shal nouht fiede.  
 pe Kyng hay bad ypon pe uede.  
 pat take an hundred pound he sholde.  
 And yef it Where pat he Wolde.  
 By so it Were in Worpi place.  
 And yuo to fonde in Loues grace.  
 His Kyng his gold hay abandoned.  
 And Whan his tale Was ful rouned.  
 pe Steward toke pe gold and Wente.  
 Wyf yune his herte and many a Wente.  
 Of couetise pan he caste.  
 Wher of a purpos atte Laste.  
 A yen Loue and ayen his rlyt.  
 He toke and seide holl yllke nyht.  
 His Wyf shal ligge by pe Kyng.  
 And gop yentynge ypon his yung.  
 Toward his In al he cam home.  
 In to pe chambre and pan he nome.  
 His Wyf and told here al pe cas.  
 And she Whiche red for shame Was.

Wyf bope hire hondes hay him prede.  
 Euehyng and in his Wyse seide.  
 That she to resou and to skile.  
 In What ying pat he dide Wile.  
 Is redy for to don his heste.  
 But pe ying Were nouht honeste.  
 pat he for gold here sholde selle.  
 And he so Wyf his Wordes selle.  
 For Wyf his gasty contenance.  
 Seip pat he shal do obeysance.  
 And folle his Wil in euery place.  
 And yuo purgh strengre of his manace.  
 Hire innocence is ouerlad.  
 Wher of she Was so sore a drad.  
 pat she his Wille mot uede obeye.  
 And per ypon his shape a Wye.  
 pat he his olde Wyf by nyht.  
 Hay out of alle memies yllte.  
 So pryncly pat noon it Wyte.  
 Eueht to pe Kyng Which as hym hys.  
 may do Wyf here What pat he Wolde.  
 For Whan she Was pe as she sholde.  
 Wyf hym abedde vnder pe dore.  
 pe Steward toke his Leue and gop.  
 In to a chambre faste by.  
 But holl he slep pat Not not I.  
 For he hay cause of Jelousie.  
 But he Whiche hay pe compaignie.  
 Of suche a Lustione as she.  
 hym yowhte pat of his degre.  
 per Was no man so wel at ese.  
 She dop al pat she may to plesse.  
 So pat his herte al hool she hadde.  
 And yuo his Kyng his fore Ladde.  
 Til it Was nyht ypon pe day.  
 pe Steward yune Where she lay.  
 Cam to pe bed and in his Wyse.  
 Hay bede pat she shulde arise.  
 pe Kyng seip may she shal not go.  
 his Steward seide ayen not so.  
 For she mote go crat be knolle.  
 And so I Wor at yllke prolle.  
 Whan I hay fette to yold here.  
 pe Kyng his tale Wolde no there.  
 And seip holl pat he hay hire bouht.  
 For in she shal departe nouht.  
 Til he see pe bryhte day beholde.  
 And causht here in his armes folde.  
 As he Whiche lyste for to pleye.  
 And bad his Steward gon his Wye.  
 And so he dide a yen his Wille.  
 And yuo his Wyf a bedde scyllle.  
 Lay Wyf pe Kyng pe Louge nyht.  
 Til pat it Was hyl sonne hys.  
 But Who she Was he knew no ying.  
 Cho cam pe Steward to pe Kyng.  
 And prede hym pat Wyf oute shame.



In sayyng of hys good name...  
 He myghte lode hom a yem.  
 His Lady. and hay colde hym pleyne.  
 How pat is was his olde wyf.  
 He fynyng his ere du to his self.  
 Hay lode. and whan pat he is herde.  
 Wel uph out of his wit he ferde.  
 And seide a Caytif most of alle.  
 Wher was it euere er his befall.  
 That eny colward in his Wyf.  
 He toke his Wyf for couetise.  
 How hast boye here and me begyled.  
 And also myn olde wyf estat reuiled.  
 Wher of pat buyon du to ye.  
 Her after shal she neuere be.  
 For his a boll to god I make.  
 After his day If I ye take.  
 How shalt be honored and to dralle.  
 How lode a noon how be wyf dralle.  
 So pat I se ye neuere more.  
 His faward yanne dralde hym fore.  
 Wyf al ye haste pat he may.  
 And fledge a way pat same day.  
 And was exiled out of londe.  
 To pere a wyce housbonde.  
 Which yus hay lost his Wyf for euere.  
 But napeles she hadde a leuere.  
 He fynyng here weddey and honourey.  
 Wher of here name she socourey.  
 Which erst was loste purgh couetise.  
 Of hym pat hadde hys ower Wyf.  
 And hay himself also forlore.  
 My sone be you War yer fore. **confess.**  
 Wher you shalt loue in eny place.  
 Pat you ne couetise embrace.  
 He which is nouth of loue kynde.  
 But for al pat a man may fynde.  
 How in his tyme of yille corage.  
 How gret dysheise in mariage.  
 Whan demyn melley wyf ye suare.  
 And mariage is mad for lute.  
 For for ye lust or for ye helle.  
 What pat shal wyf ower dede.  
 He may not fynde to repente.  
 My fader such is myn entente. **Amas.**  
 For napeles good is to haue.  
 For good may ofte tyme fynde.  
 He loue which shold elles fynde.  
 But god which wot myn heuris wille.  
 I dar wel tale to witnesse.  
 Pat was I neuere for richesse.  
 Eset wyf mariage noon.  
 For al myn here is vpon one.  
 So fiely pat in ye pson.  
 Stand al myn wordes ioye alone.  
 I axe nuyver part ne plough.  
 If I he hadde it were I nouth.

Here loue shulde me suffice.  
 Wyf outen ower couetise.  
 To hold my fader as of his.  
 Touchyng of vilt as it is.  
 My wyfste I am beknolwen pleyne.  
 And if ye wille oust elles seyn.  
 Of couetise if ye be more.  
 In loue a gropey out ye fore.  
 Fallere au nequeat ppa mtr fraude stor  
 uat. Testes sit qdr eis uere rectora fides.  
 Sic agros cupid? du querit amans nu  
 liers. Oltra testes falsos. falsus here  
 suos. oris sa vindicta penitus abibit in  
 eius. Disuqz cordis intima cuncta videt.  
 Fallax puiro non est laudanda puella  
 puellam. Oltra set false condicione op.  
 Alio tractat sup illis amariis spece  
 bz i falsu testimoniu inuapantur qz  
 fraudulenta circuluacio ta in cupid  
 tate qui in amoris causa sui deside  
 in pona qui sepe fallaciter attingit.  
**M**y sone you shalt vnderstonde.  
 How couetise hay yit on honde.  
 In special tyme conculours.  
 Pat ben also his procurours.  
 The ferst of hem is fals witnesse.  
 Which euere is redy to witnesse.  
 What ying his mayster wole him hote.  
 Pure is ye secunde hote.  
 Which sparey not to shere an ope.  
 Youh it be fals and god wrope.  
 Pat one shal fals witnesse be.  
 Pat ower shal ye ying for shere.  
 Whan he is charged on ye boke.  
 So what wyf hay and what wyf crok.  
 He make here craft ofte wyme.  
 And wole not knowe what is yime.  
 For couetise. and yus men seyn.  
 He make many a fals barym.  
 He may no trelle querel arise.  
 In yille quest and yille assise.  
 Wher as he tyme ye peple enforme.  
 For he bepe euere on nuyver forme.  
 Pat vpon hold hys consience.  
 He founde and take here euidence.  
 And yus wyf fals witnesse and ope.  
 He wyme hem mete. and driuk. i doyes.  
 Fright so yer be who pat hem knelle.  
 Of ppele louers fele many vntrelle.  
 How may a woman fynde I nolle  
 Pat eche of hem whan he shal wolle.  
 A noon he wole his hondees dolvn leyn.  
 Vpon a boke and shere and seyn.  
 Pat he wole fey and trouy bere.  
 And yus he pprey him to shere.  
 To seruen enel til he deye.  
 And al is verrey trecherye.



For when ye love him self triep.  
 ye more he were ye more he prey.  
 When he his fey makep almyse.  
 pan may a woman trust hym lest.  
 For til he may his wille acheue.  
 he is no longer for to leue.  
 thus is ye troupe of loue exiled.  
 And many a good woman begiled.  
**A**nd eke to speke of fals witnesse.  
 per be now many suche i gesse.  
 pat lich vnto ye prouisoris.  
 yei make here pryuey prouours.  
 To telle hold pere is such aman.  
 Which is worpi to loue and can.  
 Al pat a good man sholde kenne.  
 So pat wyf lehyng is begonne.  
 ye cause in whiche yei wole pade.  
 And also liker as ye arde.  
 yemake of pat per knowen fals.  
 And thus full ofte aboute ye hale.  
 Loue is of falsse men embraced.  
 But loue whiche is so purchaced.  
 Coupy afterward to litle pryse.  
 for yf my soue if you be wys.  
 Iow you hast herd pis euidence.  
 yow myht ym olwe conscience.  
 Oppose if you hast ben suchon.  
 Iow god wot fider i am noon.  
 To neuere was for as men seip.  
 When pat a man shal make his fey.  
 his herte and tynge moste acorde.  
 for if so be pat yei discorde.  
 pan is he fals and elles nouht.  
 And i dar seye as of my pouht.  
 In loue it is nouht discordable.  
 On to my worde but acordable.  
 And in pis wyse fider i.  
 my rust wel were and sauehy.  
 pat i my lady loue wel.  
 for pat accordy euendel.  
 it nedey nouht to my sope falle.  
 pat i witnes shulde dralle.  
 In to pis day for neuere yit.  
 ye myht it synke in to my wit.  
 pat i my counsaile shulde seie.  
 To ouy wyht or me be wrepe.  
 To sechen helpe in such manere.  
 But ouly of my lady deue.  
 And pouht a poussid men it wysse.  
 pat i here loue and pen hem wysse.  
 wy me to were and to witnesse.  
 yit were pat no fals witnesse.  
 for i dar on pis trollye dwelle.  
 Ioue here more pan i can telle.  
 thus am i fider gulteles.  
 As ye haue herd and napeles.  
 In youre soue i put it all.

One Wite in special.  
 It shal not comunliche faile.  
 Al pouht it for a tyme a vaile.  
 pat fals witnes his cause pade.  
 Upon ye poynt of his fals hede.  
 It shal wel afterward be kyd.  
 Wher of so as it is betid.  
 Eufantyle of such pynges blynde.  
 In a cronys Wite i fynde.  
**W**hic poynt. *ex. de illis q. falsu. te.  
 significans amoris innocentia circū  
 uenit. Et narrat qualiter Theas  
 achillem filium suū adolescentē mu  
 liebri delectu apparatu asserens q.  
 se puellam int. Regis richomedis  
 fillas ad educandū pduxit. Et sic  
 achilles decepto Rege filie sue Deida  
 mē sociū i cubiculū effecit  
 est sup. ipam pūrd genuit q. postea  
 uiuē pūrd mīlicia assecutus mor  
 tem patris sui apud troiam in pol  
 lexone ciuicū vindicauit.*  
**S**he goddess of ye see Theas.  
 She hadde a sone and his name is.  
 Achilles whom to kepe and warde.  
 While he was as in to warde.  
 She pouht hym safely to betake.  
 And she which dradde for his sake.  
 Of pat was seid in prophecie.  
 pat he at Troy sholde dye.  
 When pat ye cite was beleyn.  
 for ye so at ye bokes seyn.  
 She cast here wit in sondry wyse.  
 How she myht hym so desguise.  
 pat homan shulde his body knowe.  
 And so befel pat ilke poynt.  
 While pat she pouht on his dede.  
 pere was a kynge whiche richomed.  
 was hote and he was wel begone.  
 Wyf faire doubtres many one.  
 And dwelled ferre out of an yle.  
**N**ow shaltow here a wonder wile.  
 pis queene whiche ye moder was.  
 Of Achilles upon pis cas.  
 There sone as he a mayden were.  
 Let clope in ye same here.  
 Whiche longer vnto womanhode.  
 And he was youg and took non hede.  
 But suffrey al pat she hym dede.  
 Where she say hūc women bede.  
 And charged be here oyes alle.  
 How so it afterward befall.  
 pat yei discouere nouht pis pyng.  
 For ferre and make a knowlechyng.  
 Upon ye counseil whiche was noue.  
 In euery place where ye come.  
 To telle and to witnesse ye.



How he hire lady daughter is.  
 And wht in such a maner wise.  
 She had yee shulde hire do serunce.  
 So pat Achilles vnderfouner.  
 As to a yong lady beloungy.  
 Honour service and reuerence.  
 For thetis wyf gret diligence.  
 hym hap so trauht and so affuited.  
 pat how so it were a wayted.  
 wyf sobre and goodly contenance.  
 he shulde his womanyshede auance.  
 pat none ye soye knolle myhte.  
 but pat in euery mannes syte.  
 he shulde seme a pure mynde.  
 And in such wise as he hym sayde.  
 Achilles which pat ilke while.  
 Was yong vpon hym self to smile.  
 Begun whan he was so beseyn.  
 And pus after ye lokkes seyn.  
 wyf fette of perle vpon his hed.  
 All fleish be thene ye whiche zred.  
 b. Scod ye colour in his visage.  
 a. As he which wvas tendre of age.  
 pat for to lobe vpon his chete.  
 And sen his chyldy manere eke.  
 he was alloman to byholde.  
 And pan his moder to hym tolde.  
 pat she hym hadde so begone.  
 he cause pat she pouhte gone.  
 To lychomedes at pilke tide.  
 Where pat she selde he shulde abyde.  
 Amoun his doughtres for to dwelle.  
 Achilles herde his moder telle.  
 And wist nouht ye cause whi.  
 And naxles ful boymly.  
 he was redy to pat she bid.  
 wher of his moder was rht glad.  
 To lychomedes and for ye wente.  
 And whan ye hyng kiddle hire cutent.  
 And seih his yong doughter pere.  
 And pat it cum to his ere.  
 Of such record of such vienes.  
 he had rht a gret gladnes.  
 Of pat he boye seih and herde.  
 As he pat wot nouht how it ferde.  
 vpon ye counseil of ye nede.  
 But for all pat hyng lychomedes.  
 hap to ward hym his doughter take.  
 And for thetis his moder sake.  
 he put hit in to companye.  
 To dwelle wyf dedamie.  
 his owne doughter ye oldest.  
 ye furest and ye comeliest.  
 Of alle his doughtres which he hadde.  
 Do pus ye thetis ye cause zatte.  
 And lest pere Achilles feryed.  
 As he which hap hym self restryed.

In all pat ehere he may and can.  
 Out of al manere of man.  
 And took his womanysh chere.  
 wher of du to his bed fere.  
 dedamie he hap by myhte.  
 where hynde wole hym self rhte.  
 After ye philosofres seyn.  
 pat may no wih be pere a yem.  
 And pat was pilke tyme seyn.  
 ye longe myhtes hym be thene.  
 Nature which may nouht forbere.  
 hap mad hem boye for to stete.  
 ye kussen ferst and ouermore.  
 the hey weye of loues lore.  
 ye hon and al was don in dede.  
 wher of lost is ye maydenhede.  
 And pat was after that wel knolle.  
 for it besel pilke proude.  
 Et troie wher ye siege laye.  
 vpon ye cause of chene laye.  
 And of his quene daine Elyne.  
 ye grete hadden moche peyne.  
 All day to fite and to assaye.  
 But for ye myhte nouht trauale.  
 So noble a cite for to wyne.  
 A prync counseil ye begynne.  
 In sondry wise where ye tete.  
 And atte laste amoun ye grete.  
 ye sellen into pis accord.  
 pat protheus of his record.  
 which was an astronnyen.  
 And eke a gret magicien.  
 shulde of his calculacion.  
 seche after constellacion.  
 how ye ye cite myhten gete.  
 And he which hadde nouht foryete.  
 Of pat bylongy to a clerke.  
 In studie sette vpon his werke.  
 So long his wyte a boute he caste.  
 Til pat he fond out atte laste.  
 But if ye hadden Achilles.  
 here wert shal ben endeles.  
 And ouer pat he told hem pleyne.  
 In what manere he was beseyn.  
 And in what place he shal be founde.  
 So pat wyf gine alitel scounde.  
 vlyxes for wyf diomedes.  
 vpon his poynt to lychomedes.  
 Agamendon to medre sente.  
 But vlyxes er he for y wente.  
 which on of ye most wise.  
 Ordeyned hap in such a wise.  
 pat he ye moste riche aray.  
 wher of a woman may be gay.  
 wyf hym hap take manyfold.  
 And ouermore as it is tolde.  
 An harnys for a lusty knyht.



Whiche bourned was as silver bright.  
 Of silver of plate and eke of mayle.  
 As yowh he shulde to bataille.  
 He took al wyth hym by shipe.  
 And yus to gedre in felawshipe.  
 For yowh his diomedes and he.  
 In hope til pei myhten se.  
 The place where Achilles is.  
**T**he wynd stood ym nouht amys.  
 But euen to seile cole it blew.  
 Til Olyxes pe marche kuelde.  
 Where lichomede his regne hadde.  
 pe stieressum so wel hem laddo.  
 pat pei be comen sauf to londe.  
 Where pei gon out vpon pe stronde.  
 In to pe burgh where pat pei founde.  
 pe kyng. & he which hay facounde.  
 Olyxes dede pe messaige.  
 But pe counseile of his corage.  
 Whi pat he cam he tolde nouht.  
 But vndernepe he was bepyht.  
 In what manere he myhte aspie.  
 Achilles fow Seidamie.  
 And fow yese oper pat yere were.  
 ful many a lusty lady yere.  
 Thei pleyed hem yere in day or thw.  
 And as it was fortunued so.  
 It fel pat tyme in such adyse.  
 To bachus pat a sacrifice.  
 pe yonge ladies shulden make.  
 And for pe straunge men sake.  
 pat comen fow pe siege of Troie.  
 pei maken wel pe more ioye.  
 yere was reuel yere was danyng.  
 And euery byf which coupe shing.  
 Alle lusty women in pe roue.  
 A fressh carold hay souge aboute.  
 But for al pis yit napeles.  
 pe grekes vnkowle of Achilles.  
 So weren pat in no demer.  
 pei coupen wite which was he.  
 By his voice ne bi his paas.  
 Olyxes pame vpon his caas.  
 A ying of his prudence hay wrought.  
 for yake array which he hay brought.  
 To yene among pe women yere.  
 he let do fetten alle pe yere.  
 for wy a knyghtes harners eke.  
 In all a contre for to seke.  
 men shulden nouht a furer se.  
 And euery ying in his deate.  
 Culour vpon abord he leyde.  
 To lichomede and pan he preyde.  
 pat euery lady chese shulde.  
 What ying of alle pat she wolde.  
 And take it as be weye of yiste.  
 for pei hem self it shulde yiste.

he seide after here obhne wille.  
**A**chilles pame stood nouht stille.  
 When he pe brist helme behelde.  
 pe swerd pe hauberk and pe shilde.  
 his horre fel per to a none.  
 Of all pat oper wolde he none.  
 pe knyghtes gere he vnderfougey.  
 And yake away which pat belongey.  
 But to pe women he forsof.  
 And in pis wise as sey pe boke.  
 pei kuelde ym which he was.  
 for he goy fory pe grette pas.  
 In to pe chambere where he lay.  
 And none and made no delay.  
 he aruuey hym in knyghte wise.  
 pat bettre cam no man demise.  
 And as fortune shulde falle.  
 he come so fory to fore hem alle.  
 As he which po was glad ynouh.  
 For lichomede no ying loush.  
 Whan pat he seih holli pat it ferde.  
 for pan he wiste wel and herde.  
 his doughter hadde be forleyn.  
 But pat he was so ouerleyn.  
 pe wonder ouer goy his wit.  
 for in a crowing is write yit.  
 ying which shal neuere be foryete.  
 holli pat Achilles hay begete.  
 Pirrus vpon Seidamie.  
 wher of cam out pe trecherie.  
 Of fals witnes whan pei seide.  
 holli pat Achilles was amayde.  
 But pat was no ying sene po.  
 for he is to pe sege go.  
 for wy Olyxes and diamede.  
 so yus was proued in pe dede.  
 And fully spoken at yille while.  
 If o woman an oper yle.  
 Where is yere eny sikernesse.  
 Whan thetis which was pe godde.  
 Seidamie hay so be japed.  
 I not who shal ben asaped.  
 wy po wyimmen which innocene.  
 is now al day prugh such credence.  
 Deceyued ofte as it is seen.  
 wy men pat such dutte wy mene.  
 for pei ben sleih in such a wyse.  
 pat pei by sleiht and such queyntise.  
 Of fals witnesse byngen yme.  
 pat dop hem ofte for to wyne.  
 wher pei ben nouht wyri per to.  
 for pi my sone do nouht so.  
**E**y fader as of fals witnesse.  
 pe trollype and pe matiere expresse.  
 Touchyng of loue holli it hay ferd.  
 As pe haue told. I haue wel herd.  
 But for pe seiden oper wise.



Hold yllke vice of couetise.  
 Hay yit parrure of his acorde.  
 If yit pou list of some recorde.  
 To telle an oper tale so.  
 In Loues cause in tyme ago.  
 What ying is to be forlore.  
 I wolde preye yow perfore.  
 Wher of I myht ensample take.  
 Of y gode sone and for y sake.  
 Touchyng of yis I shal fulfille.  
 In axing and in othwe wille.  
 And ye matere I shal declare.  
 How ye women deceyued are.  
 Whan yis so tendre herce bere.  
 Of par yel heren men so swere.  
 For whan it comy vnto assay.  
 I fynde it fals an oper day.  
 As Jason dede to medee.  
 Which stant yit of auoite.  
 In token an in memoriale.  
 Wher of ye tale is speciale.  
 Is in ye booke of Troie Wrote.  
 Which I shal do yow for co Wrote.  
*Whic in amoris ca pome. ex. cont.*  
*Paros. Et narrat qualiter Jason p-*  
*usum ad insulam Colcos p auu-*  
*uere ibi conuincendo transire*  
*aret in amorem et coniugiu medee*  
*Regis Othonis filie miramendu fer-*  
*uor se asseruit. p ato postea con-*  
*pleto negotio ad ipam sead nauigio*  
*in gras pduxisset ubi illa seneca*  
*pris sui Othonis in floridu iuuen-*  
*tute mirabili scia reformauit. Ipe*  
*Jason fidei sui argumento alie q*  
*busq postpof. deam medeam p*  
*quadam Cronia Regis Creontis fl-*  
*lia miris detrahunt.*  
**I**n grece whilom was a kynge.  
 Of whom ye fame and knowleching.  
 Seleuey yit and Peleus.  
 He hit but it fel hym pus.  
 That his fortune hit whole so ladde.  
 Yit he no child his owne hadde.  
 To reigne after his desesse.  
 He hadde a broper unpeles.  
 Whos rite name was Eson.  
 And he ye Worpi knyht Jason.  
 Seruit ye which in chetibond.  
 Ade oper passed of his hond.  
 In armes so pat he ye beste.  
 Was named and ye Worpieste.  
 He souht worship ouer all.  
 In old herline and I ye telle shal.  
 An auenture pat yit he souhte.  
 Whiche afterward ful dere he boughte.  
 Ther was an yle whiche Colcos.

Was deped and yer of aros.  
 Grete speche in euery lond aboute.  
 Yit such merueile was noon oute.  
 In all ye Wilde World no where.  
 As ye was in yit yle pere.  
 Yit was a sheep as it was tols.  
 Ye whiche his flees bar al of gold.  
 And so ye goddes hadde it set.  
 Yit it ne miht a wey be fet.  
 Wy powder of no worldes wite.  
 And yit ful many a Worpi knyht.  
 It hadde assayed as yit dorste.  
 And euere it felle hem to ye Worste.  
 But he pat wolde it nouht for sake.  
 Bot of his knyhtshod vnder take.  
 To do yer to what ying belougey.  
 Yis Worpi Jason fore aloutey.  
 To se ye strange regions.  
 And knowle ye condicions.  
 Of oper marches where he wente.  
 And for ye cause his hole entente.  
 He Colcos for to seche.  
 And yer vpon he made a speche.  
 To Peleus his son ye kynge.  
 And he wel pured was of yit ying.  
 And shoy anon for his passange.  
 And such as were of his lineage.  
 Wy oper knyhtes whiche he ches.  
 Wy hym he took and hercules.  
 Which was ful of cheualrie.  
 Wy Jason went in compaignie.  
 And pat was in ye mony of may.  
 Whan cold stormes were a way.  
 Ye Wynd was good ye ship was yare.  
 Yit token leue and for yit fare.  
 Towardes Colcos but on ye weye.  
 What hem befell is long to seye.  
 How Lamedon ye kynge of Troye.  
 Which ouht wel haue made hem ioie.  
 When yit to wsee a while hi pyed.  
 Out of his lond he hem congeied.  
 And so fel ye discenshow.  
 Which after was destruction.  
 Of yit cite as men may here.  
 But pat is nouht to my matere.  
 But yis yis Worpi folk gregors.  
 For pat kynge which is not turcoys.  
 And fro his lond wy seil vp dralbe.  
 Yit went hem for yit many a falle.  
 Yit made and many a gret manace.  
 Til at ye laste in to ye place.  
 Whiche as yit souhte yit aruie.  
 And striken schyl and for yit blyue.  
 Yit sente vnto ye kynge and tolden.  
 Who weren yere and what yit wolden.  
 Deres which was the kynge.  
 Whan pat he herde yis tidyng.



**O**f Jason which was comen there.  
 And of yise ower what pei were.  
 He pouhte done hem greet shippe.  
 For pei anon come out of shipe.  
 And strouht on to pe kyng for wante.  
 And by pe honde Jason he sente.  
 And pat was atte daleys gate.  
 So fer pe kyng cam on his gite.  
 Forwarde Jason to done hym chere.  
 And he whom lackey no manere.  
 When he pe kyng seih in pence.  
 Zast hym a yen sich reuerence.  
 As to a kynges state beloungy.  
 And pus pe kyng hem vnderduney.  
 And Jason in his armes auht.  
 And for in to pe halle he strouht.  
 And yere pei sete and speke of ringes.  
 And Jason tolde hym pe tydynes.  
 Whi he was come and faue hym pite.  
 To haste his tyme and pe kyng seide.  
 Jason you art a worthy knyght.  
 But it lith in us mannes myght.  
 To do pat you art come fore.  
 Yer hyr be many a knyght forlore.  
 Off pat pei wolde it assaue.  
 But Jason wolde hym nouht esuaye.  
 And seide of euery wordes cure.  
 For aine fount in auenture.  
 Daurte wel paurte wo.  
 But hold no eare pat it go.  
 It shal be with myn hand assaue.  
 Pe kyng so held hym nouht wel pined.  
 For he pe grekes sore dredde.  
 In amter if Jason ne spedde.  
 He myht yere of here blame.  
 For so was al pe wordes fame.  
 In grece as for to speke of armes.  
 For pi he dredde hym of his harmes.  
 And gan to preche him and to prey.  
 But Jason wolde nouht obey.  
 For seide he wolde his purpos holde.  
 For ouht pat eny man hym tolde.  
 The kyng which pe se wordes herde.  
 And seih how pat pe knyght answerde.  
 Wit for he wolde make hym glad.  
 After medea non he bad.  
 Which was his doughter & she came.  
 And Jason which good hede name.  
 Whan he here seih a yen here goy.  
 And she which was him no ying loy.  
 Welcomed him in to pat lond.  
 And softe toke hym by pe hond.  
 And donn pei seten boye same.  
 She herde speke of his name.  
 And of his greet worpynesse.  
 For pi she gan here the impressio.  
 Upon his face and his stature.

And pouht how neuere creature.  
 Was so wel faryng as was he.  
 And Jason rht in such deure.  
 No myht nouht byholde his loke.  
 For so good hede on here he toke.  
 Pat hym ne pouht vnder pe heuene.  
 Of beaute saugh he neuere hir euen.  
 Wy al pat fel to womanhede.  
 pus eche of ower token hede.  
 pouh yere no word was of record.  
 Here herces boye of oon acord.  
 Ben sette to loue boye as po.  
 Yere myhte be no wordes mo.  
 The kyng made hym greet ioye & fese.  
 To alle his men he ynt an heste.  
 So as pei wolde his pouke deserue.  
 pat pei schulden att Jason serue.  
 Whil pat he wolde yere duelle.  
 And pus pe day shortely to telle.  
 Wy many myrres pei despenne.  
 It myht was come & po pei wente.  
 Schon of ower toke his leue.  
 Whan pei no lengere myhten leue.  
 For how Jason pat myht sleep.  
 For wel I wot pat off pe sleep.  
 For which he cam in to pat fle.  
 He pouht but a litel while.  
 And medea pat he pouhte.  
 So pat in many a wise he souhte.  
 his wit wakyng er it was day.  
 Som tyme pe and som tyme nay.  
 Som tyme pus and som tyme so.  
 As he was stired to and fro.  
 Of loue and eke of his conquest.  
 As he was holde of his behest.  
 And pus he ros vp by pe morwe.  
 And took hym self sent Johan to bolle.  
 And seide he wolde ferst be tyme.  
 At loue and after for to wyne.  
 pe flees of gold for which he come.  
 And pus to hym hood herte henome.  
**M**edea rht pe same wise.  
 Til day cam pat she moste arise.  
 Wy and by pouht how al pe myht.  
 How she pat noble worpi knyght.  
 By eny weye myhte wedde.  
 And wel she wiste ynt he ne spedde.  
 Of ying which he had vnder take.  
 She myht here self no purchas take.  
 For if he deied of his bataille.  
 She moste yen algate faile.  
 To gotten hym whan he were ded.  
 pus she began to sette reed.  
 And turne aboute here wittys alle.  
 To loke how pat it myhte falle.  
 pat she wyh hym hadde a leyser.  
 To speke and telle of hire desir.



**A**nd so it fell pat same day.  
 pat Jason wyf pat were may.  
 To nedre seer and hadde pace.  
 To speke. and he besought hir grace.  
 And she his tale goodly herde.  
 And after ward she hym answered.  
 And seide Jason as you wylt.  
 you myght be sauf you myght be spilt.  
 for were weel pat neuere man.  
 But if he coupe pat I can.  
 ye myght pat fortune acheue.  
 for whicher you comst. but as I leue.  
 If you wolt holde cohenant.  
 To loue of all ye remenant.  
 I shal yi liff and honour saue.  
 pat yow pe flees of gold shalt haue.  
 he seide all at yowre owen wille.  
 madame I shal trewly fulfille.  
 yowre hest whil my liff may laste.  
 thus longe he preyede and atte laste.  
 she grauntey and behit him this.  
 pat whan nyght comet. it tyme is.  
 she wolde hym sende certeynly.  
 such ony pat shulde hym pryvely.  
 all one in to hire chambere bringe.  
 he poukyer here of pat eydynge.  
 for of pat grace him is becomme.  
 hym yekyng all oyer ying is womme.  
**T**he day made ende and lost his liff.  
 And comen was pe derke nyght.  
 which all pe dayes eyhe blent.  
 Jason took leue and forp he went.  
 And whan he cam out of pe pres.  
 he took to counseil herauldes.  
 And tolde him how it was betide.  
 And preyed it shuld ben wel hidde.  
 And pat he wolde loke a boure.  
 the whyles pat he shal ben oute.  
 thus as he stod and hede name.  
 A mayde fro medea came.  
 And to hire chambere Jason ledde.  
 where pat he fond redy to bedde.  
 ye fairest and ye wisest eke.  
 And she wyf simple chere and mete.  
 whan she hym shi alway al a schamed.  
 so was here tale uelle entamed.  
 for sikernesse of mariage.  
 she sette forp a riche ymange.  
 which was figure of Jupiter.  
 And Jason swor and seide per.  
 pat also wyffe god hym helpe.  
 pat if medea dede him helpe.  
 pat he his purpos myghte wyne.  
 pe schulde neuere departe a dyne.  
 But euere whil hym lastey liff.  
 he wolde hir holde for his wyf.  
 And wyf pat word pei festen hope.

**A**nd for pei schulden hem hope vnclope.  
 Ther came a mayde and in hire wyse.  
 she dede hem hope ful serunce.  
 Til pat pei were a bedde naked.  
 I wot pat nyght was wel be waked.  
 pei hadden hope what pei wolde.  
 And panne of reiser she hym tolde.  
 And gan fro poynt to poynt enforme.  
 Of his bataille and alle pe forme.  
 which as he shulde fynd per.  
 whan he to ylle comle were.  
**S**he at pe cure of pe pas.  
 how maye which god of armes was.  
 hay sette til oyer sterne and stoute.  
 pat cast fyr and flame aboute.  
 hope at pe mouy and at nase.  
 so pat pei setten all ou blase.  
 what ying pat passet hem betwene.  
 And furper more vpon pe grene.  
 yowre god pe flees of golde to kepe.  
 a serpent which may neuere sepe.  
 thus who pat euere sholde iudyme.  
 ye fyre to stoppe he mote begyme.  
 whicher pat ye ferce bestes caste.  
 And dunt he mote hem at pe laste.  
 so pat he may hem yoke and styne.  
 And per vpon he mote as byne.  
 pe serpent wyfliche streunge assaile.  
 pat he hym lede be bataille.  
 Of whicher he mot pe teep outdralle.  
 As it belounges to pat lalle.  
 And pan he mote po oyer yoke.  
 Til pei haue wyf a plowh to broke.  
 A furgh of lond in which a wolfe.  
 ye teep of padder he moste solle.  
 And per shal arise knyghtes.  
 wel armed vpon alle rightes.  
 Of hem is nobht to taken hede.  
 for eche of hem in hasty hede.  
 shal oyer flece wyf deces wounde.  
 And pat whan pei be lard to grounde.  
 pan mote he to pe goddes prey.  
 And no so forp and take his prey.  
 But if he fynde in eny wyse.  
 Of pat ye here me demyse.  
 yere may be sette noon oyer weye.  
 pan he ne moste al gates deye.  
 I wol haue I told ye perils alle.  
 I wole yow telle forp wyf alle.  
 Quod medea to Jason po.  
 pat ye shult knowe er ye go.  
 Ayeu ye denym and ye fyr.  
 what shal be pe recouery.  
 But sire for it is nyght day.  
 Arise vpon so pat I may.  
 Deluere yow what ying I haue.  
 pat may yowre liff and honour saue.



**U**beren hope hope to ryse.  
 For for yei weren hope hope.  
 For yei arisen at ye laste.  
 Jason hise clothes on hym caste.  
 And made hym redy rith anoon.  
 And she hir sherte dede vponne.  
 And cast on here a mantel clos.  
 Wyf oute more and pynne avos.  
 Tho toke she fory a riche tye.  
 made al of gold and of perrie.  
 Out of ye whiche she hame arunge.  
 ye stone was wozy al oper ying.  
 She seide while he wolde it wore.  
 yei myht no pils hym dew.  
 In water may it nouht de dreynt.  
 Where as it comy ye fre it queynt.  
 It daunter eke ye cruel beste.  
 yei may no quid no man arete.  
 Wher so he be on see on londe.  
 Whiche hay pat ring vpon hond.  
 And ouer pat she gan hym seyn.  
 pat if a man wole be vnsen.  
 Wyngme his hond holde clos ye ston.  
 And he may munfible gon.  
 ye ring to Jason she betauhte.  
 And fory after she hym tauhte.  
 What sacrifice he shulde make.  
 And gan out of his cofre take.  
 hym yowht an heuynly fymme.  
 Whiche al by charme 2 by conuyn.  
 Was brouht 2 eke it was pungh write.  
 By names whiche he shuld write.  
 And she hym tauht to rede.  
 And bad hym as he wolde prede.  
 Wyf oute veste of eny wale.  
 When he were londe in ye fle.  
 he sholde make his sacrifice.  
 And rede his caratte in ye wise.  
 And she him tauhte on fues donu bent.  
 pre fixe tollarde orient.  
 For he shulde ye goddes pleso.  
 And wyngme hym self mochel ese.  
 And whan he hadde it pries radde.  
 To open abyse she hym bad.  
 Whiche pere she toke hym in present.  
 And was ful of such ornement.  
 pat pere was for ue demyn none.  
 That shulde fastenon hym vponne.  
 Whan pat he were anoynt wyf all.  
 For pi she tauht hym how he shall.  
 Anoynt his armes al aboute.  
 And for he shuld no ying doute.  
 She toke hym pynne a manere glue.  
 ye whiche was of met vertu.  
 pat where a man it wolde caste.  
 It shulde blynde anoon so fuste.  
 pat no man myht it don alday.

**Liber.**

he shulde in ye monyes pvolde.  
 Of ye tibo oxen pat for bloffe.  
 per of to stoppen ye malice.  
 ye glu shal serue of pat office.  
 And ouer pat her ornement.  
 hir ying and here enchaunement.  
 A yen ye serpent shuld hym were.  
 Til he him see wyf swerd or spere.  
 And pan he may safely ymouf.  
 his oxen yoke in to ye plough.  
 And ye teep solhen in such a wise.  
 Til he ye kymthes se arise.  
 And eche of oper donu be leyde.  
 In such a manere as I hule seyd.  
 To pus meder for Jason.  
 Orderney and prorey per vpon.  
 pat he no ying foryete sholde.  
 And eke she prorey hym pat he wolde.  
 Whan he hay alle his armes don.  
 To grounde fuele and yonke anoon.  
 ye goddes. and so fory by ese.  
 ye flees of gold he sholde seise.  
 And whan he hadde it seised yo.  
 pat pan he were lone a go.  
 Wyf oute eny tauyng.  
 Whan pis was seid in to weyng.  
 She fel as she pat was purh home.  
 Wyf loue and so ferre ouercome.  
 pat al her world on hym she sette.  
 But whan she sihe per was no sette.  
 pat he mot nedes part here fro.  
 She took hym in here armes tibo.  
 An hundred tyme and gan hym kysse.  
 And seide o al my worldes blisse.  
 my trust my lust my lyf myn hile.  
 To be pin helpe in pis querele.  
 I preye to ye goddes alle.  
 And wyf pat word she gan donu fall.  
 On yond and he hit vpon name.  
 And fory wyf pat ye mayden came.  
 And yei to berde anoon her brouht.  
 And pan Jason hir besouht.  
 And to hire seide in pis manere.  
 my worpi lusey lady dere.  
 comforte yow for be my troupe.  
 It shal not falle in to my troupe.  
 pat I ne wole purh out fulfille.  
 yowre hestes at yowre ower wille.  
 And vit I hope you to byngne.  
 Wyf inne a while such tyding.  
 ye whiche shal make ye bope game.  
 But for he wolde bepe here name.  
 Whan pat he wiste it was nyh day.  
 he seide a dieu my wete may.  
 And fory wyf hym he nam his gey.  
 Whiche as she hadde take hym per.



**A**nd straight to his chamber he went.  
And goy to bedde and sleep hym hent.  
And lay pat no man hym in woot.  
For hercules heed of hym took.  
Til it was vnderish and more.  
And ran he gan to fish the sore.  
And so deynlich abreyde of sleep.  
And pei pat token of hym lepe.  
His chamberlaine ben sone pere.  
And maden redy al his gere.  
And he aros and to pe kyng.  
He went and seide and to pat myng.  
For whiche he cam he wolde go.  
He kyng per of was wonder wo.  
And for he wolde hym faryn wyndualle.  
He told hym many a dredful salwe.  
But Jason wolde it nouht recorde.  
And atte laste pei acordde.  
Whan pat he wolde not a byde.  
A bote was redy atte tyde.  
In whiche was wyngt knyght of grece.  
Ful armed vp at euery pece.  
To his battaille which belongeth.  
Took ore on honde a sore hym longer.  
Til he pe water passed were.  
Whan he cam to pat isle pere.  
He sette hym on his knees bound straucht.  
And his caratte as he was tauht.  
He raddo and made his sacrifice.  
And suppe anoynte hym in pat wise.  
As medea hym hadde bede.  
And aros vp fro pat stede.  
And wyf pe alme pe for he queynt.  
And anon after he atteynt.  
The grette serpent and hym slough.  
But erst he hadde soule ymolt.  
For pat serpent made hym trauaile.  
So hard and sore of his battaille.  
pat now he stod and now he fell.  
For long tyme it so befelle.  
That wyf his swerd ne wyf his spere.  
He myht not pat serpent dere.  
He was so swerde alle aboute.  
It held all ege tool wyf oute.  
He was so rude and hawde of kyn.  
per myht no myng no per june.  
benym and for to gedre he caste.  
That he Jason so sore ablaste.  
That if ne were his oignement.  
his vyng and his enchauntement.  
which medea took hym to fore.  
He hadde wyf pat worme be lore.  
But of veru which per of came.  
Jason pe dragon ouer came.  
And he anon pe wep outdrouh.  
And sette his ege in a plough.  
With whiche he brak a pece of lond.

**A**nd Iere hem wyf his oldhne hond.  
yo myht he gret merueile see.  
Of euery toop in his degree.  
Sprong vp all buyhtes wyf spere & sheld.  
Of which anon rht in pe feld.  
Echon slough oper and wyf pat.  
Jason medea nouht for pat.  
On bope his knees he gan don falle.  
And ynf yout to pe goddes alle.  
pe flees he took and goy to bote.  
pe sonne shynen bryht and hote.  
pe flees of gold shone for wyf all.  
The water glister ouer all.  
Medea wepte and fisher of te.  
And stood vpon a toure a poste.  
Al plynely wyf june hire selue.  
There herde it nouhter ten ne elue.  
She preyde and seide o god hym spede.  
pe knyght whiche hap mynayden hede.  
And ay she loket colward yile.  
But whan she sise wyf june a while.  
pe flees glistering ayen pe some.  
She seide hi lord al now is donne.  
my knyght pe feld hap ouercome.  
Now wolde god he were come.  
A lord pat he ne were a londe.  
Bot I dar take his on honde.  
pat if she hadde wynges tivo.  
She wolde hane floude vn to him po.  
Straucht pere he was in to pe bote.  
pe day was clere pe sonne hote.  
The gregors were in grette doute.  
pe while pat hie lord was oute.  
pei wisten not what shulde betide.  
But witen euere vpon pe side.  
To see what ende shulde falle.  
pere stoden eke pe nobles alle.  
for wyf pe communes of pe tollu.  
And as pei loked vp and down.  
pei were ware wyf june a proude.  
Where came pe bot which pei wel knolde.  
And shi holdh Jason brouht his preye.  
And yo pei romme alle to seie.  
And crieden alle wyf o scelene.  
Ha where was euere vnder heuene.  
So noble a knyght as Jason is.  
And wel myh alle seiden ys.  
pat Jason was a faye knyght.  
for it was neuere of mannes myht.  
pe flees of gold so for to wyne.  
And pus of talke pei begynne.  
wyf pat pe kyng cam for a none.  
And shi pe flees hold pat it shone.  
And whan Jason come to londe.  
pe kyng hym self took his honde.  
And kysid hym and gret ioye hym made.  
pe gregors weren wonder glade.



And of patting in the meyn hem poultre.  
And for wip hem ye flees yebrouht.  
And eche on ower gain to lili.  
But wel was he pat miht nyh.  
To se per of ye pprete.  
And pue per passen ye citee.  
And gon du to ye poulers scruht.  
**M**edea Whiche for pat hym nouht.  
Was redy yere and seide a noon.  
Welcome o Worpi Kynight Jason.  
She wold haue kysed hym wonder foun.  
But shame turned here a rayn.  
It was nouht ye manere also.  
For whi she doist nouht do so.  
She took here leue and gason went.  
In to his chambere and she hym sent.  
Her munden to sen how it felle.  
Ye Whiche pat Whan he seih and heide.  
How pat he hadde faren oute.  
And pat it stood wel aboute.  
She told hir lady what she wiste.  
And she for ioye hire mayden kiste.  
The bayes were punne arrayed.  
Wip herbes tempred and assayed.  
And Jason was vubarned sone.  
And dede as it befell to done.  
In to his bay he went a none.  
And wist hym cleue ne eny bone.  
He took a sop and out he cam.  
And on his beste aray he nam.  
And kemed his hed Whan he luss dad.  
And gop hym forp al mery & glad.  
Fright scruht in to ye kyngees halle.  
Ye kynge comy wip his knyghtes alle.  
And munden hym glad welcomyng.  
And he hym tolde ye tpyng.  
Of his and pat how it befelle.  
Whan pat he wan ye shepes felle.  
Medea Whan she was assent.  
Come sone to pat parlemene.  
And Whan she myht Jason see.  
Was none of alle so glad as shee.  
Yer was no ioye for to seche.  
Of hym made euery man a speche.  
Som man seide con some man seide of.  
Bot pouh he were goddes broper.  
And miht make fre and poudre.  
Ye miht be no more wonder.  
For was of hym in pat citee.  
Echon tunkit ower pis is he.  
Which hay in his polber wip iune.  
That al ye world ne myht wyme.  
To here ye beste of alle goode.  
Pue seiden per pat pere stode.  
And eke pat walked vp and down.  
Foye of ye court and of ye town.  
The tyme of soup cam a noon.

yei bessen and y to pei gon.  
Medea Was wip Jason sette.  
Ye Was pere many a deynite sette.  
And sette to fore hem on ye borde.  
But non so bkyng as ye worde.  
Which was pere spoke among hem alle.  
So as yei durst speke ye.  
But pouh yei hadden litel space.  
Zit pei acorden in pat place.  
How Jason shulde come at nyht.  
Whan euery torche and euery light.  
Were oute. and pan of ower kynge.  
Yei speke a loude for supposynges.  
Of hem pat scoden pere aboute.  
For loue is euere more in doute.  
If pat it be wist gouerned.  
Of hem pat ben in loue leuved.  
Whan al was don pat duff & aupe.  
And clop and bord and al was bype.  
Yei waken whil hem lust to wake.  
And after pat pei leue take.  
And gon to bedde for to reste.  
And Whan hem pouht for ye besto.  
Pat euery man was fust a sepe.  
Jason pat wolde his tyne kepe.  
Gop forp scalkyng al pteuly.  
In to ye chambere and redyly.  
Ye Was a mynde Whiche him kepte.  
Medea wold and no pting slept.  
But myeles she was a bedde.  
And he wip all haste him spedde.  
And made hym naked & all warme.  
A none he took hire in his arme.  
What nede is to speke of ese.  
Hem lust eche ower for to plese.  
So pat pei hadden gote pteuly.  
And ye pei setten Whan and hold.  
Pat she wip hym a wey shal stele.  
Wip wordes suche and ower felle.  
Whan all was tured to an ende.  
Jason took leue and forp he wende.  
In to his owne chambere in ptes.  
Yer wist it non but hercules.  
He slept and ros Whan it was tyme.  
And it felt tolland pryme.  
He took to him such as he trust.  
In secret pat noon ower wist.  
And told hym of his counseil pere.  
And seide pat his wille were.  
Pat pei to shipe hadde alle pting.  
So pteuly in ye eueryng.  
Pat non man myht here dede aspie.  
But ye pat were in companyne.  
For he wold go wip oute leue.  
And longer wold he nouht beleue.  
But he ne wold no pilke pteuly.  
Pat kynge or queene it sholde knoube.



Then seide al pis shal wel be do.  
 And Jason trustep wel per to.  
 medea in pe mene while.  
 Whiche pouht here fader to be gile.  
 pe tresor whiche here fader hadde.  
 Wy here al pryncely she ladde.  
 And wy Jason at tyme sette.  
 And weye she stal and fond no lette.  
 And straucht she goy vn to ship.  
 Of grece wy pat feladshyp.  
 And pei anone drollyh vp pe seil.  
 And al pat myht pis was counseil.  
 Bot erly whanne pe soune shone.  
 men shi holl pat pei were a gone.  
 And come vn to pe kyng and tolde.  
 And he pe soye knowe wolde.  
 And axep where his doughter was.  
 pere was no word but out allas.  
 she was a goy pe moder wepte.  
 pe fader as a wodman lepte.  
 And gan pe tyme for to warie.  
 And swor his ope he wolde not arie.  
 pat wy salyph and wy galeye.  
 pe same cours pe same were.  
 Whiche Jason took he wolde take.  
 If pat he myht hem ouertake.  
 To pis pei seiden alle yee.  
 And none pei weren inte see.  
 And all as who sey at a word.  
 pei goon wy June shippes bord.  
 pe seil goy vp and for pei straucht.  
 But noon espyot per of peichant.  
 And so pei tozuen home axen.  
 for al pat labour was in vern.  
 Jason to grece wy his prey.  
 Goy purth pe see pe rith were.  
 When he per come and men it tolde.  
 Thei maken ioie yong and olde.  
 Eson whan pat he wiste of pis.  
 holl pat his soune comen is.  
 And hay ached pat he souhte.  
 And home wy hui ayedea brouhte.  
 In all pe wide world was none.  
 So glad a man as he was one.  
 To gedre ben pe louers po.  
 Til pat pei hadden sonen tbo.  
 wher of pei were boye glade.  
 And olde Eson ioye made  
 To seen penches of his dynare.  
 for he was of so gret an age.  
 pat men alwayten euery day.  
 whan pat he shulde gon a way.  
 Jason whiche seih his fader olde.  
 vpon ayedea made hym bold.  
 Of art manyg whiche she coupe.  
 And preyep here pat his fader wolpe.  
 she wolde make ayenband uelpe.

And she pat was colward hym welde.  
 Behist him pat she wold it do.  
 whan pat she tyme salph per to.  
 Bot what she dede in pis matere.  
 It is a wonder prync to here.  
 But vit for pe nouellerie.  
 I penke tellen a parrie.  
*Nota quibz medicamentis E-*  
*sonem senectute deceptum ad sue*  
*innuentum adolefcentiam prudes*  
*medea reduxit.*  
 Thus it befell vpon a myht.  
 whan per was nouht but sterre ligh.  
 she was vnschid rith as she ligh.  
 pat no wist but hir self ne wist.  
 And pat was at mydnyht tye.  
 pe world was stille on euery side.  
 wy open hed and fotral bare.  
 here het to spide she gan to fere.  
 vpon hire elopes garde she was.  
 Al grecheles and on po gras.  
 she glode fory as an addre doy.  
 moon ower wise she ne goy.  
 Til she came to pe fresh flood.  
 And pere awhile she wy stood.  
 priec she turned her aboute.  
 And priec eke she gan down loute.  
 And in pe flood she wette here here.  
 And priec on pe water pere.  
 she gussey wy a drenchyng hond.  
 And so she toof speche on honde.  
 ferst she began to clepe and calle.  
 vponward vn to pe sterres alle.  
 To trynd and lue to se and loud.  
 she preyep and eke helpe vp hir hond.  
 To echates and mui to aye.  
 whiche is goddesse of sorcerye.  
 she seide helpep at pis neede.  
 And as pe maiden me to spede.  
 whan Jason cam pe fies to seche.  
 so helpep he nold I wold beche.  
 wy pat she loket au was war.  
 vpon fies pe fies per come a char.  
 pe which dragons aboute dulle.  
 And so she gan here hede down bolle.  
 And vp she seih and fiure and wel.  
 she doofe fory boye char and whel.  
 Aboue vatre among pe styes.  
 pe loud of grece and pe parties.  
 she souht and fast gan here hie.  
 And vpon pe hylles hie.  
 Of Othryn and Olynpe also.  
 And eke of ower hulles mo.  
 she fond and gndoye erbes stote.  
 she pulley vp som by perote.  
 And in any wy a knyf sherep.  
 And al in to here char she berep.



Thus when she haye hilles souht.  
 ye fodes pere forate she nouht.  
 Gridiam and amphirios.  
 Penecie and eke spercheidos.  
 To hem she went and pere she nome.  
 Ekope of ye water and of ye fone.  
 ye soude and eke ye smale stoncs.  
 Which as she ches out for ye noucs.  
 And of ye reed see a part.  
 pat was behouelich for hir part.  
 She took. and after pat aboute.  
 She souht sondry sedes oute.  
 In felles and in many greues.  
 And eke a part she took of leues.  
 Bot ying which miht here most auaile.  
 She found in Cyte and in the saile.  
 In daies and in nyghtes yme.  
 Wy met trauaile and wy met pyne.  
 She was purueied of euery pece.  
 An. tourned homeward in to drece.  
 Before ye nites of Eson.  
 hme char she let a wyer gon.  
 And took out ferst pat was perinne.  
 for she wouht to begynne.  
 Such ying as semer quipossible.  
 And made hir self inuisible.  
 As she pat was wyer an. enclosed.  
 And miht of no man be desclosed.  
 She took up curues of ye londe.  
 Wy outen helpe of mannes honde.  
 At heles wyer ye grene gras.  
 Of which an antec mad per was.  
 Outo Eshates ye goddesse.  
 Of art magist. E ye maistresse.  
 And eft an ower in to iulent.  
 As she which dede hir hole cutrut.  
 To took she feld wode and verderme.  
 Of erbes be nouht bette theye.  
 Of which a non wyer oute sette.  
 ye se auter ben aboute sette.  
 Ebo sondry pites faste by.  
 She made and wyer pat hastily.  
 A weyr which was blak she flouh.  
 And out per of ye blood she drewh.  
 And dede in to ye pites also.  
 Warm myll she putte also per to.  
 Wy hony meynd and in such wyse.  
 She gan to make here sacrifice.  
 And aied and preyed for wyer al.  
 To white ye god infernal.  
 And to ye queene yowserpyne.  
 And so she souht out al ye yme.  
 Of hem pat longen to pat cust.  
 Behynde was no name left.  
 And preyed hem nill as she wel coupe.  
 To graunt Eson his ferst yowpe.  
 pat olde Eson brouht forp was po.

And he had all ower go.  
 Upon perile pat myghte falle.  
 And wyer pat word per wenten alle.  
 And lesten pere hem tdo allone.  
 And po she gan to gaspe and gone.  
 And made signes many one.  
 And seide he wordes pere yponne.  
 So pat spekyng of here charmes.  
 She took Eson in hope her armes.  
 And mad hym for to slepe faste.  
 In hym upon here erles taste.  
 The blake weyr po she took.  
 And hiewh ye flesch as dop ye coof.  
 On euery antec part she leyde.  
 And wyer ye charmes pat she seide.  
 A fyre down fro ye sky alighte.  
 And made it for to breune lighte.  
 But when medea sauh it breune.  
 A noon she gan to sterre Eson.  
 ye fyre auterres all aboute.  
 pere was no best which moyoute.  
 more wilde pan she semer pere.  
 Aboute here shuldres heuht hir heen.  
 As yowh she were out of hye mynde.  
 And turned in to an ower kynde.  
 To say pere certeyn wode clefte.  
 Of which ye portis noll and efte.  
 She made hem in ye pites were.  
 And putte hem in fley here.  
 And took ye brynd wyer al ye blase.  
 And pries she began to raise.  
 Aboute Eson pere as he slepte.  
 And eft wyer water which she kepte.  
 She made a sercle aboute hym pries.  
 And eft wyer fyre of sulphur ekes.  
 full many an ower ying she dede.  
 Which is nouht writen in pis fad.  
 For po she ran bope up and down.  
 She made many a wonder soun.  
 Som tyme lich vn to a colt.  
 Som tyme vn to a lincowt.  
 Som tyme calley as an henne.  
 Som tyme speker as done ye meun.  
 And riht so as here raryon strum.  
 In sondry wyse here for me chaunge.  
 She semer fay and no woman.  
 For wyer ye cristes pat she can.  
 She was as who sen a goddesse.  
 And what hir lust more or lesse.  
 She dede in bores as we fynde.  
 pat passer ouer mannes kynde.  
 But wher pat wole of bondres here.  
 What ying she wrouht in pis maten.  
 To make an ende of pat she gan.  
 Suche merueile herde neuere man.  
 A yowt of ye nelbe mone.  
 When it was tyme for to done.



**S**he sette a caudron on y<sup>e</sup> fyre.  
In whiche was all y<sup>e</sup> herte a tyre.  
Wher on y<sup>e</sup> medecyne stood.  
Of quene of water and of blod.  
And sette it boyle in such a pite.  
Til pat she saw y<sup>e</sup> spume white.  
And she lest in cynde and rote.  
And seed and flour pat was forlote.  
Wip many an erbe and many a stone.  
Whiche she had yere many one.  
And eke cumpher y<sup>e</sup> serpent.  
To here had all here scales rent.  
Chelidre hir was his addre skynne.  
And she to buylen caste hem gynn.  
A pite eke of y<sup>e</sup> horned oule.  
Y<sup>e</sup> whiche men here on nyghtes houle.  
And of a raven which was tolde.  
Of yere hundred wynter olde.  
She took y<sup>e</sup> heed wip all y<sup>e</sup> bille.  
And as y<sup>e</sup> medecyne it wille.  
She took y<sup>e</sup> after y<sup>e</sup> bouel.  
Of y<sup>e</sup> see wolf. and for y<sup>e</sup> hele.  
Of Eson wip a thousand mo.  
Of ynges pat she hadde so.  
In pat caudron to gedre as blyue.  
She put. and toke pan of olyue.  
A dyre braunche hem wip to stene.  
Y<sup>e</sup> whiche anone man floure 2 bere.  
And waxe all fresch and grene ayene.  
Whan she yis betu hadde sene.  
She let y<sup>e</sup> lest drope of alle.  
Ypon y<sup>e</sup> bare flore down falle.  
Anone yere sprong y<sup>e</sup> flour 2 mus.  
Where as y<sup>e</sup> drope falle was.  
And waxe anone al medow grene.  
So pat it myht wel be sene.  
Medea paine knelt and wiste.  
Hire medecyne is for to tryste.  
And goy to Eson where he lay.  
And toke a sberd was of assay.  
Wip whiche a wounde ypon his syde.  
She made. pat y<sup>e</sup> out may syde.  
Y<sup>e</sup> blood wip yme which was old.  
And seke 2 double 2 feble 2 cold.  
And so she took in to his vfe.  
Of herbes alle y<sup>e</sup> besceuse.  
And poured it in to his wounde.  
pat made his veynes full and sounde.  
And so she made his wounde clos.  
And took his hond and vp he rose.  
And so she wif hym drynke a draught.  
Of whiche hit youye ayen he caught.  
His hed his herte and his visage.  
liche du to abeynti wynter lige.  
his hore heres were a way.  
And lich du to y<sup>e</sup> fresch may.  
Whan passed ben y<sup>e</sup> colde shoures.

**F**irst so recouery he his floures.  
To what myht enymandeyse.  
A woman shelle in eny wise.  
were hertly loue in eny stede.  
In medea to Jason dede.  
first she made hym y<sup>e</sup> flees to thynne.  
And after pat fro kyppe 2 kynne.  
Wip gret tresor wip hym she stal.  
And to his fader fory wip al.  
his elde had turned in to youye.  
Whiche yung noon of woman couye.  
But how it was to here aquit.  
y<sup>e</sup> remembrance dwellep hit.  
Yung pelous his Eme was dede.  
Jason bar corone on his hed.  
Medea had fulfilled his wille.  
But whan he sholde of rite fulfille.  
y<sup>e</sup> troupe whiche to here a fore.  
he hadde in pile of colcos more.  
so was medea most deceyued.  
for he and oyer had receyued.  
Whiche doughter was to kynn creon.  
Creusa she hit and yus Jason.  
As he pat was to loue vntrewe.  
Medea lest and toke a newe.  
But pat was after sore aboute.  
Medea wip hire art had wrought.  
Of clop of gold a mantel riche.  
Whiche semey worla kynnes riche.  
And pat was vnto Creusa sent.  
In name of yiste and of present.  
for sosterhode was hem be tene.  
And whan pat yung freshe quene.  
pat mantel lappet here aboute.  
And noone yere y<sup>e</sup> fyre sprong oute.  
And brent hire boye flesch 2 bone.  
yus anne medea to Jason.  
Wip boye his soncs on hire hond.  
And seid o pou of euery lond.  
y<sup>e</sup> most vntrewe creature.  
So yis schal be y<sup>e</sup> forfature.  
Wip pat she boye his soncs stowh.  
Before his eyen and he out drowh.  
his sberd and wolde haue slayn here po.  
But farewell. she was a go.  
du to pallas y<sup>e</sup> court aboute.  
Where as she pleigney ypon loue.  
As she pat was wip pat goddesse.  
And he was left in gret distresse.  
Chas myht pou se what shal be it do. Confessor.  
to were an by pat is nouht for.  
In loues cause namly.  
my soue be pou war y<sup>e</sup> by.  
And kepe pat pou be nouht for more.  
for yis which I haue tolde tofore.  
Oude tellet euerydel.  
y<sup>e</sup> fader I may leue it wel. Imans.



For I haue herde it ofte seye.  
 How Jason took ye flece adweye.  
 Fro Colcos but yit herd I nouht.  
 By Whom it Was first peder brouht.  
 And for it Were good to here.  
 If pat yow lust at my prayere.  
 To telle I Wole yow besече.  
 By sone who pat Wold it seche. *co.*  
 In tokes he may fynde it Wite. *fessor.*  
 And napeles if yow Wolt Wite.  
 And ye manere as yow haue pced.  
 I shal ye telle as it is seid.

*In rota glie bellus i partes insu  
 re colcos pmo deuenit athenas  
 Rex phileu hnt coniugem ex qua  
 pxiun z helleu genuit. mortua  
 ante helle. athenas iouone regf  
 cadmi filiam postea in exore dux  
 it que more noluerit eos infantes  
 in tancid recolit odin qd ambo  
 in mare pici penes regem para  
 uit. Dnde iuno compaciens queda  
 arietem grandem aureo vestitū del  
 lere ad latus natante destinauit. su  
 p cui dorsi pueros apponi iussit.  
 Quo facto aries sup undas regres  
 sus cu solo fixo sibi adherente in  
 colcos implicauit. Vbi iuno dan a  
 rietem ad solo bellere put in alijs ca  
 netur cronias sub arca custodia  
 collocant.*

**T**he fame of ye shepes fello.  
 Which in colcos as it befelle.  
 Was al of gold. shal neuere dore.  
 Wherof I penke for to seye.  
 How it am ferst in to pat yle.  
 Per Was a kynig in pulke Wile.  
 Colwardes grece and athenas.  
 Ye cronig of his name Was.  
 And had a Wyf Which phileu hnt.  
 Se Whom so as fortune it diht.  
 He hadde of children yonge tle.  
 Prius ye fuste Was of po.  
 A Euade childe riht faue Wip all.  
 A doughter eke Which men alle.  
 helle he hadde by his Wyf.  
 But for per may nouaue byf.  
 Endure yow pis luf here.  
 pis Wozpi queene as I myht here.  
 Se pat here children Were of age.  
 Took of here ende ye passage.  
 Wip grece Worschipe and Was begraued.  
 Chat puit it likey god to saue.  
 It is gret resou to ben his.  
 For pis kynig as it is.  
 Wip gret suffraunce it vnderfongep.  
 And after Ward as hym belougep.

Whan it Was tyme for to bedde.  
 A uelle Wyf he took to bedde.  
 Which go hnt and Was a mayde.  
 And eke ye doughter as men sayde.  
 Of cadyme Which a kynig also.  
 Was holde in pulke dapes po.  
 Whan yuo Was ye kyniges make.  
 She cast how pat she myht make.  
 yef children to here fader lope.  
 And shop a Wile a yen hem bope.  
 Which to ye kynig Was all vntuolle.  
 A yer or tle she let do solde.  
 ye lond Wip sode Wicere aboute.  
 Wher of no corn may spryngen oute.  
 And yus by sleht and by couyne.  
 Awe ye dery and ye fanyne.  
 purgh out ye lond in such a Wyse.  
 So pat ye kynig a sacrifice.  
 Upon ye popit of pis destresse.  
 To ceter Which is ye goddesse.  
 Of corn hap shape hym for to yue.  
 To luke if it may be for yue.  
 ye mischet Which Was in his lond.  
 For she Which kuel to for ye hound.  
 ye circumstaunce of all his puny.  
 A yen ye couynge of ye kynig.  
 In to ye temple hap shape so.  
 Of here accord pat alle po.  
 Which of ye temple prestes Wew.  
 Haue seid and fully declared yere.  
 Su to ye kynig bot if so be.  
 pat he deliuer ye contre.  
 Of ffryus and of helleu bope.  
 Wip Whom ye goddes ben so Wrope.  
 pat Whil ye children ben per june.  
 Such tilpe shal no man begynne.  
 Wher of to gete hym eny corn.  
 yus Was it seid yus Was it shorn.  
 Of alle ye prestes pat yere are.  
 And she Which causy al pis fare.  
 Seide eke yer to What she Wold.  
 yanne euery man pat after tolde.  
 So as ye queene hem hadde preyed.  
 The kynig Which hap his eue lorde.  
 And leuey al pat enore he herd.  
 Su to pis tale yus anwerde.  
 And seip pat leuey him is to chese.  
 hys children bope for to lese.  
 yau hym and all ye remenant.  
 Of hem Which ar apurtenant.  
 Su to ye lond Which he shal sepe.  
 And bad his Wyf to take kepe.  
 In What manere it is best to done.  
 pat hei deliuered Weren sone.  
 Out of pis world. and she auone.  
 Two men ordeigney for to gone.  
 But ferst she made hem for to shere.



That ye children shuld bere.  
 In to ye see pat noon it knolde.  
 And hem yet june hope prowe.  
 The children to ye see ben pad.  
 Where yu ye wise as jho had.  
 yese uen be redy for to do.  
 But ye goddesse which quuo.  
 Jo hote apperey in pe sede.  
 And hay du to po men forlede.  
 pat ye children nolst ne fle.  
 Due had hym lode in to ye see.  
 And taken hed of pat ye lisen.  
 per slum a shep to fore here yhen.  
 Whos fles of burnes gold was al.  
 And ye goddesse fory wy al.  
 Comandey pat wy outen let.  
 rei sholde a non ye children set.  
 A loue anon ye shepes luf.  
 And al was do wist as she gult.  
 Wher of ye men non hom anyu.  
 And fel so as ye boles sem.  
 helen ye yonge marden po.  
 Which of ye see was do bygo.  
 Of pure drede hure herte was dore.  
 pat ye shep which hay hed hope.  
 And she pat was of boyng fernt.  
 She fel and hay here selue drent.  
 Wy frigus and ye shep fory slum.  
 Tyl he to yle of edloot cam.  
 Where juno ye goddesse he fond.  
 Which took ye shep du to ye lond.  
 And set it yere in which allise.  
 As you to fore hast herd dulse.  
 Wher of cam after al ye wo.  
 Whi jason was for more so.  
 Du to medea at it was spoke.  
 Wy fader who pat hay to broke.  
 his crolpe as ye haue told a loue.  
 he is not worpi for to loue.  
 ye bebeloued as me seney.  
 But eueri uelbe loue queme.  
 To hym which uelbe fougel is.  
 And napeles noll after ye.  
 If pat you lise to taken here.  
 Yon my shifte to proce.  
 In loues cause a yen ye vice.  
 Of couetise and amance.  
 What yer is more I wolde wite.  
 Wy some ye I fynde wite.  
 yer is ynd on for yllke brood.  
 Which only for ye worldes good.  
 To make a tresor of money.  
 pat al conscience adere.  
 Wher of in ye confession.  
 ye manie and ye condicion.  
 I shal here afterward declere.  
 Which maket con riche an of hure.

**I**hus capit usura sibi q̄ debetur  
 illud. ff. unde colorata sepe la-  
 center agit. Sic amor excelsus  
 qui sepe suas ut auarus. Spiritus  
 unus tres capit ipse loco. **H**ic  
 trinitas de illa specie auaricie que  
 usura dicitur an creditor in pegni-  
 ma tantu numerata plus qui  
 sibi de iure debetur incrementum  
 suar adauget.

**P**on ye bench sitting on hyl.  
 Wy auarice pure I sh.  
 ful doped of hys olde sute.  
 Which after gold maket chas a sute.  
 Wy hys brocours pat remie a boue.  
 Rich in to riches in a route.  
 Such Lucre is non a loue grownde.  
 Which is uolunt of ye riches founde.  
 But where euer ye be pat stert.  
 pat shal hem in no wise a stert.  
 But ye it drue in to ye net.  
 Of Lucre such usure hay set.  
 Wy wy ye rich d'welly.  
 And al pat enche he biey and selley.  
 he hay ordeyned for his sleighte.  
 mesure do wble and do wble weichte.  
 Outward he selley by ye easse.  
 And wy ye more he maket his easse.  
 Wher of his hous is ful wy quie.  
 he reachet uouht by so he wame.  
 pouh pat yere lese ten or twelue.  
 his loue is al toward him selue.  
 And to noon ower but he so.  
 pat he may wyne suche pre.  
 for where he shal ouht yeue or leue.  
 he wole ayenward take a bene.  
 yere he hay lent ye smale pese.  
 And riht so per ben humpe of pese.  
 Pouers pat pouh ye loue lye.  
 pat scarp wold in were a myte.  
 wit wold he haue a pound a gain.  
 As doy usure in his bagayn.  
 And certes such usure vyllych.  
 It fullep more vnto ye rich.  
 Als wel of loue as of byete.  
 ym du to hem pat ben not grette.  
 And as who seip be symple a poue.  
 for selde is whan yei recouere.  
 But if it be purgh gret deserte.  
 And napeles men se pouerte.  
 Wy purpurt and continaunce.  
 ful ofte make a gret cheuaunce.  
 And take of loue auantage.  
 for wy ye helpe of his brocage.  
 pat maken semie where it is uouht.  
 And yus ful ofte is loue brouht.  
 for luel what and mochel take.



My fals drehtes pat ye make.  
 Nowt sone of pat q selde aboue.  
 I roll wot what dreht is of loue.  
 Tel me for pi what so you wilt.  
 If you per of hasti cup gylt.  
 My fader may for ouht q here.  
 For of pe poyntz ye tolden heere.  
 I wol yow be my troupe assure.  
 My dreht of loue and my mesure.  
 Day be more large and more certain.  
 pan suere q toke of loue a yem.  
 For so yit coupe q nouere of sleighte.  
 To take ayeu be double drehte.  
 Of loue more pan q haue yeue.  
 For also wisse mot i be schme.  
 And haue remission of synne.  
 As so yit coupe q neuere wyne.  
 Ote yit so moche sop to seyn.  
 pat euere q myht haue half a yem.  
 Of so ful loue as i haue leyn.  
 And if myn hap were so wel went.  
 pat for ye hole q myht haue half.  
 me penke q were a goddes halff.  
 for where dreht wil haue double.  
 my consience is nouht so trouble.  
 I bede neuere as to my del.  
 But of ye hole an haluendel.  
 pat is noon exces as me penke.  
 But napeles it me forpenke.  
 For wel q wot pat wol not be.  
 For euere day ye better q see.  
 pat holt so euere q yeue or leue.  
 an loue in place pere q mene.  
 for ouht pat euere q aye or aue.  
 I can no puny ayeuward haue.  
 But yit for pat wol q nouht lete.  
 What so byfalle of my byrete.  
 pat i he shal here yeue and leue.  
 an loue and al my pouht so clene.  
 pat toward me shal nouht beleue.  
 And if she of here good leue.  
 Kellarde wel me nouht a yem.  
 I wot ye laste of my bargeyn.  
 Schal stonde upon so greet a lost.  
 pat i may neuere more cost.  
 Recouere in pis world til i die.  
 So pat touchyng of pis partie.  
 I may me wel excuse and shal.  
 And for to speke fory wy al.  
 If eny biocour for me wente.  
 pat poynt cam neuere in myn entente.  
 So pat ye more me merueyler.  
 What ying it is my lady culle.  
 pat al myn herte and al my tyme.  
 she hap and dop no better by me.  
 I haue herd seid pat pouht is fre.  
 And napeles in pryucte.

To yow my fader pat ben here.  
 myn hole shifte for to here.  
 I dar myn herte wel desclose.  
 Touchyng dreht as i suppose.  
 Whiche as ye telle in loue is dres.  
 my lady may not be excused.  
 pat for o lokyng of here eyhe.  
 myn hole herte til i die.  
 Wy al pat euere q may and can.  
 she hap me woune to here man.  
 Wherof me penke good resoun wolde.  
 pat she souel relward sholde.  
 And yeue a part whe she hap al.  
 I not what fulle here after shal.  
 But in to nold yit dar i seyn.  
 here luste neuere yeue a yem.  
 A goodly word in such a wise.  
 wher of myn hope myht arise.  
 myn grete loue to compence.  
 I not holt she hure consience.  
 Excuse wote of pis dreht.  
 my large dreht and greet mesure.  
 she hap myn loue and i haue nouht.  
 Of pat whiche i haue dreht bousht.  
 And wy myn herte q haue it poud.  
 But al pat is a syde layd.  
 And i no loueles aboute.  
 here ouht stonde in ful greet dour.  
 Til she redresse such a synne.  
 pat she wil al myn loue wyne.  
 And yeue me nouht to lye by.  
 I trouht al so moche as graunt me.  
 hu lust to seie of whiche i myht.  
 Some of myn grete peyne a light.  
 But of pis poynt so pus i fare.  
 As he pat paier for his chaffare.  
 And beie it dreht and yit haynon.  
 So mot he nedes pouere gon.  
 I beie dreht and haue no loue.  
 pat i ne may come aboue.  
 To wyne of loue noon ences.  
 But i me wote napeles.  
 Touchyng dreht of loue agyte.  
 And if my lady be to wite.  
 I preye to god suche grace hure sende.  
 pat she by tyme it mot amende.  
 My sone of pat you hast answere.  
 Touchyng dreht i haue al herd.  
 holt you of loue hure wome smale.  
 But pat yow tellet in tale.  
 And in ladner of acuse.  
 me penke ye wodes yow mysuse.  
 for be pin olhne knowerhyng.  
 you seist holt she for o lokyng.  
 ym hol herte fro ye toot.  
 she may be such pat here o look.  
 is wory ym herte many fold.



93



To dwelle in chambre mot beleue.  
 In wodes and in helles bope.  
 For mych brocage as wyfes love.  
 Whiche doo hure lordes herites chaunge.  
 And love in ower place stande.  
 For pi if euere it so befulle.  
 For you my sone unounges alle.  
 Be wotdes man hold pat you hast.  
 For panne al ower love is wast.  
 I wyf shal wel to ye suffise.  
 And panne if you for dwetise.  
 Of love wotdest aye more.  
 You sholdest don a yen ye love.  
 Of alle hem pat tuelle be.  
 My fader as in pis deere.  
 My conscience is nouht accused.  
 For I no such brocage haue vled.  
 Wher of pat lust of love is donne.  
 For pi speke for ye be donne.  
 Of auarice upon my shifte.  
 My sone I shal ye blaunches shifte.  
 Be older solas ye be set.  
 On whom no good is wel beset.  
 Pro verbis verba muni p muniere  
 reddi. Conuenit vt pondus equa  
 statera gerat. Propterea Cupido  
 non dat sua dona cupido. Na qui  
 nulla serit gramina nulla metet.  
 Hic tractat sup illa specie auar  
 itie que parcaimonia dicitur au  
 natua tenax aliqualem sue sub  
 stantie poraone. aut deo aut hoibz  
 picipare nullatenus concentit.  
**C**upide Auarice of his lynam.  
 For conseil and for cosmange.  
 To be wyf holde a yen laryesse.  
 Hay on whos name is seid laryesse.  
 He whiche is kepere of his hous.  
 And is so purgh out auerous.  
 pat he no good let out of hous.  
 pouh god hym self it wolde fonde.  
 Of yftee shulde he no yung haue.  
 And if a man it wolde craue.  
 He most panne faile uede.  
 Whar god hym self may not spede.  
 And pus starfesse in euery place.  
 By reson may no yung purchace.  
 And uayles in his dogre.  
 A boue alle ower most pryue.  
 Wyf auarice fante he pis.  
 For he gouernep pat por is.  
 In eche astat of his office.  
 After ye resple of mille vice.  
 He taky. he lepp. he halt. he bynt.  
 pat lichte is to fle ye flynt.  
 pan gete of hym in hard or neshhe.  
 Only ye value of a resshe.

Of good in helpynge of an ower.  
 I couthe youh in were his olde broyer.  
 For in ye caas of yftee and lone.  
 Stant euery man for hym allone.  
 Him penke of his vnkyneshipe.  
 pat hym nedoy no felaschipe.  
 By so ye bunge and he aciden.  
 he wechep not what men recorden.  
 Of hym or it be euil or good.  
 For al his trust is on his good.  
 So allone he falley ofte.  
 Whan he best wenep stonde a loste.  
 A wel in love as ower wyse.  
 For love is euere of som reyse.  
 To hym pat wole his love holde.  
 For pi my sone as youl art holde.  
 Touchynge of pis tel me pi shifte.  
 hast youl be sears or larye of yftee.  
 On to pi love whom youl seuerse.  
 For after pat you wel deserues.  
 Of yftee youl myght be ye bet.  
 For pat good wote I wel beset.  
 For whiche you myght ye beare fure.  
 pan is no wisdom for to spure.  
 For pus men seyn in euery nede.  
 he was ye ferste pat made mede.  
 For wher as mede may not spede.  
 Not what helpey ower dede.  
 ful ofte he failey of his name.  
 pat wol wyf ydel hond reclame.  
 his hauf as many a myce doy.  
 For pi my sone telle me for.  
 And se ye twylpe yf youl haste.  
 On to pi love or stawe or fre.  
**A**ny fader it hay stonde pus.  
 pat if ye twylpe of Cresus.  
 And lu ye gold ottomen.  
 For wyf ye richesse yndien.  
 Of perles and of riche stones.  
 Were al to medre hym astones.  
 I sette it at no more accompte.  
 pan wold a bare strally amobnte.  
 To yf it here al in a day.  
 Be so pat to pat whete may.  
 It myht like or more or lesse.  
 And pus by cause of my starfesse.  
 ye may wel vnderstonde and leue.  
 pat it schal nouht ye worse adue.  
 ye purpos whiche is my pouht.  
 But pat I yaf here neuere nouht.  
 ne her to waste a profre make.  
 For wel I wot she wole nouht take.  
 And yeue wol she nouht also.  
 She is eschue of bopwille.  
 And pis I twille be ye stile.  
 Towardes me for she ne wile.  
 pat I haue such cause of hope.



I thought also mechel as a droppe.  
 But tollward over as I may se.  
 She taky and yengey in such degre.  
 yat as be weye of frendelihede.  
 She can so kepeke hire Womanhede.  
 yat every man speketh of here Wel.  
 But she wole take of me no del.  
 And yat she wot wel yat I wolde.  
 yue and so boye what I sholde.  
 To plesen hire in al my myght.  
 Be reson yis wot every wyght.  
 For yat may be no wele afeere.  
 her she is maister of yehere.  
 She mot be mynstee of ye good.  
 For god wot wel yat al my mod.  
 And al myn here and al my pouht.  
 And al myn good what I haue ouht.  
 Als frelich as god hay it yue.  
 It schal ben hires what I haue.  
 yist as hire lust hire self commande.  
 So yat it nedey no demande.  
 To axe of me if it be scars.  
 To done for as to repare.  
 Wole answere and seve no.

**F**airfues and loue acorden neuē.  
ffor euery þing is wel ꝑ deuete.  
Whan pat a man hay bought it dere.  
And for to speke in his matere.  
ffor þairmyth of a litel cofe.  
fful ofte tyme a man hay lost.  
ꝑ lante cote for ꝑ hood.  
pat man pat þare is of his good.  
And wol not yene he ſhal not take.  
Wip yift a man may vndertake.  
ꝑ hile god to pleſe and queme.  
Wip a man ꝑ world may deme.  
ffor euery creature lore.  
ff þou him yene is glad ꝑer fore.  
ffor euery gladſhip as i fynde.  
Is confort in to loues fynde.  
And cauſey ofte a man to ſpede.  
So was he wꝑs pat fiſt yaf mede.  
ffor mede ſeþey loue in houſe.  
But where ꝑ men beu conſeiuſe.



And he put large was and fre.  
 And sette his herte to depende.  
 pus trocous pe bolbe benede.  
 Which Venus took hym for to holde.  
 And siet as ofte as euere he wolde.  
 To his departer loue his lalle.  
 What man wol not be felasse.  
 To yene and spende as i pe telle.  
 he is not worpi for to dwelle.  
 In lones court to be relieved.  
 For pi my sone if you be leued.  
 You shalt be large of pi despenne.  
 In fuder in my conscience.  
 If pere be eny ping a mys.  
 I wole amende it after pis.  
 Toward my loue manely.  
 In sone wel and redely.  
 You saist. so pat wel payd wy al.  
 I am. and ferper if i schal.  
 In to pis schrifte speafie.  
 Of auarices pgenie.  
 What vice fley after pis.  
 You shalt haue wonder how it is.  
 A mony pe folk in euery regne.  
 put such a vice myhte regne.  
 Which is comun at alle assaies.  
 As men may fynde noll a dayes.  
**Quarta creatura. deus 2 qui cuncta**  
**creauit. dampnat ingratu dicitur**  
**facta viri. non dolor a longe scit**  
**quo sibi talis amicum. Traxit 2**  
**in fine deserit esse sua. Quid lo**  
**quitur sup illa oborta specie auar**  
**icie que ingratitudo dicitur est au**  
**condicione non solid creator sed ead**  
**amare creature abhominabile detest**  
**he vice rich but to pe fend. carum**  
**Which neure yit was manifestend.**  
 And cleped is vnkynschipe.  
 Of couyne and of felashipe.  
 Wy auarice he is wy holde.  
 hym yentep he sholde not ben holde.  
 In to pe moder Which hym bar.  
 Of hym may neure man be war.  
 he wol not knowe pe merite.  
 For pat he wold it nouht a quyte.  
 Which in pis world is muchel used.  
 And felle ben per of excused.  
 To telle of hym is endeles.  
 But yit i seie napeles.  
 Where as pis vice comy to londe.  
 per taky no man his yonk on honde.  
 pouh he wy al his myhtes seue.  
 he schal of hym no yonk deserue.  
 he taky what eny man wole yene.  
 But whil he hay o day to lyne.  
 he wole no ping rellarde a yym.

he grucchey for to yene o greyn.  
 Where he hay take a berne full.  
 pat maky a kynde herte dull.  
 To sette his trust on such frenschipe.  
 pere as he fyndep no kyndeschipe.  
 And for to speke wordes pleyne.  
 pus here i many a man compleyne.  
 pat noll on dayes you shalt fynde.  
 It neede felle frendes kynde.  
 What yow hast done for hem to fore.  
 It is for yete as it were lere.  
 And telle how god of his iustice.  
 Be weie of kynde and eke nature.  
 dampney pe vnkynde creature.  
 pe lalle also by pat i can.  
 pei dampnen an vnkynde man.  
 It is al oon to seie vnkynde.  
 As ping which don is a yeu kynde.  
 For it wy kynde neure stood.  
 A man to yelden eucl for good.  
 For who pat wolde take hede.  
 A bestie is glad of good dede.  
 And loue yllke creature.  
 After pe lalle of his nature.  
 Which dop hym ese. and for to se.  
 Of his matere auaunte.  
 ful of te tyme it hay befall.  
 Wher of a tale among alle.  
 Which is of old ensamplerie.  
 I yente for to speafie.  
**hic dicit qualiter bestie in suis**  
**beneficijs hominem ingratiu naturam**  
**precellunt. Et ponit exemplum de**  
**Adriano Rome cenatore. qui in**  
**quadam foresta venacionibz insistens**  
**ad pdam psequere in cisterna**  
**pfunda nescia familia corrupta**  
**supueniens quida paup hoie bardus**  
**missa cordula putas hominem exau**  
**isse. pmo sineam extraxit. scdo ser**  
**pente. tercio Adriand qui paup**  
**despicieus aliquid ei p benefico red**  
**dere recusabat. Sz tam serpens qui**  
**sineam gratuita beneuolencia p**  
**singulis domis sufficienter remun**  
**uerant.**  
**O speke of on vnkynde man.**  
**I fynde how whilom Aldrian.**  
**of Rome which a gret lord was.**  
 Upon a day as he parcas.  
 To wode in his huntynge wente.  
 It hapney pat at a soeyn wente.  
 After his chas as he purfuer.  
 purgh hap which no man eschelluy.  
 he fel vnkyn in to a pit.  
 After pat it myht nouht be let.  
 pe pit was depe and he fel lalle.



pat of his men noon myghte knowe.  
 Wher he becom for noon was nyght.  
 Which of his ful pe myschief sh.  
 And put alone pan he lay.  
 slepyng and cryyng al pe day.  
 for socour and deliuerance.  
 Til ayeen eue it fel parchaunce.  
 A while er it be gan to nyghte.  
 A pouere man which was drounshite.  
 cam fory walkyng wyth his asse.  
 And hadde gadred hym a tisse.  
 Of grene fardles and of drie.  
 To selle who pat wolde bye.  
 As he whiche hadde no lylode.  
 But whanne he myghte such a lode.  
 To collyne wyth his asse carie.  
 And as it fel hym for tourie.  
 pat ilke tyme nyght pe pit.  
 And hay pe trusse faste fyt.  
 he herd a boys whiche cried drunne.  
 And he his ere to pe bymme  
 hay leyde and herde it was a man.  
 Which seide. A help here Adrian.  
 And I wol puen half my good.  
 The pouere pis vnderstood.  
 As he pat wolde gladly bymme.  
 And to pis lord which was bymme.  
 he spak and seide if I se saue.  
 what sikernesse shal I haue.  
 Of couenant pat afterward.  
 woll wilt me reue such reward.  
 As pou behistest nold to fore.  
 pat oper hay his oyes wore.  
 he helene and by pe goddes alle.  
 If pat it miht so bifalle.  
 pat he out of pe put hym brouhte.  
 Of all pe goddes whiche he ouhte.  
 he shal haue euene haluendele.  
 pis bardus seide he wolde wel.  
 And wyth pis word his asse anon.  
 he let bymme and per vpon.  
 Down goy pe corde in to pe pit.  
 To which he hay atte ende fyt.  
 A staf wherof he seide he wolde.  
 pat adrian him shulde holde.  
 But it was so parchaunce falle.  
 In to pe pyt was also falle.  
 And ape which at fulle prowe.  
 whan pat pe corde cam doun to lode.  
 Al soleyuly per to he fipre.  
 And it in bope hys armes clipte.  
 And bardus wyth his asse anon.  
 hym hay vpdraue and he is gon.  
 But whan he seih it was an ape.  
 he wende al hadde ben a jape.  
 Of furrie and fore hym droude.  
 And adrian eft sone gadde.

for helpe and cried and preyed faste.  
 And he eft sone his corde caste.  
 But whan it cam vnto pe ground.  
 A greet serpent it hay belounde.  
 pe which bardus anon vpdrounsh.  
 And pan hym pouht wel ynolwh.  
 It was fauraine but yit he herde.  
 pe boys and he per to anwerde.  
 What wilt artow in goddes name.  
 I am qd adrian pe same.  
 Whos good woll shalt han euene half.  
 Quod bardus paimme a goddes half.  
 pe pridd tyme assay I shal.  
 And cast his corde fory wyth al.  
 In to pe pyt and whan it cam.  
 To hym pis lord of Rome it nam.  
 And per vpon po hym hay dressed.  
 And wyth his hond ful ofte blessed.  
 And paimme he bad to bardus hale.  
 And he whiche vnderstod his tale.  
 he broune him and his asse al softe.  
 Hay draue and set him vpon a lofte.  
 Wyth outen harm al esely.  
 he sey not ones graut mercy.  
 And strauht hym fory in to pe cite.  
 And let pis pouere bardus be.  
 And napeles pis simple man.  
 his couenant so as he cam.  
 Hay axed. and pat oper seide.  
 If so be pat he him vnderde.  
 Of ouht pat hay be spoke or do.  
 It shal ben benged on hym so.  
 pe hym were better to be ded.  
 And he cam so non oper red.  
 But on his asse ayeen he caste.  
 his trusse and hiey homeward faste.  
 And whan pat he cam home to bedde.  
 he tolde his wyf holl pat he spedde.  
 But finally to speke ouht more.  
 vnto pis lord he dradde hym fore.  
 So pat o word ne dorste he seyn.  
 And pus vpon pe morowe a reyn.  
 In pe manere as I recorde.  
 fory wyth his asse and wyth his corde.  
 To gadre wode as he dede er.  
 he goy and whan pat he cam ner.  
 In to pe place wher he wolde.  
 he hay his ape anon byholde.  
 which hadde gadred al aboute.  
 Of sekkes heere and yere aoute.  
 And leyde hym redy to his hond.  
 wher of he made his trusse and bond.  
 fro day to day and in pis wise.  
 his ape profrey his seruise.  
 So pat he hadde of wode ynolwh.  
 vpon a tyme and as he drouwh.  
 Toward pe wode he seih be side.



The more gently serpent glide.  
 Twi pat she cam in his presence.  
 And in hire kinde reuerence.  
 She hap hym so and forp wy al.  
 A soon more brist pan a cristail.  
 Out of hire mought to fore his weie.  
 She let dollu falle and went here weie.  
 For pat he sholde not ben adrad.  
 So was his pouere swardus glad.  
 Touchyng good. and to pe soon.  
 He got and taky it by a noon.  
 And hap gret wonder in his wit.  
 How pat his beste hym hap auyt.  
 Where pat he mannes sone hap faile.  
 For whan he had most trauailed.  
 But al he put in goddes hond.  
 And turney hom and what he fond.  
 Su to his wyf he hap it shelled.  
 And pei pat were loye laded.  
 Accorden pat he sholde it selle.  
 And he no longer wolde dwelle.  
 For forp anon byon pe tale.  
 He soon he profrey to pe sale.  
 And vnto as he hym self it sette.  
 He iueler anon forp sette.  
 He gold and made his pament.  
 For of was no delaiement.  
 For whan his soon was lough a sold.  
 Honillward wyf ioye many a fold.  
 His swardus got and whan he cam.  
 Hom to his hollis. and pan he nam  
 his gold out of his pour wyf gine.  
 He fond his soon also per jme.  
 Wher of for ioye his herte pleyede.  
 Su to his wyf and pus he seide.  
 To here my gold so here my soon.  
 His wyf hap wonder per byon.  
 And axep hym how pat may be.  
 How be my cowlpe I not quod he.  
 For I dar swere byon a book.  
 Pat to my marchand I it took.  
 And he it hadde whan I wente.  
 So knell I not to what entente.  
 It it nold here but it be grace.  
 For pi to morwe in ower place.  
 I wole it fonde for to selle.  
 And if it wole nought wyf he dwelle.  
 But crepe in to my pouns a rein.  
 pan day I saphly swere and seyn.  
 It is pe bette of my soon.  
 He morwe cam and he is gon.  
 To seche a loutre in ower stede.  
 His soon to selle. a he so dede.  
 And left it wyf his chapman pere.  
 But whan pat he cam elles where.  
 In pence of his wyf at hom.  
 Out of his purs and pat he nom.

his gold he fond his soon wyf al.  
 And pus it fel hym oueral.  
 Where he it sold in sondry place.  
 Such was pe fortune and pe grace.  
 But solvel may no piny ben hid.  
 pat it was at pe laste kyd.  
 His fame got all aboute Rome.  
 So forfor pat pe wordes come.  
 To pempourour gusclian.  
 And he let sende for pat man.  
 And axed hym how pat it was.  
 And swardus told hym al pe cas.  
 How pat pe worme and eke pe beste.  
 Al pouh pei madden no by heste.  
 His trauail hadden wel a quit.  
 But he whiche hadde a mannes wit.  
 And made his couenunt be mouys.  
 And swor per to al pat he couys.  
 To parte and reue half his god.  
 Hay nold forpete how pat it stood.  
 As he pat wole no twilpe holde.  
 The Emperour al pat he tolde.  
 Hay herd. and pilke byndenesse.  
 He seide he wold hym self redresse.  
 And pus in court of iugement.  
 His adrian was pume assent.  
 And so pe queere in audience.  
 Declared was in pe presence.  
 Of pempourour and many mo.  
 Wher of was mochel speche so.  
 And gret wondryng a many pe pte.  
 But at pe laste napeles.  
 For pe party whiche hay plemued.  
 He lalbe hay demed and ordyned.  
 By hem pat were a bysed wel.  
 pat he shal haue pe haluondel.  
 purty out of adrians god.  
 And pus of pilke bynde blood.  
 Stant in memore in to his day.  
 Wher of pat euery wise man may.  
 Ensample hym and take in mynde.  
 What shame it is to ben bynde.  
 A yen pe whiche reson debater.  
 And euery creature it hater.  
 For pi my sone in pin office.  
 I rede fle pat ilke vice.  
 For vnto as pe cruyse seip.  
 Of adrian how he his seip.  
 For pat for woldes couerise.  
 ful ofte in such a maner wise.  
 Of louers nold a man may se.  
 ful many pat bynde be.  
 For wel be hote and euele laste.  
 pat is here by for at pe laste.  
 Whan pat pei haue here wille do.  
 here loue is after sone a go.  
 What seistold sone to his cas.



**My fader I wole seie allas Amans.**  
 pat euere such a man was bore.  
 which whan he hay his trowthe swore.  
 And hay of loue what he wolde.  
 pat he at any tyme holde.  
 Euer after in his herte fynde.  
 To faulen and to be vnkynde.  
 But fader as touchyng of me.  
 I may not stonde in pat degre.  
 For I toke neuere of loue whi.  
 pat I ne may wel go per by.  
 And so my profic elles where.  
 For ony sped I fynde pere.  
 I dar wel penke al aboute.  
 But I ne dar not speke it oute.  
 And if I dorste I wolde pleigne.  
 pat she for whom I suffre payne.  
 And loue here euere aliche hote.  
 pat no per yene ne behote.  
 In rellandryng of my seruice.  
 It lust here in no maner wyse.  
 I wol not say pat she is fynde.  
 And for to say she is vnkynde.  
 pat dar I not but god a boue.  
 Whiche demey euere herte of loue.  
 he wole pat on myn owhne side.  
 Shal noon vnkynndeship abide.  
 If I shal wypp my lady dwelle.  
 Wher of dar I no more telle.  
 I told god fader as it is.  
**Tel me what penkep yow of pis.**  
**My sone of pat vnkynndeship Confessor.**  
 ye whiche towarde pi lady schipe.  
 you pleynest for she wole ye nouht.  
 you art to blame of pat pouht.  
 for it may pat pi desir.  
 pouht it breime euere as dop ye fyr.  
 Dar cas to hire honour miste.  
 Or elles thi tyme come nouht yit.  
 Whiche stur vpon ye desme.  
 For pi my sone I rede ye.  
 penk wel what euere ye befall.  
 For no man hay his lustes alle.  
 But as yow toldst me to fore.  
 pat you to loue art nouht for bore.  
 And hast don noon vnkynndeshipe.  
 yow myht per of pi grace blesse.  
 And les not pat continuance.  
 For pere may be no such greuance.  
 For loue as is vnkynndeshipe.  
 Wher of to kepe ym worschipe.  
 So as yese olde boke tale.  
 I schal ye telle a redy tale.  
 I told herkie and be wel dar per by.  
 For I wole telle it oppynly.  
**His point exemplum contra dyos**  
**amori ingratos. Et narrat qua**

**liter Thesens Cadmi filius consi**  
**lio suffulatus Adriane Remis nymos**  
**filie in domo que Laborinchus diat**  
**amotauru dicit. Unde Thesens**  
**Adriane sponsalia certissime pro**  
**mittens. Ipam una cu ffedra sor**  
**re sua a Crete secud uulgio duxit.**  
**Sz statim postea obliu gratitudi**  
**nis beneficio Adrianam ipm salua**  
**te in insula Chio spreta post ter**  
**ru reliquit. Et ffedrum Athenis**  
**ibi sponsata inquit coronauit.**  
**My sone as telle ye pwe.**  
**ye which whilom was kyng of crete.**  
 a sone he hadde and Androche.  
 he highte. and so befel pat he.  
 vnto Athenes for to lere.  
 Was sent and he bar hym pere.  
 For pat he was of his lignage.  
 Such pride he took in his corage.  
 pat he foryete hay ye scoles.  
 And in note among ye folles.  
 he dede many pynge webuge.  
 And vied pilke luf so longe.  
 Til at ye laste of pat he wrouhte.  
 he fond ye nyschep which he souhte.  
 Wher of it fell pat he was slayn.  
 his fader whiche it herde slayn.  
 Was wrope and al pat euere he mihte.  
 Of men of armes he him dihte.  
 A strong powder and for he wente.  
 vnto Athenis where he drehte.  
 ye pleyne contrie al aboute.  
 ye citee stod of hym in doute.  
 As per pat no defence hadde.  
 A yen ye polver whiche he ladde.  
**Agens which was pere kyng.**  
 his conseil took vpon pis ying.  
 For he was pan in ye cite.  
 So pat of pees in ye terte.  
 By tylene amos and Agens.  
 ye fell and ben accorded pus.  
 ye kyng amos fiv yer to pere.  
 Receyue shal as yow shalt here.  
 Out of Athenes for erunge.  
 Of men pat were of unhytynge.  
 Personel nyne of whiche he shal.  
 his wil don in special.  
 For vengeance of his sones dep.  
 Ioon oper grace pere ne gep.  
 For to take ye mysse.  
 And pat was don in such a wyse.  
 Whiche stod vpon a wonder cas.  
 For pilke tyme so it was.  
 Wher of pat men yit rede and synge.  
 Kyng amos hadde in his kepynge.  
 A cruel monstre as seip ye gest.



For he was half man and half best.  
 And mynotaurus he was hote.  
 Whiche was byrete in ariote.  
 Upon which he his owne wyf.  
 Whil he was out upon pe styf.  
 Of pilke grete sege at Troye.  
 Whiche he loste al his ioye.  
 Whan pat she shis mynstr boze.  
 And men ordeigne anon perfore.  
 And fel pat alle tyme pus.  
 per was a clerk on Sedalus.  
 Which had ben of he assent.  
 Of pat hir world was so mynwent.  
 And he made of his owne wit.  
 Wher of pe remembrance is yit.  
 For mynotaur such an howe.  
 Whiche was so strong and merueous.  
 pat what man pat wyf iune wente.  
 per was so many a sondry wente.  
 pat he ne sholde noht come oute.  
 But gon amased al a bente.  
 And in his holde to lode and wande.  
 Was mynotaurus put in wande.  
 pat what byf pat euere mine cam.  
 Or man or beste he ouer cam.  
 And fowls and fedde hym per upon.  
 And in his wise many on.  
 Out of Athens for euage.  
 Denoured weren in pat rage.  
 For euery pere pei schope hem so.  
 pei of Athens er pei go.  
 Toward pat ilke woful chauce.  
 And it was set in ordenaunce.  
 Upon fortune here for pei caste.  
 Til pat Theseus atte lyste.  
 Whiche was pe kynges sone pere.  
 Among ower pat pere were.  
 In pilke yer as it besett.  
 He was a worpi knyght wyf all.  
 And whan he seih his chauce full.  
 He ferde as pouh he took nau shede.  
 But al pat euere he myhte spede.  
 Wyf hym and wyf his felaschipe.  
 For in to crete he goy by shipe.  
 Where pat pe kyng mynos he souhte.  
 And profeyd al pat he hym ouhte.  
 Upon pe poynt of here accord.  
**C**his scerne kyng his cruel lord.  
 Took euery day oon of pe yme.  
 And put hym to pe discipline.  
 Of mynotaur to be deuoured.  
 But Theseus was so fauoured.  
 pat he was kept til at pe last.  
 And in pe mene while he caste.  
 What þing hym were best to do.  
 And fell pat Adriane po.  
 Whiche was pe duhter of mynos.

And hadde herd pe worpi los.  
 Of Theseus and of his myht.  
 And seih he was a lusty knyght.  
 Hure hole herte on hym she leyde.  
 And he also of loue hure preyde.  
 So ferforz pat pei were al on.  
 And she ordeigne ym a noon.  
 In what manere he sholde hym saue.  
 And shap so pat she dede hym haue.  
 A clothe of yred of which wyf iune.  
 first at ydore he shal begynne.  
 Wyf hym to take pat oon ende.  
 pat whan he wolde a yen wende.  
 He myhte go pe same weye.  
 And ouer his so as i seye.  
 Of piache she toke hym a pelote.  
 pe whiche he sholde in to pe pnote.  
 Of mynotaur cast riht.  
 Such wepen also for hym she diht.  
 pat he by reson may not fliht.  
 To make an ende of his bataille.  
 For she hym tauhte in sondry weye.  
 Til he was knowe of pilke emprise.  
 how pat he his beste sholde quille.  
 And pus short tale for to telle.  
 So as pe mayde hym hadde tauht.  
 Theseus wyf his monstre fauht.  
 smot of his hede pe whech he nam.  
 And be pe yred so as he cam.  
 he goy a yem til he were olde.  
 po was gret wonder al a boue.  
 mynos pe trybut chap releffed.  
 And so was al pe werre cessed.  
 By thene Athens and hem of crete.  
 But nob to speke of pilke siter.  
 whos beaute was wyf oute wime.  
 his faire myndert Adriane.  
 Whan pat she shis Theseus found.  
 Was neuere yit upon pe ground.  
 A gladdere whil þan she was po.  
 Theseus welte a day or two.  
 Where pat mynos gret chere hym dede.  
 Theseus in a preue stede.  
 hap wyf his mayden spoke & rolled.  
 pat she to hym was abandoned.  
 In all pat euere pat she collye.  
 So pat of pilke lusty wolpe.  
 And prouely betwene hem thye.  
 pe ferste flour he took a weye.  
 For he so faire po behiste.  
 That euere whil he was myht.  
 he shold hure take for his wyf.  
 And as his owne hertes lye.  
 he scholde hure loue and trollye be.  
 And she whiche myht not forbere.  
 So sore louey hym a yem.  
 pat what as euere he wolde seyn.



**W**hy al hys herre she beleuey.  
And thus his purpos he acheuey.  
So pat assured of his trowp.  
Wip hym she wente and pat was troupe.  
**E**dena here yonge foster eke.  
A lusty mayde a sobre a meke.  
Fullfilled of al curtesie.  
For fosterhode and compaignie.  
Of loue whiche was hem bettene.  
To seen here foster maid a queene.  
Hir fader left and forp she wente.  
Wip hym whiche al his ferste entete.  
For pat wipinne alicel proude.  
So pat it was al ouerproude.  
Whan she best wende it sholde stonde.  
Ye shup was blisse for ye loude.  
Wher in pat yei seilmyt were.  
His adriane hap methel fere.  
Of pat ye wipud so lorde blew.  
As she whiche of ye see ne knew.  
And so fel pat vpon an gle.  
Yei were wipud dride w a while.  
Whiche shio hilt yei were drine.  
Where he to here his loue hap yue.  
Pat she shal londe and take hire rest.  
But pat was no ying for ye best.  
For whan she was to londe brouht.  
She whiche pat tyme pouht nouht.  
But al troupe and toke no kepe.  
Hap leyd hys softe for to slepe.  
As she whiche longe hap be forlacked.  
But ceruus she was euere maached.  
And fer fro all lones kynde.  
For more ym ye besto vkynde.  
The seus po no trowpe keppe.  
Whel pat ye yonge lady lepte.  
Fullfilled of his vkynde shipe.  
Hap al foryete ye trowd shipe.  
Whiche adrian hym hadde do.  
And had v to ye shupman po.  
Hale vp ye seil and nouht abide.  
And forp he goy ye same tyde.  
Toward adrene and here a londe.  
He left whiche lay nys ye stonde.  
Sleeping til pat she alwot.  
But whan pat she cast vp hir lode.  
Toward ye stonde and sly no wist.  
Hys herre was so sore a fricht.  
Pat she ne wiste what to yinke.  
But dronk hys to ye water brinke.  
Wher she beheld ye fer at lorge.  
She seih no shup she seih no barge.  
Als ferforp as she myhte kenne.  
A lord she seide wrych a ymme.  
As al ye workshap after here.  
Ypon his woful womman here.  
His woful knyght hap don and wrouht.

**W**ende hadde his loue bouht.  
And so deserued it at nede.  
Whan pat he stood vpon his drede.  
And eke ye loue he me behihte.  
It is gret wonder how he myhte.  
Towardes me now be vkynde.  
And so to lere out of his mynde.  
Ying whiche he seide his ollen mouht.  
But after pis whan it was couht.  
And drulle in to ye worldes fame.  
It shal be hyndering of his name.  
For wel he wot and so wot i.  
He pat his trowpe bodyly.  
Pat he myn honour sholde kepe.  
And wip pat word she gan to wepe.  
And sorowly more pan i now.  
Hys fure tresser she to drowh.  
And wip hys selue took a scryf.  
Pat she bettene dey and hys.  
Sibonmyt lay ful ofte among.  
And al was ym on hym a lony.  
Whiche was to loue vkynde so.  
Wher of ye wryng for euermore.  
Stond in crowng of remembrance.  
And eke it askep a vengeance.  
To ben vkynde in lones cas.  
So as the seus paine was.  
Al pouht he were a noble knyght.  
For he ye lalle of lones rust.  
Forfeted hap in all weye.  
Pat adrian he put allweye.  
Whiche was a gret vkynde dede.  
And after pis so as i rede.  
Fedra ye whiche hys foster is.  
He took in seide of here and pis.  
Fel after ward to mechel tene.  
For yllke vice of whiche i mene.  
Vkynde shipe where it falley.  
Ye troupe of mannes herre it palley.  
Pan he can no good dede aquite.  
So myn he stonde of no merite.  
Towardes god and eke also.  
Men clepen hym ye worldes fo.  
For he no more pan ye fend.  
V to noon oyer man is frend.  
But al toward hym self a lone.  
For pi my sone in pi persone.  
His vice aboue al oyer fle.  
**W**y fader as ye techen me.  
Ye teke don in pis matere.  
But ouer pis now wolde i heere.  
Wher of i shal me shoue more.  
My good sone and for pi lore.  
After ye teule of conetise.  
I shal ye pprete diuise.  
Of euery vice by and by.  
I tol herken and be wel wir p by.



**A**uribus ex clara res tollit lucra  
pina. Floris et iura virgine mel  
la caput. **U**bi tractat sup illa  
specie cupida que rapina mimica  
tur. cui mater extorco ipam ad de  
seruenda magnatū curijs specia  
lino comendauit.

**L**ye lineage of auarice.  
My sone yit per is a vice.  
his tith name is raiyne.

Which hap a rolde of his odyne.

Raiyne among pe maystres dwelle.

And wyf his seruant as mon telle.

Extorcion nold is wyfholde.

Raiyne of ower memies folde.

Wak his Lawder and pater nout.

for where as euere it may be souht.

In his hous per shal no ying lakke.

And pat ful ofte abiey pe lakke.

Of pouere men pat dwelle a boutte.

rus stant pe comon peple in doute.

Which can do noon amende ment.

for whan pei faylen payement.

Raiyne make noon ower file.

But take by strengye what he wile.

So ben pere in pe same wise.

loues as i shal dwile.

pat whan nout elles may auale.

Anoon wyf strengye pei assaile.

To gete of loue pe sesyne.

Whan pei se tyme be Raiyne.

for in my sone shroue pe here.

for whan hast ben a raiynere.

Of loue. Certes fader no.

for i my lobe desire so.

pat youh i were as Pompeie.

pat al pe world wolde obeie.

or elles such as Alisandre.

I wold nout do such a flandre.

It is no good man which pat doth.

In good fey sone wold self so.

for he pat wold of purbeance.

by such a weye his loue auance.

he shal it after fore abie.

But if pese olde ensamples lie.

I wold good fader telle me con.

So as ye canne many con.

Touhyng of loue in pis matere.

I wold lest my sone and wold shal here.

So as it hap bifalle er yis.

In loues cause hold pat it is.

A man to take be raiyne.

pe preie which is feynlyne.

**A** lye point exempli contra

istos in amoris causa raptos.

Et narrat qualiter Pandion Rex

Athen duas filias videlicet ppe

ne et Philomena habuit. Progne  
ante Terco Regi Tracie respon  
sata contigit. qd Terco ad insta  
ciam vxoris sue Philomena de  
Athenis in Tracia sororis dista  
goms ca sed quadam vice pducit  
in concupiscencia Philomena et  
in seueritate in itinere dilapsus  
est qd ipe non solum sue violencia  
rapine virginitate et oppressit  
s et ipsius linguam ne facit ne  
detegnet forpice mutuant.

**S**udo impetue memorie Croni  
cam tanta raptoris aueritate  
mix ordine in postea indicant.

**T**her was a real noble King.

And riche of al worldes ying.

Which of his yre enheritance.

Athenis hadde in gouernance.

And who so yente per vpon.

his name was King Pandion.

Two soldtres hadde he by his wyf.

pe which he loued as his lif.

pe first to doughter Progne hight.

And pe secunde as she myght

was cleped faire Philomene.

To whom fel after moche tene.

pe fader of his pouruance.

his doughter Progne wolde auance.

And yif here in to marriage.

A worthy King of heh lignage.

A noble King eke of his hond.

So was he bid in eueri lond.

Of Tracie he hight Terco.

pe clef quide telley rus.

rus Terco his wyf hym hadde.

A lusey lye wyf here he hadde.

It it besel vpon a tyde.

rus Progne as he lay here byside.

By pouht here hold it myght be.

pat she here softer myght see.

And to his lord hir wil she seide.

Wy goodly wordes and hym pzeide.

pat she to here myght go.

And if it likes hym nout so.

pat pan he wolde hym self wende.

or elles by som ower sende.

Which myght here dere softer gete.

And shapen hold pat pei myght men.

here lord anon to pat he herde.

pat his acord and rus anwerde.

I wole he seide for pi sake.

pe were after pi softer take.

my self and bying here if i may

And she wyf pat pere as he lay.

Segun hym in here armes clipe.

And byt hym wyf here softer lye.



And seide hire graunt mercy.  
 And he sone after was redy.  
 And took his leue for to go.  
 I soz tyme dede he so.  
 His Tereus goy for by shipe.  
 Wip hym and his feleschipe.  
 By see ye vult conue he nam.  
 In to ye countre til he cam.  
 Where Philomene was dwellyng.  
 And of here soster ye tyding.  
 He tolde and ye weiuen glade.  
 And mochel iore of hym ye made.  
 Ye fader and ye moder bope.  
 To leue here doughter weuen lope.  
 But if ye weiuen in presence.  
 And napels at reuerence.  
 Of hym pat wold hym self tynne.  
 Per wolden nouht pat he sholde faile.  
 Of pat he preyede. and yeile his leue.  
 And she pat wold nouht byleue.  
 In alle haste made hire pace.  
 To lound hire soster for to fare.  
 Wip Tereus and forp she wente.  
 And he wip al his hold entente.  
 Whan she was fro here frendes go.  
 Assotey of here loue so.  
 His eyhe myht he not wipholde.  
 Pat he ne most on hire byholde.  
 And wip ye slyt he grai desire.  
 And set his dwyne herte on fyre.  
 And for whan it to toll apwochey.  
 To hym anon ye strengthe adrochey.  
 Til wip his herte it be deuoured.  
 Ye toll ne may not be socoured.  
 And so pat tytant rabyner.  
 Whan pat she was in his polber.  
 And he per to salsh tyme and place.  
 As he pat lost hay all grace.  
 For pat he was a wedded man.  
 And in a rage on here he ran.  
 Fyht as a wolf pat taky his prey.  
 And she began to crye and prey.  
 O fader o my moder deye.  
 I toll help bot ye ne myht it here.  
 And she was of to litel myht.  
 Defence a yeu so rude a knyht.  
 I make whan he was so wood.  
 Pat he no reson vnderstood.  
 But held here vnder in such wyse.  
 Pat she ne myht nouht a wise.  
 Bot lay oppressid and desefes.  
 As if a gostlynt hadde sef.  
 A byrd whiche dorste not for feye.  
 Penne and pus pat tyrant peye.  
 Byprate hire such prync as men seyn.  
 May neuere more be yolden ayein.  
 And was ye vngynite.

Of which rauine it was pite.  
 But whan she to here seluen com.  
 And of hire mischeyf hede nom.  
 And euell hold pat she was no maide.  
 Wip woful herte pat she saide.  
 O polb of alle men ye wiste.  
 Wher was per eyere a man pat dorste.  
 To such a dede as you hast do.  
 Pat day shal falle I hope so.  
 Pat I shal telle out al my felle.  
 And wip my speche I shal fulfille.  
 Ye wide world in brede and lengthe.  
 Pat you hast do to me by strengthe.  
 If I among ye peple dwelle.  
 In to ye peple I shal it telle.  
 And if I be wip tyme watt.  
 Of seones closed pan I shal.  
 In to ye seones clepe and crye.  
 And tellen hem in felome.  
 And if I to ye wodes wende.  
 Per shal I telle tale and ende.  
 And crye to briddes alle a boure.  
 Hold you hast do to me purgh oute.  
 For I so loue it shal reherce.  
 Pat my boys shal ye heuene peye.  
 Pat it shal solbne in goddes eye.  
 A fals man where is ye fere.  
 O more cruel pan eny beste.  
 Hold shal I toll holden in byhest.  
 Which you in to my soster made.  
 O you which alle loue vngladest.  
 And art ensample of alle vntrelle.  
 I toll wold god my soster euell.  
 Of ym vntrelle hold pat it stod.  
 And he pan as alion wood.  
 Wip hys vnhappi handes stouge.  
 Hire cauhite and bi ye tresses bouge.  
 Wip whiche he bond ye bope his armes.  
 Pat was a feble dede of armes.  
 And to ye grounde anon here caste.  
 And out he chipey also faste.  
 Here tounge wip a peyre sheres.  
 So what wip blood and what witeres.  
 Obe of here whe and of here mouy.  
 He made here faire face vnkouy.  
 She lay wouyn on to ye dep.  
 Per was vntepes eny brye.  
 But pat whanne he hire tynge wast.  
 A litel part per of bylaste.  
 But she wip al no word may solbne.  
 But chit and as a brid iargollne.  
 And napels pat wode hound.  
 Her body hent up fro ye ground.  
 And set here peye as by his wille.  
 She sholde abide in prisen felle.  
 For euere mo but now take hede.  
 What after fel of his misde.



When al his mischief was byfalle.  
 His Theraus pat foule hym falle.  
 But to his contrite hym he tyh.  
 And when he cam his palays nyh.  
 His Wyf al redy were hym kepte.  
 When he here shyn anon he lepte.  
 And pat he dede for deceyte.  
 For he began to axe hym strepte.  
 Where is my foster and he seide.  
 Pat she was ded and proune abride.  
 As she pat was a woful wyf.  
 And stod betwene here dey and lyf.  
 Of pat she herde such tydynge.  
 But for she shyn here lord wepyng.  
 She woude nouht but alle troupe.  
 And hadde wel ye more roupe.  
 Ye perles weren so forsale.  
 To here and blake cloyes take.  
 As she whiche was gentyl and kynde.  
 In worship of here fostres mynde.  
 She made a riche outierment.  
 For she found noon amende ment.  
 To shynen or to sobbe more.  
 So was yere wile ynder ye more.  
**H**ow leue we his kyn and queene.  
 And torne a yen to whilomene.  
 As I began to tellen erst.  
 When she cam in to prison erst.  
 It poultre a kynges daughter straunge.  
 To make so sodeyn a chaunge.  
 For wehe in to so grete a wo.  
 And she by gam to yente so.  
 Yough she by mowpe no ying preide.  
 Wyf inue here herce pus she seide.  
 O you almyghty subiter.  
 Pat hys settef and loket fer.  
 You suffrest many a wonderfule ying.  
 And yet it is nouht in Willyng.  
 To ye yer may no ying ben hidde.  
 Yough wost how it is me byrd.  
 Wold I had not be bore.  
 For yanne I hadde nouht for lore.  
 My speche and my virginite.  
 But god lord al is ye.  
 When you yer of wold do vengeance.  
 And shape my deliuerance.  
 And euer among his lady lepte.  
 And yough pat she neuere lepte.  
 To ben a worldes woman more.  
 And pat she wisshet euer more.  
 But ofte into here foster & dere.  
 Here herce speker in his manere.  
 And seide ha foster if ye knelle.  
 Al myn estat ye wolde relle.  
 I wolle and myn deliuerance.  
 Ye wolde shape and do vengeance.  
 On hym pat is so fule a man.

And napeles so as I can.  
 I wold yough sende som toferyng.  
 Whereof ye shul haue knowlechyng.  
 Of ying I wot pat shal yough lope.  
 Ye whiche yough touchet and me lope.  
 And so wyf ying a while as tyt.  
 She was a cloy of silk al whit.  
 Wyf letters and ymagerie.  
 In which was al ye felonie.  
 Which Tereus to here hadde do.  
 And dappeted to gedre so.  
 And set here hynnet per ypon.  
 And sende it in to proune anon.  
 Ye messenger which for it bar.  
 What it amouncey is not bar.  
 And napeles to proune he got.  
 And pryncely taky here ye cloy.  
 And went a yen vnto as he cam.  
 Ye court of hym noon hede nam.  
 When proune of whilomene herde.  
 She wold knowle how pat it ferde.  
 And openy pat ye man hadde broust.  
 And wot yer by what hap be wroust.  
 And what mischief yer is befall.  
 In wone so she gan don fulle.  
 And eft a wo and gam to stonde.  
 And eft she taky ye cloy in honde.  
 Beheld ye letters and ymages.  
 But at ye laste of such outrages.  
 She sepy wepyng is not ye bote.  
 And wery if pat she lyne mote.  
 It shal be demed ower wote.  
 And wyf pat she gan here auyse.  
 How first she myht vnto hys wyne.  
 Here foster pat no man wyf ying.  
 But only yei yei were wrode.  
 It sholde knowle and shap yer fore.  
 Pat Tereus no ying it wote.  
 And yet as here seluen byste.  
 Here foster was deliuered sone.  
 Out of prison and by ye more.  
 To proune she was broust by wote.  
**W**hen eche of ower hadde a sight.  
 In chambere where yei were al one.  
 Yei made many appetous mone.  
 But proune most of sorowde made.  
 Whiche shyn here foster pale and fade.  
 And specheles and deshonoured.  
 Of pat she hadde be deflowred.  
 And eft yon here lord she youghste.  
 Of pat he so vntrely wrouste.  
 And hadde his espousale wote.  
 She maky a wote it schal be wote.  
 And wyf pat wote she kellep don.  
 Wepyng in gret deuocion.  
 On to Cupide and to Venus.  
 She preyde and seide yanne pus.



O ye to whom no ying a fette.  
 Of Loue may for euery herte.  
 ye knowe as ye put ben a boue.  
 ye god and ye goddess of loue.  
 ye weteu wel pat euere hit.  
 Wil all my wil and my wit.  
 Sij ferst ye shopen me to wedde.  
 pat I lay my Lord a bedde.  
 I haue be trewe in my deure.  
 And euere youlste for to be.  
 And neuere loue in ower place.  
 But al only ye knyt of trace.  
 Which is my Lord and I his wyf.  
 But now all as ye woful strif.  
 pat I him pus a yentward fynde.  
 ye most vntrewe and most vntynde.  
 pat euere in ladyes armes lay.  
 And wel I wot pat he ne may.  
 Amend his wrong it is so gret.  
 for he to litel of me let.  
 Whan he myn othen softer toot.  
 And me pat am his wyf forsoot.  
 O pus to Venus and Cupide.  
 She pryncy and ferpermore she criede.  
 O to Apollo ye myghte.  
 And seide o myghty god of reite.  
 wold ye deynunge of pis debite.  
 my softer and al here astute.  
 wold wof. 2 how she hay forlore.  
 hure maidenhede and I perfore.  
 In al ye world shal be a blame.  
 Of pat my softer hay a shame.  
 pat Tereus to here I sent.  
 And wel wold wof pat myn entent.  
 Was al for wofschipe and for gawde.  
 O Lord pat reuest ye ynes foode.  
 O euery wof I prey ye here.  
 yese woful softres pat ben here.  
 And let neuere to ye ben loye.  
 We ben yin olde women loye.  
 pus pleigney pryncy and alky wreche.  
 And pouh here softer lalle speche.  
 To hym pat alle ynynges wof.  
 hit forold is nouht ye lusse hot.  
 But he pat yinne hadde herd he tlo.  
 hym ouht haue soiled euere mo.  
 for sorow which was hem be adene.  
 Wif signes pleigney philomene.  
 And pryncy sey it shal be wreke.  
 pat all ye goddess per of shal speke.  
 And pryncy po sikenesse feyne.  
 wher of yn to here Lord she pleyne.  
 And preyer she most here chambreye.  
 And as here llyke wake and slepe.  
 And he here gynnetye to be so.  
 And pus to gedre ben yel tlo.  
 pat wold hym but a litel good.

Now herke here after howh it stod.  
 Of woful myntres pat befelle.  
 ye softres pat ben hope felle.  
 And pat was not on hem a long.  
 But onliche on ye grette wrong.  
 which tereus hem hadde do.  
 yei shopen for to deyne hem po.  
 This Tereus by pryncy his wyf.  
 A sone hay which as his wyf.  
 he louey. and Ithis he highte.  
 his moder wif wel she myghte.  
 To Tereus no more greue.  
 yin sle pis child pat was so leue.  
 pus she pat was as who sen mad.  
 Of wof which hay here ouerlad.  
 Wif oute insite of moder hede.  
 for pat pite and lost drede.  
 And in here chambreye pryncy.  
 pis child wif oute noise or cry.  
 she slow and helth hym al to petes.  
 And after wif diuerse spices.  
 ye flesh whan it was so to helde.  
 she takey and makey per of a selde.  
 Wif which ye fader at his mete.  
 was serued til he hadde hym ete.  
 pat he ne wif howh pat it stod.  
 But pus his olde flesh and blod.  
 hym self deuourey a yen kynde.  
 As he pat was to fore vntynde.  
 And yinne er pat he were arise.  
 for pat he sholde ben arise.  
 To shewen hym pis child was dede.  
 pis philomene took ye hede.  
 Berthene tlo dishes and al wofe.  
 yei comen for y softres hope.  
 And setten it ypon ye borde.  
 And pryncy yin be gynn to worde.  
 And seide o worst of all wofe.  
 Of conscience whom no yallke.  
 may seere lo what wof hast do.  
 So here be now softres tlo.  
 O mynere lo here pi prey.  
 Wif whom so fulllich on ye weie.  
 wof hast pi tyrannye wrouth.  
 So now it is soundel about.  
 And bet it shal for of pi dede.  
 ye world shal euere yuge and rede.  
 In remembrance of pi defame.  
 for you to loue hast do such shame.  
 pat it shal neuere be foryet.  
 Wif pat he stert by fiv ye mete.  
 And shof ye lord in to ye flor.  
 And caught a sword anou and flou.  
 pat yei sholde of hys hondes dye.  
 And yei yn to ye godde arie.  
 Begonne wif so loud a feueue.  
 pat yei were herd in to ye heuene.



And in a thynnyng of an yhe.  
 # Al sodeynly pat men it sehe.  
 Here formes chaungen alle yre.  
 Schen of hem in his degre.  
 Was torned in to brudes kynde.  
 In selche as men may fynde.  
 # After pestat pat pei were yme.  
 Here formes were sette a thymme.  
 And as it telley in pe tale.  
 pe ferst in to a whytynge.  
 Was shap and pat philomene.  
 Whiche in pe Wynter is nouht sene.  
 For yume ben pe leues falle.  
 And nakes ben pe busshes alle.  
 For after pat she was abyde.  
 Here Wylt was euere to beu hid.  
 And for to dwelle in pryue place.  
 pat no man sholde sene here face.  
 For shame which may not be laged.  
 Of yume pat was to fore passed.  
 Whan pat she lost here maydenhede.  
 For euere upon here womynhede.  
 yough pat pe goddes wolde here chaunge.  
 She was and is pe more straunge.  
 And halt here cloe pe Wynters day.  
 But whan pe Wynter goy a way.  
 And pat nature pe goddesse.  
 Wole of here olwhue fere laryesse.  
 Wy herbes and wy floures bope.  
 pe felde and pe medwes clope.  
 And eke pe Wodes and pe greues.  
 Ben hiled and wy grene leues.  
 So pat a bold here hede may.  
 Se thene Iwerill 2 arch 2 may.  
 She pat pe Wynter held here cloe.  
 For pure shame and nouht a woe.  
 Whan pat she seep pe leues yllke.  
 And pat yere is no bare skelle.  
 Ful al is hilde wy leues grene.  
 To Wode comy pe philomene.  
 And makey here ferst yeres flit.  
 Where as she yryges day and nyht.  
 And in here song al pryuey.  
 She makey here pleyat and seip o why.  
 O why ne were I a mayde.  
 For so yese olde wise sayde.  
 Which vnderstood what she mente.  
 Here notes ben of such entente.  
 And eke pei seide holl in here song.  
 She makey met iore and myrre among.  
 And seip a wolle I am a brid.  
 ha noll my face may ben hid.  
 yough I haue lost my maydenhe.  
 Shal no man se my chetres rede.  
 yus medley she wy Iore wo.  
 And wy hure sorwe myrre also.  
 So pat of lones melodie.

She makey sydeyse melodie.  
 And seip lous is a woful blisse.  
 A wysam which can nomman wisse.  
 A lusty feure a wounde softe.  
 yus note she rehercy of to.  
 To hem which vnderstoude hure tale.  
 Noll haue I of yis whytynge.  
 Whiche erst was cleped philomene.  
 Told al pat I wolde mene.  
 Gope of here forme and of hure note.  
 Wher of men may pe story note.  
 And of hure softer prouocye I fynde.  
 how she was torned out of kynde.  
 In to a balolle wylt of wyng.  
 Which eke in Wynter hy wounyng.  
 yere as she may no yume be sene.  
 But whan pe Wode is wyne grene.  
 And comen is pe soner cyde.  
 yau fley she fory and ymyney to chide.  
 And chuttyr out in here laryng.  
 What fulshede is in marriage.  
 And telley in a maner speche.  
 Of Tereus pe spouse bleche.  
 She wole nouht in pe Wodes dwelle.  
 For she wold opynlych telle.  
 And eke for pat she was a spouse.  
 Among pe folk she comy to house.  
 To so yese wifes to vnderstoude.  
 pe fulshede of here housbonde.  
 pat pei of hem be war also.  
 For yere ben many vntrewe of so.  
 yus ben yese sustres brides bope.  
 And ben tollard pe men so lops.  
 pat pei ne wil of pure shame.  
 In to no mannes hand be tume.  
 For euere it dwelle in here mynde.  
 Of pat pei founde a man vntrewe.  
 And pat was fals Tereus.  
 If suchon be amonges vs.  
 I not but his condicion.  
 yen seyn in euery region.  
 Wy yume tollue an eke wy oute.  
 noll regney communlyche a bout.  
 And napeles in remembraunce.  
 I wole declare what remaunce.  
 pe goddes hadden hym ordeyned.  
 Of pat pe softres hadden pleyued.  
 For anon after he was chaunged.  
 And fro his olone kynde straunged.  
 A laphynle mad he was.  
 And yus hoppey in pe mys.  
 And on his hede he stant byryst.  
 A crest in tofene he was a kyght.  
 And yit in to yis day men seip.  
 pe laphynle hure lost his fey.  
 And is pe brid fullest of alle.  
 Be War my sone er pe so fulle.



So pynely very nawn aboute.

no fuit commissus supradictum



*Pallas ipam e manu eius virgi  
nitate seruare gratus liberauit.*

**I**n the holl Whilom was a mayde.  
The fairest as Ouide sayde.  
Which was in here tyme y.  
And she was of pe chaumbre also.  
Of Pallas which is pe goddesse.  
And wyf to marce of Whom plesse.  
Is yene to pe Worpi knyghtes.  
For he is of so grette myghtes.  
pat he gouernep pe bataile.  
Wip outen hym may nouht auale.  
pe strong hond for he is helpe.  
per may no knyght of armes yelpe.  
But he fihit vnder his baner.  
But nold to speke of my matere.  
his faue fleshe lusty may.  
A lone as she went on a day.  
vpon pe stronde for to pleye.  
per cam reptymus in pe woie.  
Which hay pe seen gouernance.  
And in his herte such plesance.  
he took Whan he pis mynde seih.  
pat al his herte aros on hih.  
for he al so demly vnlur.  
Beheld pe beaute pat she bar.  
And cast a noon Wiplyme his herte.  
pat she him shal no wepe a ferte.  
But if he take in auantage.  
ffro pilke mayde som pilage.  
trouht of pe bwoches ne pe vynges.  
But of som ower suale pynnes.  
he pouht perts er pat she wente.  
And here in lope his armes hente.  
And put his hond tollard pe cofre.  
Where for to robbe he made a pfre.  
pat lusty tresour for to stole.  
Whiche pusses ower noodes fele.  
And cleped is pe maydenhede.  
Which is pe flour of womanhede.  
pis maide which fornye be name.  
was hore dredyng alle shame.  
Sih pat she myht not debate.  
And wel she wiste he wolde algate.  
ffulfil his lust of roberie.  
And non began to wepe and arie.  
And seide o Pallas noble queene.  
Shelle nold pi myht and let be seue.  
To kepe and saue myn honour.  
help pat i lese not my flour.  
Which nold vnder pi kele is lode.  
pat word was not so sone spoke.  
Whan Pallas shoy reouerit.  
After pe will and pe desir.  
of hure which a mayde was.  
And so demliche vpon pis cas.  
Owe of here womanysse hynde.

In to a briddes like i fynde.  
She was transformed forp Wipal.  
So pat reptymus no pynge stal.  
Of such pynge as he wolde haue stole.  
Wip fepere blake as eny cole.  
Owe of his armes in a proll.  
She fihit before his yhe a cwise.  
Which was to here a more delit.  
To kepe hure maydenhede whir.  
vnder pe wede of fepere blake.  
In perles white rin for sake.  
pat no luf may restore ayein.  
But pus reptymus his herte in dem.  
hay vpon roberie sette.  
pe bridd is flouwe and he was let.  
pe faue may hym hay as caped.  
Wher of for euere he was be iaped.  
And fornes of pat he hay lore.  
y lone be pold war per fore.  
pat pou no maydenhede stole.  
Wherof men sei desheses fele.  
Alday befulle in sondry wise.  
So as i shal pe yit deuyse.  
An ower tale per hyon.  
Which fel by olde dayes noon.  
*Whic ponit exemplum contra istos  
in causa virginitatis lese pdone.*  
*Et narrat qd ad Calistona lica  
onis mire pulcritudinis filia sua  
virginitate Diane conseruandam  
castima vouisset. Et in filia que  
Tegea dicitur iuxta alia ibm vi  
phas moraturum se transfuisset.  
Iubet virginis castitate subtili  
to supripicis quedam filia qui po  
stea archas motatus est ex ea ge  
nuit unde iuno in Calistona se  
uiens ei pulcritudine in vire ty  
pissime deformitatem subito tuf  
ficauit.*  
**I**n a licaon vpon his wyf.  
A do wher hadde a goodly luf.  
A cene mayde of Worpi fame.  
Calistona whos rish name.  
Was cleped and of many a lord.  
She was by souht but hure a word.  
To loue myht no man Wipme.  
As she which hay no lust per yme.  
But stoz Wip yme here herte i fide.  
pat she wolde euere be a mayde.  
Wher of to kepe here self in pees.  
Wip such as Amadriades.  
Were cleped Wodenmades po.  
And Wip pe rumpes eke also.  
vpon pe spyring of fleshe Welles.  
She shoy to diuells a nallgher alle.  
And pus cam pis Calistona.



In to ye wode of Tere.  
Where she dwynite behynde.  
Du to Diane and per to plithe.  
Here trollpe vpon ye bolles grene.  
To kepe here maydenhede cleue.  
Whiche after ward vpon a day.  
Was preueliche stole a way.  
For Iubiter purh his gyltynise.  
fro here it took in such a wise.  
pat sodeynlych forp wyf al.  
here wombe arois and she co wal.  
So pat it myht nouht beu hid.  
And per vpon it is beid.  
Diane Whiche it herde telle.  
In pryue place in to a welle.  
Wif rymphes alle ye compaignie.  
Was come and in a rancie.  
She seide pat she bape wolde.  
And bad pat euery mayde sholde.  
Wif here al naked bape also.  
And so began ye pryue wo.  
Calistona way red for shame.  
But per pat euellie not ye game.  
To whom no such ying was disalle.  
A noon per made hem naked alle.  
As per pat no ying wolden hide.  
But she wyddrolh here euere a side.  
And napeles in to ye flood.  
Where pat Diane hire selue stode.  
She pouht come vñ apareyued.  
But per of she was al deceryued.  
For whan she cam a lital myh.  
And pat Diane hire wombe seyh.  
She seide a wey polb foule beste.  
For yin a stute is nouht honeste.  
his chast water for to touche.  
For you hast take such a touche.  
Whiche neuere may beu hool a yen.  
And pus gop she Whiche was forlem.  
Wif shame & for ye rymphes flette.  
Til whanne pat nature here speelde.  
pat of a sone Whiche Archas.  
Was named she deliuered was.  
And so Iuno Whiche was ye wyf.  
Of Iubiter Wrope and hastyf.  
In purpos for to do veniuce.  
Cam forp vpon yille chance.  
And to Calistona she spak.  
And set vpon here mony a lak.  
And seide ha noll you art a rake.  
pat you yin werk myht not forsake.  
ha you vngoodly ypoarte.  
Holl you art gretly for to wite.  
But noll you shall ful fore ahye.  
pat ilke stelye and ynchere.  
Whiche polb hast bope take and do.  
Wherof yin fader Richas.

Shal not be glad whan he it wot.  
Of pat his doughter was so hot.  
pat she hay broke here chaste a boll.  
But ye shal chastise noll.  
ye grette beaute shal be turned.  
purgh Whiche pat you hast beunstorned.  
ye large frount yin eyen greye.  
I shal hem chaunge in oper weye.  
And al ye fecture of yin face.  
In such a wise I shal deface.  
pat euery man ye shal for bere.  
Wif pat ye lictnesse of a bere.  
She took and was for schape a noon.  
Wif gune a tyme and per vpon.  
Wyfel pat Wif a bolbe on hounde.  
To hunte and namen for to fonde.  
In to pat wode gop to pleye.  
here sone Archas. and in his weye.  
hit hapney pat yis bere cam.  
And whan pat she good hede nam.  
Where pat he stood vnder a bollh.  
She euellie hym wel and to hi drollh.  
For pouh she hadde here forine lore.  
ye loue was not lost per fore.  
Whiche kynd hay set vnder hys talbe.  
Whan she vnder ye wode schalbe.  
here chyl beheld she was so glad.  
pat she Wif bope hire armies sprad.  
As pouh she were in womanhede.  
Doward hym come and took noon hede.  
Of pat he bar a bolbe bent.  
And he Wif pat an arlle hap hent.  
And gan to teyse it in his bolbe.  
As he pat cam noon oper knolle.  
But pat it was a beste wilde.  
But Iubiter Whiche wold shilde.  
ye moder and ye sone also.  
Ordeyne for hem bope so.  
pat per for euere were saue.  
But pus my sone you myht haue.  
Example holl pat it is to fle.  
To robbe ye virginite.  
Of a yong innocent a weye.  
And ouer yis be oper weye.  
In olde bokes as I rede.  
Such robbere is for to drede.  
And nammeliche of yille god.  
Whiche euery woman pat is god.  
Desire for to kepe and holde.  
As whilom was be dayes olde.  
For if polb se my tale wel.  
Of pat was po you myht fonde.  
Of olde ensample taken hede.  
Holl pat ye flour of maidenhede.  
Was yille tyme holde in pryse.  
And so it was and so it is.  
And so it shal for euere stonde.



And for you schalt it vnderstonde.  
Holt herkeno and take next suende.  
Holt maydenhede is to comende.

*Et rosa de spinis spineto pualet  
orta. Et lili flores cepite plura  
valent. Et sibi Virginitas carnis  
prouisalia dicit. Steruos fetus que  
sine labe parit.*

*Alie loquitur de  
Virginitatis commendacione ubi dicit  
ad nuy impatores ob tanti status  
dignitate Virginitas sedebant in via.*

*¶* Fome amonit ye gesses olde.  
Hunde holt pat Valery tolde.  
pat Whilom was an Emperour.  
Of Fome he scholde don honour.

To ye Virgine and in ye weie.  
Where he here mette he sholde obeie.  
In Worship of Virginitate.  
Whiche po was of gret dignite.

trouht only of ye woman po.  
But of ye chast man also.  
It was comended ouer al.

And for to speke in special.  
*Alie loquitur qualiter phirun  
interim Fome pulcherimus in illo  
san sua conseruaret Virginitatem  
¶ Ambos oculos eruens vultus eius  
decorum abhominabile constituit.*

*¶* Goltchynge of men ensample I funde.  
Phirun which was of mannes funde.

A boue alle oper ye faireste.  
Of Fome and eke ye conleste.

pat was hys which him myhte.  
Lishte and haue of hym a sichte.

pus was he tempted ofte sore.  
But for he wolde be no more.

A molit ye women so couetes.  
ye beaute of his face scryetes.

he hay and prest out boye his yhen.  
pat alle women which hym siken.

tran after ward of hym ne woulte.  
And pus his maidenhede he bouhte.

So may I proue wel for pi.  
A boue alle oper vnder ye sky.

Who pat ye vertues wolde peise.  
Virginitate is for to preise.

Whiche as papocallipe recorder.  
To crist in heuene best acorder.

So may it schelwe wel perfore.  
As I haue told it heere to fore.

In heuene and eke in erpe also.  
It is accept to boye also.

*Alie loquitur qualiter Valenti  
ninus impator ad ipe octogena  
rius plures provincias romane  
Imperio belliger subiugasset dixit  
se sup oia magis gaudere de eo qd*

*contra sue carnis concupiscencia  
Gaetiam optinisset na ipe vir  
go omibz diebz vite sue castissim*

And if I shal more ouer ye.  
Declare what ye vertu is.

I funde wyte vpon ye yung.  
Of Valentinian ye kyng.

And Emperour by yllle dayes.  
A worpi kyght at alle assaies.

Holt he wyoute marriage.  
Was of an hundred wynter age.

And hadde ben a worpi kyght.  
Boye of his lalle and of his myht.

But Whanne men wolde hys dedes preise.  
And his kyghthode of armes preise.

Of pat he dede wyh hys honde.  
Whan he ye kynges and ye londes.

To his subiection put vnder.  
Of al ye pris hay he no wonder.

For he it sette at noon accompte.  
And seide al pat may not amoupte.

A yens opoynt which he hay nome.  
pat he hys fleshe hay ouercome.

he was a vyrgyne as he seide.  
Du pat bataile his pris he leyde.

So nolt my sone a lyse ye.  
A yader al ye wel may be.

But if all oper dede so.  
ye world of men were sone so.

And in ye lalle a man may funde.  
Holt god to man be weye of funde.

Hay set ye world to multyphe.  
And who pat wole hym iustifie.

It is nolt to do ye lalle.  
And napeles yollwe good salbe.

Is good to kepe who so may.  
I wole nolt yer a yem say nay.

A y sone take it as I seye.  
If maydenhede be take a weye.

Wy ouce lalles ordinaunce.  
It may not faulen of vengeaunce.

And if you wolt ye soye wyte.  
Schold a tale which is wyte.

Holt pat ye kyng Agamenon.  
Whan he ye citee of Lesbon.

Hay donne a mayden yer he fond.  
Which was ye fairest of ye lond.

In yllle tyme pat men wiste.  
He took of here what him liste.

Of ying which was most precious.  
Wher of pat she was dangerous.

ye faire mayden cleped is.  
Triseide so wher of criss.

Whiche was pat tyme in special.  
Of yllle temple pynopal.

Wher phobus hadde his sacrific.  
So was it wel ye mox vied.



Agamemnon was punne in theve.  
 To Troyeward and took a lyeve.  
 His mayden which he wyf him ladde.  
 So met a lust in here he hadde.  
 But polibue which hay met desern.  
 Off pat his mayden is forelorn.  
 A noon as he to Troye cam.  
 Benganuce vpon his dede he nam.  
 And sende a comoun pestilence.  
 Wei souhten pan here eydence.  
 And madden calculacion.  
 To knolde in what condicion.  
 His dey cam hem so sodenly.  
 And at ye laste redly.  
 Ye cause and eke ye man ye founde.  
 And for wyf al ye same folunde.  
 Agamemnon apposed was.  
 Which hay be knolwen al ye cas.  
 Of ye folke which he drouhte.  
 And y vpon meny per souhte.  
 Toward ye god in soudry wise.  
 Wyf prayer and wyf plesise.  
 Ye mayden hom a ven ye sende.  
 And yif here good myght to spende.  
 For euere whil she sholde lye.  
 And yus ye synne was foryeue.  
 And al ye pestilence cessed.  
 To what it is to ben duresed.  
 Of loue which is cruel wyne.  
 It were bette not begone.  
 Pan take a prync wyf oure leue.  
 Which ye most after nedes leue.  
 And ye haue maugre for wyf al.  
 For ye to robben ouer al.  
 In loues cause if you begynne.  
 I not what ese you shalt wyne.  
 My sone be polb war of ris.  
 I fader so I wole I wys.  
 But now youre ensamplyre.  
 In loues cause of folderie.  
 I haue it rith wel vnderfonde.  
 But ouer his holl so it stonde.  
 Wit wolde I wite of youre apprise.  
 What myght is more of couetise.  
*Insidiaudo latens tempus vinitur*  
*horam. fur quibz occulto tempore*  
*fuato parat. Sic amor insidij vacat*  
*ut sub regimine ludos. pordue fura*  
*cor nocte fauente queat. Quid tunc*  
*tua sup illa cupiditas spectat que se*  
*cretum latrociniū dicitur aut nra*  
*custodie rerum nesciente ea que ar*  
*pit tam p diem q nocte absq stre*  
*ritu clauulo furatur.*  
 Wyf couetise vit I fynde.  
 A seruant of ye same kynde.  
 Which stelye is hote and mycherie.

Wyf here is euere in compaignye.  
 Of whom I shal telle for.  
 He stallep as a pocol dox.  
 And takep his preie so couerte.  
 Pat no man dot it in apert.  
 For whan he dot ye lord at hom.  
 Pan wole he stalle aboute and wome.  
 And what prync he fyt in his wyf.  
 Whan pat he seep ye men allere.  
 He stely it and gop for wyf al.  
 Pat per of norman knolle shal.  
 And eke ful ofte he gop a nyhte.  
 Wyf oure moue or sterye lichte.  
 And wyf his craft ye dore synpke.  
 And takep per yme what hym lilep.  
 And if ye dore be so shet.  
 Pat he be off his chere let.  
 He wole in at ye wyndolde crepe.  
 And what ye lord is faste a slepe.  
 And stely what prync as hym lyst.  
 And gop his wyf er it be wist.  
 Ful ofte also by lyhte of day.  
 Wit wold he stelye and make assay.  
 Under ye cotte his hond he put.  
 Til he ye mannes purs haue hit.  
 And rifley pat he fyt per yme.  
 And yus he auctrey hym to wyne.  
 And berep an horn and nouhtre blouey.  
 For no man of his conseil knoldey.  
 Pat he may gete of his mychynge.  
 It is al bill vnder ye wyng.  
 And as an hound pat gop to folde.  
 And hay per taken what he wolde.  
 His mouy vpon ye gras he wyper.  
 And so wyf fernes chere him sliper.  
 Pat what as euere of sleep he traugle.  
 Per is no man per off shal iaugle.  
 As for to knolde who it dede.  
 Fith so dox stelye in euere stede.  
 Where as hym lyst his preye take.  
 He can so wel his cause make.  
 And so wel feigne and so wel glose.  
 Pat pere no schal no man suppose.  
 But pat he were an innocent.  
 And yus a mannes yhe he blent.  
 So pat his craft I may remene.  
 Wyf outen helpe of any mene.  
 There be louers of pat degre.  
 Which al here lust in priuete.  
 As who seip geten al by stelye.  
 And ofte atteyguen to gret welthe.  
 As for ye tyme pat it is day.  
 For loue albatrey euere and castey.  
 Hott he may stelye and cache his preie.  
 Whan he per to may fynde a weye.  
 For be it nyht or be it day.  
 He takep his part whan pat he may.



And if he may no more do.  
 Wit wole he stele a cusse or tivo.  
**W**it sone what seist you ver to.  
 El if you dedest euere so.  
 my fader holl; my sone rus.  
 Of you hast stolen any aiss.  
 Or oper ying pat ver to loungeth.  
 For noman such yeues hontey.  
 Tel on for pi and sei ye troupe.  
 My fader may mid pat is roupe.  
 For be my wil I am a peef.  
 But she pat is to me most leef.  
 Wit dorste I neuere in pryuet.  
 Nought ones take here by ye kue.  
 To stele of here or pis or pat.  
 And if I durste I wot wel what.  
 And unpeles but if I wo.  
 By stely ne be robberie.  
 Of loue which fel in my pouht.  
 To here dede I neuere nought.  
 But as men seyn where herte is failed.  
 ver shal no castel ben assailed.  
 But pouh I hadde herres ten.  
 And were as strong as alle men.  
 If I be nought myn olben man.  
 And dar not vsen pat I can.  
 I may my self nought recouere.  
 pouh I be neuere man so pouere.  
 I bere an herte and here it is.  
 So pat me fauley wit in pis.  
 holl pat I shulde of myn a cord.  
 ye seruant lede a yen ye lord.  
 For if my foot wolde alwhere go.  
 pat myn hondes wolde elles do.  
 Whan pat myn herte is yere a yen  
 ye remenant is al in ven.  
 And pus me lakkef all wele.  
 And vit ne dar I no ying stele.  
 Of ying which loungeth vn to loue.  
 And eke it is so heu a boue.  
 I may nought wel ver to areche.  
 But if so be at tyne of speche.  
 ful selde if pan I stele may.  
 A word or tivo and go my way.  
 Be tvene here hie a stat and me.  
 Comparison ver may non be.  
 So pat I fele and wel I wot.  
 Al is to heuy and to hot.  
 To sette on hond wyf oure loue.  
 And pus I mot algate leue.  
 To stele pat I may not take.  
 And in pis wyse I mot forsake.  
 To ben a peef a yen my wil  
 Of ying which I may not fupale.  
 For pat serpent which neue slepte.  
 ye flees of gold so wel ne kepte.  
 In colcos as ye tale is told.

pat my lady a thousand fold.  
 It is better yemed and by waked.  
 Where she be doped or be naked.  
 To kepe here body myht and day.  
 She hay a wardyn redy ay.  
 Which is so wonder ful a wylt.  
 pat hym ne may no mannes myht.  
 Wyf swerd ne wyf wepen dante.  
 ne wyf no sleht of charme enchante.  
 Wher of he myht be mad tame.  
 And daunger is his rht name.  
 Which vnder lock and vnder keye.  
 pat no man may it stele a weye.  
 Hay al ye tresour vnderfonge.  
 pat vn to loue may belonge.  
 ye lest lokyng of hie yhe.  
 may not be stole if he it syhe.  
 And who so gruchey for so lre.  
 He wolde sone sette a wylt.  
 On hym pat wolde stele more.  
 And pat me greuey wonder fore.  
 For his prouerbe is euere nelle.  
 pat stronge lokes maken trelle.  
 Of hem pat wolden stele a pibe.  
 For so wel can yere no man like.  
 By hym ne by noon oper mene.  
 To whom daunger wol yeue or leue.  
 Of pat tresour he hay to kepe.  
 So pouh I wolde stalke and crepe.  
 And waite on eue and eke on morlle.  
 Of daunger shal I no ying borlle.  
 And stele I wot wel may I nought.  
 And pus I am rht wel beyouht.  
 Whil daunger stant in his offie.  
 Of stelye which ye clepe a vial.  
 I shal be gultyf neuere mo.  
 ver fore I wolde he were a go.  
 So fer pat I neuere of hym herde.  
 holl so pat after ward it ferde.  
 For pan I myht vit parcas.  
 Of loue make som purchas.  
 By stelye or by som oper weye.  
 pat noll fto me stant fer a weye.  
 But fader as ye tolde a boue.  
 holl stelye troy anyht for loue.  
 I may nought wel pat poynt for sake.  
 pat ofte tymes I ne wake.  
 On nyhtes whan pat oper slepe.  
 But holl I preyre yold tekye kepe.  
 Whan I am lodged in such a wise.  
 pat I be nyhte may a rise.  
 At some wyndolle a loken oute.  
 And se ye housyng al aboute.  
 So pat I may the chambre knolle.  
 In which my lady as I trolle.  
 Hy in here bed and slepep soft.  
 pan is myn herte a yest ful ofte.



For per J. I. tounde to by holde.  
 ye longe myhtes pat ben colde.  
 And penk on here pat by yere.  
 And pan I wyshe pat I were.  
 Als wys as was rectanabus.  
 Or elles as was protheus.  
 pat coupen bope of rignomance.  
 In what liknes in what semblance.  
 Ryt as hem lye hem self transforme.  
 For if were of such a forme.  
 I seie pume I wolde fleo.  
 In to here chambre for to see.  
 If eny grace wolde falle.  
 So pat I myhte vnder ye palle.  
 Som ying of loue pite and stele.  
 And pus I penke pouhtes fele.  
 And pus I penke pouhtes fele.  
 pat eke as for a tyme it doy.  
 But at ye laste whan I fynde.  
 pat I am falle in to my mynde.  
 And se pat I haue scowde longe.  
 And haue no profit vnderfonge.  
 pan stalle I to my bedde wy June.  
 And his is al pat euere I wyne.  
 Of loue whan I walke on nyghte.  
 my wil is good but of my nyghte.  
 we lackey bope and of my grace.  
 For what so pat my pouht enbrace.  
 it haue I not ye better ferd.  
 my fader so now haue ye herd.  
 What I be stely of loue haue do.  
 And hold my will hay be per to.  
 If I be wryt to penmune.  
 I put it in your ordinance.  
 My soue of stely I ye behete.  
 pouht it be for a tyme stete.  
 At ende it doy but litel good.  
 As be ensample hold pat it stood.  
 Whilom I may ye telle now.  
 I pray wyl fader sey me how.  
 My soue of hym whiche goy by daye.  
 My weye of stely to assaye.  
 In loues cause and tak his preio.  
 Quide seide seide as I shal seye.  
 And in his methamoz he tolde.  
 tale whiche is good to holde.  
 In his in amoris causa sup isto la  
 uocano qd die contigit puit exem  
 plum. Et narrat qd cu leuchotoc  
 Ercham filia in carneris albarca  
 matris custodia virgo preseruati  
 tur. phebuis eius pulcritudine con  
 cupiscens in conclaue domi claua  
 lute subintrans virgis pudicia  
 mite deflorauit. Vnde ipa impreg  
 nata erat pater filia sua ad sepe  
 licendam vna effodit ex amitu

Ant.

So florem solsequim locant dicunt  
 amno consequenter punit accreuisse.  
**T**he poete vpon his matere.  
 Of stely wroot in his manere.  
 Venus whiche hay hure lalle in hounde.  
 Of ying whiche may nouht be wyf tounde.  
 As she whiche ye tresor to woude.  
 Of loue hay wy June hure woude.  
 Phebuis to loue hay so conscreyned.  
 pat he wy oute reft is peyned.  
 With al his heere to couerte  
 A mayde whiche was warded steyte.  
 Wy June chambre and kept so clos.  
 pat selden was whan she desclos.  
 Goy wy here moder for to pleye.  
 leuchotoc. so as men seye.  
 his mayden hite 2 Erchamus.  
 hure fader was. and byfel pus.  
 his douhter pat was kept so dere.  
 And hadde be fiv yer to yere.  
 vnder hure moder disciplyne.  
 A clene mayde and a virgine.  
 vpon ye whos natuete.  
 Of comlyhede and of beaute.  
 Nature hay set al pat she may.  
 pat lich vn to ye freshe may.  
 whiche oper mounes of ye yer.  
 sumoultet. so wy oute yer.  
 Was of his mayden ye feture.  
 wher off phebuis out of mesure.  
 here louep and on euery side.  
 A wayte if so may be tye.  
 pat he purh eny fleithe nyghte.  
 hure lusty maddenhes vnrithte.  
 ye whiche were al his wordes welpe.  
 And pus lurtynng vpon his stely.  
 In his a wayt so long he lay.  
 Til it befel vpon a day.  
 pat he purghout hure chambre wal.  
 Cam in al sodeynliche and scal.  
 pat ying pat was to hym so lief.  
 hure who pouhte he was a peef.  
 For Venus whiche was enemye.  
 Of pulke loues ancherie.  
 Discouery al ye pleyne cas.  
 hold it befell and hold it was.  
 Followd phebuis his conalyne.  
 And she to lette ye abyne.  
 Of pulke loue dedly drye.  
 To pleyne vpon his mayden moy.  
 And told his fader how it stood.  
 wher off for sorbe wel nyh woud.  
 Into here moder pus he seide.  
 To what it is to kepe a mayde.  
 To phebuis dar I no ying speke.  
 But vpon here I shal be wreke.  
 So pat pese maydens after pis.



molle rate cunsauple what it is.  
To suffre here maydenhode be stole.  
Wherof pat she pe dep shal pole.  
And bad Wy pat go make a pet.  
Wher inne he hay his doulster set.  
As he pat wole no pite haue.  
So pat she was al quib by graue.  
And deide a non in his pence.  
But phebue for pe reuerence.  
Of pat she hadde be his loue.  
Hay woulst purh his polver alone.  
pat she sprong by out of ye molde.  
In to a flour was named golde.  
Whiche stant gouerned of ye soune.  
And yus whan loue is yuel donne.  
ful ofte it comy to repentaile.  
By fader pat is no meruaile.  
Whan pat ye conseil is beluyed.  
But ofte tyme loue hay pleyed.  
And stole many a pryncesse.  
Whiche neuo yit cum in to blame.  
Whan pat ye pynge ween hydde.  
But in yowre tale as it beiddo.  
Remus discovered al ye cas.  
And eke also brod day it was.  
Whan phebue such a stelye wrouhte.  
Wher of ye mayde in blame he brouhte.  
pat after ward she was so loze.  
But for ye seiden uold tofore.  
holy stelye of loue goy by myhte.  
And doy hys pynge out of syhte.  
perofule luse also to here.  
A tale lich to ye matere.  
Wher of I myht cunsauple take.  
By gode soue and for yowre sake.  
So as it fel by dayes olde.  
And so as ye parte it tolde.  
Ypon ye myhtes mucherie.  
I toly herbeue a tale of poeie.  
**Proponit exemplum sup eodem**  
**antod de nocte continit. Et narrat**  
**qualite hercules ad cole in quada**  
**pelunca nobili thophs ditiu st**  
**monte thynolo ubi filia bach**  
**est hospicio puocauit. Et cum**  
**in darys lectis separim incedes**  
**damierunt contigit lectu hercu**  
**lis desinent. Cole lectu pelle leo**  
**nis qua hercules induebatur ope**  
**vari sup quo ffordus a filia des**  
**cendens speluncam subintravit**  
**reptans si forte al cole sue conai**  
**piscenae voluptate nesciente her**  
**cule finiri posset. Et ad ad lectu**  
**herculis mulier palpatu vestro**  
**ex casu puenisset putans coleu**  
**fuisse cubitulum nudu corpore in**

greditur quem a senectus hercules  
manibz apprehensum. ipm ad sta  
ita fortiter allisit. ut ipocens sul  
corporis effectus usqz mane ibi  
requieuit. Vbi saba cu triumphis  
feliciter supueniens ipm sic  
desum deiecit.

**G**he mightiest of alle men.  
Whan hercules wy colen.  
Whiche was ye loue of his corage.  
To gedre vpon a pelynage.  
Tollarde some holden go.  
ye fel hem by ye weye so.  
pat yei vpon a day a caue.  
wy yme a roche founde haue.  
Whiche was rial ind glorious.  
And of entaile curious.  
By name and thophas it was hote.  
ye some shon po wonder hote.  
As it was in somertide.  
his hercules which bi his hdy.  
hay colen his loue pere.  
Whan yei at pille came were.  
he seide it poult hym for ye beste.  
pat she hys for ye hete reste.  
Al pille day and pille nyht.  
And she pat was a lusey wyht.  
Nyt liker here al pat he seide.  
And yus yei dwelt pere 2 plade.  
ye long day and so byfett.  
his came was vnder ye hytt.  
Of tymolus which was by grolle.  
wy bynes at pat ilke pille.  
habitus wy saba ye goddess.  
**S**y whom ye lauge wilderness.  
In pille tyme stood gouerned.  
Wher in a place as I am leued.  
nyht by which zachus wode luse.  
his ffadus took a gret myhte.  
Of colen pat was nyht.  
for whan pat he here beaute sh.  
Out of his wit he was assoted.  
And in his hert it hay so noted.  
pat he forsoke ye triumphes alle.  
And seide he wolde holt so it fulle.  
Assale an oyer for to wynde.  
So pat his hert poultce wynde.  
he set and caste holt pat he myhte.  
Of loue pyle awei be nyhte.  
pat he by day in oyer wyse.  
To seke myhte not suffice.  
And yer vpon his tyme alwayte.  
pat olt take gode hede holt loue affayte.  
hym which wy al is ouer come.  
ffure colen whan she was come.  
wy hercules in to ye caue.  
She seide pat she wolde haue.



His clothes of and hires bope.  
 And eche of hem shold opey clope.  
 And al was so rite as she bad.  
 He hay here in his clothes clad.  
 And cast on hire his golow.  
 Which of ye syn of a leon.  
 Was made as he vpon ye weie.  
 It slowh and ouer his to pleie.  
 She took his grete mace also.  
 And knet it at here girdel po.  
 So was she lyk to man arrayed.  
 And hercules pan hay assayed.  
 To clopen hym in here araye.  
 And yus pei iuxte forp ye day.  
 Til put here soper vnder weie.  
 And whanne pei hadden souped ye.  
 pei shope hem to go to reste.  
 And as it pouhte hem for ye beste.  
 pei bede as for yulle nyht.  
 To sondri beddes to be dyt.  
 For pei to nedres ligge nolde.  
 By cause put pei offe wolde.  
 vpon ye moelle ye sacrifice.  
 ye seruantz deden hire office.  
 And sondri beddes made a noon.  
 Where in put pei to reste gon.  
 Eche by hym self in sondry place.  
 ffair Gole hay set here mace.  
 By side hire beddes hede a bone.  
 And wy ye clothes of here loue.  
 She helde at hire bed a bonte.  
 And he which hadde of no yung doute.  
 Hire wympul wond aboute his cheke.  
 Hire kirtel and here mantel eke.  
 A brood vpon his bed he spredde.  
 And yus pei slepen bope a bedde.  
 And what of trauail what of wy.  
 ye seruantz lich to dronke syn.  
 Be hymne for to wolte fust.  
 His fabynus which his scelpy caste.  
 Was pan come to ye caue.  
 And found pei weren alle saue.  
 Wy blite noyse and in he deure.  
 ye derf nyht his silt blente.  
 And yit it happye hym to goo.  
 Where colen a bedde po.  
 Was lere al one for to slepe.  
 But for he wolde take kepe.  
 Whos bed it was he made assay.  
 And of ye leow where it lay.  
 ye cote he found and eke he felpe.  
 ye mace and pan his herte kellep.  
 pat pere for se he not a bide.  
 But stallep vpon eneyr side.  
 And souped aboute wy his hond.  
 at opey bed til put he found.  
 Where lay by wymples a visage.

po was he glad in his corage.  
 for he here kirtel found also.  
 And eke here mantel bope also.  
 He spred vpon here bed a lyste.  
 he made hym naked pan a softe.  
 vnto ye bed vnder he axpte.  
 Where hercules pat gyme slepte.  
 And wende wel it were she.  
 And yus in stede of Gole.  
 And nou he plospep hym to loue.  
 But he which felt a man a boue.  
 his hercules hym yweld to grounde.  
 So sore pat pei haue hym founde.  
 Liggynge vnto vpon ye moelle.  
 And po was nouht a liel forthe.  
 pat ffabynus of hym self made.  
 But elles pei were alle made.  
 A lollhen hym to skorne aboute.  
 Saba wy vnymples at a rolle.  
 Cam down to lode hold pat he forde.  
 And whan pat pei ye sope herde.  
 he was bymped ouer al.  
 Wy sone be you war wy al.  
 To seche suche ancheres.  
 But if you haue ye better appies.  
 In amter if ye so bette.  
 As ffabynus dede yulle tye.  
 Where of yoll myht be shamed so.  
 In holy fader certes no.  
 But if i hadde rite good leue.  
 Suche mucherie i penke leue.  
 any feint here wol not serue.  
 For malgre wolde i nouht deserue.  
 In yulle place where i loue.  
 But for ye tolden here aboue.  
 Of couetise and his pillage.  
 If pere be more of pat lignage.  
 Which touchet to my shafte i pye.  
 pat ye per of me wolde sei.  
 So pat i may ye vice eschuye.  
 Wy sone if i be ordy sup.  
 ye vices as pei founde on rolle.  
 Of couetise pou schat knolle.  
 per is yit on which is ye laste.  
 In whom per may no vertu laste.  
 For he wy god hym self debattep.  
 Where of pat ye heuene hym hatep.  
 Sacile quis tantu furto loca  
 sacra pphaniat. De sibi sit am  
 sic domus alma dei. r. de locis est  
 in quo non temptat amans qd a  
 matu. Et que posse nequit car  
 pe velle capta. hic tunc  
 sup vltima cupiditas sic que la  
 tellegit dicta est au furtu ea que  
 altissimo significatur bona de pda.  
 ecclesie an spolijs infidat.



**G**he hihe god which all gode.  
 Suruived hay for mannes foode.  
 Of clopes and of more and drynke.  
 Had Adam pat he sholde drynke.  
 Te meten hym his sustenunnece.  
 And eke he set an ordennance.  
 Upon pe lalve of moyses.  
 pat pouh a man be haueles.  
 pat schal he nouht by pestre seles.  
 But noll a dayes per bon felle.  
 pat wol no labour vnder take.  
 But what pei may be stelpo take  
 pei holde it siberliche wonne.  
 And pus pe lalve is ouer ronne.  
 Whiche god hay set and nannely.  
 Wry hem pat so vntrelly.  
 pe goodes robbe of holicherche.  
 pe pest whiche pei pan wiche.  
 By name is cloped sacrilege.  
 A ven pe Whom i peuke alegye.  
 Of his condiaon to telle.  
 Whiche ribley bope boof and belle.  
 So fory Wry al pe remeunant.  
 To goddes hous apurtenant.  
 Where pat he sholde bidde his bedes.  
 he dop his pestre in holy seides.  
 And taky what ping he fynt y inne.  
 for Whan he seep pat he may Wryme.  
 he woudey for no awpduesse.  
 pat he ne brekep pe holynesse.  
 And dop to god no reuerence.  
 for he hay lost his consaenae.  
 pat pouh pe prest perfore awse.  
 he seip he faley nouht pe worse.  
 ad for to speke it oper wise.  
 What man pat lassey pe schuchsey.  
 And taky of holycherche his preie.  
 I not what bedes he shal preye.  
 Whan he for god which hay yeue al.  
 pe purpurie in speal.  
 Which du to crist hym self is due.  
 By myny. he may not wel eschue.  
 pe peyne comyng after ward.  
 for he hay mad his foreward.  
 Wry sacrilege for to dwelle.  
 Whiche hay his heritage in helle.  
 And if we rede of polde lalve.  
 I fynde Wryte in pulke dallye.  
 Of prynces pere were pre.  
 Coupyable alle in pis degre.  
 pat oon of hem was cleped pus.  
 pe proude kyng Antiochus.  
 pat oper riazardan hylte.  
 Whiche of his cruelte by hylte.  
 pe temple for to destruye i waste.  
 And so he dede in al haste.  
 pe prebde which was after schamed.

Was i zabugodono or named.  
 And he ierusalem put vnder.  
 Of sacrilege and many allwonder.  
 pere in pe holy temple wrouste.  
 Whiche Baltasar his hew abouste.  
 Whan mane. techel. phares Wryte.  
 Was on pe wal as pou myht Wryte.  
 So as pe bible hay declared.  
 But for al pat it is nouht spared.  
 pat noll a day pat men ne pyle.  
 And maken argument and stile.  
 To sacrilege as it belougey.  
 for what man pat per after lougey.  
 he taky non hede what he dop.  
 And rilt so for to telle soy.  
 In loues cause if i shal tere.  
 pere ben of suchte sinale and grete.  
 Of pei no zehir friden elles.  
 pei wol not woudey for pe belles.  
 Ne po ih pei sen pe prest at masse.  
 pat wol pei letten ouer passe.  
 If pat pei fynde here loue pere.  
 pei stonde hnd tellen in here ere.  
 And axe of god noon oper graue.  
 Whil pei ben in pat holy place.  
 But er pei no sou auantage.  
 per shal perhaue and som pilage.  
 Of goodly word or of byhestre.  
 or elles pei take at pe seeste.  
 Out of here hond or rymyng or ylobe.  
 So myh pe weder pei wole loue.  
 As who seip she shal not foryete.  
 i roll i pis tokene of here haue gete.  
 pus halde pei pe hille feste.  
 Such myte may no cherche areste.  
 for al is lesal pat hem liker.  
 To Whom pat elles it mysliker.  
 And eke rilt in pe selue kynde.  
 In grete cutes men may fynde.  
 pis lufy folk pat makey it hay.  
 And waite vpon pe halysday.  
 In churches and in dyspenses eke.  
 per gon pe women for to seke.  
 And where pat suchon gon a bonte.  
 To fore pe flurest of pe wibte.  
 Where as pei fyten al areste.  
 pere wole he most his body shelde.  
 his croket kembd and per on set.  
 Anouche Wry a chapellet.  
 or elles on of grene leues.  
 Whiche late come out of pe greues.  
 And al for he sholde seme fressh.  
 And pus he loky on pe flessh.  
 lich as an hawk which hay a syt.  
 Wpon pe fowle pere he shal lyt.  
 And as he were of fayeryd.  
 he shalvey hym to fore here yho.



In holy place where yett sitte.  
 Al for to make here hertes flitte.  
 his yhe nallwhere wole abyde.  
 But loke and pryve on every syde.  
 On here and here as hym best liky.  
 And ower while among hem sike.  
 penkei come of hem pat was for me.  
 And so pere penken tibo or pre.  
 And yet he loney noon of alle.  
 But where as euere his chauce falle.  
 And napeles to seve a soy.  
 ye cause whi pat he so doy.  
 Is for to stele in herte or tibo.  
 Out of ye cherche er pat he go.  
 And as I seide it here aboue.  
 Al is pat sacrilege of loue.  
 For wel may be he seely alway.  
 pat he neuere after yelde may.  
 Tel me for pi my sone a noon.  
 hascoll do sacrilege or noon.  
 As I haue seid in pis manere.  
 My fader as of pis matere.  
 I wole yow telle redily.  
 What I haue do but trelvely.  
 I may excuse myn entent.  
 pat neuere yett I to churche went.  
 In such manere as ye me schruue.  
 For no woman pat is on lye.  
 ye cause whi I haue it last.  
 may be for I vn to pat craft.  
 Am no ying able so to stele.  
 yowh pere be women neer so fele.  
 But yett wole I not seve pis.  
 Whan I am pere my lady is.  
 In whom lye holy my querele.  
 And she to churche or to chapel.  
 Wol go to matins or to messe.  
 pat tyme I wayte wel I gesse.  
 To churche I come and pere I stonde.  
 And yowh I take a book on hond.  
 my contenaunce is on ye book.  
 But toward hie is as my look.  
 And if so falle pat I pere.  
 In to my god. and somwhat seye.  
 Of pater nre or of crede.  
 Al is for pat I wold speke.  
 So pat my bede in holy cherche.  
 per mythe som miracle werche.  
 my lady herte for to chaunge.  
 Which euere to me hay be faruure.  
 So pat al my deuocion.  
 And al my concuplacion.  
 Wyl al myn herte and my corage.  
 Is only set on hie ymage.  
 And euere I wayte vpon ye tyde.  
 If she loke only ying a syde.  
 pat I me may ou here adyse.

A noon I am lye conetise.  
 So finte pat me were leest.  
 To ben in holichurche a peest.  
 But not to stele a bestement.  
 For pat is no ying my talent.  
 But I wold seke if pat I mythe.  
 A glad word or a goodly sight.  
 And euere my seruice I proffo.  
 And namely whan she wole gon offro.  
 For panne I lede here if I may.  
 For somwhat wold I stele away.  
 Whan I be churche here on ye wast.  
 yett at ye leeste I stele a tast.  
 And ower while want mercy.  
 She seip and so wyne I perby.  
 A lusty touche a good word eke.  
 But al ye remenant to seke.  
 Is fro my purpos wonder fere.  
 So may I sey as I seide eor.  
 In holy churche if pat I wold.  
 my conscience it wold a loll.  
 Be so pat by amendement.  
 I mythe rece assignement.  
 Where for to speke in ower place.  
 Such sacrilege I holde a grace.  
 And pus my fader soy to seve.  
 In churche rist as in ye were.  
 If I mythe ouht of loue take.  
 Such hamfel haue I nouht forsake.  
 But fynaly I me confesse.  
 per is in me noon holynesse.  
 Whil I here see in myn seide.  
 And yett for ouht pat euere I dede.  
 To sacrilege off here I took.  
 But as it were of word and look.  
 Or elles if pat I here fiede.  
 Whan I toward offering here ledde.  
 Take perof what I take my.  
 For elles here I nouht alway.  
 For yowh I wold ouht elles haue.  
 Alle ower priues ben so faue.  
 And kept wyl such a pryuelage.  
 pat I may do no sacrilege.  
 God wot my wille napeles.  
 yowh I mot uede kepe pees.  
 And maugre myn sone let it passe.  
 in wille per to is nouht pelasse.  
 If I mythe ower while a weye.  
 For pi my fader I yowh preye.  
 Telle what yow penken per vpon.  
 If I per of haue miste or noon.  
 Chy wyl my sone is for to blame.  
 ye remenant is but a game.  
 pat I haue herd ye telle as yett.  
 But take pis lore in to pi wit.  
 pat all ying hay tyme and stede.  
 ye churche seruay for ye bede.



pe chambre is of an ower speche.  
 But if you wifest of pe wreche.  
 howsh sacrilege it hap about.  
 howsh woldest better ben byought.  
 And for you shalt pe more amende.  
 A tale on pe i wol depende.  
*Of the in amons causa sup istius*  
*diu arcto pout exempli. Et nar*  
*nat pro eo qd Paris priami Reg*  
*filius helena menellai vxore in qua*  
*da Grece insula a tēplo Venus sac*  
*legus abduxit illa Troie famosiss*  
*ima obsidio p vniuersum orbis di*  
*matu diluigata papue causabat.*  
 Ita qd hūmānū sacrilegiū nō sō  
 ad ipius tētis priami om qz  
 fuoz interitū. s; ad ppetuā vrbis de  
 solacionem vndice pūitē nūscabat.  
**G**alle men as who seip knowe.  
 It is. and in pe world nūghbly.  
 how pat of Troie Lamedon.  
 To hercules and to Jason.  
 When tollard colas out of grece.  
 By see saylūg vpon a pece.  
 Of loud of Troie vnto priede.  
 But he hem vnto priede.  
 And for pei founde him so vileyn.  
 When pei come in to grece a yern.  
 Wip polber pat pei gete myhte.  
 Tollardes troie pei hem diste.  
 And pei pei token such vengyaunce.  
 When of stant yit in remembraunce.  
 For pei destroyed kyng and all.  
 And lest en but pe brent wal.  
 pe Grekes of Troies many folde.  
 And prisoners pei toke y now.  
 A mony pe whiche pei was con.  
 pe kynges daughter Lamedon.  
 Espousa pe faire ying.  
 Whiche vnto Thelamon pe kyng.  
 By hercules and by passent.  
 Of al pe hole parlement.  
 Was at his wil yene and graunted.  
 And pus hap Grece Troie daunted.  
 And hom pei tome in such manere.  
 But after vis uold shallow here.  
 pe cause whi pe tale i telle.  
 Upon pe chaunces pat befelle.  
 Kyng Lamedon whiche deiede pus.  
 He had a sone on Pryamus.  
 Whiche was nought pūke tyme at home.  
 And when he herde of vis he come.  
 And found how pe eite was falle.  
 Whiche he began a noon to walle.  
 And made pere a cite nelle.  
 pat pei whiche ower londes kuelbe.  
 po seiden pat of hym and ston.

I al pe world so fair was noon.  
 And on pato syde of pe tollu.  
 pe kyng let make yllow.  
 pat hie tour pat serouge place.  
 Whiche was a drad of no manace.  
 Of quarel nor of non enygn.  
 And yowh men wolde make a myn.  
 To mannes craft it myhte a pche.  
 For it was set vpon a roche.  
 pe Walles of pe tollu aboute.  
 hem stood of al pe world no dout.  
 And after pe propordoun.  
 Sex gates weren of pe tollu.  
 Of such a forme of such encaille.  
 pat hem to seles dret meruaille.  
 pe diche weren brode and depe.  
 A felde men it myhte kepe.  
 From al pe world as seip pe.  
 But if pe goddes were so.  
 Grettres vnto pat cite droll.  
 So pat pere was of peple y nob.  
 Of burges pat per hie dwel.  
 pere may no manes tinge tellen.  
 how pat cite was riche and good.  
 When al was maid and al wel stood.  
 Kyng Pryamus po hym by wold.  
 What pei of Grece whilom wold.  
 And what was of here sherd deuour.  
 And how his soster deshonoured.  
 Wip Thelamon a way was lad.  
 And he yentūg he was vnglad.  
 And set a noon a parlement.  
 To whiche pe lordes were assent.  
 In many a wyse pei was spoke.  
 how pat pei myhten been allwote.  
 But at pe laste napeles.  
 pei seide all acord and pes.  
 To setten cyper part in teste.  
 It yowhte hem panne for pe beste.  
 Wip resonable amende.  
 And pus was Antenor forp sent.  
 To axe Espousa a yem.  
 And witen what pei wolden sein.  
 So passy he pe see by barge.  
 To grece for to seie his charge.  
 pe whiche he seide redily.  
 On to pe lordes by and by.  
 But where he spak in Grece about.  
 he herde nouht but wordes stoute.  
 And namely of Thelamon.  
 pe mayden wolde he nouht forgon.  
 he seide for no maner ying.  
 And bad hym gon hom to his kyng.  
 for pere gite he noon amende.  
 For ouht he coupe do or sende.  
*Of his Antenor a yem wip hom.*  
 On to his kyng and when he com.



*Ant?*  
He tolde in grece of pat he herde.  
And holl pat Thelamon answerde.  
And holl pei were at here aboue.  
pat pei wole noll yer pees ne loue.  
But eueri man shal don his beste.  
But for men sein pat nyht hap reste.  
pe hunt bypouht hym al pat nyht.  
And evely whan pe day was byzht.  
he took conseil of pis matere.  
And pei accorde in pis manere.  
pat he wyf outen eny let.  
A certeyn tyme sholde set.  
Of parlement to ben auised.  
And in pe wise it was diuised.  
Of parlement he set a day.  
And pat was in pe mony of may.  
pis Priamus hadde in his ythe.  
A wyf and hecuba she highte.  
He whom þe tyme eke hadde he.  
Of ioues fide and dohtres pre.  
Byside also and pritti mo.  
And weren knyghtes alle po.  
But not byon his wyf begere.  
And elles where he nyghte hem gete.  
Of wyminen which he had knowe.  
Such was pe world at pilke proude.  
So pat he was of children riche.  
As yer of was no man hymliche.  
Of parlement pe day was come.  
pe ben pe lordes alle and some.  
pe was promyned and purposed.  
And al pe cause hem was desposed.  
holl Antenor in grece ferde.  
pei sitten alle stille and herde.  
And po spak eueri man a bout.  
pere was alegged many a doute.  
And a proud word spake also.  
But for pe most part as po.  
pei wyten not what was pe beste.  
Or for to were or for to reste.  
But he pat was wyf oute ferde.  
Etor among pe lordes pere.  
his tale told in such a wise.  
And seide lordes pe ben wise.  
pe knowen pis als wel as i.  
A boue alle ower most worpi.  
Stant noll in grece pe nymhod.  
Of worpynesse and of knyghode.  
for who so wole it wel agrope.  
To hem belonge al euope.  
Whiche is pe prydde party euene.  
Of al pe world vnder pe heuene.  
And we be but of folk a fello.  
So were it reson for to eschelle.  
pe perel or we fulle yer iune.  
Betre is to leu pan to bynyme.  
pryng whiche as may not ben adueed.

He is not wys pat firt hym greued.  
And soy so pat his gress be more.  
for who pat lokep al to fore.  
And wol not se what is behynse.  
he may ful ofte his harmes fynde.  
Wike is to styue and haue pe worse.  
We haue encheson for to corse.  
pis wote i wel and for to hate.  
pe grekes. but er pat we debate.  
Wyp hem pat ben of such a nyht.  
It is riht good pat eueri wyht.  
Be of hym self riht wel be pouht.  
But as for me pis seie i nouht.  
for whil pat my wyf wole stonde.  
if pat ye taken were on hounde.  
shal it to beste falle it to werste.  
shal my sellen be pe ferste.  
To greuen hem what euere i may.  
i wol not ones seie nay.  
To pring which pat youre conseil dancet.  
for vnto me wol more it queneet.  
The were certes pan ye pot.  
But pis i seie napeles.  
As me belonge for to seie.  
Noll schape ye pe beste were.  
Whan Etor hap seid his adye.  
Next after hym po spak parys.  
Whiche was his broper and alyde.  
Whit hym best pouht and pus he seide.  
Strong pring it is to suffre wrong.  
And suffre shame is more souny.  
But we haue suffred bope also.  
And for al pat ye haue we do.  
What so we nyhte to reforme.  
pis wrong and shame in better forme.  
Seute Antenor as ye wel knowe.  
And pei here were heres blou.  
Upon here wrongful dedes eke.  
And who pat wole han self not meke.  
To pees and list no reson take.  
men sein reson wil hym for sake.  
for in pe multitude of men.  
is not pe strengye. for wy ten.  
it hay be seen in trelle querele.  
A yen an hundred false dele.  
And had ye better of goddes grace.  
pis hay byfulle in many place.  
And if it like vnto yow alle.  
i wol assaye holl so it falle.  
oure enemyes if i may greue.  
for i haue causit a gret byleue.  
Upon a poynt i wole declare.  
This endir day as i gan fare.  
To hunt vnto pe grette hert.  
Whiche was to fore myn houndes fere.  
And eueri man went on his side.  
Hym to pursuye and i to ride.



**B**egan ye chas and sor to seye.  
Wip yme a while out of myn weye.  
I wold and wiste where I was.  
And slepe me caught and on ye was.  
By side a welles I lunde me down.  
To slepe and in myn hou.  
To me ye god averture cam.  
Goddesses ye wip hym he nam.  
mynerue Venus. and Juno.  
And in his hond and appel po.  
The heels of gold wip letters write.  
And pis he dede me to wite.  
holl pat pei put hem vpon me.  
pat I to ye fauest of hem pre.  
Of gold pat appel sholde I reue.  
Wip eche of hem po was I shreue.  
And echon faire me behilte.  
But Venus saide if pat she mythe.  
pat I apel of myn iuste herte.  
She wolde it neuer more for yere.  
And seide holl pat in Grece lond.  
She wolde bynne vnto myn hond.  
Of al pis erpe ye faueste.  
So pat me pouhte is for ye beste.  
To here and pat pat appel po.  
pus hope I wel if pat I go.  
pat she for me wol so ordeyne.  
pat pei matere for to pleigne.  
Shul haue er pat I come a yem.  
I wold haue ye herd what I wole seyn.  
Sei ye what stant in your mys.  
And euery man so seide his.  
And sondry causes pei recorde.  
But at ye laste pei acorde.  
pat Parys shal to grece wende.  
And pus ye Parlement toke ende.  
Causandre whan she herde of pis.  
ye whiche to Parys foster is.  
A noon she gan to wepe and weyle.  
And seide alas what may be cyle.  
fortune wip hure blinde whiel.  
ye wol not lere be seonde wel.  
for pis I dar wel vnder take.  
pat if Parys his weye take.  
As it is seid pat he shal do.  
We be for euere pan vnto do.  
ye whiche causandre pan highte.  
In al ye world as it bery sighte.  
In booke as men fynde write.  
Is pat Sibile of whom ye wete.  
pat alle men hit depen sage.  
Whan pat she wist of pis passage.  
Whan pat she wist of pis dange.  
holl Parys shal to Grece fare.  
No woman mythe worse fare.  
ye forold more pan she dede.  
And riht so in ye same stede.

**F**erd helenus which was hure broper.  
Of prophecie and such an oper.  
And al was holde but a rape.  
So pat purpys which was shape.  
Or were hem leef or were hem zoy.  
Was holde and in to Grece he goy.  
pis Parys wip his retenance.  
And as it fel vpon his chaunce.  
Of Grece he lounde in an fle.  
And hym was tolde ye same while.  
Of folk which he began to feryne.  
yo was in yule queene helene.  
And eke of Loures were aboute.  
Of ladies many a lusty wote.  
Wip michel worpi peple also.  
And whi pei comon peder so.  
ye cause stood in such a wise.  
for worship and for sacrifice.  
pat pei to Venus wolden make.  
As pei to fore hadde vnder take.  
Some of good wiff some of biheste.  
for pan was here in the feste.  
Wip yme a temple whiche was per.  
Whan Parys wiste what pei were.  
A noon he shap his ordenaunce.  
To goon and don his obeysance.  
To Venus on hure holy day.  
And dede vpon his beste way.  
Wip gret riches he hym behouger.  
As it to such a lord bilonger.  
he was not armed nayeles.  
But as it were in lond of pes.  
And pus he goy fory out of schyre.  
And took wip hym his felashyre.  
In such manere as I wold seie.  
In to ye temple he held his weye.  
Giding which goy ouer al.  
To grece and finale fory wip al.  
Come to ye allenes deie and tolde.  
holl Parys come and pat he wolde.  
To sacrifice to Venus.  
And whan she dede telle pus.  
She pouhte holl pat euere he be.  
pat she wole hym abide and so.  
Fory comy Parys wip glad visage.  
In to ye temple on pelmange.  
Where vnto Venus ye goddesse.  
he yiff and offrey gret richesse.  
And preyey yere pat he preie wolle.  
And pan on side he gan byholde.  
And shi whi pat pis lady stode.  
And he fory in his freshe mood.  
Gooy yere she was and made hure chow.  
As he wel couye in his manere.  
pat of his wordes such plessaunce.  
She took pat all here aquiescaunce.  
As for fory as ye herte lere.



**H**estal er pat he went a weye.  
So hoy he fory and took his leue.  
And pouht anon as it was eue.  
He wolde don his sacrilege.  
pat many amon it scholde alegre.  
Whan he to ship a pen was come.  
To hym he had his conseil nome.  
And al deuised pe matere.  
In such a wise as pol schalt here.  
Wip time wip al pzeuile.  
his men he warnes by and by.  
pat pei be redy armed sone.  
for certeyn ping which was to done.  
And pei anon be redy alle.  
And eche on ower gan to cille.  
And went hem oute vpon pe stonde.  
And took a purpos pere a londe.  
Of what ping pei woldeu do.  
Toward pe temple and fory pei go.  
So fel it of deuotioun.  
heleue in contemplacioun.  
Wip many in ower Worzship.  
Was in pe temple and took al nyght.  
To bidde and pzeie to ymunge.  
Of Venus as was pan vsage.  
So pat Paris rih as him lise.  
In to pe temple er pei wiste.  
Come Wip his men al so depuly.  
And al at ones sette a seruy.  
In hem which in pe temple were.  
for po was mochel peple pere.  
But of defence was no botte.  
So suffien pei pat suffie mote.  
Paris vñ to pe gdwene wente.  
And here in love his armes hente.  
Wip him and Wip his felashipe.  
And fory pei bete hire in to shipe.  
Ep goy pe seil and fory pei wente.  
And such a wynd fortune hem sente.  
Til pei pe haueu of Troye cauhite.  
Where out of ship anon pei strouhte.  
And gon hem fory toward pe tollu.  
pe which cam wip processiou.  
And yeu Paris to seen his preye.  
And euery man began to seye.  
To Paris and his felashipe.  
Al pat pei coupeti of Werzshipe.  
Was noon so litel man in Troie.  
pat he ne made merve and joye.  
Of pat Paris hap Monne helme.  
But al pat nyght is sorwe and peme.  
To Helenus and to Cassandre.  
for pei it toke shame and sklandre.  
And lost of al pe comyn grace.  
pat Paris out of holy place.  
By stelpo hap take a mannes wyf.  
Wher of pat he shal lese his lyf.

**A**nd many a wozy man per to.  
And al pe tite befor do.  
Which neure shal be mad a pen.  
And so it felt rih as pei seyn.  
pe sacrilege which he wrouhte.  
Was cause whi pe greuous souhte.  
vñ to pe tollu and it bileie.  
And woldeu neure pure a weye.  
Til what by slehte & what by strengpe.  
pei hadde it wonne in brede and leugpe.  
An breut and layn pat was wipume.  
Wol seuy sone such a synne.  
pe sacrilege in holy stede.  
Be war perfore and bidde pi bede.  
And do no ping in holy churche.  
But pat you nyght be resou wirche.  
And eke take hede of Achilles.  
Whan he in to his Ioue ches.  
Polyena. pat was also.  
In holy temple off Apollo.  
Which was pe cause whi he dede.  
And al his lust was leyd a side.  
And Erius vpon Eriseide.  
Also his ferste Ioue leyde.  
In holy place. and how it ferde.  
As who seiy al pe world it herde.  
for sake he was for Diomed.  
Such was of lust his laste mede.  
for pi my sone I wolde rede.  
By pis ensample as polt nyh rede.  
Seche elles where polt wolt pi grace.  
And war pe wel in holy place.  
What polt to Ioue do or speke.  
In aunteyr if it so be wreke.  
As you hase herd me told byfore.  
And take good hed also perfore.  
vpon what forme of auarice.  
more pan of any ower vice.  
I haue diuided in parties.  
pe braiches which of compaignies.  
purgh out pe world in general.  
Be wold pe leders ouer al.  
Of couetise and of puryte.  
Of fals brocage and of vsure.  
Of starnes and vubyneshipe.  
Which neure dwold to felashipe.  
Of robberie and of pryue stelpo.  
Which don is for pe worldes welpe.  
Of raupne and of sacrilege.  
Which mak pe conscience agrege.  
Al youh it may richesse atteigne.  
It flourer but it shal not greyne.  
vñ to pe fruyt of rih wisesse.  
But who pat wolde do latresse.  
vpon pe relle as it is yne.  
So myht a man to trowe dyne.  
Toward his god and eke also.



othurs pe world for bope aldo.  
 largesse allwyte as bylonger.  
 To neyther party pat he wronger.  
 he keep hym self he keep hys frendes.  
 So stant he sauf to bope endes.  
 pat he exceder no mesure.  
 So wel he can hym self mesure.  
 wher of nyf soue pou shalt wite.  
 So as pe philosofre hay wryte.  
*Proderus et parus duo sunt ex  
 telma qd largus. Et homo medi  
 plebis in ore bonus. Arrotia hic  
 de virtute largitatis que ad opposi  
 tu auaricie inter duo extrema di  
 delicta parcimonie et prodigali  
 tatem specialiter conficit.*  
**B**e it bene pe aldo extremities.  
 Of vice stoude pe porettes.  
 Of vertu and to proue it so.  
 Take auarice and take also.  
 pe vice of prodigalite.  
 Be it bene hem liberalite.  
 Which is pe vertu of largesse.  
 stant and gouernour his noblesse.  
 for po aldo vices in discord.  
 stoude euere as i fynde of record.  
 so pat be it bene here aldo debate.  
 largesse reuley his astate.  
 for in whiche vice as auarice.  
 as i to fore haue told pe vice.  
 purgh trett holdyng z purgh scarnes.  
 stant in contrarie to largesse.  
 pite so stant prodigalite.  
 peneb but nouht in such degre.  
 for so as auarice sparey.  
 and for to kepe his tresour carey.  
 pat oper al his owne and more.  
 a yen pe wise minnes dore.  
 yf and despende here and pere.  
 so pat hym nathyng neuer where.  
 what he may bothe he wol despende.  
 til at pe laste he seip i wende.  
 but pat is spoken al to late.  
 for pan is pouert atte gate.  
 and taky hym euere by pe sleue.  
 for erst wole he no wisdom leue.  
 and rith as auarice is synne.  
 pat wold his tresour kepe z wyne.  
 pite so is prodigalite.  
 but of largesse in his degre.  
 whiche euere stant by it bene pe aldo.  
 pe lihe god and man also.  
 pe vertu eche of hem comendey.  
 for he hym self ferst amendey.  
 pat ouer al his name pcedey.  
 and to alle oper where it redy.  
 he yeff his good in such a wyse.

pat he may many a man arise.  
 which elles sholde fulle losse.  
 largesse may not be vnkunne.  
 for what long pat he regneye.  
 it may not faile for to wyne.  
 of his desert loue and grace.  
 where it shal faile in oper place.  
 and pus be it bene to muche a lye.  
 largesse whiche is not to wite.  
 halt euere for pe mydel weye.  
 but who pat to me wole alweye.  
 fro pat to prodigalite.  
 a noon he lost pe proprete.  
 of vertu and of to pe vice.  
 for in such wyse as auarice.  
 best for scarpnesse his goode name.  
 fight so pat oper is to blame.  
 which purgh his wast mesure exche.  
 for no man wot what harme it bre.  
 but moche lye per by eidey.  
 where pat largesse au herte gidey.  
 for his mesure is so gouerned.  
 pat he to bope partz is turned.  
 to god and to pe world also.  
 he doy resou to bope aldo.  
 pe pouert folk of his almesse.  
 felued ben in pe dyscesse.  
 of purst of hunger ad of cold.  
 pe yst of hym was neuer sold.  
 but frely yene and napeles.  
 pe nyghty god of his enaues.  
 felwarder hym of double grace.  
 pe heuene he doy hym to purchace.  
 and yf hem eke pe world des gade.  
 and pus pe cote for pe hood.  
 largesse takey and yit no synne.  
 he doy holl so pat euere he wyne.  
*Luc. Of hem dabitur z habundabit.*  
 what man hay hors men yf he wote.  
 and who hay nen of hym no fore.  
 for he may runne on fote go.  
 pe world hay euere stoude so.  
 but for to loken of pe alweye.  
 a man to go pe silet weye.  
 better is to yene pan to take.  
 wip yf a man may frendes make.  
 but who pat taky or gret or smal.  
 he taky a chary for wip al.  
 and stant not fte til it be quyt.  
 so for to deme in mannes wit.  
 to helpey more a man to haue.  
 his owne good pat for to craue.  
 of oper men and make him bolde.  
 where elles he may stoude vnkunne.  
*Seneca. Si res tibi non suffici  
 unt fac vrbem cuius sufficiat.*  
 Seneca conailer in his wyse.



**I**nd leyn but if it in good suffise.  
On to ye likynge of y<sup>r</sup> wil.  
W<sup>h</sup>ich dralle in lust and hold ye stille.  
And be to y<sup>r</sup> good sufficient.  
For pat pryncis appertenant.  
To trolle ye and cause ye to be free.  
After ye relle of charite.  
Whiche ferst beghynne of hym selue.  
**¶ A mplys. Ordinata caritas incipit a seipso.**  
For if you richest oper eldwe.  
Wher of yoll shast in self be pouere.  
I not what yout you myght recouere.  
Whil pat a man hay good to yene.  
W<sup>h</sup>ich grete woltes he may lye.  
And hay hys frendes oueral.  
And euery riche of hym telle shal.  
For while he hay his fulle packe.  
Yei sei a good felawe is lacke.  
But whan it failey at ye lasse.  
A noon his prys yei ouer casse.  
For pan is yere noon oper lylle.  
But iacke was a good felawe.  
Whan yei hym pouere and nedye.  
Yei let hym passe and farewell he.  
Al pat he wende of compaignye.  
Is panne corned to folwe.  
But nold to speke in oper kynde.  
Of loue aman may such fynde.  
Yat where yei come in euery rolte.  
Yei casse and waste here loue aboute.  
Til al here tyme is ouer gon.  
And pan haue yei loue noon.  
For who pat loue ouer al.  
It is no reson pat he shal.  
Of loue haue eny proprete.  
For in my sone anyse ye.  
If you of loue hafte be to large.  
For such a man is nouht to charge.  
And if it so be pat you hafte.  
Depended al in tyme in waste.  
And see in loue in soudri place.  
Yous you ye substance of in grace.  
Lese at ye lasse it is no wonder.  
For he pat put him self en vnder.  
As who sei comm ouer al.  
He lest ye loue special.  
Of eny oon if she be wys.  
For loue shal not bere his prys.  
By reson whan it passy on.  
So haue I sene many on.  
Yat were of loue wel at ese.  
Whiche after fel in gret dysese.  
Yough wast of loue pat yei spente.  
In soudri places where yei wente.  
**¶ Right so my sone I axe of ye.**  
If you w<sup>h</sup>ich prodigalite.

**H**ast heer and yere in loue wasted.  
**¶ My fader may but I haue tasted.**  
In many a place as I haue go.  
And yet loue I neuere oon of ye.  
But for to dryue fory ye day.  
For leuey wel myn herte is ay.  
W<sup>h</sup>ich olte mo for euer more.  
Al vpon on for I no more.  
Desire but here loue alone.  
So make I many a pryue moue.  
For wel I fele I haue depended.  
My longe loue and not amended.  
My sped for ouht I fynde yit.  
If ye be wast to yollre wit.  
Of loue and prodigalite.  
Yoll goode fader demey ye.  
But of o pryncis I wole me schryue.  
Yat I shal for no loue pryue.  
But if here self me wole releue.  
**¶ My sone pat I may wel leue.**  
And napeles me seme so.  
For ouht pat you hafte yit misdo.  
Of tyme which you hafte depended.  
Ye may w<sup>h</sup>ich grace ben amended.  
For ying which may be wory ye cost.  
Darchauns is nouper wast ne lost.  
For what ying stant in auenture.  
Yat can no wordes creature.  
Tell in certeyn holt it shal wende.  
Til he per of may seen an ende.  
So pat I not as yit per fore.  
If you my sone hafte wonne or lore.  
For of te tyme as it is sene.  
Whan sone hay lost al his grene.  
And is w<sup>h</sup>ich wynter wast and bare.  
Yat him is lest no ying to spare.  
Al is recouered in a prole.  
Ye colde windes ouerblowe.  
And stille be ye sharpe shoures.  
And sodeynlych a yen his floures.  
Ye sone hayney and is riche.  
And so pat ye in graces liche.  
My sone yous you be nouht pouere.  
Of loue yit you myht recouere.  
**¶ My fader certes grant mercy.**  
Yehaue me tauht so redyly.  
Yat euer whil I lyue shal.  
Ye bette I may be wat w<sup>h</sup>ich al.  
Of ying which ye haue seyd or yis.  
But eueremore holt pat it is.  
Toward my shrist as it belongey.  
To wite of oper pointz me longey.  
Wherof pat ye me wolde teche.  
W<sup>h</sup>ich al myn herte I yoll besече.  
**Explicit Liber Quintus.**  
**Incipit Liber Sextus.**



**E**t gula que inuincit  
prima parentem. Ex deitate pmo  
quo dolet omnis homo. Nec agit  
de corpus aie contraria spiritat. Q  
curo fit causa spūs atq; mater. In  
et exterius siue dicitur hētur  
pocib; ebrietatē condiciatū vuit.  
mersa sopore labris q; bachus me  
brat hospes indignata venus. of  
cula raro puenit. **A** hic in sex  
to libro tractare intendit de illo ca  
pitali vicio qd gula dicitur. necno  
de eiusdem duab; solomodo speciel;  
videlicet ebrietate et delicatia ex  
quib; humane concupiscencie obleg  
tamentū habundanti augmentat.

**D**e grete synuo  
original. Whiche  
eueri man in ge  
neral. Upon his  
berpe hay endom  
med. In paradys  
it was mys tynes.  
Whan Adam  
of yllkel appel bot.  
his swete morsel was to hot.  
Whiche dedly po made mankynde.  
And in ye bookes as i fynde.  
pis vice Whiche so olw of rule.  
hay set vs alle is cleped gule.  
Of Whiche ye braunches ben so grete.  
pat of hem alle i wole not trete.  
But only as touchyng of tbo.  
I penke speke and of no mo.  
Wher of ye ferste is dronkeschipe.  
Whiche berey ye cuppe of felaschipe.  
ful many a wonder doy pis vice.  
he can make of a wysman nyce.  
And of a fool pat hym shal seme.  
pat he can al ye lalwe deme.  
And yeuen eueri jugement.  
Whiche longe to ye firmament.  
Bope of ye seere and of ye mone.  
And pis he maky a gret clerk sone.  
Of hym pat is a lēwed man.  
ye is no ying Whiche he ne can.  
Whil he hay dronkenchipe on honde.  
he knowey ye see he knowey ye froude.  
he is a noble man of armes.  
And yit no strengye is in his armes.  
pere he was strong ynow to fore.  
Wey dronke shipe it is for lore.  
And al is changed his estat.  
And Wexey a noon so feeble and mat.  
pat he may nollper go ne come.  
But al to ge dere hym is byuome.  
ye polwer bope of hound and foot.

So pat algate abide he mote.  
And alle his wittes he for yet.  
ye Whiche is to hym such a let.  
pat he wot neuere what he doy.  
ye Whiche is fals ne Whiche is so.  
ye Whiche is day ne Whiche is nyht.  
And for ye tyme he knowey no wyht.  
pat he ne wot how muche as pis.  
What maner ying hym selfen is.  
Or he be man or he be best.  
pat hold. I rite a soz festo.  
Whan he pat reson vnder stood.  
So so demlych is waye wood.  
Or elles lich ye dede man.  
Whiche nouyer go ne speke can.  
pus ofte he is to bedde brouht.  
But where he ly yit wot he nouht.  
Til he arise vpon ye morwe.  
And pante he sey o Whiche a sorwe.  
It is annu be drunkeles.  
So pat halfi dronke in such ares.  
Wey drie mow he steer hym wyse.  
And sey noll bailez cea ye cuppe.  
pat made hym lose his wit at lue.  
ye pan a morwe al his by lue.  
ye cuppe is al pat euer hym plesy.  
And also most pat hym dishesey.  
It is ye cuppe Whom he seruey.  
Whiche all care fro hym feruey.  
And alle bales to hym bynygey.  
In ioie he wepy in sorwe he singey.  
For dronkeschipe is so dymere.  
It may no Whike stonde in vers.  
he drunke ye Wym but at ye laste.  
ye Wym drunke hym 2 bynt hi faste.  
And sey hym dronke by ye wal.  
As hym Whiche is his bonde pral.  
And al in his subication.  
And lich to such condicion.  
As for to speke it oper wise.  
It fulloy pat ye moste wise.  
Ben oper While of loue a doted.  
And so by Whaped and assoted.  
Of drunke men pat neuere yit.  
Was non Whiche halfi hay lost his wit.  
Of drunke as yei of such ying do.  
Whiche cleped is ye jolyf wo.  
And wayen of here o Whue pouht.  
So drunke pat yei ne knowe nouht.  
What reson is or more or lesse.  
Such is ye fynde of sikenesse.  
And pat is not for lak of brayn.  
But loue is of so gret a mayn.  
pat where he taky an herre on honde.  
per may no ying his myght wysse.  
ye wise Salamon was nome.  
And strong Sampson ouer come.



The knyghtly David hym ne myghte.  
 Rescolle pat he wyf ye suice.  
 Off her sake ne was by stad.  
 Swagile also was ouer lad.  
 And Aristotle was put vnder.  
 For yf my sone it is no wonder.  
 If you be drunke of love among.  
 Whiche is a boue alle ower stroung.  
 And if so is pat you so be.  
 Tel me yf shifte in pryete.  
 It is no shame of such a yelle.  
 A youghman to be drunkelelle.  
 Of such fise I can a part.  
 And as me seme by pat art.  
 Yow holdest by phisounye.  
 Be shapen to pat maladye.  
 Of loue drunke and pat is wolpe.  
 A holy fader al is twilpe.  
 Pat ye me telle I am beknolle.  
 Pat I wolue am so bi prulle.  
 And al myn herte is so yurgh sunke.  
 Pat I am veruliche drunke.  
 And yit I may bope speke and go.  
 But I am ouercome so.  
 And turned fro my self so clene.  
 Pat oft I dot not what I mene.  
 So pat excusen I ne may.  
 My herte fro ye ferste day.  
 Pat I cam to my lady kysse.  
 Was yit sobre neuere stype.  
 Where I here se or se here nouht.  
 Wyf myn of myn olbue pulht.  
 Of loue which myn herte assaile.  
 So drunke I am pat my wyf faile.  
 And al my brayn is ouerturned.  
 And my manere so myf turned.  
 Pat I foryete al pat I cam.  
 And stonde ych amased man.  
 Pat ofte Whanne I holde pleye.  
 It mak me dralle out of ye weye.  
 In soley place by my selue.  
 As dop a labourer to delue.  
 Which can no gentyl mannes chere.  
 Or elles as a laded freere.  
 Whan he is put to his penunce.  
 Fith so lese I myf contemunce.  
 And if it nedes so bitide.  
 Pat I in compayne abide.  
 Where as I myste daunce and synge.  
 Ye houlde daunce and carolyng.  
 Or for to go ye nelde foot.  
 I may wel heue by myf fot.  
 If pat she be nor in ye weie.  
 For pame is al my myrre alweie.  
 And way anon of pouht so ful.  
 Wher of my dimes ten so dul.  
 I may dmyes goon a paas.

For pus it is and euere was.  
 Whan I on such pouhtes muse.  
 Ye lust and merre pat men vse.  
 Whan I se nouht my lady by me.  
 Al is foryete for ye tyme.  
 So ferdy pat my wytes chanygen.  
 And alle lustes fro me strauygen.  
 Pat ye seye al trevelly.  
 And were pat I am nouht I.  
 For as ye man pat ofte drunke.  
 Ye wyf pat in his stomak synke.  
 Wext drounge and witles for a prulle.  
 Fith so my lust is ouerprolde.  
 For of myn olbue pulht so mat.  
 I were pat to myn estat.  
 Per is no hme wilmo serue.  
 But as drunke man I were.  
 And suffre such a passon.  
 Pat men haue merte compasson.  
 And euerych by hym self merueley.  
 What ping it is pat me exley.  
 Such is ye manere of my wo.  
 Whiche tyme pat I am here fro.  
 Til oft ayeu al I here so.  
 But pame it were a myete.  
 To telle yow how pat I fare.  
 For Whanne I may ypon here stare.  
 Here wommanhede here gentillesse.  
 My herte is ful of such gladnesse.  
 Pat ouerpasser so my wyte.  
 Pat I dot neuere where I sitte.  
 But am so drunke of pat syte.  
 Ye penke pat for ye tyme I myht.  
 Fith stert yurgh ye hole wal.  
 And yon I may wel if I shal.  
 Hope synge and daunce & lepe aboute.  
 And hold for ye lystenolde.  
 But napeles it falley so.  
 Fith oft pat I flo here go.  
 Ye may lye as it were a stake.  
 I stonde amfemet to take.  
 And lye ypon here faure face.  
 Pat for ye while ouht off ye place.  
 For al ye world ne myht I wende.  
 Such lust comp pame in to my mynde.  
 So pat wyf oute mete and drynk.  
 Of lusty pouhtes whiche I penke.  
 Ye penke I myhte stonden euere.  
 And so it were to me louere.  
 I am such a syt for to leue.  
 For wel is me pat I haue leue.  
 To haue so mochel of my witt.  
 And pus penkyng I stonde fitt.  
 Wyf oute blenchyn of myn yhe.  
 Fith as me pouht pat I seye.  
 Off paradye ye moste jone.  
 And so yere while I me reioye.



In to myn herce a greet desir.  
 ye which is hottere pan ye fyr.  
 Al so delych vpon me renney.  
 pat al my poult wyf june brenney.  
 And am so ferfory ouercome.  
 pat I not where I am become.  
 So pat a moung ye hetes stronge.  
 In stede of drynk & vnderfonge.  
 A poult so swete in my colage.  
 pat neuere pyment ne vernage.  
 Was half so swete for to drynke.  
 for as I wolde pan I penke.  
 As poult I were at myn a bone.  
 for so purgh drynke I am of loue.  
 pat al pat my soure demer.  
 Is for as panne to to me semer.  
 And whil I may so poultres kepe.  
 we penke as poult I were a lepe.  
 And pat I were in goddes barn.  
 But whan I se myn ollen harm.  
 And pat I so delych a wake.  
 Out of my poult. and hede take.  
 how pat ye sope seant in dede.  
 pan is my sbernesse in drede.  
 And ioye turned in to wo.  
 So pat ye hede is al ago.  
 Of such soure as I was june.  
 A panne a reulward I begynne.  
 To take of loue a welde purse.  
 ye which me greeueth al per lere.  
 for panne comy ye blaunche feure.  
 wyf chele and maky me so to cheuer.  
 And so it coldey al myn herce.  
 pat wonder is how I a stert.  
 In such a poynt pat I ne deie.  
 for certes yere was neuere keye.  
 ye frosen ye vpon ye wal.  
 more july cold pan I am al.  
 And pus suffice I ye hote chele.  
 which opey peynes fele.  
 In cold I brenne and frese in hede.  
 And pan I drynke a bitter wete.  
 wyf drie lippes and yhen wete.  
 so pus I tempre my diete.  
 And take a draught of such reles.  
 pat al my wit is herceles.  
 And al myn herce yere is sit.  
 Is as who sey wyf oute wit.  
 So pat to proue it by resow.  
 In makyn of comparisow.  
 yer may no deference be.  
 Be then a drunke man and me.  
 But all ye worste of euerychon.  
 Is euere pat I purse in con.  
 ye more pat myn herce drynke.  
 ye more I may so pat me penke.  
 my purse shal neuere ben a geynt.

God schilde pat I be not dreynt.  
 Of such a supfluite.  
 for wel I fele in my degre.  
 pat al my wit is ouer cast.  
 wher of I am ye more agast.  
 pat in defaute of ladyshippe.  
 Parchaunce in suche a drunke shippe.  
 I may be ded or I be war.  
 for certes fader vis I dar.  
 Beknowe and in my shurite telle.  
 But I a drunke halle of pat welle.  
 In whiche my desir is and my lyf.  
 my ioye is turned in to scurf.  
 pat sobre shal I neuere worpe.  
 But as a drunke man for dore.  
 So pat in londe where I fare.  
 ye luse is lere of my wel fare.  
 As he pat may no bote fynde.  
 But vis me penke a wonder fynde.  
 As I am drunke of pat I drynke.  
 So am I eke for faute of drynke.  
 Of whiche I fynde no reles.  
 But if I myght uatheles.  
 Of such a drunke as I couite.  
 So as me luse haue o receite.  
 I sholde a sobre and farewel.  
 But so fortune vpon here whiel.  
 On heil me deigney not to sette.  
 for euere more I fynde a lette.  
 ye boteller is not my frend.  
 which hap ye lere by ye kend.  
 I may wische and pat is wast.  
 for wel I wot so fresh a taste.  
 But if my grate be ye more.  
 I schal assie neuere more.  
 pus am I drunke of pat I se.  
 for tustyn is defouled me.  
 And I can not my sellen stamde.  
 So pat my fader of vis braunch.  
 I am gultys to telle a lere.  
 My sone pat me penke tollere.  
 for loue drunke is ye mescies.  
 A boue alle opey ye most ches.  
 off he no lusey poult assaye.  
 which may his soye purse allaye.  
 As for ye cyne pat it assy.  
 To hym which opey Ioye missey.  
 for ye my sone aboue alle.  
 penk wel how so pat it befall.  
 And kepe in wittes pat you hyst.  
 And let hem not be drunke in wist.  
 But napeles yer is no wist.  
 pat may wyf stonde lones myst.  
 But whi ye cause is as I fynde.  
 of pat yer is duncise fynde.  
 Of loue drunke whi men pleigney.  
 After ye court which al ordemy.



I. Wole ye telle ye manere.  
 How lest my sonne and you shalt here.  
**Q**uoniam narrant scdm poetam quali-  
 ter in suo celario iupiter duo dolia  
 hēt quorū pūm liquoris dulcissimū  
 scdm amarissimū plerūm consistit  
 ita qd ille cui futa est prosperitas  
 de dulci potabit alter vero cui adu-  
 labitur poculū gustabit amarū.  
**E**t ye fortune of euery chaunce.  
 After ye goddes puruechaunce.  
 To man it groweth from a boue.  
 So pat ye speed of euery loue.  
 Is shapen yere to it be fulle.  
 For iupiter abouen alle.  
 Which is of goddes souereyn.  
 Hay in his celar as men seyn.  
 To tonnes ful of loue drynke.  
 Pat maken many an herte synke.  
 And many an herte also to flete.  
 Of ye solwe or of ye swete.  
 Pat oon is full of such pynour.  
 Which passeth al endurement.  
 Of mannes wit if he it taste.  
 And maky a iolif herte in haste.  
 Pat ower bitter is ye galle.  
 Which maky amannes herte palle.  
 Whos drunkechipe is a sekensse.  
 Yurgh felun of ye bitterensse.  
 Cupide is boteler of loye.  
 Whiche to ye leue and to ye loye.  
 Yiff of ye swete and of ye soue.  
 Pat soue lidd and som loue.  
 But for so moche as he blynd is.  
 Ful ofte tyme he goy amys.  
 And taky ye badde for ye goode.  
 Which hyndrey many amannes fode.  
 Wy oute cause and forperryr eke.  
 So be yere some of ye seke.  
 Whiche ouht of resoun to ben hole.  
 And some comē to ye dole.  
 In hay and as hem selfe leste.  
 Drynke vnderfoued of ye besto.  
 And pus his blynde boteler.  
 Yiff of ye trowble in seede of cler.  
 And eke ye cler in seede of trowble.  
 To holdy he can ye herges trowble.  
 And maky men drynke al vpon chaunce  
 Wy oute lalde of gouernance.  
 If he dralbe of ye swete tonne.  
 Pan is ye sorwe al ouer romme.  
 Of loue drynk and shal not greuen.  
 So to be drunke euery & ven.  
 For al is paine but a game.  
 But whan it is not of ye same.  
 And he ye bitter tonne dralbe.  
 Such drunkechipe an herte fulle.

And febley al amannes pouht.  
 Pat better hym were haue drunke nouht.  
 And al his bred haue eten drewe.  
 For paine he lesse his lufte were.  
 Wy drunkechipe and bot not wheder.  
 To go ye weies ben so slider.  
 In whiche he may parcas so full.  
 Pat he shal breke hys wittes alle.  
 And in his wise men be drunke.  
 After ye drynk pat yei haue drunke.  
 But alle drynken not i like.  
 For some shal synge & some shal sike.  
 So pat it me no pyn mynuelley.  
 My soue of loue pat ye cysley.  
 For i wole knowe be ye tale.  
 Pat you haue drunken of ye dwale.  
 Which bitter is til god ye sende.  
 Such grace pat you myht amende.  
 But some wyl shalt bidde and prey.  
 In such a wise as i shal seie.  
 Pat you ye lufte welle atteyne.  
 In woful purtes to resteyne.  
 Of love and taste ye swetnesse.  
 As bachus dede in his distresse.  
 Whan bodiliche purste him hente.  
 In stramine londes where he wente.  
**Q**uota hic qualiter potus aliqui  
 facienti pabz adiutur. Et narrat  
 in exemplis qd cu bachus de quo-  
 dam bello ab oriente repatrians i  
 quibusda libie paratibz aliau genis  
 potu non inuenit fusis ad ioue pre-  
 abz apparuit ei aris qui terram  
 pede conuassit statim qz fons ema-  
 nauit. Et sic potum potenti petico  
 preualuit.  
**T**his bachus sone of iupiter.  
 Was hote and as he wente fer.  
 By his fadres assignement.  
 To make a werre in orient.  
 And gret polver wy hym he lader.  
 So pat ye heier hound he hader.  
 And victorie of hys euemye.  
 And torney homeward wy his pry.  
 In such a contre which was dry.  
 A meschey fel vpon ye weye.  
 As he rod wy his compaignye.  
 Yiff myght yei no drynke fynde.  
 Of water ne of ower kynde.  
 So pat hym self and al his hoost.  
 Were for defaute of drynke almost.  
 Despayred and paine bachus prde.  
 To iupiter and pus he seide.  
 O heie fader pat seest all.  
 To whom is resoun pat i shal.  
 Reseche and pteie in euery nede.



By holde my fader and take hede.  
 His woful purst pat he ben June.  
 To stamche and grumit vs for to lene.  
 And sauf into ye conche fare.  
 Where pat oure lusty lones are.  
 Wayting vpon oure home coming.  
 And wyf pe boys of his preynt.  
 Whiche herd was to pe goddes hie.  
 He seih anon to fore his eyhe.  
 A weper which ye ground has spored.  
 And wher he lay it ouertorned.  
 Yet sprang a welle fresh and clew.  
 Per of his olue boteler.  
 Pat eueri man to drynke his fille.  
 And for yllke grete grace.  
 Bachus vpon ye same place.  
 A riche temple let sure.  
 Whiche euer sholde sconde pere.  
 To pursey men in remembraunce.  
 For in sone after p'chance.  
 It sit ye wel to taken hede.  
 So for to preie vpon ye nede.  
 As bachus proved for ye welle.  
 And yent as you hast herd me telle.  
 How grace he quide & grace he hadde.  
 He was no fool pat ferst so midde.  
 For selden get a dymb man loud.  
 Take pat prouerbe and vnderstand.  
 Pat wordes ben of verai grace.  
 For pi to speke you ne lere.  
 And axe and preye erly and late.  
 Pi purst to quenche & penke algate.  
 Ye boteler whiche lery ye lere.  
 He blind as you hast herd me seye.  
 And if it miht so betide.  
 Pat he vpon ye blynde side.  
 Parcas ye wete to me a wylht.  
 Pat shalt yow hane a lusty dylht.  
 And wye of loue dronke sobre.  
 And pus i rede yow assobre.  
 Pat herte in hope of such aguce.  
 For drunke shipe in eueri place.  
 To wher pe side pat it corne.  
 Dop harm and unky a man to sporne.  
 And of te fulle in such a wye.  
 Wher he parcas my not arye.  
*His de amoris ebrietate ponit  
 exemplum qualiter Tristranis ad  
 potu que zianz weyn in nani ei  
 purreit de amore zelle i solde me  
 bruius extitit.*  
 And for to lere in euidence.  
 Vpon ye sope experience.  
 So as it hay byfalle er pis.  
 In eueri mannes mouny it is.  
 How tristran was of loue drunke.

Wyf zelle soude whan ye drunke.  
 Ye drynk which zianz weyn him lene.  
 Er pat kyng mark his sem hie wye.  
 To wyse as it was after knolle.  
 As it hay fallen euer more.  
 In lones cause and what is more.  
 Of drunke shipe for to drede.  
 As it whilom bofell in dede.  
 Wher of you miht ye better eschue.  
 Of drunke men pat yow no shue.  
 Ye compaigne in no manere.  
 A gret ensample yow shalt here.  
*His de periculis ebrietatis causa  
 in amore contingentibz narrat qd  
 p'otous illam pulcherimam  
 potaciam in vxorem ducere quol  
 dam qui Centauri vocabantur in  
 alios viuos ad impias inuita  
 uit qui vno inbut noue mupte  
 formositatem aspicientes. Duplia  
 ebrietate infametur Ita qd ipi su  
 bito salientes a mensa p'otaciam  
 a p'otous marito suo ipeti impu-*  
 He fynde i wite in poesie.  
 Of yllke faue p'otacide.  
 Of whos beaute yer as she was.  
 Spak eueri man and fel parcas  
 Pat p'otous so him spedde.  
 Pat he to wyse here sholde wedde.  
 Wher of pat he gret ioye made.  
 And for he wolde his loue glade.  
 A yow ye day of maringe.  
 By mouny bope and by message.  
 His frendes to ye feste he preyde.  
 Wyf gret worshipe and as man  
 He hay pis yowte lady spoused.  
 And whan pat pei were housed.  
 And sette and serued at ye mete.  
 Yer was no wyne which may begette.  
 Pat pere ne was plence ynowh.  
 But bachus yllke crue drolsh.  
 Wher of be wepe of drunke shipe.  
 Ye grettest of ye felashipe.  
 Were out of reson ouertake.  
 And Venus whiche hay also take.  
 Ye cause most in speal.  
 Hay yeue hem drunke fory wygal.  
 Of yllke ayre whiche exatey.  
 Ye lust wher iune aman delitey.  
 And pus be double were drunke.  
 Of lust pat ilke fry flinke.  
 Hay mad hem as who seih half flinke.  
 Pat pei no reson vnderstood.  
 Ye to nou oyer ying pei shon.  
 But here whiche to fore hie ymen.  
 Was wedded yllke same day.  
 Pat fresh wyf pat lusty may.



In here it was al pat pei pouhten.  
 And so ferforp hire lustes souhten.  
 pat pei pe Whiche named Were.  
 Centauri ac pe feste pere.  
 Of oon assent of oon accord.  
 pei yonge Wyse maugre hire Lord.  
 In such a way forp Ladden.  
 As pei Whiche noon in list hadden.  
 But only to hire drunke fare.  
 Whiche many a man hap mad misfayre.  
 In Loue as wel as oper Weye.  
 Wher of if I shal more seye.  
 Upon pe nature of pis vice.  
 Of custome and of exerceice.  
 pe mannes grace how it fordoep.  
 A tale Whiche was Whilom sof.  
 Of foolles pat so drunke Were.  
 I shal reherce in to pin Ewe.

*hic loquitur specialiter contradi-  
 cendo illorum qui nimia potatione quasi  
 ex consuetudine ebrii efficiuntur.  
 Et narrat exemplum de Galba et  
 Vitello qui potentes in hispania pri-  
 cipales fuerunt. et ipsi cotidiane ebrie-  
 tatis potibus assueti tanta vicinis in-  
 tulere enormia quod tandem toto  
 conclamante populo pena sentencie ca-  
 pitales in eos iudicialiter diffinita est.  
 qui postquam morarentur. de pena  
 mortis alleuarent spontanea vi-  
 ni ebrietate sopiti quasi pro-  
 leuimortui gladio perierunt.*

**I**n pei in a crounyng pus.  
 Of Galba and of Vitellus.  
 pe Whiche of Spayne bope Were.  
 pe mettest of alle oper pere.  
 And bope of o condiaon.  
 After pe disposicion.  
 Of gloteny and of drunke shipe.  
 pat Was a sozry felashipe.  
 For pis polt myht wel vnderfonde.  
 pat man may wel not longe stonde.  
 Which is Wyn drunke of comyn be.  
 For he hap fore pe vertus.  
 Wher of reson hym sholde clope.  
 And pat Was seen vpon hem bope.  
 men seyn per is nou euidence.  
 Wher of to knolde a difference.  
 Betwene pe drunke and pe Wood.  
 For pei be neuere nouer good.  
 For where pat Wyn dop Wit a Weye.  
 Wisdom hap lost pe vilt Weye.  
 pat he no manner vice dredep.  
 So more pan a blind man predep.  
 his nedle by pe some light.  
 So more is reson painne of myht.  
 Whan he Wip drunke shipe is blent.

In pis point pei Were shent.  
 pe Galba bope and eke Vitelle.  
 Upon pe cause as I shal telle.  
 Wher of good is to taken hede.  
 For pei tibo purgh here drunke hede.  
 Of Witles excitacion.  
 Oppressed al pe naciow.  
 Of Spayne for a fool vsaunce.  
 Whiche don Was of continuance.  
 Of hem Which al day drunke Were.  
 pere Was no Wyf ne mayden pere.  
 What so pei Were or faure or foule.  
 Whom pei ne toke to defoule.  
 Wher of pe Lond Was often wo.  
 And eke in oper pinges mo.  
 pei Wrouhten many a sonderi wrong.  
 But how so pat pe day be lond.  
 pe derke nyht comy atte laste.  
 God wolde not pei sholde laste.  
 And shap pe Larde in such a wise.  
 pat pei purgh done to pe guyse.  
 Be dampned for to be for lore.  
 But pei pat haddn be to fore.  
 Enclined to al drunkenesse.  
 Here ende panne bar Witlesse.  
 For pei in hope to aswage.  
 pe peyne of dey vpon pe rage.  
 pat pei pe Lasse sholde sele.  
 Of Wyn let fult fülle a weele.  
 And drunke al so Was befall.  
 pat pei here steynes losten alle.  
 Wip outen Witte of eny brayn.  
 And pus pei ben half dede slayn.  
 pat hem ne greney but a lyte.  
 Wip done if you be for to Wite.  
 In eny point Whiche I haue seid.  
 Wher of in Wittes ben vnteyd.  
 I rede pe clepe hem hom a yem.  
 I shal do fader as ye seyn.  
 As ferfor as I may suffise.  
 But Wel I Wot pat in no wise.  
 pe drunke shipe of Loue alweye.  
 I may remede by no weye.  
 It stant nouht vpon my fortune.  
 But if yow liste comune.  
 Of secunde gloteny. pe  
 Which cleped is delicacie.  
 Wher of ye speken here to fore.  
 Rescho I wolde yow perfore.  
 I y done as of pat ille vice.  
 Whiche of alle oper is pe nonce.  
 And stant vpon pe retoune.  
 Of Venus so as it is due.  
 pe proprete how pat it farey.  
 pe boote heer after nold declaray.  
*Delicie cum dūctis sunt iura po-  
 tentū. In quibz orta Venus excitat*







**E**her of I haue at euery meel.  
 of plente more pan I nouh.  
 But pat is of hym self so touh.  
 my stomak may it nouht desie.  
 So such is ye delicacie.  
 Of Loue Whiche myn herte fedey.  
 plus haue I lak of pat me nedey.  
**B**ut for al pis yit napeles.  
 I seie nouht I am gulteles.  
 pat I soundel am delicat.  
 for elles were I fully mat.  
 But if pat I som lufey stonde.  
 Of comfort and of ese sounde.  
 To take of Loue som repast.  
 for pouh I wyf ye fulltast.  
 ye lust of Loue may not feele  
 myn hunger oper wise I kele.  
 Of smale lustes Whiche I pyke.  
 And for a tyme yit yei like.  
 If pat ye wisen What I mene.  
 How good sone shirbe ye done.  
 Of such deuytees as ben goode.  
 Wher of yow takest ym hertes foode.  
**A**y fader I yow shal reherce.  
 howd pat myn fodes ben diuerse.  
 So as yei fallen in deye.  
 If fedynge is of pat I see.  
 An oper is of pat I heere.  
 yowde as I shal tellen here.  
 It woldey of myn owne pouht.  
 And elles sholde I lyue nouht.  
 for Whom pat faylep foode of hert.  
 he may not wel ye dey a stert.  
**A** total qualiter visus in amore  
 se continet delicatus...  
**O**f sith is al my ferste foode.  
 purah Whiche myn yhe of alle goode.  
 hay pat to him is accordant.  
 Of lufey fode sufficient.  
 Whan pat I go to ward ye place.  
 Where I shal se my lady face.  
 myn yhe Whiche is Loy to faste.  
 Begynney to hunger anon as faste.  
 pat him penke of oon houre yre.  
 Til I yere come and he here se.  
 And pan astir his appetit.  
 he taky a fode of such delit.  
 pat him non oper deuyte nedey.  
 Of sondry sithes he hym fedey.  
 he seep here face of such colour.  
 pat flessher is pan any flour.  
 he seep here front is large and pleyn.  
 Wyf oute frouce of any greyn.  
 he seep here yheu lych in heuene.  
 he seep here nose stralght and euene.  
 he seep here rode vpon here cheke.  
 he seep here rede lypes eke.

here chyn accordy to hire face.  
 Al pat he seep is ful of grace.  
 he seep here necke round and clene.  
 per yue may no boon be sene.  
 he seep here houndes faure and white.  
 for alpis ying wyf outen wite.  
 he may se naked atto lestte.  
 So is it wel ye more feste.  
 And Wel ye more delicacie.  
 On to ye fedynge of his yhe.  
 he seep here shap fory wyf al.  
 here body round here myddel smal.  
 So Wel begon Wyf good aray.  
 Whiche passy al ye lust of may.  
 Whan he is most wyf softte shoures.  
 ful cloped in hys lufey floures.  
 Wyf such signes by and by.  
 myn yhe is fed but finally.  
 Whan he ye port and ye manere.  
 Sey of hys womannys chere.  
 pan hay he such delit on honde.  
 hym yulke he myghte falle stonde.  
 And pat he hay full sustenance.  
 Of lyfode and of sustenance.  
 As to his part for euerymo.  
 And if it pouht alle oye so.  
 frowenne wolde he neuere wende.  
 But yere vnto ye worldes ende.  
 he wolde abide if pat he myghte.  
 And feden hym vpon ye sithte.  
 for pouh I myghte stonden up.  
 In to ye tyme of domesday.  
 And lobe vpon hire euere in on.  
 yit Whanne I sholde from here gon.  
 myn yhe wolde as pouh he faste.  
 Been hunger scoruen al so faste.  
 Til eft a yen pat he hire sithte.  
 Such is ye nature of myn yhe.  
 per is no lust so deuytefull.  
 Of Whiche a man shal not be full.  
 Of pat ye stomak vnderfougey.  
 But euere in oon myn yhe loutey.  
 To lobe holdy pat a Goshawt tney.  
 fith so dey he Whan pat he prey.  
 And totey on hire womans hede.  
 for he may neuere fully fede.  
 his lust but euere a lyche sore.  
 him hungrye so pat he ye more.  
 Desyre to be fedde algate.  
 And plus myn yhe is in ad ye pate.  
 purah Whiche ye deuytees of myn pouht.  
 Of lust been to myn herte brought.  
 fith as myn yhe wyf his look.  
 Is to myn herte a lufey cook.  
 Of lyues foode delicat.  
 fith so myn Gey in his astat.  
**Qualit' auris in amore delectatur...**



*Where as myn eyne may not serue.*

Can wel myn herces pouke deserue.  
 And feeden him fiv day to day.  
 Wyt such deputies as he may.  
 For pus it is pat ouer al.  
 Where as I come in special.  
 I may here of my Lady pryse.  
 I here don seip pat she is wys.  
 An oper seip pat she is good.  
 And sou men seyn of Worpi blood.  
 pat she is come and is also.  
 So faye pat mawher is noon so.  
 And soule men preyse here goodly chere.  
 pus leuery prynces I may here.  
 Whiche folweth to my Lady goode.  
 Is to myn Gere a lusty foode.  
 And eke myn Gere hap ouer pis.  
 A depyte feste whan so is.  
 pat I may here here selue speke.  
 For pan a noon my fast I breke.  
 On such wordes as she seip.  
 pat ful of troupe and ful of feip.  
 pei ben and of so good desport.  
 pat to myn ere gret comfort.  
 Thei don us pei pat ben delices.  
 for alle pe metes I alle pe spices.  
 pat eny lumbard coupe make.  
 ne be so lusty for to take.  
 ne so feyter restouratyf.  
 I seye as for myn owen hyl.  
 As ben pe wordes of here mouny.  
 for as pe Wyndes of pe South.  
 Ben most of alle debonaire.  
 So whan her lust to speke faire.  
 pe vertu of hire goodly speche.  
 Is verayly myn herces leche.  
 And if it so befallle among.  
 pat she carole vpon a song.  
 Whan I it here I am so fedde.  
 pat I am fiv my self so ledde.  
 As pouh I were ynphandys.  
 for certes al to myn avis.  
 Whan I heere of here vois pe steuene.  
 me penke it is a blisse of heuene.  
 And eke in oper wise also.  
 ful of ce tyme it fulley so.  
 myn Gere Wyt a good pyraunce.  
 Is fedde of redyn of romaunce.  
 Of ydoine and of Amadas.  
 pat Whilom weren in my caas.  
 And eke of opre many a score.  
 pat Loueden longe er I was bore.  
 for whan I of here lones rede.  
 myn Gere Wyt pe tale I fede.  
 And Wyt pe Alse of here hystorie.  
 Som tyme I dralle in y memoire.  
 hold forolle may no euere luste.

*Lib.*

And so comy hope in at ye late.  
 Whan I noon oper foode knowe.  
 And pat endurey but a prowe.  
 Ryt as it were a cheri feste.  
 But for to compten at ye feste.  
 As for ye while pat it cley.  
 And sondel of myn herte appesey.  
 for what prynces to myn herce sprey.  
 Whiche is pleasant sondel it fey.  
 Wyt wordes suche as he may gete.  
 my lust in seide of oper metes.  
 So pus my fader as I seye.  
 Of lust pe which myn yhe hap seye.  
 And eke of pat myn ere hap held.  
 ful of ce I haue ye bettre feld.  
 And so also bryngen yn pe prydde.  
 pe which hap in myn herce a mydd.  
 his place take to araye.  
 pe lusty foode whiche assaye.  
 I mot. and naneliche on nyhtes.  
 Whan pat me lacker alle syhtes.  
 And pat myn hering is alweye.  
 pame is he redy in pe weye.  
 my revesoper for to make.  
 Of whiche myn herces foode I take.  
 Of his listi cookes name is hote.  
 pouh which hap euere his potte.  
 Qualit cogitat ypressiones leide  
 ymaginatio cordis in seuit amand.  
 Of loue bulynge on pe fyr.  
 Wyt fantasie and Wyt desir.  
 Of which er pe ful of ce he fedde.  
 myn herce whanne I was a bedde.  
 And pan he sette vpon my bord.  
 Bore euery syht and euery word.  
 Of lust whiche I haue herd or seyn.  
 But yt is not my feste al pley.  
 Got all of Wolde and of Wisches.  
 yer of haue I my fulle dysches.  
 But as of felynge and of tast.  
 yt nyht I neuere haue oo repast.  
 And pus as I haue seid afor.  
 I lacke hony on pe por.  
 And as who seip vpon ye brydel.  
 I chelwe so pat al is ydel.  
 As in effect pe fode I haue.  
 But as a man pat Wolde hym faue.  
 Whan he is seek by medycyne.  
 Ryt so of loue pe faunne.  
 I soude in al pat euere I may.  
 To fede and dryue fory pe day.  
 Till I may haue pe grette feste.  
 Which al myn hunger myht aweite.  
 So suche been my lusted pr.  
 Of pat I penke and heere and se.  
 I tale of loue my fedynge.  
 Wyt ouce tastynge or felynge.



And as ye plouer doy of Eve.  
 I hve and am in good espre.  
 For noon such delicacie.  
 I wolbe I do no glotonye.  
 And napeles to yollre abys.  
 myn holy fader pat ben wys.  
 I recomaunde myn astat.  
 Of pat I haue be delicat.  
**O**y souerayn vnderstonde wel.  
 pat you hast told here euery del.  
 And as me penker by pi tale.  
 It ben delices wonder smale.  
 Wherof yoll cakest pi lones fode.  
 But soue if pat you vnderstode.  
 What is to ben dilicious.  
 you woldest not ben curous.  
 Upon ye lust of pin astat.  
 To been so fore delicat.  
 Wher of pat you reson excede.  
 For in ye bokes yoll myht rede.  
 If mannes wisdom shal be sayed.  
 It ouht wel to ben eschewed.  
 In loue als wel as oyer weye.  
 For as yese holy bokes seie.  
 ye bodesh delices alle.

**Delicie corpi militat aduersus animam**  
 In euery poynt hold so pei falle.  
 On to ye soule don greivance.  
 And for to take in remembrance.  
 A tale acordant on to pis.  
 Which of gret vnderstonding is.  
 In mannes soule resonable.  
 I penke telle and is no fable.  
**He ponit exemplum contra istos**  
**delicatos. Et narrat de Quinte**  
**Lazaro quoz gestus in euangelio lu-**  
**cas euidentius describitur.**

**O**f Cristes word who wol it rede.  
 how pat pis vice is for to dede.  
 In ye wargile it telley pleyu.  
 Which mot algate be ceteru.  
 For Crist hym self it berp witnesse.  
 And pouh ye clert and ye clergesse.  
 In latyn tunge it rede and synge.  
 pat for ye more knowlechyng.  
 Of dollye whiche is good to wite.  
 I shal declare as it is write.  
 In englysch for pus it be gan.  
**C**rist sey peie was archeman.  
 A myhty lord of gret astat.  
 And he was eke so delicat.  
 Of his cloynge pat euery day.  
 Of purple and bisse he made hym gay.  
 And ete and drank per to his fille.  
 After ye lustes of his wille.  
 As he whiche stood al in delice.  
 And took noon hede of yllke vice.

And as it sholde po betide.  
 A pouere lizer vpon a tyde.  
 Cam to ye gate and axed mete.  
 Bot yere myht he no yung gete.  
 his dedly hunger for to stamche.  
 For he whiche hadde his fulle painche.  
 Of alle lustes atte bord.  
 He deigney not to speke a word.  
 Onlich a comynge for to yme.  
 Wher of ye pouere myhte hve.  
 Upon ye yiste of his almesse.  
 pus lay pis pouere in gret dysresse.  
 A cold and hungred atte gate.  
 For whiche he myht go no gate.  
 So was he wofully beseyn.  
 And as ye holy bokes seyn.  
 ye houndes comen fro ye hallo.  
 Where pat pis seeke man was fallo.  
 And as he lay here for to dy.  
 The woundes of his malady.  
 pei licken for to don him ese.  
 But he was ful of such dysese.  
 pat he may not pe depaschape.  
 But as it was pat tyme schape.  
 ye soule fro ye body passay.  
 And he whom no yung ouer passay.  
 ye hihe god vp to ye heuene.  
 hym took where he hay set hym euene.  
 In abrahames barnie on hyh.  
 Where he ye heuene ioye fih.  
 And hadde al pat he haue wolde.  
 And fel as it befall sholde.  
 pis riche man yis same proube.  
 Wip soderen dech was ouer proube.  
 And fory wip oure ey Went.  
 In to ye helle streit he went.  
 ye fend in to ye fyr hym drowh.  
 Where pat he hadde peyne ynough.  
 Of flamme whiche pat euere breuney.  
 And as his yhe aboute remey.  
 Toward ye heuene he cast his look.  
 Wher pat he seih and hede took.  
 how Lazar set was in his see.  
 Als fer as euere he myhte se.  
 Wip albrahim and pan he preyede.  
 Vnto ye patriarche and seide.  
 Seud Lazar don fro yllke se.  
 And do pat he his synner were.  
 In water so pat he may droyre.  
 Upon my tunge for to stoppe.  
 ye mete here in whiche I breime.  
 But Abraham answered penne.  
 And seide to him in pis wise.  
 my soue you ye myht adyse.  
 And take in to pi remembrance.  
 how Lazar hadde gret penance.  
 whiche he was in pat oyer lyf.



Bot you in all y<sup>e</sup> luste golyf.  
ye bodely delices souhtest.  
for y<sup>e</sup> so as you panne wrouhtest.  
now schaltow take y<sup>e</sup> veltard.  
of dedly peyne here afterward.  
In helle whiche shal euere laste.  
And yis Lazar now atte laste.  
ye worldes peyne is ouerwonne.  
In heuene and hay his hys begonne.  
Of ioye whiche is ende les.  
But pat you prunedest napele.  
pat I shal Lazar to ye sende.  
Wip water on his fynger ende.  
y<sup>e</sup> hote tynge for to fele.  
y<sup>e</sup> shalt no such grace fele.  
for to pat foule place of synne.  
for euere in whiche you ben y<sup>e</sup>me.  
Comy noon out of yis place y<sup>e</sup>der.  
ye noon of yow may comenhyder  
y<sup>e</sup> be ye parted now a tbo.  
ye riche a newward cryed y<sup>e</sup>.  
O Abraham syt it so is.  
pat Lazar may not do me yis.  
whiche I haue axed in yis place.  
I wolde preye an ower grace.  
for I haue yit of breperen fyne.  
pat wip my fader ben a hyle.  
To medre dwellyng in oon hous.  
To whom as you art gracious.  
I praye pat you woldest sende.  
Lazar so pat he myghte wende.  
To wanne hem holl y<sup>e</sup> world is went.  
pat afterward y<sup>e</sup> be not shent.  
Of such peynes as I drie.  
To yis I preye and yis I crye.  
Now may I not my selue amende.  
**T**he patriarch a heon supende.  
To yis prayere answerde may.  
And seid hym holl pat euere day.  
his breperen myhton knolke and here.  
Of moyses en Erpe here.  
And of prophetes ower mo.  
What hem was best z he sey no.  
But if y<sup>e</sup>er myhte a man arise.  
fro dech to hve in such a wys.  
To tellen hem holl pat it were.  
he seide holl panne of pure feire.  
y<sup>e</sup> shulden wel be war y<sup>e</sup>erly.  
Quod Abraham may siberly.  
for if y<sup>e</sup>er now wol not obeye.  
To wiche as techen hem y<sup>e</sup> were.  
And alday y<sup>e</sup>che and alday telle.  
holl pat it stant of heuene z helle.  
y<sup>e</sup>er wol not panne taken heede.  
y<sup>e</sup>er it befelle so in dede.  
y<sup>e</sup>er any ded man were a reed.  
To ben of hym y<sup>e</sup> better leed.

pan of an ower man a hve.  
**I**f you my sone canst describe.  
yis tale as crist hym selfe tolde.  
you shalt haue cause to beholde.  
To se so gret an euidence.  
Wherof y<sup>e</sup> soye experiance.  
hay shewes oppulliche at yhe.  
pat bodily delicacie.  
Of hym whiche y<sup>e</sup>uey noon almeste.  
shal after fallen in gret distresse.  
And pat was seue vpon y<sup>e</sup>riches.  
for he ne wolde du to his liche.  
A crume yeben of his breed.  
y<sup>e</sup>anne afterward whanne he was ded.  
A drope of water hym was wernes.  
y<sup>e</sup>us may a mannes wit be lernes.  
Of hem pat so delices taken.  
whan y<sup>e</sup>er. Why dey ben ouertaken.  
pat eue was swete is y<sup>e</sup>er sour.  
Bot he pat is a gouernour.  
Of worldes good if he be wys.  
Wipinne his herte he set no prys.  
Of alle y<sup>e</sup> world and yit he dey.  
ye good pat he no ying refusey.  
As he whiche lord is of y<sup>e</sup> yinges.  
ye nouches and y<sup>e</sup> rich yinges.  
ye droy of gold and y<sup>e</sup> perryo.  
he takey and yit delicacie.  
he y<sup>e</sup>uey y<sup>e</sup>ough he were al yis.  
ye beste mete pat y<sup>e</sup>er is.  
he eet. and drynk y<sup>e</sup> beste drynk.  
But holl pat euere he ete or drynke.  
Delicacie he put alweie.  
As he whiche gop y<sup>e</sup> vhte weie.  
y<sup>e</sup>ough only for to fede and cloye.  
his body. but his soule boye.  
But y<sup>e</sup>er pat taken ower wise.  
here lufes ben noon of y<sup>e</sup>er wise.  
And pat whilom was shewes etc.  
If you y<sup>e</sup>se olde bokes seke.  
als wel be reson as by kynde.  
Of olde cysample as men may fynde.  
**A**hic loquitur de delicacia *reuer-*  
*nis qui corporalibz delicias manis*  
*adherens spiritualia gaudia minus*  
*obtinuit.*  
**W**hat man pat wolde hym selfe laboure.  
Delicacie is to despise.  
whan kynde a cordoy not wip al.  
Wher of cysample in special.  
Of new whilom may be told.  
whiche a y<sup>e</sup>er kynde many fold.  
y<sup>e</sup>er lufes took al atte laste.  
pat god hym wolde al ouer caste.  
Of whom y<sup>e</sup>er crounyng is so pleyne.  
ye lufte nomore of hym to seyne.  
And napeles for y<sup>e</sup>er crounyng.



**O**f bodily delicacie.  
 To knowe his stomak how hit ferde.  
 Of pat no man tofore herde.  
 Whiche he wyf gynn him self biought.  
 A wonder subtil prync he wrought.  
**T**he men upon election.  
 Of age and of complexion.  
 Nych to hym self by alle weye.  
 He took towarde hym to pleye.  
 And eete and drunke as wel as he.  
 Yer of was noon diuersite.  
 For euery day whan pat ye eete.  
 To fore his owen borde ye seete.  
 And of such mete as he was serued.  
 Al yow ye hadde it not deserued.  
 Ye token seruice of ye same.  
 But after ward al yille name.  
 Was in to woful ernest turned.  
 For whanne ye were yus sojourned.  
 Wyf gynn a tyme at after mete.  
 Now which hadde nouht foryete.  
 Ye lustes of his firele astat.  
 As he whiche al was delicat.  
 To knowe yille experience.  
 Ye men yete come in his pience.  
 And to pat oon ye same tyde.  
 A courser pat he holde ride.  
 In to ye feld a noon he bad.  
 Wher of his man was wonder glad.  
 And goy to pryke and prauince a lout.  
 Pat oyer whil pat he was oute.  
 He leyd vpon his bed to slepe.  
 Ye yille whiche he wolde kepe.  
 Wyth him his chambere faire and softe.  
 He goy noll down noll vp ful ofte.  
 Walchyng a paas pat he ne slepte.  
 Til he whiche ou ye curser lepte.  
 Was come fro ye feld a yen.  
 Yew panne as ye booke seyn.  
 Yew men dop taken alle yre.  
 And slowly hem for he wolde se.  
 Ye whos stomak was best defied.  
 And whanne he hay ye soye tryed.  
 He found pat he whiche hoy ye paas.  
 Defied best of alle was.  
 Whiche after ward he vied ay.  
**A**nd yus what prync vn to his pay.  
 Was most pleasant he lest noon.  
 Wyf euery lust he was begon.  
 Wher of ye body myht glade.  
 For he non abstinence made.  
 But most aboue alle erpely ynned.  
 Of women vnto ye hylkes.  
 Yew set al his hole herte.  
 For pat lust shulde hym not afterte.  
 Whan pat ye prync of loue hy cause.  
 Where pat hym luste he took a draught.

**H**e sparey nouper wyf ne mayde.  
 Pat such an oyer as men sayde.  
 In al yis world was nouere yit.  
 He was so drunke in all his wit.  
 Yurgh sondry lustes whiche he took.  
 Pat euere whil yer is a booke.  
 Of yew men shal rede and synge.  
 Vnto ye worldes knowlechyng.  
 In goode sone as you hast herd.  
 For euere yit it hay so ferd.  
**D**elicacie in loues caas.  
 Wyf out reson it is and was.  
 For where pat loue his herte sette.  
 Hym penke it myht be no bette.  
 And yow it be nouht fully meete.  
 Ye lust of loue is euere swete.  
 To yus to gedre of felaschipe.  
**D**elicacie and drunke shipe.  
 Wher of reson stant out of heire.  
 Haue made ful many a woman erre.  
 In loues cause most of alle.  
 For panne how so pat euere it falle.  
 Wit can no reson vnderstonde.  
 But let ye gouernance stonde.  
 To wille whiche panne wexer so wilde.  
 Pat he can not hym selfe schilde.  
 Fro no perill but out of feere.  
 Ye weie he seche here and yere.  
 Hym wechey not vpon what side.  
 For ofte tyme he goy beside.  
 And dop such ying wyf oute drede.  
 Wher of hym ouht wel to drede.  
 But whan pat loue assorey soze.  
 It passy alle mennes lore.  
 What lust it is pat he ordeyne.  
 Yere as no mannes myht restreyn.  
 And of ye god tak he noon heede.  
 But alweles wyf oute drede.  
 His purpos for he wole a cheue.  
 A yens ye poyntz of ye byleue.  
 He tempey heuene & erpe & helle.  
 Heere after ward as i shal telle.  
**I**n stimulator amor quicquid  
 inbet orta voluptas. Auger & ag  
 greditur nulla timenda timens.  
 Pone quod astra queunt herbarum  
 sine potestas. Sen vinct inferni  
 singula temptat amans. Quod  
 nequit ipse deo mediante pare finis  
 trid. Temoris hec magna credulus  
 arte parat. Sic sibi non curat ad op  
 que rea tendit. Dum modo munda  
 tam prendere possit auem. Hic  
 trahit qualiter ebrietas & delicia  
 ois pudicie contrarius instigantes  
 in illa ad carnalis concupiscentie  
 promotionem sacrilegis magica



requirunt.

**W**ho dar do pink which loue ne dar  
 To loue is every lalle vnlhar.  
 Not to ye lalles of his heste.  
 Ye fische ye foul ye man ye best.  
 Of alle wordes kinde lallest.  
 For loue is he which no ying dour.  
 In mannes herce where he sit.  
 He compten nouht colbard his wit.  
 Ye no no more pan ye wel.  
 To more ye herte pan ye chele.  
 To more ye were pan ye drepe.  
 To more to hme pan to deye.  
 So pat to fore ne behynde.  
 He seep no ying but as ye blynde.  
 Wy oute in sht of his corage.  
 He dop merueiles in his rage.  
 To what ying pat he wole hym duille.  
 Yer is no good yer is no lalle.  
 Of whom pat he taky eny hede.  
 But as wynde ye blynde strede.  
 Til he falle in ye dicke anyde.  
 He goy yer no man wole hym hede.  
 He stant so fer fory out of reule.  
 Yer is no wit pat may hym reule.  
 And pus to telle of hym a soy.  
 Ful many a wonder ying he soy.  
 Pat were better to be lalle.  
 A mong ye which is wichecraft.  
 Pat some clepen sorcerie.  
 Which for to wyne his dredderys.  
 Wy many a circumstance he drey.  
 Yer is no yout which he refusey.  
**Uota de auctor ne non de libray**  
**mm naturalis p excausilis magi**  
**ce nonnullis.**  
**W**he craft which pat Saturn fond.  
 To make pricke in ye sond.  
 Pat ceamance cleped is.  
 Pat ofte he drey it anye.  
 And of ye flood his ydromance.  
 And of ye fyr ye pyromance.  
 Wy questions echon of yo.  
 He tempter ofte and eke also.  
 Acromance in iugement.  
 To loue he bypurer of his assent.  
 For ye se craftes as I fynde.  
 A man may do be weye of kynde.  
 Be so it be to good entent.  
 But he goy al an ower went.  
 For wyper er he sholde faile.  
 Wy ydromance he wole assaile.  
 To make his incantacion.  
 Wy hote sublimacion.  
 Yllke arte which spatula is note.  
 And drey is of commun rote.  
 A mong paichis Wy pat craft eke.

**W**hiche is auctor of hosz ye Glete.  
 He worchep con and con be rolle.  
 Fazel is not to hym vnknothe.  
 Ye Salomones candario.  
 His ydeat his eutome.  
 Ye figure and ye booke Wy al.  
 Of Balamuz and of Chenbal.  
 The seal and yer dyon ymage.  
 Of thebith for his auantage.  
 He taky and sonnd what of Gibeere.  
 Which helpy ch is to y mater.  
 Gabilla Wy here sones seuene.  
 Which hay renounced to ye heuene.  
 Wy ceernes boye square z rounde.  
 He tracey ofte dyon ye grounde.  
 makyng his inuocacion.  
 And for ful informacion.  
 Ye scole which honozing.  
 Wrote he pursey z lo yus.  
 magy he drey for to wyne.  
 His loue and spurey for no syme.  
 And ouer pat of his sortie.  
 Pat as he sechey sorcerie.  
 Of hem pat ben magiciens.  
 Pat so of ye naturiens.  
 dyon ye sterres from aboue.  
 His weis he sechey dyo to loue.  
 As fer as he hem vnderstondey.  
 In many a sondry wise he sondey.  
 He maky ymage he maky sculpture.  
 He maky writyng he maky figure.  
 He maky his calculacions.  
 He maky his demonstracions.  
 His houses of astronomie.  
 He sepey as for pat partie.  
 Which longe to ye speccion.  
 Of loue and his affection.  
 He wole in to ye helle seche.  
 Ye deuyl hym selfe to be seche.  
 If pat he wiste for to speche.  
 To gete of loue his lufy mede.  
 Where pat he hay his herte set.  
 He bedde neuere faue bet.  
 A re yit of ower heuene more.  
 my sone if you of such a lore.  
 Hast ben et pis h bedde ye loue.  
**W**yn holy fader by your loue.  
 Of alle pat ye haue spoken here.  
 Which touchy dyo y mater.  
 To telle soy rht as I weue.  
 I wot not o word what ye mene.  
 I wot not seye if pat I couthe.  
 Pat I wold in my lufy youthe.  
 By nepe in helle and eke a loue  
 To wyne Wy my lady loue.  
 Doon all pat euere pat I myhte.  
 For yer of haue I woun in shte.



Wher afterward pat I become.  
So pat I Wonne and ouercome.  
Here Loue Which I most coueite.  
My sone pat god wonder freyte.  
For his I may wel telle so.  
Per is no man ye which so do.  
For al ye crist pat he can casse.  
Pat he naby it atte Paster.  
For ofte he pat Wole buylo.  
Is miles Wye ye same gyle.  
And yus ye gylour is begiled.  
As I fynde in a booke compiled.  
To yis matere an olde hystorie.  
Ye which comp uow to my memoire.  
And is of gret ensamplerie.  
A yen ye vice of forcerie.  
Wher of noon ende may be good.  
But Whilom hold per of it stood.  
A tale Whiche is good to knowe.  
To ye my sone I shal be knowe.  
*Ubi contra istos ob amoris cau-*  
*sum Soraleas ubi narrant in exem-*  
*pli qd ad Olyces a subusione Troie*  
*reparare nauigio voluisse ipm i*  
*insula Cilli ubi illa expertissima*  
*magia noie Circes regnauit contigit*  
*applicasse que va in sui amoris con-*  
*cupiscenciam exardesceret Circes o-*  
*bz suis mantionibus Vincere cona-*  
*batur Olyces tamen magica poten-*  
*tior ipm in amore subegit ex qua*  
*filii noie Thelond genuit qui pos-*  
*tea prem suu interfecit z sic contra*  
*fidei naturam gentis contra gene-*  
*racois naturam putridu operatus est.*  
**A**mong hem Which at Troie were.  
Olyces at ye Sege pere.  
Was on by name in special.  
Of Whom yit ye memorial.  
A bit for Whil per is a mouth.  
For euere his name shal be soue.  
He Was a Worpi knyght and knyght.  
And clef knowyng of euery pring.  
He Was a gret rethorien.  
He Was a gret magicien.  
Of Tullius ye rethorine.  
Of Tholome thastronomie.  
Of Plato ye philosophie.  
Of Daniel ye sleep dreames.  
Of neptune eke ye water faemes.  
Of Salamon and ye prouideres.  
Of anater all ye science of herbes.  
And ye phisige of ypodras.  
And lych vnto Pictogoras.  
Of surgerie he knew ye cures.  
But sumlhit of his auentures.  
Which shal to my matere acorde.

To ye my sone I wol recorde.  
This kyng of Which you hast herd seyn.  
ffro tyme as he god hom a yent.  
Se ship he found ye see dyuerso.  
Wip many a Wyndy storme reuerse.  
But he purgh Wisdom pat he schapey.  
fful many a gret peril a sapey.  
Of Which I penke to tellen don.  
holl pat malgre ye needle and stou.  
Wynd dyue he Was al sodeynly.  
Vpon ye fawndes of Cilly.  
Wher pat he moste a byde a While.  
Also gwenes Were in pat ylle.  
Calypsa named and Circes.  
And Whanne rei herde holl Olyces.  
Is lounded per vpon ye rybe.  
For hym rei seiden also blyue.  
Wip such as he Wolde he nam.  
And to ye court to hem he cam.  
ye gwenes Were as also goddeses.  
Of are magice forceres.  
Pat What Lord comp to pat ryuage.  
rei make hym Loue in such a rage.  
Pat vpon hem assote so.  
Pat rei Wol haue er pat he go.  
Al pat he hap of wordes good.  
Olyces Wel his vnderstood.  
rei coup moche he coupe more.  
rei schape and caste a yem hym fore.  
A Woluht many a subtil Wile.  
And yit rei miht hym nouht begile.  
But of ye men of his nauye.  
rei also forshopen a gret parcie.  
Way noon of hem Wip stonde here he feres.  
Som part rei shopen in to besces.  
Som part ye shopen in to volles.  
To beres tines apes oibles.  
Or elles be som ower Were.  
Per myht hem no pring desobeis.  
Such craft rei hadde aboue kynde.  
But pat art coupe rei nouht fynde.  
Of Which Olyces Was deceyued.  
Pat he ne hap hem alle Weyued.  
And brouht hem in to such a rote.  
Pat vpon hym rei boye assote.  
And purgh ye science of his art.  
he took of hem so Wel his part.  
Pat he begat Circes Wip childe.  
he kept him sobre and made hem Wilde.  
he sette him self so aboue.  
Pat Wip here good and Wip here Loue.  
Who pat per be leef or loy.  
Al quit in to his ship he goy.  
Circes to stolle boye fides.  
he lefte. and Waiten on ye tides.  
And strauht purgh out ye saltte foun.  
he takp his cours and comp hym hom.



Where as he found Penelope.  
 A better wyf may per noon be.  
 And yet per ben ynolde of goode.  
 But who hire goodship vnderfode.  
 How ferst pat she wyfthode toke.  
 How many folkes she forgoke.  
 And how she bar hire alabout.  
 Ther while pat here lord was oute.  
 He myght make a greet auant.  
 Among al pe remenant.  
 pat she was one of pe beste.  
 he myght wel sette his herte in pte.  
 his kyng whan he hir fond in helle.  
 god as he coupe in wisdom dele.  
 So coupe she in womanhede.  
 And whan she shi wyf oute dvede.  
 here lord vpon his owen grounde.  
 pat he was come sauf and sounde.  
 In all pe world he ne myght be.  
 A gladder woman pan was she.  
**C**he fame whiche may nougt be hid.  
 purgh out pe lond is sone kyd.  
 here kyng is comen home ayen.  
 pere may no man pe fulle seyn.  
 How pat pei weren alle glade.  
 So moche ioye of hym pei made.  
 pe p'sence euery day be uelwed.  
 he was wyf yfres al be felwed.  
 pe poeple was of hym so glad.  
 pat pouh noon oter man hem bad.  
 Laughe vpon hem self pei sette.  
 And as it were of pure dette.  
 pei reue here goodes to pe kyng.  
 his was a glad hom welcomyng.  
 his hap vlyes what he wolde  
 his wyf was such as he be sholde.  
 his poeple was to hym submyt.  
 him lackey no prync of delit.  
 But fortune is of such a sleighte.  
 pat whan a man is most on heighte.  
 she maket hym rapet for to falle.  
 per dot no man what be falle.  
**Cracius... Summa sine hominu te...**  
**mi pendencia filo...**  
**C**he happes ouer mannes hede.  
 Sen heuynng wyf a toudre p'ed.  
 pat proued was on vlyes.  
 for whan he was most in his pees.  
 fortune gan to make him weere.  
 And sette his welre al out of herre.  
 vpon a day as he was merre.  
 And pouht per myght hym no p'udere.  
 whan nyght was come he goy to bedde.  
 wyf sleep and bope hys shen fesse.  
 And whil he slepte he mette a strene.  
 hym pouhte he sei a statue euene.  
 which brighten pan pe sonne schon.

A man it semet was it noon.  
 But yit it was as in figure.  
 most liche to mannysh creature.  
 But as of beaute heuenelech.  
 he was most to an angel lych.  
 And pus be thene aungel and man.  
 Beholden it pus kyng began.  
 And such a lust took of pe sighte.  
 pat fain he wolde if pat he myghte.  
 pe forme of pat figure embrace.  
 And goy hym forp to ward pe place.  
 Where he sei pat ymage po.  
 And taky it in his armes elbo.  
 And it embracey him ayen.  
 And to pe kyng pus gan it seyn.  
 vlyes vnder stold wel pis.  
 pe tokne of oure ameyntance is.  
 here after ward to mochele tene.  
 pe loue pat is vs be thene.  
 Of pat we nolt suche ioye make.  
 pat oon of vs pe deth shal take.  
 Whanne tyme comy of destene.  
 he may not oter wyse be.  
 vlyes pe began to preye.  
 pat pis figure wolde hym seie.  
 what wite he is pat sei hym so.  
 his wite vpon a spele po.  
 A p'ensel which was wel begon.  
 Embowded sholdey hym a noon.  
 pre fisses all of oo colour.  
 In manere as it were a tour.  
 vpon pe p'ensel were drouht.  
 vlyes kuel pis to ke nouht.  
 And preiey to wite in som p'urte.  
 what prync it myght signefie.  
 A signe it is pe wite answerde.  
 Of an Emperre and forp he ferde.  
 he so deynly whan he pat ferde.  
 vlyes out of sleep abreyde.  
 And pat was rite a yen pe day.  
 pat leuger slepen he ne may.  
 men seyn a man hay kuowlechyng.  
 sauf of hym self of alle prync.  
**Serhatius... multa multa scilicet...**  
**z scriptos nescant...**  
 his othwe chaunce no man knolke.  
 But as fortune it on him prouke.  
 was neigre yit so wys a clerk.  
 which myght kuowle al goddes werk.  
 he pe seart which god hay set.  
 A yen a man may not be let.  
 vlyes pouh pat he be wys.  
 wyf all his wite in his adys.  
 pe more pat he his p'euene accoy.  
 pe lasse he dot what it amount.  
 for all his calculacioun.  
 he sep no demonstracioun.



Al pleyntly for to knowe an ende,  
 But napeles holdy so it wende.  
 He dradde hym of his owne sone,  
 pat maky wel ye more astounde. *h*  
 And shope porfore a noon wy al.  
 So pat wy hime castel wal.  
 Thelamachus his sone he sette.  
 And vpon hym strong warde he sette.  
 ye soye ferpere he ne knolde.  
 Til pat fortune hym ouer prelle.  
 But napeles for sikernesse.  
 Wher pat he myght wete and gesse.  
 A place strengest in his londe.  
 yete let he make of hym and soude.  
 A strengthe where he wolde dwelle.  
 Was neuere man yit her de telle.  
 Of such an oyer as it was.  
 And for to strengthe hym in pat cas.  
 Of all his lond ye sikernesse.  
 Of seruants and ye wormeste.  
 To open hym wy hime warde.  
 he charged hem pei shulde harde.  
 And made such an ordenaunce.  
 for loue ne for aquyntaunce.  
 pat were wery were it late.  
 pei sholde lode in at ye gate.  
 no maner man what so he wadde.  
 Bot if so were pat he so bidde.  
 But al pat myght hym not auale.  
 for whom fortune wol assaille.  
 per may be no such resistence.  
 Whiche myght make a man defence.  
 pat al shal be mot fulle algate.  
 his curtes whiche I spak of late.  
 On whom blysses hay be gete.  
 A child yow he it haue forpote.  
 Whan tyme come as it was done.  
 She was deliuered of a sone.  
 Whiche cleped is Thelomus.  
 his whan he was bore was. *chis*  
 Aboute his moder to ful age.  
 pat he can reson and langage.  
 In good estat was dralle forp.  
 And whan he was so muche wory.  
 To stonden in amannes stede.  
 Curtes his moder hay hym bede.  
 pat he shal to his fader go.  
 And tolde hym al to gedre yo.  
 What man he was pat hym begat.  
 And whan Thelomus of pat.  
 Was war and hadde full knolechge.  
 Holl pat his fader was a kynge.  
 He preyed his moder faue pis.  
 To go where pat his fader is.  
 And she hym grauntey pat he shal.  
 And made hym redy forp wy al.  
 It was pat tyme such vance.

pat euery man the conouance.  
 Of his contre bar in his hond.  
 Whan he went in to straunge lond.  
 And pus was euery man perfore.  
 Wel knolde where pat he was bore.  
 for esiaile and mistwrynges.  
 pei dede panne suche pynge.  
 pat euery man may oyer knolde.  
 So it besel pat ilke prowe.  
 Thelomus as in pis cas.  
 Of his contre ye signe was.  
 pre fishes whiche he shulde bere.  
 vpon ye psonow of a spere.  
 And whan pat he was pus araid.  
 And hay his harners all assaid.  
 pat he was redy euerydel.  
 his moder bad hym fare wel.  
 And seide hym pat he shold wygo.  
 his fader grete a thousand sygo.  
 Thelomus his moder keste.  
 And took his loue & where he wiste.  
 his fader was ye were nam.  
 Til he vnto rachaie cam.  
 Whiche of pat lond ye chieff citee.  
 Was cleped and yere axey he.  
 Where was ye kynge & how he ferde.  
 And whan pat he ye soye herde.  
 Where pat ye kynge dweles was.  
 A lone vpon his grete pas.  
 he rode hym forp and in his hond.  
 he bar ye signal of his lond.  
 Wy fishes pre as I haue told.  
 And pus he went vnto pat hold.  
 Where pat his owne fader dwelley.  
 ye cause whi he comy he telley.  
 vnto ye keepers of ye gate.  
 And wolde haue comen in pate.  
 But shortly pei hym seide nay.  
 And he als faue as euere he may.  
 Bysouhte and tolde hem ofte pis.  
 How pat ye kynge his fader is.  
 But pei wy proude wordes grete.  
 Begonne to manace and to prete.  
 But he go fro ye gate faste.  
 pei wolde hym take and sette faste.  
 fro wordes in swokus pus.  
 pei felle and so Thelomus.  
 Was sore hurt and welwys ded.  
 But wy his sharpe spere hed.  
 he maky defence how so it felle.  
 And wan ye pate vpon hem alle.  
 And hay slayn of ye beste fyne.  
 And pei asayden also dyne.  
 purah out ye castel al aboute.  
 On euery syde men comen oute.  
 Wher of ye knynges herre afflyghte.  
 And he wy all the harte he myghte.



And here caughte and fory he goy.  
 As he pat was myh wood and wrogy.  
 He seyh pe gates ful of blood.  
 Thelomonus and where he stood.  
 He seih also but he ne knelle.  
 What man it was and to hym prelle.  
 His spere and he fert out a side.  
 But desene which shal betide.  
 Befell pat uke tyme so.  
 Thelomonus kelle no ying po.  
 What man it was pat to hym caste.  
 And what his owne spere laste.  
 Wry al pe signal per upon.  
 He ayt vi to pe kyng anoon.  
 And suot hym wry a dedly wounde.  
 Olyes fell a noon to grounde.  
 To every man pe kyng pe kyng.  
 Begun to crye and of his ying.  
 Thelomonus which seih pe cas.  
 On knees he fell and seide helas.  
 I haue myn owne fader slayn.  
 Now wolde I depen wonder fayn.  
 Now se me who pat euere wyle.  
 For certes it is rih good skile.  
 He crye he wep he sey per fore.  
 Helas pat euere was I bore.  
 Pat me unhappi destyne.  
 So wofully comy Iu by me.  
 His kyng which pat hay liff ynouh.  
 His herte to hym a yen he drouh.  
 And to pat boys an ere he leyde.  
 And understode al pat he seide.  
 And gan to speke and seide on his.  
 Kyng me his man and whan he seih  
 Thelomonus his pouht he sette.  
 Upon pe weuene which he mette.  
 And axey pat he myhte so.  
 His spere on which pe fysshes pre.  
 He seih upon a pensel wrouht.  
 So wylt he wel it fyller nouht.  
 And bad hym pat he telle sholde.  
 How whens he cam and what he wolde.  
 Thelomonus in sorwe and wo.  
 So as he myhte tolde po.  
 On to Olyes al pe cas.  
 How pat I wces his moder was.  
 And so fory seide hym euery del.  
 How pat his moder gret hym wel.  
 And in what wise he hym sente.  
 So wylt Olyes what it mente.  
 And took hym in his armes softe.  
 And al bledryng he keste him ofte.  
 And seide sone whil I lyme.  
 His infortune I pe foryeue.  
 After his ower sone in haste.  
 He sende and he began hym haste.  
 And cam to his fader tyr.

But whan he seih hym in such plit.  
 He wolde haue romie vpon pat ower.  
 Anoon. and slayn his owen broper.  
 I le hadde he pat Olyes.  
 He tene hem made acorde and pes.  
 And to his heyr Thelamachus.  
 He bad pat he Thelomonus.  
 Wry al his powder sholde kex.  
 Til he were of his woundes depe.  
 Al hole. and yanne he shulde hym pes.  
 Lond wher vpon he myhte lye.  
 Thelamachus whan he ne herde.  
 On to his fader he myhte se.  
 And seide he wolde doon his wille.  
 So dwelle pei to gedre stille.  
 Pe se breperen and pe fader stene.  
 A wher of sorcerie seruey.  
 purgh sorcerie his liff he wan.  
 purgh sorcerie his wo bitan.  
 purgh sorcerie his loue he ches.  
 purgh sorcerie his liff he les.  
 pe child was note in sorcerie.  
 pe which dede al his felonie.  
 purgh which was a yen fynde wrouht.  
 Vnkyneliche it was about.  
 pe child his owne fader plouh.  
 pat was vnkyneliche yough.  
 For his take hede holl pat is.  
 So for to wryme done anys.  
 Which endey al his toye in wo.  
 For of his art I fynde also.  
 pat hay be do for loues sake.  
 Wher of yoll myht ensample take.  
 A gret crowne Imperial.  
 Which euere in memorial.  
 A mony pe men holl so it wende.  
 Shal dwelle to pe worldes ende.  
 This narrat exempli sup eodem  
 qualiter et ceteris ab egypto in ma  
 cedonia fugitiuis Olympiadem p  
 lapi regis ibidem tunc absentis  
 rem arte magna decipiens cu ipso  
 concubuit magnamq; ex ea Alexan  
 dro sortitorum genuit qui uatius  
 postea ad ad erudiendum sub custodia  
 et ceteris ptem suam ab altitudine  
 cuiusdam turris in fossam profunda  
 pians interfecit. Et sic sortitor  
 ex suo sortitio infortunij sortem  
 sortitus est.  
 The hys creatour of prynces.  
 Which is pe kyng of alle kyns.  
 And many a wonder sholde he  
 Per stiden vnder his suffraunce.  
 per wor no man pe cause wyl.  
 But he pe which is almyhty.  
 And pat was proued whilom y.



Whan that ye kynge Nectanabus.  
Which hadde Emypte for to lede.  
Bot for he sein tofore ye dede.  
purgh magiks of his sorcerie.  
Wher of he coupe a greet partie.  
his enemye to hym comende.  
ffro Whom he myght hym not defende.  
Out of his owne lond he fledde.  
And in ye wise as he hym dresde.  
It self for al his witchecraft.  
So pat Emypte hym was becraft.  
And he disguised fledde a weye.  
He shyn and held ye rith weye.  
To inacedorne where pat he.  
A rincey at ye chese cite.  
ye women of his chambere pere.  
At ony for to serue hym were.  
ye whiche he trustey wonder wel.  
ffor yei were trewe as eny fel.  
And happy pat yei wy hem ladde.  
Part of ye bested good he hadde.  
yei toke comynge in ye towne.  
After redyposicion.  
Wher as hym poult best to dwelle.  
He axey pany and herde telle.  
how pat ye kyng was out go.  
Upon a weye he hadde go.  
But in pat cite panyne was.  
ye yllene whiche Olympias.  
Was hore. and wy solempnite.  
ye feste of here natiuite.  
As it be felle was panyne holde.  
And for hir luste to beholde.  
And pseyed of ye poeple aboute.  
She shope here for to riden oute.  
At after mete al oppuly.  
A noon were alle men redy.  
And pat was in ye monye of may.  
ye lusty queene in good aray.  
Was sette upon a mule whyt.  
To seen it was a greet delit.  
ye ioie pat ye cite made.  
wy freshe yunges and wy glade.  
ye noble towne was al behouged.  
And euery wynt was sore alonned.  
To see ye lusty lady ryde.  
were was met meye on alle side.  
Where as she passy by ye strete.  
were was ful many a tymber bete.  
And many a mayde karolunge.  
And pus purgh out ye towne plegunge.  
ye yllene on to apleyn rode.  
Wher pat she houned and a bode.  
To se dwelle panyne pleye.  
ye lusty folk iuste and comeyne.  
And so fory euery ower man.  
Which pleye coupe his pley begun.

To pleye wy noble queene.  
Nectanabus cam to ye greue.  
A monyoper and dwyll hym nyh.  
But whan pat he ye lady sein.  
And of here bounte hede toke.  
he coupe nouht wy dwalle his look.  
To se nouht elles in ye feld.  
But stood and ony here behelde.  
of his cloyng and of his gere.  
He was dwyllch all ower pere.  
So pat it happy uite luste.  
ye yllene on hym hire phe caste.  
And euell pat he was straunge anon.  
But he behelde hire euere in on.  
wy oute blenchyn of hire cheere.  
She toke goode hede of his manere.  
And wonder whi he dede so.  
And bad men sholde for him go.  
He cam and dede here reuerence.  
And she hym axey in silence.  
ffro when he cam and what he wolde.  
And he wy sobre wordes tolde.  
And seip ma dame a clef I am.  
To yow and in messaye I cam.  
ye whiche I may not tellen here.  
But if it like yow to here.  
I mot he seide al pryncly.  
Where non shal be but ye and I.  
pus for ye tyme he took his reue.  
The day gop foryt ille was eue.  
pat euery man mot lette his weye.  
And she poult euere upon ye clef.  
Whac prync it is he wolde mene.  
And in ye wise abode ye yllene.  
And passy ouer ylle nyht.  
Til it was on ye morowe lyght.  
She sende for hym and he come.  
wy him his astellabre he nome.  
Which was of fru gold peryous.  
wy poyntes and cercles merueilous.  
And epe ye heuenech figures.  
dwylt in a booke full of peryntures.  
he took ye lady for to shewe.  
And tolde of eche of hem be rewe.  
ye coure and ye condiaon.  
And she wy gret affection.  
Sat stille and herde what he wolde.  
And pus whanne he sein tyme he tolde.  
And ferney wy hile wordes wyse.  
A tale and seip in such wyse.  
A dame but a while ago.  
Where I was in Emypte go.  
And radde in scole off ye science.  
It fel in to my conscience.  
ye I vnto ye temple wente.  
And per wha all myn hole entente.  
As I my sacrifice dede.



On of pe goddes hay me bede.  
 pat I yow thynke pryncely.  
 So pat ye make yow redy.  
 And pat ye be no yingyngast.  
 For he such loue hay to yow cast.  
 pat ye selte be his owne dere.  
 And he shal be yowre bedde fere.  
 Til ye conceyue and be wyf chylde.  
 And with pat word she wex al mylde.  
 And soundel red becom for shame.  
 And axep hym pat goddes name.  
 Which so wole don hire compaignie.  
 And he seide Amos of Rubie.  
 And she sey pat may I not leue.  
 But of I seyh a better preue.  
 Madame quod Rectanabus.  
 In tokyng pat it shal be pus.  
 pis nyht for enformacion.  
 ye shal haue an adision.  
 pat Amos shal to yow appere.  
 To shewe and teche in what manere.  
 ye ying shal afterward befulle.  
 ye outheu wedd aboute alle.  
 To make ioye of such a lord.  
 For whan ye ben of on acord.  
 he shal a sone of yow begete.  
 Which wyf his swerd shal wyue a grette.  
 ye wille worlde in Louye a brette.  
 Alle crych synners shal hym drede.  
 And in such wyse yow be hote.  
 ye god of etye. he shal be hote.  
 If ye be so yow quod ye allene.  
 pis yow selte it shal be sene.  
 And if it falle in to my grace  
 of god Amos pat I purchase.  
 To take of hym so gret wurschipe.  
 I wole do ye such ladyschipe.  
 Wher of yow schalt for eueremo.  
 Be riche. and he hire yowker poo.  
 And took his leue and fory he wente.  
 She wiste litel what he mente.  
 For it was gyle and forcerie.  
 All pat she took for prophete.  
 Rectanabus purgh out ye day.  
 Whan he cam home wher pat he lay.  
 his chambere by hym selfe took.  
 And ouer torney many a booke.  
 And yinghye craft of artmage.  
 of wex he forney an yingage.  
 he loky his equacions.  
 And ete ye constellacions.  
 he loky ye conuacions.  
 he loky ye recepacions.  
 his signe his houe his ascendent.  
 And swalwe fortune of his assent.  
 The name of allene ollyngas.  
 In pilke yingage write was.

Amysdes in ye front aboue.  
 And pus to wyllme his lust of loue.  
 Rectanabus pis Werk hapdht.  
 And Whanne to cam wyf June nyht.  
 pat eueri Wyht is falle a slepe.  
 he pouht he wold his tyme kepe.  
 As he whiche hay his houre appoynt.  
 And yanne first he hay enougnt.  
 Wyf sondry hettes pat figure.  
 And yer vpon he gan coure.  
 So pat purgh his euchaument.  
 pis Lady which was Innocent.  
 And wist no ying of pis gyle.  
 aette as she septe pilke whilo.  
 holdy for ye herene cam a lyht.  
 Which all here chambere made lht.  
 And as she loky to and fro.  
 she seih here pouhte a dragon po.  
 Whos scherdes shynen as ye sone.  
 And hay his softe paas byngome.  
 Wyf al ye chore pat he may.  
 Toward ye bedde yere she lay.  
 Til he cam to ye beddes side.  
 And she lay stille and no ying cryde.  
 For he dede litle hese yingges faue.  
 And was curreys and deboune.  
 And as he stood hure faste by.  
 his forme he chaungyng sodeynly.  
 And ye figure of man he nom.  
 To hure and in to bedde he com.  
 And such ying yere of loue he wold.  
 Wher of so as hure yanne pouhte.  
 purgh whym of pis god Amos.  
 Wyf childe a noon here woube awo.  
 And she was wonder glad wyf all.  
 Rectanabus which causey all.  
 of pis metrede ye substantia.  
 Whan he seih tyme his yingomania.  
 he syng and no ying more seide.  
 Of his careate and she abreyde.  
 Out of here slepe and leuey wel.  
 pat it is so yanne euerydeyl.  
 Off pat pis clerk hure hadde told.  
 And was ye gladder manyfold.  
 In hope of such a glad metrede.  
 Which after shal befulle in dede.  
 The longer sore after ye day.  
 pat she here woube telle may.  
 To pis gylout in yingmete.  
 Which Euell it als wel as she.  
 And nayeles on mozt w same.  
 she lost all oper ying to done.  
 And for hym sende and all ye arad.  
 she told hym pleyntly as it was.  
 And seide how yanne wel she wike.  
 pat she hure wordes nyht twiste.  
 For she fond here anisou.



Right after ye condicioun.  
 Whiche he hir hadde told to fore.  
 And preyed hym herthly perfore.  
 That he here holde couenant.  
 So for of al ye remenant.  
 That he may purghe his ordenuance.  
 Toward ye god do such plesance.  
 That he may purghe myght hym kepe.  
 In such wise as she mette a lepe.  
 And he pat coupe of gyle ynough.  
 Whan he pis herde of joye he lough.  
 And seide madame he shal be do.  
 But his g. wone wold per to.  
 His myght whan pat he comy to pleyo.  
 That pore be no liff in ye weye.  
 But I pat shal do his libyng.  
 Ordynge so for his conyng.  
 That ye no full not of hym faile.  
 For his madame g. wold confaile.  
 That ye it kepe so prync.  
 That no wight elles but we pre.  
 Haue knowlechyngh holv pat it is.  
 For elles myght it fare amys.  
 If ye dede ouht pat shulde hym greue.  
 And pus he maky hys to be leue.  
 And feynyng vnder gyle fey.  
 But napeles all pat he fey.  
 She twolwey and ayeu ye myht.  
 She hay wip june here chynbredsht.  
 Where as pis gylour faste by.  
 Upon pis god schal pryncel.  
 And warte as he maky here to weue.  
 And pus his noble mentil shene.  
 Whan he moste trusty was decyved.  
 The myht cam 2 pe chambre is keptes.  
 Recanabus hay take his place.  
 And whanne he seih ye tyme 2 space.  
 purgh decept of his manye.  
 He put hym out of mannes lye.  
 And of a dragon took ye forme.  
 Als he which wolde hym al conforme.  
 To pat she seih in shene erpys.  
 And pus to chambre come he is.  
 ye shene lay a bedde and seih.  
 And hopey euere as he cam neygh.  
 That he god of dubio were.  
 So hay she wel ye lesse feere.  
 But for he wolde hys more assure.  
 Wit oft he chauntyng his figure.  
 And of a wether ye liffnesse.  
 He took in sune of his noblesse.  
 Wip large hornes for ye noues.  
 Of fyn gold and of riche stones.  
 And azone on his hed he bat.  
 And so demylche er she was war.  
 Als he which al gyle cam.  
 His forme he towey in to a man.

And cam to bedde and she lay fulle.  
 Where as she suffrey all his wille.  
 Als she which wold not mys do.  
 But napeles it happy so.  
 And pouh she were in part decyved.  
 For al pat she hay conceyved.  
 ye woryette of alle bypys.  
 Whiche ouere was to fore or fippe.  
 Of conquest and of cheualrie.  
 So pat purgh gyle and sorcery.  
 per was pat noble bypys begonne.  
 Which al ye world hay after wone.  
 pus felt ye purgh which falle sholde.  
 Recanabus hay pat he wolde.  
 Wip gyle he hay his loue spedde.  
 Wip gyle he cam in to ye bedde.  
 Wip gyle he goy hym out ayeu.  
 The was a schreved chynbredsht.  
 So to begyle a wory shene.  
 And pat on hym was after seue.  
 But napeles ye purgh is do.  
 His fulle god was sone go.  
 Wip his decepte and held hym clos.  
 Til morwe cam pat he aros.  
 And ye whan tyme and leysen was.  
 ye shene told hym al ye cas.  
 Als he pat gyle noon supposy.  
 And of this pynnes she hym apposey.  
 On was if pat pis god no more.  
 Wol come ayeu and ouer more.  
 How she schal stonde in acord.  
 Wip bypys whilpe here owne lord.  
 Whan he comy home and seey hys gone.  
 madame he sey lat me al one.  
 Als for ye god g. vnder take.  
 That whan it lye wold to take.  
 His compaignie at eny wille.  
 If I a day to fore it knolde.  
 The schal be wip wold on ye myht.  
 And he is wel of such anyht.  
 To kepe wold from alle blame.  
 For ye confort wold madame.  
 Ther shal noon oper cause be.  
 pus dooke he leue and forp goye.  
 And ye began he for to mise.  
 How he ye shene myht excuse.  
 Toward ye bypys of pat is fulle.  
 And fond a craft a monyes alle.  
 purgh which he hay a sefoul daunted.  
 purgh his manye and so enchaunted.  
 That he fey forp whan it was myht.  
 In to ye bypys tence right.  
 Where pat he lay a myght his hoste.  
 And whanne he was a slope moste.  
 Wip pat ye sefoul to hym brouhte.  
 And over chynbredsht whiche he wrouhte.  
 At home wip june hys chynbredsht scille.



The kyng he torney at his wille.  
 And make hym for to dreme and se  
 The dragon and pe pynete.  
 Whiche was be tylene hym and pe qweue.  
 And ouer pat he made hym bene.  
 In swene hole pat pe god Amas.  
 When he by fro pe qweue aros.  
 Took for a byng wher iune a ston.  
 Was set and graue per byon.  
 A sone in whiche whan he comyng.  
 A leon wy a swerd he seih.  
 And wy pat preute as he po mette.  
 Byon pe qweues wombe he sette.  
 A seal and got hym for his were.  
 Wy pat pe swene wente albere.  
 And so be gan pe kyng a wake.  
 And shup for his wines sake.  
 Wher pat he lay wy iune his teute.  
 And hap gret wonder what it mento.  
 Wy pat he hasty hym to ryse.  
 A non he sente after pe wise.  
 Among pe whiche per was oon.  
 A clere his name was Amphion.  
 Whan he pe kynges swene herde.  
 What it betokner he answered.  
 And seip so slyer as pe wyf.  
 A god hap leye by in wyf.  
 And gete a sone whiche shal wyne.  
 The world and al pat is wy iune.  
 A leon is pe kyng of bestes.  
 So shal pe world obere his hestes.  
 Whiche wy his swerd shal belonne.  
 As fer as shynen em soune.  
 The kyng was doubty of his dome.  
 But napeles whan pat he com.  
 A yen in to his olbue londe.  
 His wyf wy chylde gret he fond.  
 He myht not hym self steere.  
 pat he ne made here leuy chere.  
 But he whiche coupe of alle sorde.  
 Rectanabus byon pe morwe.  
 purgh pe decepte of Rignymance.  
 Took of a dragon pe semblance.  
 And where pe kyng sat in pe halle.  
 Com in ralyppyn among he alle.  
 Wyf such a noyse and such a rore.  
 pat per a gast were also fore.  
 As rouh thei sholde deye anon.  
 And napeles he greuer noon.  
 But got tollard pe deys on hih.  
 And whan he cam pe qweue nyh.  
 he synce his noyse in his wyf.  
 To here he profrey his seruise.  
 And leyp his hed byon his karm.  
 The wyf goodly chere hire arm.  
 A bolde his necke a yenward leyde.  
 And pus pe qweue wyf him pleyde.

In syt of alle men aboute.  
 And at pe laste he gan to loute.  
 And obellauce by to here make.  
 As he pat wolde his leue take.  
 And sodeynlych his lophy forme.  
 In to an eyle he gan transforme.  
 And fleyh and sette hym on a rail.  
 Wher of pe kyng hap gret meruail.  
 For per he pryncer hym and ptey.  
 As dop as hauf whan hym wel lye.  
 And after pat him selfe he shoo.  
 Wher of pat all pe halle quook.  
 As in a terre mote were.  
 pei seiden alle god was per.  
 In such ares and for pe fleyh.  
 The kyng whiche al pe wonder seih.  
 Whan he cam to his chambre a lout.  
 By to pe qweue he made his moone.  
 And of foreyuenesse here preyde.  
 For yanne he kuelde wel as he seide.  
 She was wyf chylde wy a godde.  
 pus was pe kyng wyf oute rode.  
 chastised and pe qweue exaused.  
 Of pat she hadde ben accused.  
 And for pe grette euidance.  
 vis after pat in pe presence.  
 Of kyng whelippe and oper mo.  
 Whan pei rede in pe felde so.  
 A phesant cam be fore here she.  
 The whiche a noon as pei here she.  
 fleyng let an ey down falle.  
 And it to brank before hem alle.  
 And as pei token per of kepe.  
 per seih owt of pe schelle cope.  
 A lrel serpent on pe ground.  
 Whiche hamper all aboute wunde.  
 And in a yen it wolde haue wunde.  
 But for pe bremynng of pe soune.  
 It myht not and so it deye.  
 And per byon pe derkes seide.  
 As pe serpent whan it was oute.  
 Went enduon pe schelle a bout.  
 And myht not torne in a yen.  
 So shal it fallen in certem.  
 pus chuld pe world shal enduone.  
 And a boue alle pe corone.  
 hym shal be falle and in wung ane.  
 he shal desre in his corone.  
 Whan al pe world is in his hond.  
 To come a yen in to pat lound.  
 Where he was boz and in his were.  
 Howard he shal wyf puyson deye.  
 The kyng whiche al pe seih a herde.  
 For pat day for how pat it ferde.  
 his helouie hap al forete.  
 But he whiche hap pe childe benet.  
 Rectanabus in pynete.



ye tyme of his natyure.  
 Upon ye constellation.  
 And wynter and relacoun.  
 may to ye gdwene hold she shal do.  
 And euery houre apoynted so.  
 pat no mynute per of was fore.  
 So pat in duhe tyme is bore.  
 his chylde and fory wyf per vpon.  
 ye folk wondred many on.  
 Of terremote vniuersel.  
 The sonne took colour of steel.  
 And lost his lichte ye wyndes blew.  
 And many stranges ouerprelle.  
 The see his propre kynde chaunged.  
 And all ye world his forme straunged.  
 ye ponder wyf his fory leuene.  
 So cruel was vpon ye heuene.  
 pat euery ceryly creature.  
 ye pouht his lyf in auenture.  
 ye tempest atte laste cessey.  
 ye chylde is kept his age encessey.  
 And Alisandre his name is hore.  
 To whom Calistre z Aristote.  
 Totechen hym philosophie.  
 Entenden and astronomye.  
 Wyf ower yunges whiche he couye.  
 Also to teche hym in his pouye.  
 Rectanabus took vpon honde.  
**O**ut euery may vnderstonde.  
 Of forcerie holl pat it wende.  
 In wole hym selfe proude at ende.  
 And namely for to begyle.  
 A lady whiche wyf oure gyle.  
 Supposen twylf all pat she herep.  
 But often he pat euile steerep.  
 This shap is dreyn per hime amysse.  
 And in his cas wite so be cisse.  
 Rectanabus vpon a nyht.  
 Whan it was faire z sterre lyht.  
 his yonge lord hadde vpon hye.  
 A bone a tour where pat he seie.  
 ye ferres such as he accomptey.  
 And say pat eche of hem amoutey.  
 As wouh he kuelde of alle yunge.  
 But yet hap he no knowlechunge.  
 What shal bu to hym self befulle.  
 Whan he hap told his wordes alle.  
 his yonge lord prouue hym apposep.  
 And axep if pat he supposen.  
 What dep he shal hym self deye.  
 he seip or fortune is a weye.  
 And euery ferre hap lost his wone.  
 Or elles of myn oldhne sone.  
 I shal be slayn I may not flee.  
 yowhe Alisandre in pryuate.  
 her of his olde dourand wey.  
 And ev pat ower ouht a frey.

Al soeprylch hys olde bones.  
 he shof ouer ye wal at ones.  
 And seip hym lyddon pere apart.  
 Wher of noll seruey all ym art.  
 yow kuelde wel all of mennes chaunces.  
 And of ym selfe hyst ignorance.  
 pat yow hast seid amonges alle.  
 Of ym persone is noll befulle.  
**R**ectanabus whiche hap his dep.  
 pat whil hym lasteyd and bley.  
 To Alisandre he spake and seide.  
 pat he wyf wroug blame on him leyde.  
 fro pount to pount and alle ye aias.  
 he tolde holl he his sone was.  
 pro he whiche fory was ynouh.  
 Out of ye dicke his fader drouh.  
 And told his moder holl it ferde.  
 In counseil and whanne she it herde.  
 And kuelde ye toknes whiche he tolde.  
 She myte what she seye sholde.  
 But stood abashed for ye while.  
 Of his mariage and al ye gyle.  
 She pouht holl she was decryued.  
 pat he hap of a man conceyued.  
 And wende a god it hadde be.  
 But napeles in such degre.  
 So as she myht here honour saue.  
 She schope ye body was be graue.  
**A**nd pus Rectanabus abouhte.  
 ye forcerie whiche he wrouhte.  
 yowh he vpon ye creatures.  
 yurgh his caretes and figures.  
 ye maystrie and ye polwer hadde.  
 his creatour to nouh him ladd.  
 A yem whos ladd his craft he bsey.  
 Whan he for lust his god refusep.  
 And tok hym to ye deuels craft.  
 To what profit him is belaste.  
 pat yung yurgh whiche he wende hame stonde.  
 first hym exiled out of londe.  
 whiche was his oldhne z from a frug.  
 made hym to ben an vnderlyng.  
 And sithen to descryue a gdwene.  
 pat tozney hym to mechel tene.  
 yurgh lust of loue he gat hym hate.  
 pat ende couye he not abate.  
 his olde sehtes whiche he caste.  
 yong Alisandre hem ouer caste.  
 his fader whiche hym mysbegat.  
 he shouh a gret myshap was pati.  
 But for o mys an ower mys.  
 was yowde and so ful ofte it is.  
 Rectanabus his craft mys went.  
 So it mysfell hym or he went.  
 I not what helpey pat clerke.  
 whiche may a man to do folie.  
 And naneliche of myrounace.



Which stant upon ye meserance.

**M**ota qualiter Rex zoroastes fra-  
tim ad ab utero matris sue nascere-  
tur gaudio magno visit in quo pre-  
nostia doloris subsequentis signum  
figurabatur nam & ipse deestabilis  
magice primus fuit induratus que  
postea rex surre dux morte tra-  
adavit & sic opus oparum conspexit

**E**nd for to se more evidence.

**Z**oroastes which experience.

**O**f art magis ferst for dyuul.

**A**nd noon as he was boze he loush.

**W**hich tokne was of his suynge.

**F**or of his owne contrabynge.

**H**e sold magice and talist it fory.

**B**ut al pat was lital woy.

**F**or of surrie a woy lital.

**H**ym loush and pat was his endur.

**B**ut yit purgh hym his craft is bled.

**A**nd he purgh all ye world actused.

**F**or it shal neuere wel accheue.

**P**at stant nouht wih wye ye beleue.

**B**ut lich to wolle melle forme.

**W**ho lest hym self hay lital wome.

**A**nd yeude prouep euery pyn.

**170. de saule & whitomissa.**

**S**aule which was of iude kyn.

**O**ppeyne of dey for bede his art.

**A**nd yit he took p of his part.

**Y**e whitomisse in samarie.

**H**as hym counseyl by sorcerye.

**W**hiche after fel to mochel forwe.

**F**or he was slayn vpon ye moche.

**T**o lome moche yingit helpey.

**B**ot of to moche no man helpey.

**S**o for to lode on euery side.

**M**agice may nouht wel betide.

**F**or yit my sone i wolde rede.

**P**at polw of yese cunsaules drede.

**P**at for noblity of ewely lous.

**W**old seche so to me a boue.

**W**her of as in ye worldes wonder.

**P**ou shalt for euere be put vnder.

**M**y goode fader graunt mercy.

**F**or euere i shal be war per by.

**O**f lous what so me befall.

**S**uch sorcerye abouen all.

**F**ro his day fory i shal eschelbe.

**P**at so ne wole i nouht purselle.

**M**y list of lous for to seche.

**B**ut yit i wolde yoll be seche.

**B**eside pat me stant of lode.

**A**nd i yoll herde speke a boue.

**H**ow alisadudie was becauht.

**T**o Aristotle and so wel tauht.

**O**f al pat to a kynge belougey.

**W**her of myn herde fore lousgey.

**T**o wite what it wolde mene.

**F**or by reson i wolde wene.

**P**at if i herde of reuges strauunge.

**Y**it for a tyme it sholde chaunge.

**M**y peyne and lisse me sonde.

**M**y good sone pou seist wel.

**F**or wisdom hold pat euere it sonde.

**T**o hym pat can it vnder sonde.

**D**oy gret profit in sondry wyle.

**B**ut touchyn of so hihe appyse.

**W**hich is not vnto Venus knolle.

**I** may it not my selue knolle.

**W**hiche of here court am al fordralle.

**A**nd am no pynge but of hure lalle.

**B**ut napeles to knolle more.

**A**nd wel as pou me lousgey fore.

**A**nd for it helpey to comune.

**A**ll be per not to me comune.

**Y**e scoles of philosophie.

**Y**et penke for to specie.

**I**n booke as it is comprehended.

**W**her of you mihtest ben amended.

**F**or polw i be nouht al comune.

**Y**pon ye forme of his writunge.

**S**om part per off yit haue i herd.

**I**n his matere how it hay ferd.

**E**xpliat liber sextus.

**I**ncipit liber septimus.

**C**um in causis sapiens doctrina su-

**lute. colat nec her qe nisi docet opem.**

**natuua supat doctrina vno qd a ore. In**

**geny doctis no dedit ipa dabit. 170 in**

**discret? hom p clumata regnat. Qui**

**magis de sapiat indiget ipe scolo.**

**Quia ois doctrina bona hiano rea**

**latute confert in hoc septimo libro**

**ad in fructu amantis danguidi in**

**tendit genus illa ex qua philosophi**

**a astrologi philosophie doctrinam**

**rege alexandru in buerit sedm ali**

**quid declarare. Diuidit eni philoso**

**phiam in tres partes quaru pma phi**

**orica. scda pethorica. tca ptaica**

**nuayata est de quaru contradiu**

**subsequenter per su**

**mula tractabit.**

**Genus ye prest of**

**lous. my sone as**

**pou hast preide a**

**boue. a har i pe so**

**le scole shal declue**

**of aristotle and**

**be the fare. Of**



Alisandre holdh he was tauht.  
 I am foundel per of destraucht.  
 For it is nouht to be matew.  
 Of loue whi he futen here.  
 To shiden so as Venus had.  
 But napeles for it is glad.  
 So as pou soust for ym apprise.  
 To here off such finges wile.  
 Wher of you wilst be tyme lisse.  
 So as I can I shal be wille.  
 For wisdom is at euery poble.  
 A boue all oper ym to knowe.  
 In loues cause and elles where.  
 For ym ny soue vnto ym ere.  
 Prouh it be nouht in ym registre.  
 Of Venus rit of pat caliste.  
 And Aristotle whilom write.  
 To Alisandre pou shalt wite.  
 But for ye lozes ben diuise.  
 I penke first to ye reherse.  
 Ye nature of philosophie.  
 Whas Aristotle of his clergie.  
 Dye and exper in ye sciens.  
 Declareth pille intelligens.  
 As of ye poyntz in ym capil.  
 Wher of ye ferste in special.  
 Is theoriez which is grounded.  
 On hym which al ye world hay founded.  
 Which comprehendz all ye lore.  
 And for to loken ouer more.  
 Next of sciens ye secounde.  
 Is Pethoriz whos falcounde.  
 A boue alle oper is eloquent.  
 To colle a tale in ingement.  
 So wel can no man speke as he.  
 The laste science off ye pre.  
 Is practiqz whos office.  
 Ye vertu triep fro ye vice.  
 And techet vpon goode peldes.  
 To fle ye compaignie of shrewdes.  
 Which stant in disposicion.  
 Of mannes fire election.  
 Practiqz enformet eke ye reule.  
 How pat a worpi kyng shal reule.  
 His redme bope in werre & in pes.  
 So puz sanz Aristotles.  
 Ye sciens hay diuided.  
 And ye nature also decaded.  
 Wher of pat eche of hem shal serue.  
 The ferste which is ye conuerse.  
 A keper of ye remenant.  
 And pat which is most sufficient.  
 And chief of ye philosophie.  
 If I per of shal specilie.  
 So as ye philosophie tolde.  
 A tow herfne and bepe pat ym it holde.  
 Prima creator dat scire sciencia

sum. Qui caput agnoscat sufficiat  
 illud ei. qd lura vnde qnz inuhat  
 nescire qd illud. Quod dicitur expedi-  
 ens pbrus ille sapit. **¶** Hic trac-  
 tat de prima parte phie que theori-  
 ca dicitur cuius natura tripli d-  
 tuta est sciencia scilicet theologia  
 phisica & mathematica pmo illa  
 parte theologie declarat.

**¶** Theoriaz principal.  
 Ye philosophie in special.  
 Ye properties hay determined.  
 As pille which is consummed.  
 Of wisdom and of hyh prudence.  
 A boue a boue alle oper in his science.  
 And stant dequied vpon ye.  
 Ye ferste of which in his degre.  
 Is cleped in philosophie.  
 Ye science of theologie.  
 Pat oper named is whispy.  
 Ye pille is seid mathematicz.  
**¶** Theologie is pat sciens.  
 Which vnto man reuerendence.  
 Of ym which is not bodely.  
 Wherof men knowe redely.  
 Ye hille almyghy trinite.  
 Which is o god in vntite.  
 Wip outen ende and begynnynge.  
 And creatour of all ymge.  
 Of heuene of erpe and eke of helle.  
 Wher of as olde booke telle.  
 Ye philosophie in his reson.  
 Drot vpon his conclusioli.  
 And of his whynnyng a clausse.  
 He clepeth god ye ferste cause.  
 Which of hym self is ilke good.  
 Wipoute whom no man is good.  
 Of which pat euery creatur.  
 Hay his beinge and his nature.  
 After ye byrme of ye ymges.  
**¶** Nota qd triplex d- eoua. prima  
 temporancia que incipit & desinit.  
 Secda ppetua que incipit & non desinit.  
 Tercia sempiterna que non  
 incipit nec desinit.

**¶** Ther ben ye formes of bynges.  
 ymge which be gan & ende shal.  
 Pat ymge is cleped temporal.  
 Ymge is also be oper wye.  
 ymge which be gan and schal non deye.  
 As soules pat ben spiritual.  
 Here be ymge is perpetuel.  
 For yere is oon libhe ye soune.  
 Whos tyme neuer was bygonne.  
 And endles shal eue be.  
 Pat is ye god whos mayeste.  
 Alle oper ymges shal gouerne.



And his being is sempiternie.  
 ye god to Whom pat all honour.  
 Belounges he is creatour.  
 And oper ben hys creatures.  
 ye god commandes ye natures.  
 pat yetto hym obeyen alle.  
 Wip outen hym What so befallle.  
 here myght is noon and he may all  
 ye god was euere and euere shall.  
 And yet begonne of his assent.  
 ye tymes alle ben present.  
 To god. to han and all vnkowle.  
 But What him liker pat yet kowle.  
 pus bope and angel and a man.  
 ye Whiche of al pat god began.  
 By cheef obeyen goddes myght.  
 And he stant endeles vp rish.  
 To his science ben pryue.  
 ye clerkes of diuinite.  
 ye Which vñ to ye poeple prechen.  
 ye fey of holy chereche & techen.  
 Which in son cas vpon beleue.  
 Stant more pan yet come preue.  
 He weye of argument sensible.  
 But nayles it is credible.  
 And dox a man gret mede haue.  
 To hym pat prekep him self to saue.  
 Theologie in such a wise.  
 Of heih science and heih apprise.  
 Aboue all oper stant vulyke.  
 And is perfect of Theorike.  
**Nota de secunda parte Theorice**  
**que philosophica dicitur.**  
 Philosophia is after ye secunde.  
 purgh which ye philosophre hay fonde.  
 To techen sonderi knowlechynge.  
 vpon ye bodilyng ynges.  
 Of man of beste of herbe of ston.  
 Of fyssh of foull of euerythyn.  
 pat ben of bodily substance.  
 ye nature and ye circumstance.  
 purgh his science it is ful soult.  
 Which vulyke and Which vulyke nouht.  
**Nota de tertia parte Theorice que**  
**mathematica dicitur an' condicio qua**  
**tuor in se continet intelligencias sci**  
**licet arismetice musicam Geome**  
**triam & astronomiam. s. pmo de**  
**arismetice natura dicere intendit.**  
 He prede point of Theoriz.  
 Which depe is mathematic.  
 diuided is in sonderi wise.  
 And stant vpon diuers apprise.  
 The firste of which is arismetiz.  
 And ye secunde is seid musiz.  
 ye prede is eke Geometrie.  
 Also ye sepe Astronomie.

Of arismetiz ye mateere.  
 Is pat of Which a man may leue.  
 What algorisme in nombre amouey.  
 Whan pat ye wise man acoupte.  
 After ye formel properte.  
 Of algorismes abed.  
 He Which multiplicacion.  
 Is muid and diminuacion.  
 Of sumes by experientie.  
 Of his art and of his science.  
**Nota de musica q. scda ps arismetice**  
**mathematice.**  
 The secunde of mathematic.  
 Which is ye science of musiz.  
 pat techer vpon armonie.  
 A man to make melodie.  
 By vops and solon of instrument.  
 purgh notes of a cordement.  
 ye Which men pronouces alofte.  
 A toll sharpe notes and noll softe.  
 A toll hihe notes and noll tolle.  
 As by ye tynne a man may kowle.  
 Which techer ye prolacion.  
 Of note and ye colacion.  
**Nota de tertia specie artis mathe**  
**matice qua geometriam vocat.**  
 Mathematic of his science.  
 Hay vit prude intelligence.  
 ful of wisdom and of clergie.  
 And depe is geometrie.  
 purgh which a man hay vilke science.  
 Of regre of brede of depe of heih.  
 To knowe ye proporaon.  
 By veray calculacion.  
 Of his science and in his wise.  
 ye olde philosophres wise.  
 Of all his wordes eue volunde.  
 Holh lunge how vilke was ye ground.  
 Controuersie per experientie.  
 ye cerce and ye circumference.  
 Of euery ying vnto ye heuene.  
 ye seten point and meure eue.  
**Mathematic a boue sepe.**  
 Of heih science hay vit ye sepe.  
 Which speker vpon astronomie.  
 And techer of ye sterres hihe.  
 Begynnyng vnto fye ye none.  
 But ferst as it was for to done.  
 ye Aristotle in oper ying.  
 vnto ye vop yonge ying.  
 ye kynde of euery element.  
 Which stant vnder ye firmament.  
 How it is muid and in What wise.  
 fye point to point ye gan deuse.  
**Quatuor omnes elementa crea**  
**tur oris. Quatuor & venti pany**  
**q. ora datur. r. va q. quadrupla**  
**complexio sorte creatur. Coporo**



*sic: itat variatus homo. Hic  
interim tractat de creacione quatuor  
elementorum: scilicet terre aeris et  
ignis necnon et de eorum naturis na  
turalibus proprietas singulis  
attribuuntur.*

**O**f fore pe creacion.  
Of eny worldes stacion.  
Of heuene of erpe or eke of helle.  
So as pe se olde bokes telle.  
Als solui to fore pe soug is set.  
And yet pei ben to gedre ket.  
Firs so pe hie puruance.  
So hadde vnder his ordinaunce.  
A met substance nre mater.  
Of which he wolde in his manere  
pe se oper pinges make and forme.  
For vit wy outen eny forme.  
Was pat matere diuierfal.  
Which hie ylem in special.  
Of ylem as I am enformed.  
pe se elementz ben made et formed.  
Of ylem elementz pei hote.  
After pe sole of aristote.  
Of which is more I schal reserte.  
Howe elementz pei ben diuerse.  
*Nota de tra quod e pmi elementu.*  
The ferste of heuimen erpe calle.  
Which is pe londest of hem alle.  
And in his forme is shapen rounde.  
Sustanciaal strong sad and soluide.  
As pat which mad is sufficiant.  
To bere vp alle pe remenant.  
For as pe point in a compas.  
Stant euene amydde riste so was.  
pe erpe set and shal abide.  
pat it may swerue to no side.  
*Whe. Dmiquodque naturaliter  
appetit suu centrum.*  
And hay his centre after pe lalde.  
Of kynde and to pat centre dralle.  
Desire euery worldes ping.  
If pei pe ne were no waynng.  
*Nota de aqua quod e secundu elementu.*  
A boue pe erpe keppe his bolwde.  
pe Water which is pe secounde.  
Of elementz and all wy oute.  
It enuironer pei pe aboute.  
But as it schelley not for pi.  
pe subtil Water myhtly.  
pouh it be of hym selfe softe.  
pe strengpe of pei pe gettey of ce.  
For rist as veries ben of blood.  
In man rist so pe Water good.  
pe pe of his colur make ful of veries.  
As wel pe hulles as pe pynes.  
And pat a man may se at phe.

For where pe hulles ben most hie.  
pe may men welle stremes hie.  
So prouep it be were of kynde.  
pe Water hieer pan pe lond.  
And ouer pei not vnderstond.

*Nota de aere quod est tertiu elementu.*  
Air is pe pridd of elementz.  
Of whos kynde hie asprementz.  
Tak euery hie iche creature.  
pe which shal vpon erpe endure.  
For as pe fische if it be drepe.  
hote in defaute of Water drepe.  
Rist so wy outen air on hie.  
No man ne beste myhte prue.  
pe which is kind of flesh et bon.  
pe is outake of all non.

*Nota de aere et aeris periferia diuidit.*  
This air in periferia pre.  
Diuided is of such degre.  
Bynepe is oon. and oon amydde.  
To which aboue is sett pe pridd.  
And vpon pe diuisions.  
pe ben diuerse impressions.  
Of moyst and eke of drye also.  
Which of pe some boe tlo.  
Ben dralle and haled vp an hyh.  
And makeu clowdes in pe skyh.  
As shelled is at mannes shir.  
Wher of be day and eke by hyht.  
After pe tymes of pe yer.  
Among be vpon erpe here.  
In sondry wise pinges falle.

*De prima aeris periferia.*  
The ferste periferie of alle.  
Engendre myse and euermore.  
pe selles and pe frostes hore.  
After ylle in sterfition.  
In which pei take impression.

*De secunda aeris periferia.*  
So pe secunde as bokes seyn.  
pe moyst droppes of pe reyn.  
Besonden in to middel erpe.  
And tempze it to seed and erpe.  
And dopt to spryng gras and flour.  
And ofte also pe mete shour.  
Out of such place it may be take.  
pat it pe forme shal for sake.  
Of reyn and in to suow be corned.  
And eke it may be so iourne.  
In sondri places vp alofte.  
pat in to hayle it tozney ofte.

*De tertia aeris periferia.*  
The pridd of air after pe lalde.  
purgh which matere as kynd dralle.  
Of drye ping as it is ofte.  
Among pe clowdes vpon lalte.  
And is so clos it may not oute.



Lib

Lib

pan is it chafed fore a boute.  
Til it to fir and leyht befulle.  
And panne it breket pe cloudes alle.  
pe Whiche of so gret noyse craken.  
pat pei pe fearful poudre maken.  
pe poudre strouk suylet er it lerte.  
And vit men sech pe fir 2 lerte.  
pe poudre strouk er pat men here.  
So may it wel be ptoued here.  
In pany Which sheldes is fio fer.  
A mannes yhe is per neer.  
pan is pe solwe to mannes eere.  
And napeles it is gret feere.  
Fore of pe strouk and of pe fir.  
Of Whiche is no recovery.  
In place Where pat pei descende.  
Bot if god wolde his grace sende.  
*Nota qualiter ignes quos vocant  
fer in aere dycurrere videmus se  
cundum varias apparencias formas  
varia gestant uaria quoz pum  
Assub. scds Capra saliens. Terri  
eres. Et quartus Daali libris  
philosophorū muncupatus est...*  
**I**n for to speken ouer pis.  
In pis partie of pan it is.  
pat men ful of te sen be nyhte.  
pe fir in sondry forme alyhte.  
Som tyme pe fir drake it seme.  
2 so pe loked wepele it deme.  
Som tyme it seme as it were.  
A stete Whiche pat glidy pere.  
But it is nouer of pe tibo.  
pe philosophre telley so.  
And seip pat of impressions.  
purngh diuerse exaltacions.  
Dpon pe cause and pe matere.  
men sech diuerse forme appere.  
Of fir Which hay sondry name.  
*Assub he seip is vilke same.*  
pe Whiche in sondry place is founde.  
Whan it is doun to pe grownde.  
So as pe fir it hay aneled.  
Ich vn to sym Which is counteled.  
Of exaltacion I fynde.  
fir kynded in pe same kynde.  
But it is of an ower forme.  
Wher of if pat I shal conforme.  
pe figure vn to pat it is.  
pe olte clerkes tellen pis.  
pat it is lyk a got suppyng.  
And for pat is such seynt.  
It hatte Capra saliens.  
And eke yese Astronomiens.  
And ower fir also by nyhte.  
Which sheldes hym to mannes syte.  
pei clepen eres pe Whiche brenney.

ich to pe corunt for pat remey.  
Dpon a corde as yowd hafe seyn.  
Whan it wyf pollder is so be seyn.  
Of sulphre and ower ymkes mo.  
*Assub he seip is vilke same.*  
Whiche seme to amannes yhe.  
2e nyhtes tyme as yowd per flise.  
A dragon brennyng in pe sky.  
And pat is cleped propriety.  
Daali. Wher of men seyn ful ofte.  
So where pe fry drake a lyste.  
fler by in pan and so pei deme.  
But whi pe fyres such seme.  
Of sondry formes to beholde.  
pe Wyse philosophre tolde.  
So as to fore it hay ben herd.  
*Assub he seip is vilke same.*  
So yus my sone hold it hay ferd.  
Of air pe due propriety.  
In sondry Wyse pou myht se.  
And hold vnder pe firmament.  
Is eke pe wyde element.  
Which enbuoney bope tye.  
pe Water and pe Lond also.  
*Assub he seip is vilke same.*  
And for to tellen ouer pis.  
Of elementz Which pe seip is.  
pat is pe fir in his deme.  
Whiche enbuoney poper pre.  
And is wyf oure myht aldre.  
But list not what seip pe elme.  
for vpon hem pat I haue seid.  
pe creatour hay sette and lerd.  
pe kynde and pe complexion.  
Of alle mennes nacion.  
ffoure elementz sondry per be.  
Ich vn to Whiche of pat deme.  
A moung pe men pere ben also.  
Complexions foure and no mo.  
Wher of pe philosophre trecte.  
pat he no pany behynde lerte.  
And seip hold pat pei ben diuerse.  
So as I shal to pe reherse.  
*Nota hic qualiter secundum naturam  
quatuor elementorum quatuor in  
humano corpore complexionibus  
dicitur melancholia flamma sanguis  
et colera naturaliter constituuntur.*  
*Vnde primo de melancholia dicitur...*  
**I**n Whiche nature of euery kynde.  
pe nyhtes tyme as yowd per flise.  
Of man Which is his creatur.  
Hay so deuised pe nature.  
pat oon to ower wel acorde.  
And by pe cause it so discord.  
pe Wyf Which seip pe fithness.  
away seunde vpon no pithness.  
Of eyre Which is cold and dre.



ye kynde of man malencolic.  
is cleped and pat is ye fowste.  
ye most vngoodeliche and ye wyldeste.  
for yn to lones werk on nyght.  
hym lackey hope wylt and nyght.  
to wonder is in lusty place.  
of loue pouh he lese grace.  
What man hap pat complexion.  
ful of ymaginacions.  
of dreces and of drayful pouhtes.  
he frech hym seluen al to nouhtes.  
ye water which is moyste & colde.  
maky fleume which is many fold.

**De complexionis flammatis**

for yete sloth and wery sone.  
of euery ymyg which is to done.  
he is of kynde sufficient.  
to holde loue his couenunt.  
But pat hym lackey appetit.  
which lonyge yn to such delit.  
What man pat taky his kynde of pain.  
he shal be lye he shal be fayr.

**De complexionis sanguinis**

for his complexion is blood.  
of all oper is noon so good.  
for he hap hope wylt and nyght.  
to plese and paye loue his rite.  
wher of as he hap vnder take.  
wryng is if pat he be for sake.

**De complexionis colere**

for he is of his condicion.  
which in a man is colre hote.  
whos proprietes ben drye & hote.  
it maky a man ben enyngous.  
and wylt of fote and eke nous.  
of contek and foolhastynesse.  
he hap a rite met bestynesse.  
to penke of loue and litel may.

pouh he be hote wel a day.  
on nyght whan pat he wole assaye.  
he may ful euell his dette paye.

**Nota qualiter quatuor complexionis quatuor in hote habitaciones duntaxat possident**

After ye kynde of pelement.  
his fowste a nymmes kynde went.  
as touchyng his complexion.  
vpon sondry diuision.

of drye of moyste of colde of hote.  
and eche of hem his owne secte.  
as propozed hap wy quene a man.  
and first to telle as I began.

**Splen domus est malencolic**

the spleen is to malencolic.  
assigned for herbergerie.

**Uulmo domus est flammatis**

the moyste fleume wy his colde.

Hay in his lonyges for his holde.  
orderned hym a propre stede.  
to dwelle here as he is bede.

**Exar domus sanguinis**

so ye sanguyn complexion.  
nature of hure in pexion.  
a propre hous hath in ye luyere.  
for his dwellyng maad deluyere.

**Hel domus colere**

the drie colre wy his hete.  
wy weye of kynde his pore sete.  
hay in ye tralle where he dwellep.  
so as ye philosophre tellep.

**Nota de stomacho qui una cu**

**alys specialibus deseruit**

How ouer his is for to wite.  
as it is in phisic write.  
of luyere of lunge of galle of spleen.  
yei alle in to ye herte been.  
seruantz and eche in his office.  
entender to doon hym seruice.

As he which is lord above.  
ye luyere maky hym for to loue.  
ye lunge yiff hym weie of speche.  
ye galle seruey to don wreche.  
ye spleen dop him to lallwe & pleye.  
whan al vnclemesse is a weye.  
to pus hay eche of hem his dede.  
and to sustenen hem and fede.

In tyme of recreation.  
nature hap increacion.  
ye stomak for a comun cook.  
orderned so as seip ye book.  
ye stomak cook is for ye halles.  
and builley mete for hem alle.  
to make hem mytti for to serue.  
ye herte pat he shal not serue.  
for as a kynig in his empire.  
a loue alle oper is lord and sire.

So is ye herte principal.  
whom resoun in special.

Is youe as for ye gouernance.  
and pus nature his prauenance.

Hay maad for man to brien heere.  
but god which pat ye shold deere.  
hay formed it in oper wise.  
pat can no man pleyntly deise.  
but as ye clerkes be enforme.  
pat lich to god it hay a forme.  
myght which figur & which liuesse.  
ye soule hay many an hih noblesse.  
as propozed to his owne kynde.  
but ofte hure wittes ben maade blynde.  
al ouliche of his ilke point.  
pat here abydyng is comyng.  
for wy ye body for to dwelle.  
pat con desyre tollard helle.



*liber.*  
That ower bylward to ye heuene.  
So shult ye neuere stonde in euene.  
But if ye fleisch be ouercome.  
And pat ye soule hay holy nome.  
ye gouernance and pat is selde.  
Whil pat ye flessch may be helde.  
Al erpely prync which god began.  
Was only maad to serue man.  
But he ye soule al only made.  
hym seluen for to serue and glade.  
Alle ower bestes pat men fynde.  
yei serue into here olde kynde.  
But to resou ye soule seruey.  
Wher of ye man his prync deseruey.  
And gette hym wyse werkes moode.  
ye pardurable lyues foode.

*Hic loquitur Vltimus de visione  
terre que post diluuiū tribz filiis  
et in tres partes scilicet Asiam.  
African et Europam diuidebatur.*

**W**hat matere it shal be told.  
A tale liker many folde.  
ye better if it be spoke plem.  
yei venter for to torne a yem.  
And telle plenerly perfore.  
of perpe wher of now tofore.  
I spak and of ye water eke.  
So as yei olde clerkes speke.  
And sette proprely ye bounde.  
After ye forme of mappe mounde.  
plursh which ye grownde be purpries.  
departed is in ye parties.  
pat Asie Austrigz Europe.  
ye whiche vnder ye heuene cope.  
As ferre as stretchen eny grounde.  
By gryppe al ye erpe rounde.  
But after pat ye hihe wreche.  
ye water weyes let out seche.  
And ouer go ye hulles hihe.  
Whiche euery kynde made dye.  
pat vpon middel erpe stood.  
Outake roe and his blood.  
his sonnes and hise doughtres pre.  
yei were sauf and so was he.  
here names who pat rede vith.  
Sem. Cam. Japhet ye breperen hith.  
And whane yulke almyghti hond.  
wy dwelle ye water fro ye lond.  
And all ye rage was allewe.  
And erpe was ye mannes weye.  
ye sonnes pre of whiche i tolde.  
fith after pat hem selue wolde.  
yei world departe yei begonne.  
Asie which lay to ye sonne. *De*  
vpon ye marche of Orient. *Asia.*  
Was graunted by comun assent.  
To Sem which was ye sonne eldest.

That pat partie was ye beste.  
And double as muche as ower Asie.  
And was pat tyme bounde so.  
Where as ye flood which men vnde.  
departen fro his cours and falley.  
In to ye see Alexandryne.  
yei takey Asie first serue.  
Toward ye West and ouer ye.  
of Canahym where ye flood is.  
In to ye grece see remeinde.  
fro pat in to ye worldes ende.  
Edward Asie it is almytes.  
Til pat men come into ye nates.  
of paradys and yei ho.  
And shortely for to speke it so.  
of Orient in general.  
Whanne his bounde Asie hay al.  
*De Africa et Europa.*  
And pame vpon pat ower side.  
westward as it fel yulke tide.  
ye broper whiche was hote cam.  
vpon his part austrigz nam.  
Japhet Europe yei took he.  
yei parten yei ye world on ye.  
But yet yei ben of Londres fele.  
In Orient as for ye chele.  
In Orient as for ye herte.  
Whiche of ye peple be for lere.  
As Lond desert pat is yn able.  
for it may not ben habitable.  
*De mari qd unguis Oceani dicitur.*  
The water eke hay sondry bounde.  
After ye lond wher it is founde.  
And takey his name of yulke lond.  
Where pat it remey on ye stounde.  
But yulke see which hay no wane.  
ye cleped ye grece ocreane.  
Out of ye whiche arise and come.  
yei hihe fodes alle and some.  
ye noon so litel welle spring.  
Whiche yei ne takey his begynning.  
And lyth aman pat halep brey.  
The weye of kynde soit gei.  
Out of ye see and in a yem.  
ye water as ye bokes seyn.  
*Arrota hic secundū philosophū de  
quinto elemento quod oīa sub celo  
creata infra suū ambitū continet  
et nomen Orbis specialiter appo  
riatum est.*  
Of elementz ye propretees.  
holly pat yei stonden by demer.  
As i haue told noll myht pou heere.  
ay goode sone al ye matere.  
Of erpe of water of air of fyr.  
And for you saist pat yei desir.  
Is for to witen ouermyre.



pe forme of Aristotles lore.  
 he seyn in his ententement.  
 pat yit per is an Element.  
 a boue pe foure and is pe fyste.  
 Set of pe hihe goddes yiste.  
 pe Whiche put orbis cleped is.  
 And per vpon he telley is.  
 pat as pe schille hole and sounde.  
 Enclosey all aboute wound.  
 What ying Wy gme an sy bilouge  
 fith so is orbis vnderfougey.  
 pese elementz alle euerychon.  
 Whiche i haue swofe off oon z oon.  
**E**ut ouer is how take good hede.  
 my sone for i Wole procede.  
 To speke vpon mathematiz.  
 Which groundes is on Theoriz.  
 pe sciunce of astrononomie.  
 I penke for to specifie.  
 Wy oute Whiche to telle pleyne.  
 Alle oper sciunce is in veyn.  
 To lufd pe scole of expellynges.  
 For as an Eagle Wy hye Wynges.  
 fley a boue alle pat men fynde.  
 So dop is sciunce in his kynde.  
*Altege planetarum magis infero-  
 ra reuertuntur. Ista s interdu regu-  
 la fallit opus. Vnde medimite deo sa-  
 pientis dubitatur astris. ffata nec i-  
 merito quod uouitaris agunt. hic  
 loquitur de artibus mathematicis quar-  
 ta specie que astronomia mutupata  
 est an etiam astrolomia socia commu-  
 natur s pmo de septem planetis que  
 in astra potenciores existunt in-  
 apicendo a Luna scorsum tractare in-  
 tendit.*  
**E**uepe vpon is erpe here.  
 Of all yinges pe matere.  
 As tellen vs per pat ben lerned.  
 Of ying aboue it scant gouerned.  
 pat is to seyn of pe planetes.  
 pe cheles bope and ete pe hetes.  
 pe chaunces of pe World also.  
 pat pe fortune clepen so.  
 Amouit pe memmes macion.  
 Al is purth constellacon.  
 Wher of pat som man hay pe wele.  
 And som man hay diseses fele.  
 In loue as wel as ope yinges.  
 pe staat of realme and of kynges.  
 In tyme of peas in tyme of werre.  
 It is conceyued of pe sterre.  
 And yus seyn pe naturien.  
 Which is our astronoumen  
 But sedyn seyn oper wise.  
 pat if men weren goode and wise.

And pleasant vnto ye godshede.  
 yei sholden not ye sterres drede.  
 For o man if hym wel befallē.  
 Is more Worþy þan be yei alle.  
 Towardes hym þat Weldey al.  
 But yit ye haue original.  
 Whiche he hay set in ye natures.  
 not Worchen in ye creatures.  
 þat yer of may be uawn obstacle.  
 But if it stonde vpon miracle.  
 yurgh prayer of som holy man.  
 And for þi so as I began.  
 To speke vpon astronomie.  
 As it is Wrote in ye cleargie.  
 To telle howe ye planetes fare.  
 Som part I yente to declare.  
 my soue vnto þin audience.  
**A**stronomie in ye sciēce.  
 Of Wydom and of hihe conyngē.  
 Whiche maky a man haue knowledgyngē.  
 Of sterres in ye firmament.  
 figure cerole and moeuent.  
 Of eche of hem in sondry place.  
 And what betwene hem is of space.  
 howe so yei moeue or stonde faste.  
 Al þis it telley to ye laste.  
 Assembled wy astronomie.  
 Is eke yllke astrologie.  
 ye Whiche in iugementz accowntey.  
 pfect þat euery sterre amowntey.  
 And howe yei causen many allouder.  
 To yo climatiz þat stonden vnder.  
 And for to telle it more plem.  
 yese olde philosophres seyn.  
 That Orbis Which I spak of eer.  
 Is þat Whiche fro yer ye afer.  
 Byholde and firmament it calle.  
 In Whiche ye sterres stonden alle.  
 Among ye Whiche in speaal.  
 Planetes seuene in pryncipal.  
 yer ben þat mannes sight seuey.  
 But purgh out as to de seuey.  
 And also yere ben signes aduelue.  
 Whiche haue hire cerle by hem selue.  
 Compassed in ye zodiage.  
 In Whiche yei haue here places take.  
 And as yei stonden in degre.  
 howe cerles more or lasse be.  
 and after ye proportiō.  
 of eue whos condition.  
 Is set to be ye foundement.  
 To susteyne vpon ye firmament.  
 And by þis skyle a man may knowe.  
 ye more þat yei stonde longe.  
 ye more ben ye cerles lasse.  
 þat causey Whi þat some passe.  
 here due cours to fore an oyer.



But now my leue dere broper.  
 As you desirest for to write.  
 What I finde in booke write.  
 To telle of ye planetes seuen.  
 How pat ye stonde vpon ye heuene.  
 And in what point pat ye ben yne.  
 Take hede for I wole berymme.  
 So as ye philosophie it tauhte.  
 To Aliandre and it betauhte.  
 Wher of pat he was fully tauht.  
 Of wisdom which was him bytauht.  
**¶ Nota hic de prima planeta que all**  
**inferior Luna dicitur.**  
 Heuere all oper stant ye mayne.  
 Ye whiche hay wye ye see to done.  
 Of flodes hihe and eblee lolle.  
 Vpon his chaunge it schal be knolle.  
 And euery fische whiche hay a schelle.  
 wote in his gouernance dwelle.  
 To weye and wane in his degre.  
 As by ye moue aman may se.  
 And all pat stant vpon ye grounde.  
 Of his moisture it mot be founde.  
 All oper feres as men fynde.  
 Sen shynnyng of here owhne kynde.  
 Outake only ye moue lyht.  
 Which is nouht of him selue bricht.  
 But as he taky it of ye sonne.  
 And yit he hay not al ful worne.  
 his lyht pat he nye somdel derke.  
 But what ye let is of pat werke.  
 In almageste it telle ye.  
 ye mones cercle so lolle it is.  
 wher of ye sonne out of his stange.  
 he sey hym nouht wye ful visage.  
 for he is wye ye ground be shaded.  
 So pat ye moue is somdel fides.  
 And may not fully shyne cleer.  
 But what man vnder his poller.  
 is bore he shal his places chaunge.  
 To seche manye londes straunge.  
 And as of ye condiaon.  
 ye mones disposicion.  
 vpon ye donk of almageste.  
 is set and eke vpon bretaigne.  
 which noll is cleped Engeland.  
 for yei trauaile in euery lond.  
**¶ Nota planeta que mercurius dicitur.**  
 Of ye planetes ye secounde.  
 Al boue alle opere hay take his londe.  
 mercurie and his nature is ye.  
 pat vnder hym who pat bore is.  
 In booke he shal ben studious.  
 And in his writyng curious.  
 And stowh and lustles to trauaile.  
 In yung which elles myht auale.  
 he louey eke he louey refo.

So is he not ye wryeste.  
 Got yit wye somdel besynesse.  
 his herte is sette vpon richesse.  
 And as in ye condiaon.  
 Theffect and disposicion.  
 Of ye planetes of his chaunge.  
 is most in zurgoyne and in frumme.  
**¶ Nota planeta que Venus dicitur.**  
 Next to mercurie as vol byfalle.  
 Stant ye planetes whiche men calle.  
 Venus whos constellacion.  
 Gouerney alle ye nacion.  
 Of Louers wher ye fynde or noon.  
 Of which I wolle ye see con.  
 But wheder wende in happye wende.  
 Shal ye planetes shelle be eke.  
 As it hay to many mo.  
 To some wote to some wo.  
 And nappes of ye planetes.  
 ye most part is softe and wete.  
 for who pat ye of taky his byre.  
 he shal desire ioye and merue.  
 Gentil colureys and debonaire.  
 To speke his wordes softe and fyne.  
 Such shal he be be wete of kynde.  
 And ouer al wher he may fynde.  
 yolefance of loue his herte wille.  
 wye al his myht and pere he wille.  
 he is so ferforz amorous.  
 he not what yungis vicious.  
 Touchyng loue for pat labe.  
 per may no maner man wye dulle.  
 ye which Venerien is bore.  
 he wete of kynde and perfore.  
 Venus of loue ye goddesse.  
 is deped but of wantounesse.  
 ye climat of here lecherie.  
 is most conuin in zumbardie.  
**¶ Nota de sole qui medio planetarum**  
**residet astroz principatu obtinet.**  
 Next to ye planetes of loue.  
 ye bricht soune stant a boue.  
 which is ye huldere of ye myht.  
 And forperore of ye dayes lyht.  
 As he which is ye worldes yhe.  
 yung whom ye lufy compaignie.  
 Of soules by ye moue fyne.  
 ye freshe floures sprede & fyne.  
 ye hysse tre ye ground be shade.  
 And euery mannes herte glade.  
 And for it is ye hede planetes.  
 how pat he stey in his sete.  
 Of what richesse of what noblesse.  
 ye booke telle & ye yei se.  
**¶ Nota de curru solis nequon**  
**denario eiusdem apparatu.**  
 Of gold ghystrynge spoke & whel.



The soune his carte hay fare 2 bel.  
 In Whiche he sitte and is coroned.  
 Wy bright stoncs endyroued.  
 Of Whiche if pat I speke shal.  
 Were he to fore in special.  
 Set in ye front of his corone.  
 pre stoncs Whiche no persone.  
 hy vpon eyre and ye fuste is.  
 By name cleped Liachis.  
 pat oper elbo he cleped rus.  
 a stices and Ceramius.  
 In his corone also byhynde.  
 By olde boke as I fynde.  
 were been of Worp stoncs pre.  
 Set eche of hem in his deure.  
 Wherof a crystal is pat con.  
 Which pat corone is set vpon.  
 ye seconde is an Adamant.  
 ye pricke is noble and auenaut.  
 Whiche cleped is ydriades.  
 And ouer his yit napeles.  
 vpon ye sides of ye werke.  
 After ye writing of ye clerke.  
 were sette fyue stoncs mo.  
 ye smaragdine is on of yo.  
 Jaspis and Chitropius.  
 And Sandides and Jacinthus.  
 To rus ye corone is biset.  
 Wherof it shyneth wel ye bett.  
 And in such wise his light to sprede.  
 Sitte wy his Diademe on hede.  
 ye soune shynynge in his carte.  
 And for to lede hym swyfe 2 swarte.  
 After ye brighte dayes lalle.  
 were ben ordeyned for to dwalle.  
 foure hors his carte 2 hym wy al.  
 Wher of ye names telle I shal.  
 Grycheus ye ferste is hote.  
 ye Whiche is rede 2 shyneth hote.  
 ye secunde attres ye brighte.  
 Lampes ye prede courser highte.  
 And whilongus is ye ferste.  
 pat byngten hym to his eyre.  
 And gon so swyft vpon ye helene.  
 In foure and twenty houres euene.  
 ye carte wy ye brighte soune.  
 Thei dwalle is pat ouerholme.  
 yei haue vnder ye cerckes hihe.  
 al myddel eyre in such an hyhe.  
 And rus ye soune is ouer al.  
 ye chief planete imperial.  
 A boue hym 2 be neye hym pre.  
 And rus be bene hem regney he.  
 He he pat hay ye myddel place.  
 Amongst ye soune and of his face.  
 Ben glaze alle erpely creatures.  
 And taken after ye natures.

here ese and reuacion.  
 And in his constellation.  
 Who pat is bore in special.  
 Of good wil and of Liberal.  
 He shal be founde in alle place.  
 And also founde in moche grace.  
 Toward ye lordes for to serue.  
 And met profit 2 poult deserue.  
 And ouer pat it cansey yit.  
 A man to be subtil of wit.  
 To werche in gold and to be wys.  
 In euery ying Whiche is of wys.  
 But for to speken in what cost.  
 Of all his eyre he regney most.  
 As for wisdom it is in grece.  
 Where is appropried yit spece.  
**¶ De quinta planete que Mars dy.**  
 Mars ye planete batallous.  
 Next to ye soune glorious.  
 A boue stant and soy merueilles.  
 vpon ye fortunes of batallies.  
 ye conquerours by dayes olde.  
 Were bi to his planete holde.  
 But who pat his nature.  
 hay take vpon ye proprete.  
 Of martes disposicion.  
 By weye of constellation.  
 He shal be ferre 2 fool hasty.  
 And desirous of weye and stry.  
 But for to telle redily.  
 In what chynat most comunly.  
 pat his planete hay his effect.  
 Seid is pat he hay his aspect.  
 vpon ye holy londe so cast.  
 pat were is no pces scdefast.  
**¶ De vi. planete que Iubiter dyat.**  
 A boue Mars vpon ye heuene.  
 ye septe planete of ye seuen.  
 stant Iubiter ye deliat.  
 Whiche causey pes 2 no debat.  
 For he is cleped ye planete.  
 Whiche of his kynde softe and swete.  
 Attentye all pat to hym comrey.  
 And whom his planete vnderfourey.  
 To seude vpon his regiment.  
 He shal be meke and patient.  
 And fortunat to murchandise.  
 And lusty to delicacie.  
 In euery ying Whiche he shal do.  
 his Iubiter is cause all.  
 Of ye science of lihte werkes.  
 And in his wise tellen clerkes.  
 He is ye planete of delices.  
 But in Envy of his offires.  
 He regney most in special.  
 For were he hys ouer al.  
 Of all pat to his wyf befallay.



For yere no stormy weder fallay.  
Whiche myght myne man or best.  
And eke ye lond is so honeste.  
pat it is plenteuous and playn.  
Yer is no ydel ground in yern.  
And vpon such felate.  
Stant iupiter in his degre.

*De septima planeta que reliquis cel-  
lor saturnus dicitur est.*

**S**aturnus dicitur et ab omni alle.  
Stant ye planete which men calle.  
Saturnus whos complexion.  
Is cold and his condition.  
Causey malice and cruelte.  
To hym yel whos nativite.  
Is set vnder ye gouernance.  
For alle his werkes ben gnuance.  
And enemy to mannes helle.  
In what degre pat he shal dele.  
His clime is in orient.

Where pat he is most violent.  
Of ye planetes by land by.  
How pat ye stonde vpon ye by.  
How yow to portit as you myght heere.  
Was dyandre mad to here.  
But ouer his touchyng his here.  
Of ying pat ye him taught more.  
Vpon ye scoles of clerme.  
How he bue ye philosophie.

*Postquam dictum est de septem planetis  
quibus singuli septimane dies singu-  
lariter attribuantur. Dicendum est  
iam de duodecim signis p que duode-  
cim menses anni varijs temporibz  
effectus varios assequitur.*

**A**nd which departey day fro myht.  
pat on derf and pat over ligh.  
Of euene dayes made albe.  
A moupe of foure wekes eke.  
He hay ordeined in his talbe.  
Of monyes tibelue eke forp dralle.  
He hay also ye lonte reet.  
And as he sette of his power.  
Acordant to ye daies seuene.  
Planetes seuene vpon ye heuene.  
As you to fore hast herd deuise.  
To speke vnt in such a wise.  
To euery monye by hym selue.  
Vpon ye heuene of signes tibelue.  
He hay after his ordinal.  
As signes on in special.  
Wherof so as i shal reherfen.  
Ye ride of ye yer diuersen.  
But pleyntly for to make it knolle.  
How pat ye signes sette a rolle.  
Eche after ower be degre.  
In substance and in proprete.

The zodiage compheudey.  
Wip iune his cerde as it appendey.  
*Nota hic de primo signo quod au-  
res dicitur cui mensis maris specialiter  
appropriatus est. Quo deus in p-  
mo produxit adesse creatura.*

The firste of whiche napeles.  
Ye name is ceper aries.  
Which rich a wepur of stature.  
Resembled is in his figure.  
And as it seiy in almaneste.  
Of sterres tibelue vpon ye best.  
Green set wher of in his degre.  
Ye wombe hay tibo ye heed hay yre.  
Ye tulle hay seuene and in ye wise.  
Eke yow myht here mo deuise.  
Stant Aries whiche hore and deie.  
Is of hym self and in pwarie.  
He is ye rechte and ye hous.  
Of mihty maye ye batallous.  
And ouer more eke as i fynde.  
Ye creatour of alle kynde.  
Vpon ye sigle ferst begun.  
Ye world whan pat he made man.  
And of ye constellation.  
Ye verbay operation.

Auailley is a man per iune.  
Ye purpos of his werk benyune.  
For yale he hay of proprete.  
Good speche and gret felite.  
Ye tibelue monyes off ye yer.  
Attitled vnder ye power.  
Of yese tibelue signes stonde.  
Wherof pat you shal vnderstonde.  
Ye aries con of ye tibelue.  
Hay marche attitled for him selue.  
Whan euery brad shal chese his me.  
And euery neddre and euery snake.  
And euery reptil which may moue.  
His myht assauey for to proue.  
To arpen out a ren ye soune.  
Whan becr his soun hay begonne.  
*Sed in signis dicitur Taurus cuius  
mensis est Aprilis. Quo prius  
ocultas inuenit herba vides.*

**T**aurus ye secunde after aries.  
Of signes whiche signys is.  
Vn to ye hole is dyre and cold.  
And as it is in lokes tolde.  
He is ye hous appurtenant.  
To Venus sounel discordant.  
Ye hole is eke wip sterres sette.  
Which whiche he hay his hoznes sette.  
Vn to ye cuple of aries.  
So is he not yer sterres.  
Vpon his breste eke yere cythene.  
He hay and eke as it is scene.



Upon his tail stonde ower mo.  
 His moupe assigned eke also.  
 Is ducit which of his shoures.  
 ministrey dei vnto ye floures.  
**Tercium signu dicitur Gemini cuius mensis aprilis natus est. Quod voluit autus grandent de floribz ortis.**  
 The prync signe is Gemini.  
 Which is figured redly.  
 Rich to the thymmes of o kynde.  
 Wit naked stonde and as i fynde.  
 Ixi be wyf sterres dei be go.  
 ye hede hay part of yllke tly.  
 wit shyne vpon ye holes tuff.  
 So be yei bove of o puratiff.  
 But on ye wombe of Gemini.  
 Seen fyue sterres not for pi  
 And eke vpon ye feet be tlyere.  
 So as yese olde booke seye.  
 wit wise tholomous writ.  
 his propre mouth wel i not.  
 Assigned is ye lusty may.  
 Whan euery byrd vpon his lay.  
 Among yemene leues singey.  
 And loue of his porynture syngey.  
 After ye labe of nature.  
 ye youpe of euery creature.  
**Quartu signu dicitur Cancer cuius mensis iunius est. Quo falcit in pratis pabula torzor equis.**  
 Cancer after ye reule and spaco.  
 Of signes halt ye ferre place.  
 Rich to ye crabbe he hay semblance.  
 And hay vnto his recouance.  
 Sextene sterres wher of ten.  
 So as yese olde wise men.  
 Diferne he berey on hym to fore.  
 And in ye myddel tlyo ben bore.  
 And foure he hay vpon his ende.  
 wit troy he sterres in his kynde.  
 And of hym self is moyse and cold.  
 And is ye propre hous and hold.  
 Which apparteynep to ye none.  
 And doy what longer hym to done.  
 ye moupe of iunyn vnto ye signe.  
 you shalt after ye reule assigne.  
**Quintu signu dicitur Leo cuius mensis iulius est. Quo magis ad terras expandit lucifer ignes.**  
 The fyfte signe is Leo hote.  
 Whos kynde is shawe drye and hote.  
 In whom ye some hay herbergage.  
 And ye semblance of his ymagre.  
 Is a leon which in baillie.  
 Of sterres hay ye purpartie.  
 ye foure which ab cancer hay.  
 vpon his ende Leo tay.

Upon his hede and panyne nest.  
 he hay eke foure vpon his breste.  
 And oon vpon his taile behynde.  
 In olde booke as we fynde.  
 his propre moupe is iust by name.  
 In which men pleyen many a game.  
**Sextu signu dicitur Virgo cuius mensis augustus est. Quo nautanta pns pubes replet horrea messis.**  
 After Leo virgo ye nexte.  
 Of signes cleped is ye sixte.  
 Wher of ye figure is a mayde.  
 And as ye philosophre sayde.  
 She is ye welpe and ye wysdom.  
 ye luste ye love and ye likyng.  
 vnto mercurie and so to seye.  
 She is wyf sterres wel besey.  
 Wher of Leo hay Lent hie oon.  
 Which sitte on hie hie hede vpon.  
 here wombe hay fyue here feet also.  
 haue ower fyue and ouer mo.  
 Touching as of complexion.  
 By kyndely disposicion.  
 Of drye and colde ye mayden is.  
 And for to tellen ouer ye.  
 hie moupe you shalt vnder stonde.  
 Whan euery feld hay corn on honde.  
 And many a man his bak hay plyed.  
 vnto ye signe is August applyed.  
**Septimu signu dicitur Libra cuius mensis septembris est. Vinea quo bacchu pressa liquore colit.**  
 After virgo to Refuen euene.  
 libra sit in ye noumbre of seuen.  
 Which hay figure and resemblance.  
 vnto a man which a balaunce.  
 Gery in his hond as for to weye.  
 In booke and as it may be seye.  
 Diuerse sterres to hym longer.  
 Wherof on heede he vnder founey.  
 ffyft pre and eke his wombe hay tly.  
 And down by nepe eighte ower mo.  
 ye signe is hote and moyste boye.  
 ye which signes be not loye.  
 vnto venus so pat a losite.  
 she restey in his hous ful ofte.  
 And eke saturnus ofte hied.  
 Is in ye signe and manifest.  
 his propre moupe is seid septembie.  
 which yede men cause to remembre.  
 If any for be left be hindre.  
 of ym which greue may to kynde.  
**Octauu signu dicitur scorpio cuius mensis octobris est. Floribz exclusis venis qui ianitor erat.**  
 Among ye signes vpon heithe.  
 ye signe which noumbred is eyhte.



Is scorpio which as fellow.  
figures is a scorpion.  
But for al pat yit napelas,  
Is scorpio nouht scerres.  
For libra grauntey hym his ende.  
Of eighte sterres where he wende.  
ye which vpon his hede assised.  
he berey and eke yre ben dylised.  
vpon his wombe sterres pre.  
And eighte vpon his tail hay he.  
Which of his kynde is moyste & cold.  
And vnbekouely many fold.  
he harmey venus and emperey.  
But aare vnto his hous reperey.  
But war whan yit to gedde dylleu.  
his propre mouye as men tellen.  
pabre which bynygey pe kalende.  
Of wynter pat comy nex suende.  
**Novu signu sagittarius dicitur**  
**cuius mensis decembris est. Quo**  
**muse bibulo inquit sua hora vino.**  
he mynpe signe in nombre also.  
which folloey after scorpio.  
Is cleped sagittarius.  
ye whos figure is mapked rus.  
A mouytre wy a bolle ou honde.  
On whom pat soudy sterres scorde.  
yille eithe of which q spak to fore.  
ye which vpon pe talle bon bore.  
Of scorpio pe hed al faure.  
By spreden of pe sagittaire.  
And eighte of oye stonden euene.  
vpon his wombe and oyer seuene.  
yer stonde vpon his tail behynde.  
Al ho is hote and drie of kynde.  
To iupiter his hous is fre.  
But to mercurie in his degre.  
For yit ben not of con assent.  
he wozchey gret emperement.  
his signe hay of his properte.  
A mouytre which of duete.  
After pe seson pat byfaller.  
ye ploweb oxe in wynter statley.  
And fyre vnto pe halle it bynygey.  
And yille drynbe of which men singey.  
he torney mozte in to ye Wyn.  
yan is pe lader of ye Wyn.  
pat is nouembre of which i mene.  
Whan pat ye lese hay lost his mene.  
**Decimu signu capricornus dicitur**  
**cuius mensis decembris est. Ipe dicitur**  
**vano noctem q munit figurat.**  
he tenpe signe drye and colde.  
The which is capricornus tolde.  
vnto a gote hay resemblance.  
For whos loue & whos acqbeyncaue.  
Wyn fyne his hous to soigne.

Is likey bel vnto saturne.  
But to ye moone it likey nouht.  
For no profit yere is wrouht.  
his signe as of his pprete.  
vpon his hed hay sterres pre.  
And eke vpon his wombe talle.  
And eke vpon his talle also.  
December after ye yeres forme.  
So as ye lokes in enforme.  
Wyn day short and yeres long.  
ye alke signe hay vnderfonge.  
**Undecimu signu aquarius dicitur**  
**cuius mensis ianuarij est. Q' ian**  
**nus vultu dupli comitat in annu.**  
Of so pat fyre vpon ye heuene.  
Of signes in ye vnumble eleuene.  
Aquarius hay take his place.  
And stant wel in saturnus gace.  
Which dylleu in his herberage.  
But to ye soule he dop outage.  
his signe is vrayly resembled.  
Wch to a man pat halte assembled.  
In eyer hound in water spote.  
Wher of ye sterres yithen oute.  
he is of kynde moyste and hote.  
And he pat of ye sterres wote.  
he sen pat he hay of sterres talle.  
vpon his hed and ben of ye.  
pat capricorne hay on his ende.  
And as ye lokes in maken mynde.  
pat tholomeus mand hym selue.  
he hay eke on his wombe talle.  
And talle vpon his cende stonde.  
Wch shalt also ye vnderfonde.  
ye fosey colbe ianueuere.  
Whan comen is ye nelle yere.  
pat ianus wy the double face.  
In his chaere hay take his place.  
And loky vpon boye sides.  
Soudel tollard ye wynter tydes.  
Soudel tollard ye yer summe.  
pat is ye mouye by longynge.  
vnto ye signe and of his dyle.  
he reuey pe first primerole.  
**Duodecimu signu piscis est. Q' plu**  
**mensis februarij est. Q' plu**  
**die correns riparij octat ampuet.**  
he talle which is last of alle.  
Of signes piscis men it alle.  
ye which as talle ye scripture.  
bery of talle fische pe figure.  
So is he colde and moyste of kynde.  
And eke wy sterres as i fynde.  
he sette in sondry wyse as rus.  
talle of his ende aquarius.  
Wch sent vnto his hed and talle.  
his signe hay of his dyle also.



Upon his wombe and ouer his.  
 Upon his ende also per is.  
 A nombre of twenty sterres bryghte.  
 Whiche is to sene a wonder sighte.  
 Toward his signe in to his hous.  
 Comyng by the glorious.  
 And Venus eke by hym acordyng.  
 To dwelken as ye booke recorder.  
 Ye mouye vnto his figure ordeyned.  
 To februer which is becomyng.  
 And by the flood in his rage.  
 At fordes lette ye passage.  
**A**ld hast yow held ye propriete.  
 Of signes bitwix his begite.  
 Almazar yet ouer his.  
 Seip so as ye ye partes is.  
 In foure viht so ben diuised.  
 Ye signes tibelue and stouid assised.  
 Part eche of hem for his partie.  
 Hay his dynat to iusticie.  
 Wher of ye ferste requient.  
 Toward ye part of orient.  
 From Antioche & pat coure.  
 Gouerned is of signes pre.  
 Pat is cancer virgo leo.  
 And toward occident also.  
 From Armeie as I am lernes.  
 Of capricorne it seint gouernes.  
 Of pisces and Aquarius.  
 And after hem I fynde yus.  
 Southward from Alisandre fory.  
 Ye signes whiche most be wozy.  
 In gouernance of pat souaue.  
 Libra per ben and sagittaire.  
 Wy scorpio which is comoynt.  
 Wy hem to stonde vpon ye poyn.  
 Constantin noble ye ate.  
 So as ye booke tellen me.  
 The laste of his diuision.  
 Stant vnto ward Septentrion.  
 Where as by weye of purueance.  
 Arries hay ye gouernance.  
 For wy cancris and Gemini.  
 Yus ben ye signes propriete.  
 Diuided as it is reherced.  
 Wher of ye londes ben diuised.  
 To yus my sone as you myght here.  
 Was Alisandre made to lere.  
 Of hem pat wereu for his lore.  
 But now to lere ouer more.  
 Of oper sterres how ye fare.  
 I yowle heer after to declare.  
 So as byng Alisandre in yowre.  
 Of hem pat such yingres coure.  
 Gouerned was tofore his cyte.  
 By nyght vpon ye sterres lyte.  
**He tractat sup toarima recta**

nabi du ype inuene Alexandru  
 instruxit de illis papue quinde  
 cum stellis vna cu earu lapidibz  
 et herbis que ad artis manice ha  
 uerat apudne specialius queniunt.

**A**ld soudey aracion.  
 Stanfouder operacion.  
 Son Werchey yus son Werchey par.  
 Ye fyr is hote in his astat.  
 And breneye what he may atteigne.  
 Ye water may ye fyr refreigne.  
 Ye whiche is cold and moist also.  
 Of oper ying it farey riht so.  
 Upon his erpe a mount yd here.  
 And for to speke in his manere.  
 Upon ye hellene as men may fynde.  
 Ye sterres ben of soudey kynde.  
 And toward many soudey yingres.  
 To be pat ben hete vnderkynges.  
 A mount ye whiche fory wyll att.  
 Rectinabus in special.  
 Which was an astronomen.  
 And eke a gret magicien.  
 And undertake hay yulke enprise.  
 To Alisandre in his apprise.  
 A of magike naturel.  
 To knowe euformyng hym soude.  
 Of certeyn sterres what ye mene.  
 Of whiche he seip yere ben fyttene.  
 And soudey to euerydon.  
 A yus biloungy and a ston.  
 Wher men toward many alouder.  
 To sette ying boye vpon and vnder.  
**Prima stella vocatur Aldeboran**  
**amius lapis carbunculus et her**  
**ba Anabulla est.**  
**G**o telle riht as he began.  
 Ye ferste sterre Aldeboran.  
 Ye cleuest and ye moste of alle.  
 Ye riht name men it calle.  
 Which lich is of condicion.  
 To aars and of complexion.  
 To Venus and hay yow yon.  
 Carbunculus his precious ston.  
 His herbe is Anabulla named.  
 Whiche is of gret vertu pclaimed.  
**Secda stella vocatur Eclota seu**  
**poliades amius lapis cristallum**  
**et herba femaculus est.**  
**T**he secunde is not vertules.  
 Eclota or elles poliades.  
 In herte eke of ye mones kynde.  
 He is and also yus q fynde.  
 He taky of aars complexion.  
 And lich to such condicion.  
 His ston crystall is cristall.  
 And eke his herbe in special.



ye vertuous fenel it is.

**C**he yredde which comy after pis.  
**Tercia stella vocatur Algol. cuius**  
**Lapis Diamans & herba Eleboru**  
**nigrum est.**

Is hote Algol pe cleere rede.  
Which of Saturne as I may rede.  
His kynde taky and ete of Ioue.  
Complexion to his bihoue.  
His propre stoon is Diamant.  
Which is to hym most accordant.  
His herbe which is hym betake.  
Is hote Elebor pe blake.

**Quarta stella vocatur Alhaiot cuius**  
**Lapis Saphirus et herba ygar**  
**rubru est.**

So as it falleth vpon Iot.  
Pe ferre sterre is Alhaiot.  
Which in ye wise as I seide er.  
Of Saturne and of Iubiter  
Hay take his kynde and yer vpon.  
Pe Saphir is his propre ston.  
In arribum his herbe also.  
Pe which accorden bope ledo.

**Quinta stella vocatur Canis maior**  
**cuius Lapis Perillis & herba Sadina est.**

And canis maior in his like.  
Pe fiste sterre is of uanige.  
The whos kynde is venerien  
As sey pis astronomien.  
His propre ston it is Perille.  
But for to worche and fulfille.  
Which to pis science falleth.  
Per is an herbe which men calley.  
Sadene and pat behouey nede.  
To hym pat wole his pulpos spede.

**Sexta stella vocatur Canis minor**  
**cuius Lapis Achates & herba pri**  
**mula est.**

He sexte supuge after pis.  
Pe name canis minor is  
Pe which sterre is mecurial.  
Pe weye of kynde & fory wy al.  
As it is witten in ye carte.  
Complexion he taky of marte.  
His stoon and herbe as ye sole  
Then Achates and prymetole.

**Septima stella vocatur Arid cuius**  
**Lapis Gorgonza & herba celestinae.**

He sefure sterre in special.  
Of pis science is Arid.  
Which sondry nature vnderfougey.  
Pe stoon which propre vnto h longe.  
Gorgonza preyly it hite.  
His herbe also which he shal vhte.  
Vpon ye worchym as I mene.  
Is celestine fresch and grene.

**Octava stella vocatur Ala corui**  
**cuius Lapis Honochimus & herba**  
**Lapacia est.**

He terre Ala corui vpon heite.  
Hay take his place in nombre of eite.  
Which of his kynde mot par forme.  
Pe witt of marte and of Saturne.  
To whom Lapacia pe grete.  
Is herbe but of noon byete.  
His stoon is Honochimus hote.  
Murch which men wicheu metrote.

**Nonna stella vocatur Alazel cuius**  
**Lapis smaragdus et herba Salica est.**

He nymp sterre faue and wel.  
Pe name is hote Alazel.  
Which taky his propre kynde pus.  
Bope of mercurie and of Venus.  
His stoon is pe grene admirallde.  
To whom is wuen many a lalldo.  
Salge is his herbe appurtenant.  
A bouen alle pe remenant.

**Decima stella vocatur Almaruth**  
**cuius Lapis Iapis et herba plimara.**

He tempe sterre is Almaruth.  
Which vpon Ioff & vpon Ieth.  
Murch kynde of Iubiter & marte.  
He doy what longer to his part.  
His ston is jasse & of planteyne.  
He hay his herbe souerene.

**Undecima stella vocatur Venenas**  
**cuius Lapis adamans & herba Cicorea est.**

He sterre elletype is Venenas.  
Pe whos nature is as it was.  
Take of Venus and of pe none.  
In yung which he hay for to done.  
Of Adamantis pat petre.  
In which he worchey his manne.  
Yllke herbe also which him befaller.  
Cicorea pe booke it calley.

**Duodecima stella vocatur Alpheta**  
**cuius Lapis Topaxion et herba**  
**Rosa marina est.**

Alpheta in ye nombre sit.  
And is pe tvelpe sterre hit.  
Of scorpio which is gouerned.  
And taky his kynde as I am lerned.  
And hay his vertu in ye stoon.  
Which cleped is Topaxion.  
His herbe propre is fosennyme.  
Which shapen is for his comie.

**Tercia decima stella vocatur Cor**  
**scorpionis cuius Lapis Sardis &**  
**herba Astroloma est.**

Of yese sterres which I mene.  
For scorpius is prettne.  
Pe whos nature aurt & Ioue.  
haue yuen vnto his byhoue.



his herbe is Arystologie.  
Which follew his Astronomie.  
ye stoon which put his sterre alosse.

Is Sardin which du to hym follew.  
*Quartadecima stella vocatur So-  
tercadent au? lapis Trisolitus  
et herba Saturna est...*

The sterre which stant next ye laste.  
Nature on him his name caste.

And clepey him Sotercadent.

Which of his kynde obedient.

Is to mercurie and to Venus.

his stoon is seid Trisolitus.

his herbe is cleped Saturne.

So as yese olde booke seie.

*Quintadecima stella vocatur cau-  
sa scorpionis cuius lapis calce-  
donia et herba maiorana est...*

But noll ye laste sterre of alle

The tayl of scorpion men calle.

Whiche to mercurie & to Saturne.

Whiche of kynde mot retorne.

After ye preparation.

Of due constellation.

ye calcedonye du to hym longe.

Whiche of his ston he vnderfouney.

Of maiorane his herbe is ground.

his hane I seide holl ye be founde.

Of eueri sterre in special.

Which his herbe and ston wy al.

As hermes in his booke olde.

Witnesse berp of pat I tolde.

*Nota hic de auctoribus illis qui ad  
astronomie sciam p ceteris studio-  
sibus intendentes libros sup hoc  
distinxis noibz composuerunt...*

The science of astronomie.

Which principal is of elogie.

To deme be bene do and wele.

In yunges pat ben naturele.

ye hadde a gret tynayle on honde.

pat made it ferst ben vnderfoude.

And yei also which ouermore.

hine studie sette vpon his lore.

yei weren gracious and wys.

And worpi for to bere apys.

And whom it libey for to wite.

Of hem pat his science wite.

Don of ye faste which it wrot.

After dore it was rembroti.

To his disciple ychouithon.

And made a booke for ye vpon.

ye which megaster cleped was.

And oper auctor in his cas.

As abachel ye which men note.

his boke is abbategnysh hore.

And tholome is not ye laste.

Which makey ye booke of almageste.

And Alfraganus dop ye same.

Whos booke is chathemuz by name.

Gebus and Alpetragus etc.

Of palme starre which men seke.

ye booke made and ouer ye.

ful many alborpi clerke ye.

pat witten vpon his clergie.

The booke of Alchemetrie.

Planemetrie and etc also.

Which as belongen bope tbo.

So as yei be naturiens.

du to yese almagomens.

men seph pat Abraham was oon.

But wher pat he wrot or noon.

pat fride I not and moyses.

etc was an oper but hermes.

A boue alle oper in his science.

He hadde a gret experience.

purh hym was many a sterre affise.

Whos booke yei ben auctorized.

I may not knolwen alle ye.

pat witten in ye tyme pbo.

Of his science but I fride.

Of gungement be weye of kynde.

pat in o poput yei alle accorden.

Of sterres which yei recorden.

pat men may seen vpon ye heuene.

yer ben a pouland sterres euene.

And etc mid tventy to ye sighte.

Whiche ben of hem selfe so brighte.

pat men may deme what yei be.

ye nature and ye proprete.

*Noll hastoll herd in which a wise.*

ye noble philosophes wise.

Enformeden his younge kyngs kyng.

And made hem hane a knowledgyng.

Of ying which ferst to ye partie.

Enlonger of philosophie.

Whiche thedige cleped is.

As you tofore hast herd er pis.

But noll to speke of ye secounde.

Which aristotle has also founde.

And teches holl to speke faine.

Whiche is a ying ful necessaire.

To contrepese ye balance.

Where lack op per suffisance.

*Compositi pulchra sermones verba*

*placere. Principio potuerunt de*

*lingis sine placent. Verba lapis ser-*

*mo tria sunt virtute repleta. Dis-*

*tamen pondere plura facit. Hic*

*tractat de scda parte philosophie.*

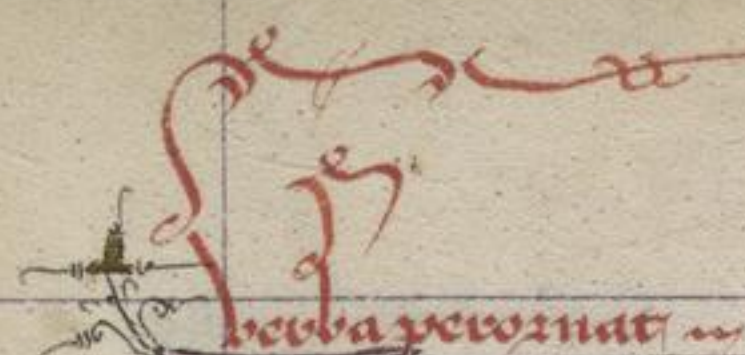
*cuius nomen Pethorica fatundus*

*effiat loquit eia de eiusdem duabz*

*speachz scilicet grammatice & logi-*

*ci. Quarum doctrina Pethos sua*





herba perennat

Aboue alle cerye creatures  
 ye hys make of nature.  
 ye word to man hay yote alone.  
 So pat ye speche of his yfone.  
 Or for to lye or for to wyne.  
 ye hertes poultre whiche is wyf hme.  
 may shelle what it wolde mene.  
 And pat is uolher elles seene.  
 Of kynde wyf noon oper beeste.  
 So sholde he be ye more honeste.  
 To whom god yaf so gret a yifte.  
 And loke wel pat he ne shifte.  
 his wordes to no wylked ys.  
 For word ye techer of vertus.  
 Is cleped in philosophie.  
 Wher of touchyng his partie.  
 Is rethorike ye science.  
 Apropred to ye reuerence.  
 Of wordes pat ben resonable.  
 And for his art shal be vailable.  
 Wyf goodly wordes for to lyke.  
 It hay gramme it hay logike  
 pat seruen bope Du to ye speche.  
 Gramme hay ferst for to teche.  
 To speke vpon congruente.  
 For hay eke in his degre.  
 Seel bene ye twylke and ye falsshade.  
 ye pleyne wordes for to shode.  
 So pat no yung shal go beside.  
 pat he ye wylt ne shal dede.  
 Wher of ful many a gret debat.  
 Reformed is to good astut.  
 And yees sustened vpon a luffe.  
 Wyf esy wordes and wyf softe.  
 Where strenge shulde lye it fulle.  
 ye philosophie amonget alle.  
 For in communidye his science.  
 Whiche hay ye reule of eloquence.  
 In soon in mynag derly per is.  
 But yit ye boke tellen his.  
 pat word a boue att exly puges.  
 Is vertuous in his doynges.  
 Wher so it be to euell or good.  
 For if ye wordes semen good.  
 And ben wel spoken at mannes ew.  
 Whan pat yet is no troupe pere.  
 yet don ful ofte gret decepte.  
 For whan ye word to ye conceyte.  
 Disordey in so double wyse.  
 Such rethorike is to dehyse.  
 In euery place and for to drede.  
 For vlyces his as I rede.  
 As in ye boke of Troie is founde.  
 his eloquence and is facounde.  
 Of goodly wordes whiche he tolde.  
 had mad pat Antenor him solde.

ye colu whiche he wyf trefon him.  
 Word hay be giled many a man.  
 Wyf word ye wylde best is daunted.  
 Wyf word ye serpente is enchained.  
 Of word a mount ye men of armes.  
 Been woundes heled wyf ye charmes.  
 Wher lackey oper medecine.  
 Word hay vnder his discipline.  
 Of sorcerie ye caryes.  
 ye wordes ben of soundey settes.  
 Of euell and eke of good also.  
 ye wordes maken frend and foe.  
 And for of frend a pes of woe.  
 And werte of pees and but of hore.  
 ye word ye wordes cause utikye.  
 And reauisley whan hym libye.  
 ye word vnder ye coupe of heuene.  
 Sette euery yung in orde by euene.  
 Wyf word ye hys god is plesed.  
 Wyf word ye wordes ben appesed.  
 ye softe word ye lorde stiley.  
 Wyf lackey mood ye word fulfille.  
 To make amendes for ye wylt.  
 Whan wordes medlen wyf ye song.  
 It do plesant wel ye more.  
 But for to loken vpon his lorde.  
 hold tullus his rethorike.  
 Componer per amun many pyke.  
 hold pat he shal hys wordes sette.  
 hold he shal lye hold he shal wete.  
 And in what wyse he shal pronoude.  
 his tale pleyne wyf oure troupe.  
 Wher of cysample if you wolt see.  
 Take hede and red whilom ye speche.  
 A nota de eloquencia julij in an  
 ti caroline contra cillend 2 alios  
 tur vrbis Rome concues.  
 Of Julius and Cithero.  
 Which Consul was of Rome y.  
 Of Caron eke and of Cillene.  
 Wyholde ye wordes hem bechene.  
 Whan ye trefon of caroline.  
 Discovered was and ye covene.  
 Of hem pat were of his assent.  
 Was kulle and spoke in parliament.  
 And axted hold and in what wyse.  
 men sholde don hem to iurse.  
 Cillene fast his tale tolde.  
 To to twylke and as he was bechene.  
 ye comyn profit for to saue.  
 he seide how trefon sholde haue.  
 A cruel dey and yus ye speke.  
 The consul bope and Caron eke.  
 And seyden pat for such a wroug.  
 per myn no peyne be to strong.  
 But Julius wyf wordes wyl.  
 this tale tolde al oper wyse.



As he pat wolde here dey respite.  
 And fonder how he myghte exalte.  
 pe jurnes purgh his eloquence.  
 And dey to tome pe sentence.  
 And sette here herte to pite.  
 Now tolden pei nobl tolde he.  
 pei speken pleyne after pe lalbe.  
 And he pe wordes of his salbe.  
 Colouey in an opey there.  
 Spekyng and yud be elvene pe elve.  
 To toete vpon his jurnement.  
 made eche of hem an argument.  
 Wher of pe tales for to lere.  
 pei may aynn pe sole lere.  
 Of rethoriques eloquences.  
 Which is pe secounde of sciences.  
 Touchyng to philosophie.  
 Wher of a man shal justifie.  
 his wordes in desputacion.  
 And knette by conclusion.  
 his argument in such a forme.  
 Which may pe pleyne twolpe esyme.  
 And pe subtil canyelle abate.  
 Which every twelbman shal debate.  
*Practica queq; statu ps tercia  
 philosophie. Ad regimen recte du  
 ct in orbe die. Sz quanto maior  
 Rex est tanto maior ppri. Ex so  
 la concernit qua sua regna regat.  
 Cuius tractat de tercia parte phi  
 losophie que practica dicitur aut  
 species sunt tres scilicet Ethica  
 Economica et politica quaru doctri  
 na regia magistra in suo regimi  
 ne ad honore magnificenciam p  
 romula duntur.*  
**T**he firste Which is theoriqz  
 And pe secounde rethoriz.  
 Sciences of philosophie.  
 I have hem tolde as in partie.  
 So as pe philosophie tolde.  
 To allsandre and nobl wolde.  
 Telle of pe pwyde what it is.  
 pe Whiche practiqz cleped is.  
 Practiqz stant vpon pte pnyes.  
 Toward pe gouernance of kynges.  
 Wher of pe firste styg is named.  
 pe Whos science stant proclaimed.  
 To reche of vertu pille rule.  
 How pat a kyng hym self shal rule.  
 Of his moral condicion.  
 Wp Wozri disposicion.  
 Of good luyntun his pson.  
 Which is pe chief of his corone.  
 To make a kyng also to lerne.  
 How he his body shal gouerne.  
 How he shal wake how he shal slepe.

How pat he shal his hele kepe.  
 In mete in drynk in clopyng eke.  
 per is no wisdom for to seke.  
 And for pe reule of his persone.  
 pe Whiche is science alalone.  
 pe techey as by were of kynde.  
 pat per is no yung left behynde.  
**C**hat oper point Which to practiqz.  
 Bylonge to conomyng.  
 Whiche techey pille housefete.  
 purgh Whiche a kyng in his degre.  
 his wyf and chyl shal reule a gre.  
 So for Wp al pe conyngme.  
 Which in his household shal abyde.  
 And his astute on euery side.  
 In such manere for to lede.  
 pat he his household ne mylde.  
 Practiqz hay pe pwyde appre.  
 Whiche techey how and in what wise.  
 purgh he shal purueyed ordenance.  
 Al kyng shal sette in gouernance.  
 his reule and pat is polie.  
 Which longe by to regalie.  
 In tyme of were in tyme of pes.  
 To worshippe and to good entres.  
 Of clerke of knyght and of marchant.  
 And so for of pe remenant.  
 Of all pe comoun peple aboute.  
 Wp june burgh and eke Wp oute.  
 Of hem pat ben artificers.  
 Whiche ben craftes and mysters.  
 Whos art is cleped mechylyz.  
 And yow pei be not alle like.  
 pe napeles how so it falle.  
 O lalbe mot gouerne hem alle.  
 Or pat pei lese or pat pei wyne.  
 After pastat pat pei ben june.  
 To pus his Wozri yonge kyng.  
 Was fully tauht of euery pnyng.  
 Which myht reue entendement.  
 Of good reule and good regiment.  
 To such a Wozri pynce as he.  
 But of verray necessity.  
 pe philosophie hym shal bytake.  
 For poyntz Which he shal vnder take.  
 To kepe and holde in obseruance.  
 And for pe Wozri gouernance.  
 Which longe to his regalie.  
 After pe reule of polie.  
**C**onit ornatus regit qui regna  
 moderna. Cercius expectat cep  
 tra futura poli. Est quia vetidica  
 virtus superminet omnes. Regis  
 ab ore boni fabula nulla sonat.  
**C**hic sedus poliam tractare in  
 tendit papue sup quq; regulare  
 artitulis que ad principis regimie



*obseruande specialius existat que  
prima veritas indicatur p qua  
veridicus fit sermo regis ad omes.*

**O** eueri man behouep lore.  
But to nouan belouep more.  
Yn to a kynge which hay to lede.  
Ye poeple for of his kynghede.  
He may hem bope saue and spille.  
And for it stant vpon his wille.  
It sit him wel to ben auised.  
And ye verus which ben assised.  
Vnto a kynges requiment.  
To take in his entement.  
Wher of to tellen as ye stonden.  
Here afterward nolle fonde.  
Among ye verus oon is chet.  
And pat is troupe which is lief.  
To god and eke to man also.  
And for it hay ben euer so.  
Tallher Aristotle as he wel coupe.  
To Alisandre holi in his vollype.  
He scholde of troupe ylle grace.  
Wys al his hole herte embrace.  
So pat his word be trewe & pleyne.  
Toward ye world and so certein.  
Pat in hym be no dooble speche.  
For if men sholde troupe seche.  
And fonde it not wyne a kynge  
It were an vnsittynge pyn.  
Ye world is to be of pat wyne.  
Yer schal a wordi kynge bynne.  
To kepe his tynge and to be trewe.  
So shal his prys be euer nolle.  
And he wel war er he be shore.  
For afterward it is to late.  
If pat he wolle his word debate.  
For as a kynge in special.  
A boue alle ower is pynapal.  
Of his possel so sholde he be.  
Most vertuous in his degre.  
And pat may be wel signefied.  
By his corone and spetified.  
*Arro sup hys que in corona Regis  
designantur.*  
The gold betokeney excellence.  
Pat men sholde don him reuerence.  
As to hys hege souereyn.  
Ye stoncs as ye lokes seyn.  
Comended ben in treble wise.  
First yei ben hard and ylle assise.  
By tokeney in a kynge constance.  
So pat yer shal no variance.  
Be fonde in his condicioun.  
And also by descriptioun.  
Ye veru which is in ye stoncs.  
And veray signe is for ye noncs.

Of pat a kynge shal ben honeste.  
And holde trewe by his behest.  
Of ym which longer to kynghede.  
Ye bryht colour as a rede.  
Which in ye stoncs is shynnyng.  
Is in figure by tokenyng.  
Ye crownz of his worldes fame.  
Which stant vpon his good name.  
Ye cercle which is roband a boue.  
Is token of alle ye lond wyne.  
Which stant vnder his Gerarchie.  
Pat he it shal wel kepe and mye.  
And for pat troupe holi so it falle.  
Is ye veru souereyn of alle.  
Pat longer vnto requiment.  
A tale which is euident.  
Of troupe in comendacioun.  
Toward ym enformacioun.  
My sone here after you shal here.  
Of a crownz in pio matere.  
*Thic narrit qualis Sarius fili  
us ystaphis Soldanus persie a tri  
bz suis concubularijs quoz nota  
Aparahes amanchaz & Zorababel  
dea sunt noie questionis singillatim  
Interrogant vtrid rex aut mulier  
aut vnu maioris fortitudinis vi  
ri obtineret ipis vero varia opin  
one respondentibz Zorababel vtri  
mus asseruit quod mulier sui amo  
ris complacencia tam Regis qm  
viri potencia excellit. Adidit in  
sup p finali conclusionis dicens qd  
Veritas sup omia vincit cum re  
sponso ceteris Pandabilior accepta.*  
**A** Soldan Whilom Was of ylle.  
Which Sayres hyste & ylle.  
His fader Was and so it is.  
Pat purgh wisdom ad hyl prudent.  
More ym for my reuerence.  
Of his ymage and by descent.  
Ye regne of ylle Empire he heute.  
And for he Was hymself wys.  
Ye wys men he helde in prys.  
And souht hem oute in chery side.  
Pat toward hym yei shode abyde.  
Among ye which yei pere were.  
Pat moste seruice vnto hym bere.  
As yei which in his chambre lay.  
And al his counsell herde and seyn.  
Here names ben of stannynge not.  
Aparahes Was ye firste hote.  
And amanchaz Was ye secounde.  
Zorababel as it is fonde.  
In ye crownz Was ye pcedde.  
Yis soldan what so hym by talle.



To hem he tryste moſte of alle.  
 Wher of ye cas is ſo biſulle.  
 His Lord Which hay conceiptes depe.  
 Upon a nyght Whan he hay ſepe.  
 As Which hay his wyte diſpoſed.  
 Touchyng a poynt hem hay oppoſed.  
 Ye kynges queſtioni Was his.  
 Of pynnes yre Which ſtrengtheſt is.  
 Ye Wyn ye Woman or ye Kyng.  
 And pat yei ſholde vpon his pynge.  
 Of here muſtwee aduys be.  
 He vaf hem fully ayes yre.  
 He hay byhote how by his fey.  
 pat vho ye beſte reſon ſey.  
 He ſhal receyue a boyn mede.  
 vpon his pynge yei token hede.  
 And ſtoden in diſputefon.  
 pat by dyuerſe opprobion.  
 Of argumentz pat yei haue holde.  
 diſputethes fiſt his tale tolde.  
 And ſeys how pat ye ſtrengthe of kynges.  
 Is myſtreyſt in alle pynnes.  
 For kyng hay power ouer man.  
 And man is he Which reſon can.  
 And he Which is of his nature.  
 ye moſte noble creature.  
 Of all ye pat god hay wrought.  
 And by pat ſtyle it ſemey nouht.  
 he ſey pat eyr epe ly pynge.  
 may be ſo myſtreyſt as a kyng.  
 A kyng may ſpille a kyng may ſaue.  
 A kyng may make of lord a knaue.  
 And of a knaue a lord alſo.  
 ye power of a kyng ſtant ſo.  
 pat he ye lawes ouer paſſey.  
 What he wole make laſſe he laſſey.  
 What he wole make more he morey.  
 And as a gentyl fauon ſorey.  
 he ſley pat no man hym reclaimy.  
 But he al one alle ouer tamey.  
 And ſtant hym ſelue of lawe fre.  
 So ye a kynges myght ſey he.  
 So as his reſon can argue.  
 Is ſtrengtheſt and of moſt value.  
 pat anachaz ſeide ouer wyſe.  
 pat Wyn is of ye more enpryſe.  
 And pat he ſholde be ye weye.  
 ye Wyn ful ofte takey a weye.  
 ye reſon ſio ye mannes herte.  
 ye Wyn can make a crepul frete.  
 And a deluare man but beſte.  
 It makey a blynd man to byhelde.  
 And a blynd yhed ſeme derke.  
 It makey a lewed man a clerk.  
 And ſio ye clerkes ye clergie.  
 It takey a wey and colwardie.  
 It corueryn to hardieſſe.

Of Auarice to makey myſeſſe.  
 The Wyn makey eke ye good blood.  
 In Which ye ſoule Which is good.  
 Hay choſen here a reſtyn place.  
 Whil pat ye lyf here wole embrace.  
 And by his ſtyle manachus.  
 And wored hay vpon his caas.  
 And ſey pat Wyn by weye of kynde.  
 Is plyn Which may ye heretes bynde.  
 Wel more pan ye regalie.  
 For ababel for his partie.  
 Seide as hym pouthe for ye beſte.  
 pat Women den ye myſtreyſte.  
 ye Kyng and ye vnuow alſo.  
 Of Women comen boye tto.  
 And eke he ſeide how pat manhede.  
 purgh ſtrengthe vnto ye Womanhede.  
 Of loue where he wole or noon.  
 Obey ſhal and per vpon.  
 To ſhelue of Women ye mayſarie.  
 A tale Which he ſyly wyſe.  
*Alzora hic de vincto amoris qui  
 inter carpa fecerit pſarū z dpe  
 mem ſeſaxie filia ipius Regis co  
 cubina ſpectante tota curia experie  
 ſatur.*  
 As for enſample he tolde ye.  
 How apemey of ſeſaxie  
 Which daughter was to palers.  
 Sittyn vpon his hyhe deys.  
 Whan he was hottet in his yre.  
 Toward ye grete of his oupry.  
 Cyrus ye kyng tynant ſhe took.  
 And only wyſe hure gooly took.  
 She made hym delouare and meke.  
 And by ye chyn and by ye cheke.  
 She luggy hym riht as hure liſte.  
 pat now ſhe gapey now ſhe liſte.  
 And doy wyſe hym what euere hure liſte.  
 Whan pat ſhe louey pan he ſley.  
 Whan ſhe gladey he is glad.  
 And ye ye kyng Was ouer lad.  
 Wyſe here Which he ſeyan Was.  
 A mouy ye men is no ſolas.  
 If pat ye be no Woman ye.  
 For but if pat ye Woman were.  
 ye woldes goye were a weye.  
 purgh hem men fryden out ye weye.  
 To fupthod and to woldes fame.  
 ye make aman to drede ſhame.  
 And honour for to be deſired.  
 purgh ye beaute of heu is fured.  
 ye dant of Which cupide prowey.  
 Wher of ye Jolyſt perne grolwey.  
 Which all ye world hay vnderſote.  
 And Woman is ye mannes loto.  
 his lyf his dey his wo his wole.



And yis ying may be sheldes wile.  
 Holl pat women ben gode and hynde.  
 For in euample yis 3 fynde.  
*Alceste vxor ameti de maritu suu*  
*viuificaret seipm mori spontanee*  
*fube gtu*  
 When pat ye dub Ametus lay.  
 Seke in his bedde pat euery day.  
 men wayten Whanne he sholde deye.  
 Alceste his Wyf may for to prey.  
 As she whiche wolde yow be serue.  
 Wyf sacrifice vnto ametus.  
 To witte answere off ye goddesse.  
 Holl pat hit Lord off his sikenesse.  
 Wher of he was so wo besem.  
 Recouere miht his hele a yem.  
 So pus she aye z pus she preyede.  
 Til atte laste a dore here seide.  
 pat if she wolde for his sake.  
 ye maladie suffice and take.  
 And deie hire self he sholde lye.  
 Of yis answere Alceste hay yide.  
 Vnto ametus gret yowfynge.  
 So pat hit dey and he Wyngte.  
 She chee Wyf al here hole euerente.  
 And pus accorded hom she wente.  
 In to ye chambze and Whan she cam.  
 Here housbonde a noon she nam.  
 In bope here arunes and him lyste.  
 And spak vnto him Whil hit lyste.  
 And per vpon Wyngte a prowe.  
 ye gode Wyf was ouer prowe.  
 And he was hole in hyste.  
 So may a man by resen caste.  
 Holl next after ye god a boue.  
 The trowpe of Wyntmen z ye Loue.  
 In Whom pat alle grace is founde.  
 Is mihtyest vpon ye grounde.  
 And most behouely many fold.  
 So pus Zorababel hay told.  
 ye tale of his opprimed.  
 But for finale conclusion.  
 What strengest is off expely ynges.  
 ye Wym ye Wommen or ye Kynges.  
 He seip pat trowpe a boue hem alle.  
 Is mihtiest holl euer it falle.  
 ye troupe holl so euer it come.  
 may for no ying ben ouercome.  
 It may wel suffice for a prowe.  
 But at ye laste it shal be knowe.  
 ye prouerbe is Who pat is twelwe.  
 him shal his while neuere relbe.  
 for holl so pat ye cause wende.  
 ye troupe is shunckles at pende.  
 But what ying pat is twingelles.  
 It may not wel be shameles.

And chame hindrey eueri Wyf.  
 So prouey it yer is no myf.  
 Wyf oute trowthe in no deye.  
 And pus for Wyf off his deye.  
 Zorababel was most comended.  
 Wher of his question was ended.  
 And he receyved hay his mede.  
 for trowpe whiche to manes nede.  
 Is most behouelyche ouer al.  
 for ye was trowpe in special.  
 ye ferste poynt in obseruance.  
 Bytule vnto ye noueruaunce.  
 Of Alisandre as it is seid.  
 for per vpon ye ground is leyd.  
 Of eueri kynles regiment.  
 As ying whiche most comenient.  
 Is for to sette a Kyng in euene.  
 So ye in yis world and eke in heuene.  
*Abit auaricia ne tangat rapia*  
*corda. Cuius em spolijs exornatur*  
*hinnis. fanna colit latia volutis*  
*p sella Regem. Dona tamen Dias.*  
*lunt moderanda modis. Quid truo*  
*tat de regie manifestatis secunda*  
*policia qua Aristotiles largitate*  
*vocat annis virtute no solum pro*  
*pulsata auaricia regis nome man*  
*ustia extollitur. sed et in subde*  
*ciouid diuiciam habundancia. Jo*  
*audiores efficiuntur.*  
 Ext after trowpe ye secounde.  
 In policie as it is founde.  
 Whiche seidep to ye worldes fume.  
 In Worlde of a Kyngs name.  
 Targessor is Whos pryncesse.  
 per may noon auarice abregne.  
 ye worldes good was fustionum.  
 But afterward vpon fortune.  
 Was yille comm profyt cessed.  
 for Whan ye poeple stode enured.  
 And ye Liguages Weyen mure.  
 A noon for singuler dyte.  
 Trowpe eueri man to his parcie.  
 Wherof am in ye fustie endie.  
 Wyf gret debat z Weyes stoune.  
 And last among ye men so loue.  
 Tuo ingu Who was Who.  
 ye which was freud ne which was  
 Til atte laste in eueri londe.  
 Wyngte him selfe ye poeple fonde.  
 pat it was good to make a Kyng.  
 Whiche myfite appeseu all yis ying.  
 And yeue vnto ye Liguages.  
 In pargum of here heritages.  
 And eke of all here oyer gode.  
 And pus a boue hem alle stode.  
 ye Kyng vpon his regalie.



As he which hay to Justifie.  
 The worldes good for couetise.  
 So sette it wel in alle wise.  
 A kynge be the more and lesse.  
 To sette his herce vpon largesse.  
 To ward him self and eke also.  
 To ward his poeple and if nought so.  
 That is to seyne if pat he be.  
 To ward him selfuen large & fre.  
 And of his poeple take and pille  
 Largesse be no weye of shyle.  
 It may be sayd but auarice.  
 Which in a kynge is a greet vice.  
 A kynge behoueyr eke to floe.  
 The vice of prodigalite.  
 That he be in his expense.  
 So kepe pat of indigence.  
 He may be sayd for who pat nedey.  
 In all his werk is worse he spedy.  
**Oron sup hoc for aristoteles**  
**Alexandri exemplum de exar-**  
**umz Regis Caldeorum**  
 As aristoteles vpon Chaldeo.  
 Ensamble of greet auctorite.  
 In to kynge alisundre tauhte.  
 Of yllke folk pat were dysauhte.  
 Toward here kynge for his pilage.  
 Wher of he had in his corage.  
 That he wnt to pre poyntz entende.  
 Wher pat he wolde his good despende.  
 First sholde he take how pat it shold.  
 Pat all were of his owne good.  
 He yftees pat he wolde reue.  
 So myght he wel be bettre yue.  
 And eke he moste taken hede.  
 If there be cause of any mede.  
 Which ouht for to be defende.  
 Er pat his goodes be despende.  
 He mot eke as it is besalle.  
 A monyes ower pinges alle.  
 So he deccres of his men.  
 And after pat he be of leyn.  
 And of astute and of merite.  
 He shal hem largely acquite.  
 Or for he were or for he pes.  
 Pat you honour fuld in desces.  
 Which myghte tome in to desame.  
 But pat he kepe his goode name.  
 So pat he be nought holde dysname.  
 For in Ewngz a tale I fynde.  
 Which spekyr soundel of his matere.  
 Here after ward as yow shal here.  
**Quic sedm gesta julij exemplum**  
**ponit qualiter rex suoz milid**  
**quos probos agnouerit indigentia**  
**largitatis sue beneficijs reuocare**  
**tenetur**

127 Foure to purue his viht.  
 There was a worpi poue knyght.  
 Which cam alone for to seyn.  
 His cause whan he court was pleyne.  
 Wher gylus was in pence.  
 And for him lackey of despende.  
 Per was wy him non aduocat.  
 To make ple for his astat.  
 But pouh him lacke for to plede.  
 Him lackey no ying of manhede.  
 He wiste wel his poue was poue.  
 But yet he pouht his viht reuere.  
 And openly pouerte a leyde.  
 To yemperour and pus he seide.  
 O gylus lord of yow lacke.  
 Whold my counseil is wydradde.  
 For lacke of gold to yin office.  
 After ye lacke of justise.  
 Help pat I hadde counseil here.  
 Upon ye crowne of my matere.  
 And gylus wy pat a noon.  
 Assigned him a worpion.  
 But he hym self no word ne spak.  
 His knyght was wroth & found a lak.  
 In yemperour and seide pus.  
 Upon dyspnde gylus.  
 Whan you in y bataille were.  
 In dyspnde and I was yere.  
 My myht for y rescouse I seide.  
 And put no man in my rede.  
 Yow wost what woundes yere I hadde.  
 But here I fynde ye so hadde.  
 Pat ye ne liste to speke o word.  
 Ym owne mounyng of ym hord.  
 To yene a floreyne me to helpe.  
 How shold I pame me by yelpe.  
 For yis day fory of y largesse.  
 Whan such a greet dyspndesse.  
 He founde in such a lord as yow.  
**Chis gylus kuel wel ynowh.**  
 Pat al was for which he hym tolde.  
 And for he wolde nought ben holde.  
 Dyspnde he took his cause on hounde.  
 And as it were of goddes sounde.  
 He yaf hym good ynowh to spende.  
 For euev dū to his lynes ende.  
 And pus sholde euev worpi kynge.  
 Take of hys knyhtes knowledgyng.  
 Whan pat he seih yei hadden uede.  
 For euev seruice axey mede.  
 But ower which hame nought deserued.  
 Yurh vertu but of yapes serued.  
 A kynge shal not deserue muce.  
 Yowh he be large in such a place.  
**Whic expont exemplum de Rege**  
**Aurigono qualiter dona regia se**  
**audum minus & minus equa by**



*creacione moderanda sunt...*

**I**f sette wel every kyng to hane.  
 Sideracion whan men hym canne.  
 So pat he may his yfste wite.  
 Wherof I fynde a tale wite.  
 Trolb cynichus a pouere knyght.  
 A some which was ouer myght.  
 Proude of his kyng Autimous.  
 He kyng answered to hym pus.  
 And seyde holdy such a yfste passer.  
 His pouere astat and pynne he passer.  
 And axep but a litel peny.  
 If pat ye kyng wol reue hym any.  
 Ye kyng answered it was to smal.  
 For hym pat was a lord real.  
 To reue a man so litel peny.  
 It were bulborshipe in a kyng.  
**E**y pis ensample a kyng may lere.  
 pat for to reue is in mynere.  
 For if a kyng his tresor passer.  
 Wynto honoure and ynkles passer.  
 Whan he hym self wol so begyle.  
 Not who shal compleyne his while.  
 re who by ritht hym shal reue.  
 But napeles ye I beleue.  
**¶ Nota hic qd regius scatus a suis fidelibz omni fauore supportandus est...**  
 To helpe wy his owne lound.  
 Kyhouey eueryman his lound.  
 To sette vpon necessite.  
 And eke his kynges realte.  
 Not euery lere man conforte.  
 Wy good and body to supporte.  
 Whan yei se cause resonable.  
 For who pat is not entendable.  
 To holde by right his kynges name.  
 Hym ouhte for to be to blame.  
 Of poltic and ouermore.  
 To speke in pis matiere more.  
**¶ Nota hic solum Aristotilem quater principu prodigalitas paup tate inducit conuincem.**  
 So as ye philosophre tolde.  
 A kyng after ye reule is holde.  
 To modestie and to adresse.  
 His yfste vpon such labgesse.  
 pat he mesure not excede.  
**Seneca. Sic alijs benefacito ut tibi non noceas...**  
 For if a kyng fulle in to nede.  
 He causey ofte sondry ynges.  
 Which beon vngoodly to ye kynges.  
 What man wol not hym self mesure.  
 wen seu ful ofte pat mesure.  
 Hym hay for sake and so doy he.  
 pat vsey prodigalite.

Which is ye moder of pouerte.  
 Wherof ye londes ben desert.  
 And namely whan pulke bue.  
 A boutte a kyng stant in office.  
 And hay wy holde of his partie.  
 Ye couetouse flaterie.  
 Whiche many aldozi kyng deceyue.  
**¶ Nota qualiter in principu aut adulatores triplici manitate offendit.**  
 Er he ye fallas a purreyue.  
 Of he pat seruen to ye glofe.  
 For yei pat comen plesse and glofe.  
 Ben as men tellen ye nocees.  
 In to ye fostyring of ye vices.  
 Wherof ful ofte napeles.  
 A kyng is blamed multeles.  
 A philosophre as yow shalt lere.  
 Speker to a kyng off his matiere.  
 And sey hym wel how pat flatur.  
 Couetise were of a viciours.  
 Don this collard ye gettes hihe.  
**¶ Primo contra deum...**  
 pat weren wypp of pat yei shen.  
 ye mischey which be fülle sholde.  
 Off pat ye fals flatur tolde.  
**Secundo contra principem.**  
 Tolland ye kyng an oper lous.  
 Whan yei bi slehti and by fallas.  
 Off feyned wordes make hem wene.  
 pat blak is white 2 blew is grene.  
 Touchyng of his condicion.  
 Whan he doy extorcion.  
 Wy many an oper vice mo.  
 wen shal not fynden oon of yo.  
 To gruche of speke yer a yern.  
 But holden by his oil and seyn.  
 pat al is wel what euere he doy.  
 And pus of fals yei maken soy.  
 So pat hire kynges yhe is bleut.  
 And dot not wouht how ye world is wene.  
**¶ Tercio contra populum...**  
 The pvedde erour is harm comune.  
 Wy which ye poeple moti comune.  
 Of wronges pat yei bringen gume.  
 And pus yei wouhten treble yume.  
 pat ben flatur aboute a kyng.  
 yer mist be no wofeyng.  
 A boutte a kynges regalie.  
 van is ye vice of flaterie.  
 And napeles it hay ben vfed.  
 pat it this neuere yet refused.  
 As for to speke in courteal.  
 For yer it is most special.  
 And may not longe be forbore.  
 But whan ye vice of hem is bore.  
 pat sholden ye vertus fory bynne.  
 And troupe is turned to lesynne.



**I**ris as who seip a yain kynde.  
Wherof an olde ensample I fynde.  
**A**nc contra Damocles aduland  
requit a narrat quod cu Aristy-  
pus de cartagine philosophus so-  
le studiū relinquens sui principis  
obsequio in magnis adulacionibz  
p ceteris carior assydebat. Accidit  
ut ipe quodam die Diogene pfm.  
mip sociū suū dū tam moribz qm  
sta pbatissimū herbas ad olera sua  
collectas lauante ex casu ad tri-  
pam uidentū ai ait. O Diogenes.  
vere si tu fias et ego principū tuo.  
placere scires huiusmodi herbas.  
aut colligere aut lauare tibi mi-  
mine indigeret. Cui alter respon-  
dit. O Aristippe certe et si tu stut  
et ego olera tua colligere et laua-  
re scires principem tuū ob inanis  
glorie cupiditatem blandiri nūl-  
latum deberes.

**I**nong yese oper tales wise.  
Of philosophes in pis wise.  
Rede hold whilom alio pere were.  
And to ye stole for to lere.  
In to attones fro cartage.  
Here frendes whan pei were of age.  
hem senden and pere pei stoden longe.  
Til pei such lore haue vnderfonge.  
And in here tyme pei surmounte.  
Alle oper men pat to accompte.  
Off hem was pei pei mēte fame.  
ye firste of hem his riht name.  
Was Diogenes panne hote.  
In whom was founde no riote.  
His felaw Aristippus highte.  
Whiche mochel colpe z mochel michte.  
But atte laste so to seyn.  
pei bope tozue home a yeyn.  
In to cartage and stole lere.  
pis Diogenes no byete.  
Of worldes good or lasse or more.  
ye souhte for his longe lore.  
But toke hym ouh for to dwelle.  
At hom and as ye lokes telle.  
his hous was nyh to ye ryuere.  
By syde a brinne as you schalt here.  
pere dwelle he to take his reste.  
So as ye woult hym for ye beste.  
To studie in his philosophie.  
As he whiche wolde so seie.  
ye wordes poyntes on euery syde.  
But Aristippe his boke asside.  
hay lere and to ye court he wente.  
Wher many a wyle and many a lēte.  
Wip flaterie and wordes softe.

**H**e caste and hay compassed ofte.  
hold he his pryncce myghte plesse.  
And in pis wise he gat hym ese.  
Of veyn honoure and worldes good.  
ye londes reule vpon hym stood.  
ye kyng of hym was wonder glad.  
And al was so what ying he had.  
Tope in ye court and eke wip oute.  
Wip flaterie he brouht a bouite.  
his purpos of ye worldes werk.  
Whiche was a yeyn ye stat of clerk.  
So pat philosophie he leste.  
And to richesse hym selfe he leste.  
To pus hadde Aristippe his wille.  
**B**ut Diogenes dwelte stille.  
At hom and loked on his boke.  
he souht nouht ye worldes crook.  
for veyn honoure ne for richesse.  
But all his hertes bynesse.  
he sette to be vertuous.  
And pus wip iune his owne howe.  
he luyet to ye sufficiunce.  
Of his hannyng z felt purchaunce.  
pis Diogenes vpon a day.  
And pat was in ye mone of may.  
Whan pat yese herbes ben holsome.  
he walke for to gedre some.  
In his gardyn of whiche his ioutes.  
he wouhte haue z pus aboutes.  
Whan he hay gadred what him liket.  
he sette hym panne down and yaket.  
And wip his herbes in ye flood.  
vpon ye whiche his gardyn stood.  
z yth to ye brinne as I tolde eer.  
And hapney whil he sittey per.  
Cam Aristippes by ye stete.  
Wip many a lord and many a grette.  
And sawe he vū to ye brinne he wod.  
Where pat he loked and a bod.  
for as he caste his eyhe nyhe.  
his felaw Diogene he syhe.  
And what he dede he seih also.  
Wher of he seide to him so.  
**D**iogene god ye speide.  
It were certes litel nede.  
To sitte pere and wortes pike.  
If you pi pryncce coupest like.  
So as I can in myn degre.  
**A**ristippe a yeyn quod he.  
If pat you coupest so as I  
pi wortes pike trewly.  
It were as litel nede or lasse.  
pat you so worldly wold compassse.  
Wip flaterie for to serue.  
Whe of you penkest to deserue.  
pi prynces pouke z to purchace.  
hold you myht stonden in his grace.



For getyng of a litul good.  
 If yow wold take in to y<sup>e</sup> mas.  
 Reson yow myght by reson deme.  
 pat so y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>ynce for to queme.  
 It not to reson accordant.  
 But it is grethly discordant.  
 Du to y<sup>e</sup> scoles of Athene.  
 To yow answere Diogene.  
 A yow y<sup>e</sup> clerkes flaterie.  
 But yow men sen yow samplere.  
 If Arispe is wel wel receyved.  
 And yow of Diogene is wel.  
 Office in Court and gold in cofre.  
 Is noll men syn y<sup>e</sup> philosophre.  
 Whiche hay y<sup>e</sup> w<sup>r</sup>schipe in y<sup>e</sup> halle.  
 But flaterie passet all.  
 In chambre whom y<sup>e</sup> court auance.  
 For yow yow lot it chaunce.  
 To be bylowed noll a day.  
 I not if it be y<sup>e</sup> or nay.  
 But all y<sup>e</sup> comon voys it telle.  
 And where pat flaterie dwelle.  
 In any lond vnder y<sup>e</sup> sonne.  
 Yow is ful many a ying begonne.  
 Whiche were begre to be lest.  
 pat hay be shelled noll and est.  
 But if a p<sup>r</sup>ynce wold hym reule.  
 Of y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>ynces after y<sup>e</sup> reule.  
 In yow yow it was y<sup>e</sup>sed.  
 Yow vice sholde be refused.  
 Wher of y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>ynces ben assayed.  
 But where y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>ynce wold conue.  
 Yere may a p<sup>r</sup>ynce wel conue.  
 pat he shal not hym self deceyue.  
 Of pat he heret wordes pleyne.  
 For him par not by reson pleyne.  
 pat warned is er hym be wo.  
 And pat was fully preyed yow.  
 Whan yow was y<sup>e</sup> worldes chieff.  
 Yow sepe sepe yow was lief.  
 Whiche wold not y<sup>e</sup> troupe spare.  
 But yow hys wordes pleyne and bare.  
 To yow yow hys sope tolde.  
 As in Couig is yow w<sup>r</sup> holdo.  
 Heer afterward as yow shal here.  
 Accordyng du to yow matere.  
**A**the narrat sup eodem qualiter  
 imp<sup>r</sup> Romanor<sup>u</sup> imp<sup>r</sup>ator cum  
 triumphator in hostes a bello Ro-  
 me rediret tres sibi laudes in sin-  
 guis sui triumph<sup>i</sup> p<sup>r</sup>apue delib<sup>r</sup>at.  
 Primo quatuor equi albi sum<sup>i</sup>  
 curru in quo sedebat vehere.  
 Secundo tunica jomis p<sup>r</sup>et<sup>r</sup>indue-  
 retur. Tercio sui capiti p<sup>r</sup>ocur-  
 ru ad v<sup>r</sup>it<sup>r</sup> p<sup>r</sup>atus cathenact de-  
 ambulare. Sed ne tanti honoris

Pur.

adulatione eius animi in sup<sup>r</sup>biam  
 extolleret. quidam satura lingua  
 quosus iux ipm in curru sedebat  
 qui quasi continuatis vocib<sup>z</sup> in-  
 pando ei dixit. rothcos. hoc est  
 nosce te ipm qui si hodie fortuna  
 tibi p<sup>r</sup>spira sint eras forte versa  
 rota mutabilis aduersabitur.

**O** see yow olde ensamplerie.  
 pat Whilom was no flaterie.  
 Toward yow p<sup>r</sup>ynces wel y<sup>e</sup> fynde.  
 Wher of so as it comy to mynde.  
 my sone a tale du to yow gre.  
 Whil pat yow w<sup>r</sup> p<sup>r</sup>ynces were.  
 At yow yow p<sup>r</sup>ynce for to tellen.  
 For whanne yow chaunces so bifellen.  
 pat yow Emperour as yow.  
 Yowre hadde yow his fox.  
 And so fory cam to yow a yow.  
 Of the h<sup>r</sup> honour he was certen.  
 Wher of pat he was magnified.  
 yow fust as it is specified.  
 Was whan he cam in yow tyde.  
 yow char in whiche he sholde ride.  
 foure white stedes sholdendride.  
 Of quytter be yow kide.  
 yow cote he sholde were also.  
 hys p<sup>r</sup>ouers eke sholde go.  
 Enlond yow char on eper hond.  
 And alle yow nobles of yow lond.  
 To fore and after w<sup>r</sup> hym come.  
 yow and brouhten him to yow.  
 In yow of his cheualrie.  
 And for non oper flaterie.  
 And pat was shelled fory w<sup>r</sup> al.  
 Wher he sat in his char yow al.  
 By side him was a ribald set.  
 Whiche hadde his wordes so byset.  
 To yow yow in all his glorie.  
 he seide take in to memoire.  
 For all yow p<sup>r</sup>ynce and all yow p<sup>r</sup>ynce.  
 For yow yow yow a yow.  
 But yow yow yow so befall.  
 For men seen ofte yow fall.  
 yow which men wende yow fowle.  
 yow yow yow yow yow fowle.  
 fortune may not stonde alway.  
 yow wheel p<sup>r</sup>achante au<sup>r</sup> oper day.  
 may turne and yow myght ouer yow.  
 yow latter no yow bu a yow.  
 yow yow yow and yow mo.  
 yow yow yow yow yow yow.  
 To yow yow yow tale tolde.  
 And ouer yow what euer he wold.  
 Or were it euil or were it good.  
 So p<sup>r</sup>ynce as yow w<sup>r</sup> yow stood.  
 he sp<sup>r</sup>ay not but speke it oute.



*Ysa*

*Dij.*

*Ysa*

And so myght euery man a boune.  
ye day of pat solemnyte.  
his tale telle as wel as he.  
To remperour al opprobry.  
And all was his ye cause whi.  
pat whil he stod in pat noblesse.  
he sholde his dymite repress.  
Wip suche wordes as he herde.  
To noll holl yllke tyme it ferde.  
Toward so heh a boery lord.  
for his fonde eke of record.  
Whiche he crowng his auctorised.  
What empereur was entronised.  
*hic etiam contra adulationem*  
*scribit quod primo die quo nup in*  
*pator introitus erat extitit latom*  
*hui ab ipso constanter petere de*  
*quali digne suo sepulture timu*  
*lum fabricarentur sic futuram*  
*mortem commemorans Vanitates*  
*humus seculi transitorias facilius*  
*reprimere*  
The fyste day of his corone.  
Where he was in his real trone.  
And helde his feste in ye paleys.  
Sitting vpon his hyhe deys.  
Wip all ye lust pat may be sette.  
Whan he was gladdest at his mete.  
And euery mynistrall hadde pleyed.  
And euery nestour hadde seide.  
What most was plesance to his ere.  
Wan atte laste comen pere.  
His mason for yei sholde craue.  
Where pat he wolde be bymaue.  
And off what ston his sepulture.  
yei sholde make and what sculpture.  
he wolde ordeyne per vpon.  
The was pere flaterie noon.  
ye worpi pynces to by inpe.  
ye yung was ower wise shipe.  
Wip good counsell and ower wise.  
yei were hem seluen pame wise.  
And vnderstoden wel and knouen.  
Whan such ofte wyndes blesben.  
off flaterie in to here ere.  
yei setten not here heres pere.  
But whan yei herden wordes fermed.  
ye pleyu trollye it hap desdenged.  
Of hem pat weren so dyscrete.  
So took ye flaturer no byrete.  
off him pat was his pynce po.  
And for to prouen it is so.  
A tale which beset in dede.  
In a crowng of thome i rede.  
*hic inter alia gesta cesaris nar*  
*rat vnu exemplum precipue con*  
*tra illos qui cum in aspectu prin*

*apis alijs sapientiores appare vellet*  
*quandaz tamen similitate sapientiae.*  
*talita comitatu per que ceteris scilicet*  
*aciores in fine comprobantur.*  
**C**esar vpon his real throne.  
Where pat he sat in his pson.  
And was hihet in all his pry.  
A man whiche wolde make hym dys.  
off doun knyching in his presence.  
And dede hym such a reuerence.  
As pouh ye hihe god it were.  
wen hadden gret merueile pere.  
off ye worship whiche he dede.  
ye man dys for yllke stede.  
And for wip al ye same tyde.  
he got hym by and by his side.  
he set hym doun as peer and peer.  
And seide if you pat sitest here.  
Art god which alle thynges myht.  
Wan haue i do worship aright.  
As to ye god. and ower wise.  
If you be not of yllke assise.  
But art a man such as am i.  
Wanne may i sitte faste by.  
For we be bope of oo kynde.  
Cesar answerde 2 seide o blinde.  
How art a fool it is wel seue.  
Wan ye self for if you wene.  
I be a god you dose anys.  
To sitte where you seest god is.  
And if i be anan also.  
you haue a gret folie do.  
Whan you to such oon as shal deye.  
ye worship off ye god alweye.  
Hast youen so vnderwylly.  
pus may i proue redyly.  
you art not dys and yei pat herde.  
Holl wisely pat ye byng answerde.  
It was to hem a newe lore.  
Wher of yei dudden hem ye more.  
And broukten no ryg to his ere.  
But if it troupe and reson were.  
So be pere many in suche a wise.  
pat feruen wordes to be wise.  
And all is verray flaterie.  
To hym which can it wel assie.  
*Et tota qualiter isti circa prin*  
*cem adulatorios potius a curia ex*  
*pelli qui a regie maiestatis inque*  
*re acceptari soliaa iudante debent.*  
The kynde off flaturer can not loue.  
But for to bynne hym self aboue.  
For holl pat euere his mayster fawe.  
So pat him self stonde out of awe.  
hym rechev not and pus full ofte.  
Decerned ben wip wordes softe.  
ye bynges pat ben innocente.



Wher of as for chastement.  
 The wise philosopher seide,  
 What kynge pat so his tresor leide.  
 Upon such folk he may ye lasse.  
 And yet he doy he no darresse.  
 But harmey by his owne hond.  
 hym self and eke his owne lond.  
 And pat by many a soudry weye.  
 Wher of if pat a man shal seye.  
 As for to speke in generall.  
 Where such ying fulley ouer all.  
 pat euy kynge hym self myghte.  
 ye philosopher vpon his rechte.  
 In special ye cause sette.  
 Which is and euer he may ben yette.  
 In gouernance a boute a kyng.  
 vpon ye mischies of ye ying.  
 And pat he seip is flaterie.  
 Wher of tofore as in partie.  
 What vice it is I haue declared.  
 For who pat say his wit bylared.  
 vpon a flatur to bylene.  
 Whan pat he wene best adene.  
 his goode world it is most fye.  
 And for to prouen it is so.  
 Ensamplis pere ben many oon.  
 Of which is yold wold knowen oon.  
 It is behouely for to here.  
 What whilom fel in his matere.  
**Adulanti quoz fabut principis au-**  
**res organizate veritatis auditiu ca-**  
**pere uequunt. Et narrat exemplid**  
**de rege Achab qui pro eo quod ipe**  
**phacae fideles archieue recusant**  
**auditiu qz adulatis zedeche adhe-**  
**rit Rex sive Zenedab in campo bel-**  
**latoz ipm diuino iudicio demittit fecit.**  
 Whom ye kynges in ye bible.  
 fynde a tale and is credible.  
 Of him pat whilom achab hihte.  
 Which hadde all israhel to rihte.  
 But who pat couye nlose softe.  
 And flateye such he sette a lofte.  
 In gret a state and made hem rihte.  
 But yet pat speken wordes rihte.  
 To trolpe and wold it not forbere.  
 For hem was noon astut to bere.  
 ye court of suche took noon hiede.  
 Til atte laste vpon a nede.  
 pat Zenedab kyng of surie.  
 Off israhel a gret partie.  
 Which famoth Galaath was hote.  
 hay sesed and of pat riote.  
 he took counsell in soudry wise.  
 But not of hem pat weren wise.  
 And napeles vpon his cas.

To strengpen hym for Josaphas.  
 Whiche ym was kyng of Judee.  
 He sende for to come ad he.  
 Which purgh frendshipe & alliance.  
 Was next to him of aquemittance.  
 For Jozan sone of Josaphath.  
 Achabbes doughter wedded hay.  
 Whiche hihte faure Godelie.  
 And yut cam in to Samarie.  
 Kyng Josaphat and he fond pere.  
 ye kyng achab and whan ye were.  
 To gedre spekyng of his ying.  
 his Josaphath seip to ye kyng.  
 how pat he wolde gladly here.  
 Som trewe prophete in his matere.  
 pat he his counsell myht yene.  
 To what poynt pat it shal be dreu.  
 And in pat tyme so it sefell.  
 pere was such oon in israhel.  
 Whiche sette him att to flaterie.  
 And he was cleyed zedeche.  
 And after him achab hay sent.  
 And he at his commendement.  
 To fore hym cam and by a slehte.  
 he hay vpon his hede on helte.  
 Two large hornes sette off drab.  
 As he whiche al a flatur was.  
 And gey rampyng as a leon.  
 And caste his hornes by a don.  
 And bid men ben of good espre.  
 For as his hornes weren per.  
 he seip wy oute resistance.  
 So wite he wel of his science.  
 pat Zenedab is discomfit.  
 Whan zedeche vpon his wit.  
 hay told his tale to his lord.  
 A noon pere were of his accord.  
 Prophetes false many moo.  
 To bere vp oit and alle so.  
 affermen pat which he hay told.  
 Wher of ye kyng achab was wold.  
 And pat hem yfrees alle aboute.  
 But Josaphath was in gret doute.  
 And held faincisme att pat he here.  
 preyng achab hold so it ferde.  
 If pere were eny ower man.  
 ye whiche of prophete can.  
 To here here hym speke ev pat ye gon.  
 Quod achab yinne per is oon.  
 A brofel whiche archieue hihte.  
 But he comp nouht in my sihte.  
 For he hay longe in prison ym.  
 hym lilep neuere pat to seyn.  
 A goodly word to my plesance.  
 And napeles at ym instance.  
 he shal come out and ym he may.  
 Seie as he seide many day.

any my a

took counsell



For yet he seide neuere wel.  
 No Josaphath began somdel.  
 To gladden hym in hope of trolle.  
 And had wyf outen eny trouwe.  
 That men hym sholden sette a noon.  
 And yet yet weren for hym noon.  
 When yet were comen where he was  
 yet tolden by to mecheas.  
 The manere how pat Sedechie.  
 Declared hay his pphetic.  
 And yet byon yet preie hym faire.  
 That he wol seie now contrarie.  
 Wher of ye kynyng may be dyspleased.  
 For so shal euery man ben esed.  
 And he may helpe hym self also.  
 Michas byon trolle ye so.  
 His herte sette and to hem seip.  
 At pat bylonger to hys seip.  
 And of noon ower ferued pyn.  
 That wol he telle to ye kynyng.  
 As fer as god hay yene hym grace.  
 That cam by pphete in to place.  
 Where he ye kynynges wille herde.  
 And he yet to a noon answerde.  
 And seide by to hym in his wyse.  
 My leue lord for my seruice.  
 Whiche trelle hay stonden euere yet.  
 That hast me by prison a quit.  
 But for al pat I shal not glose.  
 Of trolle as fer as I suppose.  
 And as to bykynyng of his bataille.  
 That shal not off ye soe faile.  
 For if it liker ye to here.  
 As I am taught in pat matere.  
 That must it byder stonde sone.  
 But what is afterward to done.  
 Anse ye for pat I seih.  
 I was to fore ye thone on heih.  
 Where all ye world me pouht stood.  
 And yet I herde and byder stood.  
 Ye boys of god by wordes dre.  
 Expre and seide in his manere.  
 In what pyn may I best begile.  
 Ye kynyng achab and for a while.  
 Byon his poynt ye speken faste.  
 Tho soide a spirit atte laste.  
 I byder take his emprise.  
 And god hym axey in what wyse.  
 That quod he deceyue and lye.  
 By flatterynng pphetic.  
 In such manere as he keuoy.  
 And he which all pyn accheuoy.  
 Had hym no forp and do right so.  
 And ouer pat I seih also.  
 The noble people of israel.  
 Dispersed as sheep byon an hett.  
 By oute a loper by anneyed.

And as yet wente aboute astunyd.  
 I herde a boye by to hem seyn.  
 Goy hom in to your hous ayein.  
 For I for yow haue better osernyed.  
 Quod Sedechie you haue ferued.  
 This tale in augtryng off ye kynyng.  
 And in a wyse byon his pyn.  
 He smot mecheas byon ye cheke.  
 Ye kynyng hym hay rebuked eke.  
 And euery man byon hym ayde.  
 That was he sheut on euery side.  
 Ayein and in to prison lad.  
 For so ye kynyng hym selue had.  
 Ye trolle myht not ben herd.  
 But after ward as it hay ferd.  
 The dede prouey his entente.  
 Achab to ye bataille wente.  
 Where Benedab for al his sheld.  
 Hym solde so pat byon ye feld.  
 His peple goy a boutte astray.  
 But god whiche alle pynnes may.  
 So doy pat yet no mescheyt haue.  
 Here kynyng was ded and yet ben saue.  
 And hom ayein in goddes pees.  
 yet wente and all was founde lees.  
 That Sedechie hay seid to fore.  
 So sime it wel a kynyng ye fore.  
 To louen hem pat trelle mene.  
 For atte laste it wol be seue.  
 That flaterie is no pynng word.  
 But now to my matere forp.  
 As for to speken ouer more.  
 After ye philosophres lore.  
 Ye prouide poynt of policie.  
 I renke for to specifice.  
 Quod tranngressores Reges sta-  
 tuitur in orbe. De diuano iusti ro-  
 gis honore vni. Lex sine iusticia  
 pphim sub principis vmbra. Deu-  
 at de reatid nemo videbit iter.  
 Sic tractat de tertia principu Regis  
 polia que iusticia notata est. cui  
 condicio lombi in corrupta diuicijs  
 quod fuit estica pondere distribuit.  
 What is a lord where men ben noone.  
 What been ye men which are alone.  
 By oute a kynynges gouernance.  
 What is a kynyng in his lignage.  
 Wher pat yet is no lalle in londe.  
 What is to take lalle on hounde.  
 But if ye kynynges weren trelle.  
 ye soide wordes by ye uelle.  
 Who pat wole take in audience.  
 Ther may he se experience.  
 What pynng it is to kepe lalle.  
 pynng which ye wronges ben by stralle.  
 And right wysesse stant comended.



**W**

**Liberty**

Wher of pe regnes ben amended.  
For Wher pe Lalle may comune.  
The Lorde fory Wy pe comune.  
Eche hay his ppe ducto.  
And eke pe kynges realte.  
Of boye his Worschip vnderfouger.  
To his ascate as it belouger.  
Whiche of his hyhe Worschipe.  
Way to gouerne vnderbynesse.  
As he Whiche shal pe Lalle hyde.  
His polter stant a boue pe Lalle.  
To reue boye and to Wy dralle.  
pe forset of a mannes hys.  
But puges Whiche are excessif.  
And pe Lalle he shal not do.  
For Loue ne for hate also.

**Imparatoris magestare no solu  
armis. s. etia legibz oportet esse  
armatum.**

The myhtes of a kyng been grete.  
But yit a Worschipe shal Lette.  
Of Wroung to don al pat he myhte.  
So he Whiche shal pe poeple vhte.  
To sette wel to his regalie.  
pat he hym self fette iusticie.  
To Wardes god in his degre.  
For his astat is elles fee.  
To Ward alle ower in hys persone.  
Saue only to pe god alone.  
Which wol hym self a kyng chafise.  
Wher pat non ower may suffise.  
So Were it good to taken hede.  
pat fette a kyng his oþwe dede.  
Be tibehe pe vertu and pe vice.  
To drese and panne of his iustice.  
So sette in euene pe balaince.  
To Wardes ower in gouernaunce.  
That to pe pouere and to pe rche.  
Hys Lalles myhten scoude rche.  
he shal excepte no persone.  
But for he may not al hym one.  
In sondry places do iustice.  
he shal of his real office.  
Wy Wyre consideration.  
Or beynne his disputation.  
Of such iuges as ben leuened.  
So pat his poeple be gouerned.  
By hem pat twelle ben and wise.  
For if pe Lalle of couetise.  
Be set vpon a iuges hond.  
Do is pe poeple of pilke lond.  
For Wroung may not hym selfe hede.  
But elles on pat ower side.  
If Lalle scoude Wy pe rht.  
pe poeple is glad and stant rht.  
Where as pe Lalle is resonable.  
pe comune poeple stant meuable.

And if pe Lalle tome a myse.  
pe poeple also mystornes is.

**Nota hic iusticia maximam  
impatoris qui ad alienius pui  
cie custodem sibi substituere vole  
bat primo de sui uoluntate fama pro  
clamacione facta prius condicione  
diligentius inuestigabat.**

And in ensample of his matiere.  
Of myghtin a man may here.  
Of Rome Which was Emperour.  
pat Whanne he made a gouernour.  
By Wore of substitution.  
Of Robyns or of Region.  
he wolde ferst enquire his name.  
And Lette it bynly proclame.  
Whit man he were or yuelo or god.  
And vpon pat his name stood.  
Enchued to vertu or vice.  
So wolde he sette hym in officio.  
Or elles put hem alle a Wore.  
Hys hilde pe Lalle pe rht Wore.  
Whiche foud no Lette of couetise.  
pe Worde stood pame vpon pe Wore.  
As by ensample you myht rede.  
And holde it in y mynde i rede.

**hic ponit exemplum de iudicio  
incoeruptis. Et narrat qualiter  
Gaius Fabricius nuper Rome con  
sul audivit a Samnitibus sibi oblatu  
m remitte dicens quod nobilius est  
aurum possidere domino submitti  
re qui ex auri cupiditate hominum  
libertate amittere.**

**I**n a Croniqz I fynde pus.  
How pat Gaius Fabricius.  
Which Whilom was consul of Rome.  
By Whom pe Lalles rede and come.  
Whan pe Samnites to hym brought.  
A some of gold and hym bysought.  
To don hem favour in pe Lalle.  
To Ward pe gold he gan hym dralle.  
Wherof in alle memies Look.  
A part in to his hond he took.  
Which to his moup in alle haste.  
he put it for to smelle and taste.  
And to his eyhe and to hys ere.  
But he nefond no comfort pere.  
And pan he began it to dyspise.  
And tolde in to hem in pte wise.  
I not What is Wy gold to prile.  
Whan noon of alle my Wites fyne.  
Hym favour ne delie per june.  
So is it but a nice pime.  
Of gold to ben to colerous.  
But he is rche and glorious.  
Which hay in his subiecton.



ye me which in possession.  
 Ben riche of gold and by his style.  
 For he may alday when he wylle.  
 Or be hymi loue or be hymi lorde.  
 Justice don vpon hemi lorde.  
 So yus he seide and wy pat word.  
 He wylle to fore hem on ye word.  
 The gold out of his hond a noon.  
 And seide hem pat he wolde noon.  
 So pat he kepte his liberte.  
 To do justice and equite.  
 Wy oute lorde of such richesse.  
 There be now felde of such richesse.  
 For it was yllke tyme dres.  
 Pat euery iugge was refused.  
 Which was not frend to coumyn rite.  
 But yei pat wolden stonde vpright.  
 For troupe only to do justice.  
 Preferred were in yllke office.  
 To seme and iugge coumyn lorde.  
 Which now men seyn is all wydrall.  
 To sette a lorde and kepe it nouht.  
 For is no coumyn profit souht.  
 But a boue alle myghtes.  
 The lorde which is made for pees.  
 Is good to kepe for ye besse.  
 For pat sette alle men in reste.

*The narrat de iusticia imp con  
 radi Imperatoris ciuis tempore all  
 ciuis reuerencia psona aliqua seu  
 pccum interueniente quacumq; uel  
 auri redempcione Regum scatur  
 comitari seu redimi nullatenus  
 potuerunt.*

The vntful Emperour comrade.  
 To kepe pees such lorde made.  
 Pat noon wy jme ye tye.  
 In discourbance of vntye.  
 Forste ones moeuen a matere.  
 For in his tyme as pou myght here.  
 What pouut pat was for lorde sette.  
 It shold for no gold be set.  
 To what pson pat it were.  
 And yis brouht in ye coumyn fere.  
 Whi euery man ye lorde dradd.  
 For yis was noon which fauour hadde.

*et tota exemplum de constantia  
 iudicis ubi narrat de carmidotore  
 Rome nup consule qui ad sui sta  
 tuti Regem nescius offendisset po  
 nant qz sup hoc penam sibi reuoc  
 tare voluissent ipse ppa manu ubi  
 nullus alius ul yfud vindex fuit sui  
 cuius vindex am assecutus est.*

As yese olde bokes seyn.  
 I fynde wrote how a Romeyn.  
 Which consul was of ye ppretoire

Whos name was Carundotore.  
 He sette a lorde for ye pees.  
 Pat euery man be wepneles.  
 Pat come in to ye conseil hous.  
 And elles as malicious.  
 He shal ben of ye lorde ded.  
 To pat statut and to pat red.  
 Accorden alle it shal be so.  
 For certeyn cause which was po.  
 And hote what fel yer after soue.  
 Yis consul hadde for to soue.  
 And was in to ye felde ride.  
 And yei him hadde longe abyde.  
 Pat lorde of ye conseil were.  
 And for him sende and he cam yere.  
 Wy word ygerd and hay foryete.  
 Til he was in ye conseil seite.  
 Was noon of hem pat made speche.  
 Til he hym self it wolde seche.  
 And fond out ye defaute hym selfe.  
 And pame he seyde vnto ye lorde.  
 Which of ye senat weren wise.  
 I haue defebued ye iuse.  
 In haste pat it were do.  
 And yei him seiden alle no.  
 For wel yei wiste it was no vice.  
 Whan he ne pouhte no malice.  
 But only off a lytel lorde.  
 And yus yei lasten us for rouye.  
 To do justice vpon his mite.  
 For pat he shold not be spilt.  
 And whan he seih ye manere holt.  
 Yei wolde hym saue he made abolt.  
 Wy manful herte and yus he seide.  
 Pat Rome shulde neuere abreyde.  
 His heres whan he were of dalt.  
 Pat here auceste brake ye lorde.  
 For yei er pat yei weren war.  
 For yis ye same word he bar.  
 The statut of his lorde he kepte.  
 So pat al Rome his dey by wepte.  
*Arata qz fust iudices mortis pe  
 na punirent sime narrat eud qualie  
 Cambyses Rex ppari queda ptem  
 corruptu excoati vnu fecit eusqz  
 pelle cathedra iudiciali operit  
 constituit ita quod filius suus sup  
 sui pris pellem postea pro tribu  
 nali cessurus iudicij equitate eui  
 dencius memoraretur.*

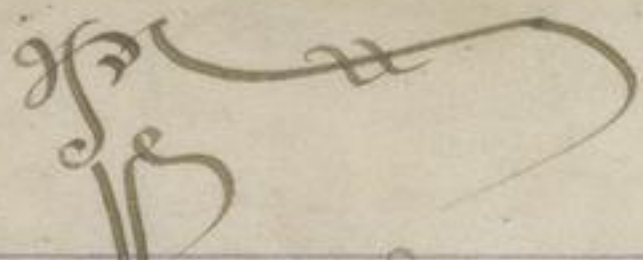
For oper place also i rede.  
 Wher pat a iugge his olde dede.  
 To wol not venge of lorde broke.  
 Ye lorde it hay hym self wrote.  
 Ye terte lorde which Cambyses.  
 Was hote a iugge lordeles.  
 He fond and in to remembraunce.



He dede vpon hym such vengeance.  
 Out of his syn he was by flayn.  
 # Al quyt and in paradyse flayn.  
 So pat his syn was styke al mete.  
 # And wayles vpon ye same secte.  
 Wher pat his sone shulde sitte.  
 # And use hym if he sholde flitte.  
 Ye salde for ye couetise  
 Yere seche vedy his iurse.  
 # His in defaute of oyer iunge.  
 Ye kynn mot oyer while iunge.  
 To holde vpon ye riht lalwe.  
 # And for to speke of ye olde dalwe.  
 To take ensample of pat was so.  
 # Fynde a tale write also.  
 Holw pat a worpi pryncce is holde.  
 Ye dalwes of his lond to holde.  
 # Ferste for ye hihe goddes sake.  
 # And eke for pat hym is bytake.  
 Ye poeple for to hyde and rede.  
 # Which is ye charge of his kynghede.  
*¶ The point exemplar de pnapibus  
 illis qui non solum legem statuentes  
 illa conseruant sed ut commune bo  
 ni adaugeant pna facultate dimi  
 nuunt. Et narrat qd ad augustinus  
 Athed princeps in omni pspitatis  
 habundancia diuites et vnamines  
 congruis legibus stare fecisset. Volens  
 ad saluandem rei publice leges il  
 las firmius obseruari perire pro  
 fecti se fuerit. Sed pns iuramentu  
 solempne a legibus suis sub hac for  
 ma exegit qd ipi usqz in reditu  
 suu leges suas nullatenus infringe  
 rent quibz iuratis pegrinationem  
 suam in exilium absqz reditu pro p  
 petuo delegauit.*  
**L**et a Cronyng I rede pus.  
 Of ye rihtfulst augustinus.  
 Which of Athens pryncce was.  
 How he ye dalwe in euery cas.  
 Wher of he sholde his poeple wille.  
 Hay sette vpon so good a reule.  
 In alle ye world pat cite noon.  
 Of dalwe was so wel begon.  
 # For wy ye twilpe of gouernance.  
 Ther was among hem nodistance.  
 But euery man hay his ences.  
 Yer was wy oute were pces.  
 Wy oute enbie loue stood.  
 Fichesse vpon ye comun good.  
 And nouht vpon ye singuler.  
 Ordeyned was and ye polwer.  
 Of hem pat weren in astur.  
 Was sauf. Wher of vpon debat.  
 Yere stood no ymy so that in reste.

Wih eueri man his herte refo.  
 # And Whan ye noble rihtful kynn.  
 Seih hold it ferde of all pis ymy.  
 Wher of ye poeple stode in eie.  
 # He Whiche for euere wolde pleso.  
 Ye hyeh god Whos poult he souste.  
 # A wonder ymy patme hym by pouste.  
 # And shop if pat it myhte be.  
 Holw pat his dalwe in ye cite.  
 Wih afterward for euere lyste.  
 # And yer vpon his wit he caste.  
 Whic ymy hym were best to feryne.  
 # Pat he his purpos myht atteigne.  
 # A parlement and pus he sette.  
 His wisdom wher pat he besette.  
 In audience of grette and finale.  
 # And in pis wise he tolde his tale.  
 God wot and so ye weten alle.  
 Heer after ward holw so it fulle.  
 # Sit in to noll my wille hay be.  
 To do justice and equite.  
 In fuyring of comoun profit.  
 Such hay ben euere my zelle.  
 # But of o ymy I am be knolle.  
 Ye Whiche my wil is pat ye knolle.  
 Ye dalwe Whiche I took on honde.  
 Was al to gedre of goddes soude.  
 # And no ymy of myn owen wit.  
 So mot it nedo endure yit.  
 # And shal so lenger if ye wile.  
 For I wole telle yow ye stile.  
 Ye god mecurius and no man.  
 He hay me tauht al pat I can.  
 Of such dalwes as I made.  
 Wher of pat ye ben alle glade.  
 # It was ye god and no ymy I.  
 Which dede all pis and nouht for me.  
 He hay comanded of his grace.  
 # Pat I shal come in to a place.  
 Which is foreyn olde in an yle.  
 Wher I mot tarye for a while.  
 Wy hym to speke as he hay bede.  
 # For as he sei in pat stede.  
 He shal me such ymyes telle.  
 Pat euere whil ye world shal dwelle.  
 # Athens shal ye bette fare.  
 But ferst er pat I ynder fare..  
 # For pat I wole pat my dalwe.  
 Amonges yow ne be wy dwalle.  
 Yer Whiles pat I shal ben oute.  
 # For ye to setten out of doulte.  
 Sope yow and me ye wole a preye.  
 Pat ye me wole assure and seye.  
 Wy such an ope as I wole take.  
 Pat eche of yow shal vnder take.  
 My dalwes for to kepe and holde.  
 # Yei seiden alle pat ye wole.





And per upon pei shere here op.  
 pat fto pe tyme pat he goy.  
 If he to hem be come a xym  
 pei sholde his laltes wel and pleyne.  
 In euery poynt feye and fullille.  
 Thus say Liguargius his wille.  
 And took his leue and forp he wente.  
 But here now wel to what entente.  
 Of fithelwysnesse he dede so.  
 For after pat he was a go.  
 He shope hym nebere to be founde.  
 So pat Athens which was bounde.  
 reuere after sholde be releffed.  
 re pulke good lalbe cessed.  
 which was for commun profit set.  
 And in his wise he hay it fnet.  
 he which pe commun profit souhte.  
 pe kyng his olbue a state ne rouhte.  
 To do pfit to pe comune.  
 he took of exil pe fortune.  
 And lefte of wynece pulke office.  
 Donly for leue and for iustice.  
 purgh which he pouhte if pache makte.  
 for euere after his dey to rihte.  
 pe cite which was hym bytake.  
 wher of men ouhte ensample take.  
 pe good lalbes to maunace.  
 Wip hem which vnder gouernace.  
 pe lalbes hane for to kepe.  
 for who pat wolde take kepe.  
 Of hem pat ferst pe lalbes founde.  
 Als fer as laster eyn bounde.  
 Of dond here names vit be knowe.  
 And if it like pe to knowe.  
 Some of here name holl pei stonde.  
 Now herkne and you shalt vnderstode.  
**¶** *hic ad eorū laude qui iusticie*  
**¶** *causa leges pmo statuerūt aliquorū*  
**¶** *uicia specialius comemorat.*  
 ¶ euery been set pe the merite.  
 pe god hym self to wol a quite.  
 And eke ful ofte it fullep so.  
 pe world it wole quite also.  
 But pat may not been euene liche.  
 pe god he yenge pe heuene riche.  
 pe world yenge only but a name.  
 which stant vpon pe goode fame.  
 Of hem pat don pe goode dede.  
 And in his wise double mede.  
 peceyue pei pat don wel heere.  
 wher of if pat pe luse heere.  
 After pe fame as it is blowe.  
 were myht yoll wel pe sope knowe.  
 holl pulke honeste besnesse.  
 Of hem pat ferst for riht wysnesse.  
 Among pe men pe lalbes made.  
 may neuere vpon his eyre fade.

for euere whil pere is a tynge.  
 here name shal be rid and sunge.  
 And holde in pe Croniq write.  
 So pat pe men it shulde wite.  
 To speke good as pei wel ouhten.  
 Of hem pat ferst pe lalbes souhten.  
 In forpynge of pe worldes pees.  
 In to pe hebreus was moyses.  
 pe firste and to peripaens.  
 mercurius. and to troiens.  
 ferst was rebusa pompilius.  
 To Athens Liguargius.  
 pat ferst pe lalbe and to gregorys.  
 for onelus hay pulke dore.  
 And Romulus to pe Romeyns.  
 for such men pat ben dileyns.  
 he lalbe in such a wise ordeynen.  
 pat what man to pe lalbe pleigney.  
 By so pe jugge stonde vpon riht.  
 he shal be serued of his riht.  
 And so ferfor it is befall.  
 pat lalbe is come among vs alle.  
 God leue it more wel been holde.  
 as euery kyng per to is holde.  
 for ying which is of kynges sette.  
 Wip kynges ouht it nouht be lette.  
 What kyng of lalbe takep no kepe.  
 By lalbe he may no regne kepe.  
 To lalbe a wele what is a kyng.  
 Where is pe riht of eyn ying.  
 If pat pere be no lalbe in londe.  
 his ouhte a kyng wel vnderstonde.  
 as he which is to lalbe more.  
 pat if pe lalbe be for dore.  
 Wip outen execution.  
 it makep a londe torne vpon soun.  
 which is to pe kyng a loundre.  
 for vi vn to kyng Alisaundre.  
 The wise philosophre had.  
 pat he him selfe ferst be lad.  
 Of lalbe and forp pame oueral.  
 To do iustice in general.  
 pat all pe wylde lond a bonte.  
 pe iustice of his lalbe donte.  
 And pame shal he scoude in repte.  
 for per to lalbe is don pe beste.  
 A boue att opre exlyp ying.  
 To make a liege drede his kyng.  
 But holl a kyng shal gete hym loue.  
 Toward pe hie god a boue.  
 And eke among pe men in erpe.  
 his next poynt which is pe ferpe.  
 Of aristotles lorde it techen.  
 wher of who pat pe scole sechen.  
 What poliae pat it is.  
 pe book rehercey after his.  
**¶** *nil in omni habens ubi velle*



tirannica regna. Scingit amor po-  
puli transiet exul ubi. Sz pietas  
regnu que conseruabit in eum.  
Non tantu ppo sz placet illa deo.  
Hic tractat de quareu principu  
regiminiu policia que pietas dicta  
est p qua pnyces eiga pti  
misericordes effecti misericordiam  
assumit quaciusus conseruatur.

**P**ietas not pat i delate.  
re pzo Which pzyes is algate.  
And hay ben euer and euer shal.  
Wher of to speke in special.  
It is pe vertu of pite.  
pnygh Which pe hie maneste.  
Hus fered Whan his sone a lyte.  
And in pite pe World to rite.  
Took of pe mayde flesshe and blod.  
pite Was cause of yllke good.  
Wher of pat We ben alle saue.  
Wel ouht a man pite to haue.  
And pe vertu to sette in pzo.  
Whan he hym self Which is al wys.  
hay shewes Whi it shal be pzyes.  
pote may not be countrepyes.  
Of tyrannye Wip no pzo.  
ffor pite maky a kyng curtes.  
Tope in his Word and in his dede.  
It fite Wel euerie liege drede.  
His kyng and to his heste obeys.  
And vnt so by pe same weye.  
It fit a kyng to be pitous.  
Toward his poeple and gracions.  
Vpon pe reule of gouernaunce.  
So pat he werche no venguaunce.  
Which may be cleped cruallte.  
Justice Which doy equite.  
He dresful for he no man spayre.  
But in pe loud Wher pite fawre.  
pe kyng may neuere faile of loue.  
ffor pite pnygh pe grace aboue.  
So as pe philosophre affermey.  
his regne in good astat confermey.

**Constantinus Imperator ait.**  
**De se dnm esse compendebat qui ser-**  
**ui pietatis se facio.**

**C**hus seide Whilom Constantyn.  
What Emperour pat is enclyn.  
To pite for to be seruant.  
Of alle pe kynges remenant.  
He is Worpi to ben a Lord.  
In olde bokes of record.

**Dracianus ait. quod ipe subdi-**  
**cos suos salte pietatis fauore ing-**  
**no quod austeritatis rigore rege-**  
**corz qz brutalencia potius qui a-**  
**morem penes se attrahere ppon-**  
**erat.**

**C**hus fynde I Write of essamplaire.  
Dracian pe Worpi debonaire.  
ffor Whom pat Rome stood noined.  
Vpon a tyme as he Was Reined.  
Of pat he Was to familer.  
He seid vnt to pat conseriler.  
pat for to ben an Emperour.  
his wil Was not for deyn honour.  
He vit for redour of Justice.  
But if he myghte in his office.  
hise lordes and hie peple ples.  
hym pouhte it Were a mytter es.  
Wip loue hie herces to him dwalle.  
pat Wip pe dyed of euy lalle.  
ffor Whan a pnygh is do for dylte.  
fful ofte it cony pe Wozse a boure.  
But Where a kyng is pitous.  
he is pe more gracions.

**Prota hic de principis pietate**  
**certa pti ubi narrat quod ad co-**  
**dras Rex Athenis contra Dorren-**  
**tes bellum gerere deberet Consul-**  
**to puz Apolline responsum acco-**  
**pit quod vnt de duobz eligeret vide-**  
**licet aut scipm in plio interfici a po-**  
**pulum saluari. aut pti in interfici**  
**se salu fieri eligere oporteret.**  
**Suz quo Rex pietate motus pfecto**  
**q suo munus qui ppij corporis**  
**salutem affectu morcem sibi pe-**  
**lonit. Et sic bellu aggreduus p-**  
**dicta multoz solus interit.**

**C**ff pite for to speke pleyne.  
Which is Wip mercy Wel besyn.  
fful ofte he Wole hym selfe pemy.  
To kepe an ope flo the pemy.  
ffor charite pe moder is.  
Of pite Which no pnygh amys.  
Can suffre if he it may amende.  
It fit to euerie man lyuende.  
To be petous but non so Wel.  
As to a kyng Which on pe Wheel.  
ffortune hay set a bouen alle.  
ffor yn a kyng if so befall.  
pat his pite be ferme and stable.  
To alle pe lond it is durable.  
Donly pnygh grace of his yfoue.  
ffor pe pite of hym allone.  
may al pe larye realme saue.  
So fite it Wel a kyng to haue.  
pote. for his Saleure colde.  
And seide holl pat be dayes olde.  
Codrue Which Was in his deme.  
A kyng of Athens pe cite.  
A Wozre he hadde a pen dorence.







Which he hay by strengye pved,  
 ye pious Justinian.  
 As he pat was a cruel man.  
 His nose off and his lippes bove.  
 He kute for he wolde hym lope.  
 In to ye people and make suable.  
 But he which is al merciable.  
 The like god ordemye so.  
 pat he wyne a tyme also.  
 When he was sarentest in his yre.  
 Was shoven out of his empire.  
 Tyberius ye plder hadde.  
 And Rome after his wille he hadde.  
 And for Leones in such a wyse.  
 Ordemye pat he took hymse.  
 Of rase of lippes bove also.  
 For pat he dede an oper so.  
 Which more wryt was than he.  
 As which a falle hay cruallte.  
 And pite was sette by a pen.  
 For after pat he loked seyn.  
 Thervellis byng of reuloure.  
 Wy helpe of his cheualre.  
 Justinian hay vnyprisoned.  
 And to remyne a pen coroned.  
*Inc loquitur vltimus de crudelitate  
 Siculi necnon de kerillo eiusdem  
 consiliario qui ad tormentum pti que  
 dam tunc erat tyrannica coniectu  
 in fabricari constituit in quo tamen  
 ipse prior pmo crimine illis exigen  
 te usqz sui interitus expunctionem  
 iudicialiter torquebatur.*  
**A** Cronig: q fynde also.  
 Of Siculus which was eke so.  
 A cruel byng lich to ye tempest.  
 To whom no pite myht areste.  
 He was ye fyste as lokes sepe.  
 Upon ye see which foud Galeye.  
 And lette hem make for ye werre.  
 As he which al was out of herre.  
 fro pite and misericorde.  
 For yer to coupe he nought accorde.  
 But whom he myhte seen he slowd.  
 And y of was he glad ynouht.  
 He hadde of conseil many con.  
 Among ye which per was con.  
 By name which kerillus highte.  
 And he be pouht hym how he myhte.  
 In to ye tyrant do byng.  
 And of his owne ynnuymyng.  
 Set forge and make a bole of bras.  
 And on ye side cast per was.  
 A Dore where ania nly yme.  
 When he his peyne shal begynne.  
 pat for which pat men putte vnder.  
 And al his dede he for a wonder.

That when a man for peyne cride.  
 ye hole of bras which gape wyde.  
 It shulde seme as pouh it were.  
 A bellyng in a mannes ere.  
 And nought pe crying of a man.  
 But he which alle flehtes can.  
 ye deuyl pat lip in helle fyste.  
 hym pat his made hay ouer caste.  
 pat for a trespass which he dede.  
 he was put in ye same stede.  
 And was hym self ye ferste of alle.  
 which was in to pat peyn fulle.  
 pat he for oper men ordemye  
 per was no man pat hym displemye  
 Of tyranye and cruallte.  
 By his ensample a kyng may se.  
 hym self and eke his conseil bove.  
 How per ben to man fynde lope.  
 And to ye god abhominable.  
 Eysamples pat ben couenable.  
 I fynde of oper prynces mo.  
 As poll schalt heere of tyme ago.  
*Nota hic de Dionysio tyranno  
 qui mire crudelitatis seueritate ex  
 am hospites suos ad deuorandu  
 equis suis tribuit cui hercules tam  
 dem superueniens vinctu in  
 impietate sua pari morte collixit.*  
**T**he grete tyrant Dionys.  
 which mannes lyf set at no pye.  
 In to his hors ful ofte he yaf.  
 ye men in stede of corn and thaf.  
 Spat ye hors of yllke stood.  
 deuoureden ye mannes blood.  
 Til fortune at ye laste cam.  
 pat hercules hym ouercam.  
 And he vnt in ye same wyse.  
 Of ye tyrant cooke ye iuse.  
 As he til oper men hay do.  
 ye same dey he deyde also.  
 pat no pite hym hay scolded.  
 Til he was of his hors deuored.  
*Nota hic de cosimili dychaontis  
 tyranna qui carnes homu hoily in  
 suo hospicio ad descendu dedit cui  
 formam condicione similem iubar  
 coequans ipm in Apud infformant.*  
**C**osimili dychaon also q fynde.  
 how he ayein ye lake of fynde.  
 his hostes slowd and in to mte.  
 he made here bodies to ben ete.  
 Wy oper men wy yme his hous.  
 But iubiter ye glorious.  
 which was conuoued of his yme.  
 vengeance vpon his cruel byng.  
 So took pat he fro mannes forme.  
 In to a wolf hym lect transforme.



And thus he crualte was bydde.  
Whiche of long tyme hadde be hidde.  
A wolf he was pame oppynly.  
pe Whos nature pryuely.  
he hadde in his condicion.  
And vnto pis conclusion.  
pat tyrannye is to despise.  
I fynde ensample in sondry wise.  
And manerliche of hem ful ofte.  
pe Whom fortune hay set alofte.  
Upon pe Werres for to byrme.  
But how so pat pe wrong begynne.  
Of tyrannye it may not laste.  
But such as pei don atte laste.  
To ower men such on hem fulle.  
for a peyn such pite calley.  
Vengeaunce to pe god a boue.  
for Who pat hay no tendre loue.  
In saynyng of a mannes lyf.  
he shal be founde so multy.  
pat Whanne he wolde mercy axue.  
In tyme of nede he shal noon haue.  
**is qualite Leo hoibz stratis parat.**  
pe nature pite q fynde.  
pe ferece Leon in his kinde.  
Whiche goy rumpynge after his prey.  
If he a man fynde in his weye.  
he wol his le if he wyf stonde.  
But if pe man coupe vnderfonde.  
To fulle a non before his face.  
In signe of mercy and of grace.  
pe Leon shal of his nature.  
Festeyne his yre in such mesure.  
As pouh it webe a beste yained.  
And towe a weye halffynge a shamed.  
pat he pe man shal no pite greue.  
hoibz sholde pame a pynce achene.  
pe Wolde grace if pat he wolde.  
Festoyne a man Whan he is yolde.  
And stant vpon his mercy al.  
But for to fyke in special.  
per han be such and yit per be.  
Tyrantz Whos heres no pite.  
may to no poynt of mercy pte.  
pat pei vpon here tyrannye.  
re gladen hem pe men to se.  
And as pe rages of pe see.  
Keen vyperous to pe tempeste.  
Pite so may no pite areste.  
Of crualte pe mere ouerage.  
Whiche pe tyrant in his corage.  
Engendred hay wher of I fynde.  
A tale which comy now to mynde.  
**Ino loquuntur contra tyrannos il-**  
**los qui ad in bello vincere possunt**  
**humani sanguinis effusione satia-**  
**ri nequunt. Et narbat in exemplo**

de quodam perlarum Rege cui no-  
men Sptacus erat qui p ceteris tuc  
in oriente bellicosus & victoriosus  
quoscumq; gladio vincere poterat  
absq; pietate interfici consuevit. Sz  
tandem sub manu Thamaris mar-  
sagetarum Regine in bello captus  
quod a diu quesuit seueritatem p  
seueritate finalit inuenit nam q  
ipa quoddam vas de sanguine per-  
laru plent ante se offerre decreuit  
in quo caput tyranni usq; ad mor-  
tem mergens dixit. O tyrannoz  
crudelissime semp esuriens sangui-  
nem iusti ecce iam ad satietate  
sanguinem bibo.  
**L**ede in olde lokes pus.  
per Was a Duke which Spartachus.  
Men clepe and Was a Werriour.  
A cruel man a conquerour.  
Dry stroung polver Whiche he ladde.  
for his condicion he hadde.  
pat Where hym hapney pe victoire.  
his lust and al his most gloure.  
Was for to see and nouht to saue.  
Of ransow wolde he no good haue.  
for saynyng of a mannes lyf.  
But al goy to pe weid and lyf.  
So lief hym Was to mannes blood.  
And napeles yit pus it stood.  
So as fortune aboute wente.  
he fell rht heire as by discente.  
To perce and Was coroned kynge.  
And Whanne pe Worschip of his kynge.  
Was fulle and he Was kynge of perse.  
If pat pei weren ferse diuers.  
pe tyrannyes which he wrouhte.  
A pousandfold welmore he souhte.  
pame afterward to don malice.  
pe god vengeaunce a peyn pe vice.  
hay shap for vpon a tyde.  
Whan he Was hihest in his pryde.  
In his rancour and in his hete.  
A ven pe albene of marsagete.  
Whiche Thamaris pat dyne hite.  
he made werre al pat he myhte.  
And she Whiche wolde hire lond defende.  
hire owne sone a ven hym sende.  
Which pe defence hay vnder take.  
But he desconfit was and take.  
And Whan pe kynge him had in hounde.  
he wolde no mercy vnderfonde.  
But dede hym slen in his presence.  
The tyding of his violence.  
Whan it cam to his moder ere.  
she sende a noon ay wyde where.  
To suche frendes as she hadde.







138



That I ym helpe shal undertake.  
 you shal hit lasso poeple take.  
 By Whom my wil is put you speke.  
 For y to morwe take good hede.  
 In to ye flood whan ye be come.  
 What man pat hay ye Water nome.  
 Upon his hond and Lapey so.  
 To y part ches owt alle po.  
 And hym Which Wer is to Wynde.  
 Upon his Wombe and up to Wynde.  
 Forsake and put hom alle aweye.  
 For I am myghty alle weye.  
 Where as me luste myn helpe shelle.  
 In goode men pouh yei be felle.  
**C**his Gedeon alwaytey wel.  
 Upon ye morwe and eueridel.  
 As god hym bad rish so he dede.  
 And yus per lasten in yat scede.  
 Wip hym yre and no mo.  
 Ye remenut was al a go.  
 Wher of pat Gedeon merueiley.  
 And per upon Wip god conseiley.  
 Oleyning as fer fory as he dar.  
 And god pat Wold he Were War.  
 pat he shal speke upon his rish  
 hay bede hym to ye same nyht.  
 And take a man for hym to heere.  
 What shal be spoke in pis mater.  
 A mony ye heven enenys.  
 So may he be ye more wys.  
 What after Ward hym shal be falle.  
**C**his Gedeon a monyges alle.  
 Thara to Whom he tiste most.  
 In nyhte toke toward yllke hoste.  
 Whiche Longed was in a valeye.  
 To here what yei Wolden seie.  
 Upon his foot and as he ferde.  
 Two savazyns spekyng he herde.  
 Quod oon a red my sweene arish.  
 Which I mette in my sweene to nyht.  
**E**ye pouht I seyh a barly cake.  
 Whiche fro ye hult his weye hay take.  
 And cam rollung down at ones.  
 And as it were for ye nones.  
 For in his coute so as it ran.  
 Ye knyges tente off wadian.  
 Of Amalech of Amoreye.  
 Of Amion and of Jebuseye.  
 And many an oyer tente no.  
 Wip gret noyse as me pouhte y.  
 To prelle to mowude & ouercaste.  
 And al pis hoste so fore agaste.  
 pat I alwote for pure drede.  
**T**his sweene cam I wel a rede.  
 Quod poper savazyn anon.  
 ye barly cake is Gedeon.  
 Which fro ye hult down sodeynly.

shal come and sette such asari.  
 Upon ye knyges and ye boye.  
 pat it shal to ye alle Loye.  
 For ym such dred he shal ye byrue.  
 pat if we hadde flit of Wynde.  
 ye weye on fore in desepre.  
 We sholden leve and fien in yre.  
 For per shal no ymng hym Wynde.  
**W**han Gedeon hay under stonde.  
 his tale. he ponkey god of al.  
 And pryncelich a yen he saul.  
 So pat no yf hym hay parcyued.  
 And ym he hay fully conceyued.  
 pat he shal speke and per upon.  
 ye nyht sumyng he shoy to gon.  
 This multitude to assaile.  
 I trow shalte yow here a gret meruaile.  
 Wip what voydie pat he Wrouhte.  
 The lytel poeple whiche he brouhte.  
 Was noon of hem pat he ne hay.  
 A pot of erpe in whiche he tay.  
 A lyht brennyng in a cresset.  
 And eche of hem eke a trowmpet.  
 Far in his oyer hond beside.  
 And yus upon ye nyhtes tyde.  
 Gedeon whan it was derk.  
 Ordernyng hym du to pis Werk.  
 And parcyng pame pis folk in yre.  
 And chargyng hem pat yei ne fle.  
 And tawht hem holt yei sholde asen.  
 Alle in o voye par compaignie.  
 And what Worde eke yei sholde speke.  
 And holt yei sholden here pottel speke.  
 Schon Wip oyer whan yei herde.  
 pat he hym self ferst so ferde.  
 For whan yei come in to ye stede.  
 he bad hem do rish as he dede.  
 And yus stallyng fory a pas.  
 his noble duk whan tyme was.  
 his potte to brake and lowde asen.  
 And po yei broke on eueri side.  
 ye trowmpet was not po to seke.  
 he blesse and so yei blessen eke.  
 Wip suche a noyse a mony hem alle.  
 As pouh ye heuene sholde falle.  
 ye hult du to here voye answerde.  
 his hoste in ye valeye it herde.  
 And schy holt pat ye hult a ligh.  
 So what of hetyng and of rish.  
 yei caughten such a sodeyn feere.  
 pat noon of hem by lestye yere.  
 ye tentes holly yei forsoke.  
 pat yei noon oyer hood ne toke.  
 But donly Wip hure body bare.  
 yei fledde as dop ye wilde hare.  
 And euer upon ye hult yei blesse.  
 pat pat yei sihe tyme and felle.



put pei be fledde vpon pe rage.  
 And whan pei wiste here auantage.  
 pei felle a noon in to pe chas.  
 pus myht pou se how goddes grace.  
 on to pe gode men auailen.  
 But elles ofte tyme is fulle.  
 To such as be not wel disposed.  
 pis tale uedey not be glosed.  
 for it is openliche shelled.  
 put god to hem put beuvel pelled.  
 hay yode and thummed pe victoire.  
 So pat pensample of pis histore.  
 is good for euery kyng to holde.  
 first in hem self put he beholde.  
 if he be good in his hynure.  
 And pat pe folk which he shal bynure.  
 he good also for pannie he may.  
 he glad of many a mery day.  
 In what pat euere he hay to done.  
 for he whiche sette a boue pe mone.  
 And alle pynne may spille & spede.  
 In euery cause and euery nede.  
 his good kyng so wel adressed.  
 pat alle his foemen he repessey.  
 So pat per may no man hym dere.  
 And also wel he can for bere.  
 And suffre a willed kyng to fulle.  
 In hondes of his foemen alle.  
**¶** *hic dicit qd ubi & quando causa  
 & tempus requirunt princeps illos  
 sub potestate sua quos iusticie adu-  
 saros agnouerit occidere de iure to-  
 netur. Et narrat in exemplum qd  
 ter pro eo quod Saul regem Agam  
 in bello delictu iuxta Samuelis co-  
 nsum occidere noluit ipe dūmo iudi-  
 cio non solū a regno israel priuati-  
 sed & heredes sui pro perpetuo ex-  
 hereditati sunt.*  
**¶** *¶* Of ferpermore if I shal seyn.  
 Of my matere and tyme ayein.  
 To speke of iustice and pite.  
 After pe lalbe of Realte.  
 pis may a kyng wel vnderstonde.  
 kyngthode moe been take on honde.  
 Whan pat it stant vpon pe nede.  
 he shal pe rihtful cause drede.  
 no more of weire pan of pees.  
 Off he wole stonde blameles.  
 for such a cause a kyng may haue.  
 pat better hym is to se pan saue.  
 wher of you myht ensample fynde.  
 pe hysle makere of man kynde.  
 By Samuel to Saul bad.  
 pat he shal no pynge ben a drad.  
 a yen kyng Agam for to fynde.  
 for pis pe godhed hym bihite.

pat Agam shal been ouer come.  
 And whan it is so ferfor come.  
 pat Saul hay hym desconfit.  
 pe god bad make no respit.  
 pat he ne sholde hym sle a noon.  
 But Saul let it ouer noon.  
 And dede not pe goddes heste.  
 for Agam made grete byheste.  
 Of raim son whiche he wolde yeue.  
 Byng Saul soffrey him to yeue.  
 And feynce pte fory with al.  
 But he whiche sey and buolde al.  
 pe hysle god of iustice he feynce.  
 To Samuel vpon hym pleyne.  
 And send hym word for pat he leste.  
 Of Agam pat he ne byreste.  
 pe hys. he shal not only dye.  
 hym self but fro his regalie.  
 he shal be put for euere mo.  
 Touth he but eke his heir also.  
 pat it schal neuere come a yen.  
 pus myht pou se pe sope pleyne.  
**¶** *¶* **¶** *hic narrat vltimus sup eodem  
 maliter David in extremis iusticie  
 causa ut Joab occideretur absqz ul-  
 la remissione filio suo Salomō iuxta.*  
**¶** *¶* hat of to muche & of to lite.  
 vpon pe wyces stant pe wite.  
 But eue it was a kynges riht.  
 To do pe dedes of a kyng.  
 for in pe hondes of a kyng.  
 pe dey and hys is all o ying.  
 After pe lalbes of iustice.  
 To steen it is a dedly vice.  
 But if a man pe dey deserue.  
 And if a kyng pe hys preserue.  
 Of hym which ouht for to dye.  
 he shal nouht pen samplere.  
 whiche in pe bible is euident.  
 How David in his testament.  
 whan he no penge miht hys.  
 Du to his sone in charge hay yeue.  
 pat he Joab shal steen algate.  
 And whan David was gon his gate.  
 pe younge wise salomon.  
 his fader heste dede a noon.  
 And solow Joab in such a wise.  
 pat pei pat herden pe iurse.  
 Euer after dradden hym pe more.  
 And god was eke wel payd per fore.  
 pat he so wolde his herte plye.  
 pe lalbes for to iusticie.  
 And yet he kept fory wy al.  
 Dite so as a prynces shal.  
 pat he no tyranye wrouhte.  
 he fond pe wisdom which he souhte.  
 And was so rihtful napeles.



**T**hat all his lyue he stood in pes.  
pat he no dedly werres hadde.  
for euery man his wisdom duede.  
And as he was hym selfe wys.  
pate so pe worpi men of prys.  
he hay of his conseil wyholde.  
for pat is euery prynces holde.  
to make of such his retenu.  
Whiche wise been and to remelde.  
pe fooler for per is no pun.  
Whiche may be bettere a bunte a kyn.  
yan conseil which is pe substantiu.  
Of all a kynges gouernance.

*Probiat qd polum sibi commissum bene regere sup oia principi lauda bilis est. Et narrat in exemplis qualiter pro eo quod Salomon ut polum bene regeret ab altissimo sapientia specialius posculauit oia dona pariter ad illa sibi habundantius adueniunt.*

**S**alomon a man may se.  
Whar pyn of most necessity.  
Du to a worpi kyng belonget.  
Whan he his kyngdum vnderfouget.  
God bad hym chese what he wolde.  
And saide him pat he haue sholde.  
Whar he wolde alle of oyring.  
And he which was a helpe kyng.  
for per vpon his bone prede.  
to god and in his wise he seide.  
O kyng by Whom pat I shal regne.  
pate me wysdom pat in my regne.  
for wy in poeple which I haue.  
to pin honour may bepe and saue.  
Whan Salomon his bone hay tured.  
pe god of pat which he hay axed.  
Was riht wel payed and graunted soue.  
rouht al ouly pat he his bone.  
shal haue of pat but of richesse.  
of hele of pees of his noblesse.  
for wy wysdom at his axinges.  
which stant a boue all oyer ynges.

*hic dicit scdm Salomone qd re que maiestatis impud an oia sa no consilio dirigendum est.*

**W**hat kyng wole his regne saue.  
first hym behouey for to haue.  
after pe god and his bylene.  
Such conseil which is to bileue.  
fulfille of troupe and vltimess.  
But aboue alle in his noblesse.  
Be alene pe reddour and pite.  
A kyng shal do such equite.  
And sette pe balauce in eue.  
So pat pe lyke god in heuene.  
And all pe poeple of his noblere.

Longe in to his name seye.  
for most a boue al euegh good.  
Wher pat a kyng hym selue is god.  
It helpey for in oyer weye.  
If so be pat a kyng forueye.

*Quid delinuit reges plectit achin.*

**F**ul of ce er vis it hay be seyn.  
pe coum poeple is ouerleyn.  
And hay pe kynges synne aboute.  
Al youh pe poeple kulte nouste.  
Of pat pe kyng his god mysseruey.  
pe poeple taky pat he deseruey.  
here in vis world but elles where.  
I not hold it shal stonde yere.  
for in good a kyng to trise.  
ferse to him selfe as he ne wise.  
I can oyer helpe but god alone.  
So shal pe rule of his persone.  
Wynne him selfe pynish puidene.  
Seen of pe bettere consaene.  
And for to fynde ensample of vis.  
A tale I rede and soy it is.

*De hinc impatore exemplum pat qualiter princeps sui uois famam a seculis consiliarios sapienter mo tatur debet. et quid in ea summa inueniunt promissa discrecionis ad ter ram conuertat.*

**A** crowe it tellith pus.  
pe kyng of some Lucius.  
Wip june his chambre vpon a nyht.  
pe stward of his hous a knyht.  
for wip his chambirleyn also.  
to conseil hadde bope tibo.  
And stoden by pe chimneye.  
to gedre spekyng alle yere.  
And happen pat pe kynges fool.  
sat by pe fyr vpon pe scol.  
As he pat wip his babel pleyde.  
But vit he herde al pat pe seide.  
And per of token yet noon hede.  
pe kyng hym axed what to rede.  
Of such matiere as cam to mouye.  
And pei hym tolden as pei couye.  
Whan al was spoke of pat pe mouye.  
pe kyng wy al his hole entente.  
yan at pe laste hem axey vis.  
Whar kyng men tellen pat he is.  
A mouy pe folk wondring his name.  
Or be it prys or be it blame.  
pate after pat pei herden seyn.  
he bad hem for to telle it pleya.  
pat pei no poynt of soy for bere.  
for pille fey pat pei him bew.  
The stward first vpon pe yng.  
pat his answere du to pe kyng.  
And youhte glose in his matiere.



And seide as for as he can here.  
His name is good and honorable.  
Was was his sturward favorable.  
pat he pe twylf plem ne tolde.  
pe kynge pan wex ne he sholde.  
pe chamburleyn of his adre.  
And he pat was subtil and wys.  
And soude pouhte vpon his fey.  
Tolde hym how all pe poeple sey.  
pat if his conseil were trewe.  
pei wite panne wel and true.  
pat of hym self he sholde be.  
A wyllyng in his degre.  
And pus pe conseil he aduisey.  
In partie and pe kynge exauisey.  
he fol whiche herde of all pe cas.  
pat tyme as goddes wille was.  
Sei pat pe seiden nouht i nouht.  
And hem to storne bope lough.  
And to pe kynge he seide so.  
Su kynge if pat it were so.  
Of wisdom in ym olde mood.  
pat yow in selue were good.  
in conseil sholde not be hadde.  
pe kynge per of merueille hadde.  
Whan pat a fool so wysly spak.  
And of hym selfe found out yelak.  
Whiche his wile consience.  
And pus pe folles euidence.  
Whiche was of goddes grace enspired.  
maky pat good conseil was desired.  
he put allwey pe vicious.  
And took to hym pe vertuous.  
pe wrongful laltes ben amended.  
pe londes good is wel defended.  
pe poeple was no more oppressed.  
And pus stood euery ym redressed.  
for where a kynge is pryncer wys.  
And hay such as hym seluen is.  
Of his conseil it may not fyle.  
pat euery ym ne shal auale.  
pe vices panne non a were.  
And euery veyn holte he were.  
Wher of pe hite god is plesed.  
And alle pe londes folk is esed.  
for if pe comyn poeple crye.  
And pat a kynge list not to pleye.  
To here what pe clamor wolde.  
And oper wise panne he sholde.  
Deserue for to don hem grace.  
It hay be seen in many place.  
per hay befallle gret contrarie.  
And pat i fynde of ensampylawe.  
*Et dicit qd seniores magis expti  
ad principis consiliu admittendi  
potius existunt. Et narrat qua  
liter pro eo qd Roboas salomonis*

*filius a heres semit sermonibus re-  
renuans dicta iuleni preclerit.  
De duodecim tribubz israel a dno suo  
decem penitus amiserat sic ad dnd  
bus talimodo illis postea regnauit.*

After pe dey of Salomon.  
Whan yllle wile kynge was gon.  
And Roboas in his persone.  
recepue sholde pe corone.  
pe poeple vpon a parlement.  
And seide were of oon assent.  
And alle vnto pe kynge pei preyden.  
Wip comyn bope and pus pei seiden.  
Oure liege lord we pe beseeche.  
pat you receyue oure humble speche.  
And graunte vs which pat reson wille.  
Or of pi grace or of pi stile.  
pi fader whil he was a lyve.  
And myht bope graunte a prync.  
vpon pe werkes whiche he hadde.  
pe comyn peple seyent he hadde.  
Whan he pe temple made nelle.  
yng whiche men neuere tofore kelle.  
he brouht vp panne of his trelle.  
And alle was vnder pe visage.  
Of werkes whiche he made for.  
But now it is bifalle so.  
pat al is mad vnto as he seide.  
And he was viche whan he deyde.  
So pat it is no maner nedo.  
if yow per of wolt taken hede.  
To ylen of pe poeple moze.  
Whiche long tyme hay be greued sore.  
And in pis wise as we pe seye.  
Wip tendre herte we pe prey.  
pat you relesse yllle sette.  
Whiche vpon vs pi fader sette.  
And if pe like to don so.  
We been pi men for ouere mo.  
To gon and comen at ym heste.  
pe kynge whiche herde pis requeste.  
Sei pat he wole ben auised.  
And hay yer of a tyme assised.  
And in pe while he hym pouhte.  
vpon pis yng conseil he souhte.  
*De consilio seniu.*  
And first pe wise knyghtes olde.  
To whom pat he his tale tolde.  
Conseilen hym in pis manere.  
pat he wip loue and wip glad chere.  
for yene and graunte al pat is axed.  
if pat his fader hadde taxed.  
for so he may his regne achue.  
Wip yng whiche shal hym ltel greue.  
And he kynge hem herde and ouerpassy.  
And wip pese opre his wite compassy.  
pat yow were and no yng wile.



And þei þe se olde men despise.  
**De consilio iuuenum...**  
 And seiden þat it shal be shame.  
 For euere vnto þi wyrt name.  
 If þou ne kepe not þe rite.  
 Whil þou art in þi yonge myght.  
 Which þat þi olde fader gart.  
 But sey vnto þe poeple þat.  
 Whil þou limest in þi lond.  
 þe beste fruyt of þi hond.  
 It shal be strengier ouer all.  
 þan was þi faders body all.  
 And þis also shal be þi tale.  
 If þe hem smot wyrtodes smale.  
 Wyrtodours þou shalt hem smyte.  
 And wher þi fader took a lye.  
 þou wyldest to take moche more.  
 þus shalt þou make hem drede fore.  
 þe grette herte of þi corage.  
 So for to holde hem in seruage.  
**C**his yong kynnyng þat conformed.  
 To don as he was last conformed.  
 Which was to hym his vndermyng.  
 For whan it cam to þe spekyng.  
 He þat þe yong conseil holden.  
 þat he þe same wordes tolde.  
 Of all þe poeple in audience.  
 And whan þei herden þe sentence.  
 Of his malice and þe mannece.  
 And noon to fore his owne face.  
 þei haue hym outrely refused.  
 And wyrt ful gret reproch accused.  
 So þei be homie for to rane.  
 þat he was fayn hym self to saue.  
 For as þe wilde wode rane.  
 Of wyndes maky þe see sauage.  
 And þat was cald byrgen i to thalle.  
 So for defaute of grace and lalbe.  
 þis poeple is stered al at ones.  
 And for þei gon out of his wones.  
 So þat of þe byrgen twelue.  
 Two tribus only by hem selue.  
 Wyrt hym a byden and no mo.  
 So were þei for euere mo.  
 Of no rethorne wyrt oute espre.  
 Departed fro þe rihtful heu.  
 Al israhel wyrt commun boys.  
 And kynnyng vpon here owne choye.  
 And moyn hem self a noon þei make.  
 And haue here yong lord for sake.  
 A pouere kynnyng ierobas.  
 þei toke and leste folowas.  
 Whiche rihtful heu was by descent.  
 To þus þe yong cause went.  
 For þat þe conseil was nouht good.  
 þe regne fro þe rihtful blood.  
 Euere after ward diuides was.

So may it proue by þis cas.  
 þat yong conseil which is to harm.  
 Er men be war dop ofte harm.  
 Olde age for þe conseil serue.  
 And lusty youpe his poult deserue.  
 vpon þe trauaile which he dop.  
 And bove for to seie a soy.  
 By sondry cause for to haue.  
 If þat he wole his regne saue.  
 A kynnyng byhouer euery day.  
 þat oon can and þat an oþer may.  
 By so þe kynnyng hym bove redde.  
 For elles al gon out of redde.  
**Nota questione cuiusdam philo-**  
**sophi vbi regno conueniens fo-**  
**ret principem cu malo consilio opta-**  
**re sapientem qui cu sano consilio ip-**  
**sum elidere insipientem...**  
**A**nd vpon þis matere also.  
 A questione be abene þe tho.  
 þus wroten in a booke i found.  
 Wher it were better to þe lond.  
 A kynnyng hym self to be wys.  
 And so to bere his owne prys.  
 And þat his conseil be not good.  
 Or oþer wise if it so stood.  
 A kynnyng if he be vicius.  
 And his conseil be vertuous.  
 It is answered in suche a wise.  
 þat better it is þat þei be wise.  
 By whom þat þe conseil shal gon.  
 For þei be manye and he but oon.  
 And raper shal an only man.  
 Wyrt fals conseil for oute he can.  
 From his wisdom be made to falle.  
 þan he al oon sholde hem alle.  
 For vices in to vertu chaunge.  
 For þat is wel þe more straunge.  
 For in þe lond may wel be glad.  
 Whos kynnyng wyrt good conseil is lad.  
 Whiche sette hym vnto rihtfulnesse.  
 So þat his herte wyrt pynesse.  
 By adene þe reddour and pite.  
 Dop mercy. for wyrt equite.  
 A kynnyng is holden ouer al.  
 To pite and in special.  
 To hem where he is moste biholde.  
 þei sholde his pite moste biholde.  
 þat been þe neiges of his lond.  
 For þei ben ouer vnder his hond.  
 After þe goddes ordenaunce.  
 To seonde vnder his gouernaunce.  
**Nota adhuc papue de pnapis**  
**etiam suos subditos debita pietate**  
**regitur cui qualiter Anthonius**  
**a Cyprone exemplificat dicit qd**  
**malles vnu de iplo sibi commissio**



*Virid saluare qui centu ex hostibz  
alienigenis in bello perderet.*

**C**onsul of Rome and yus to see.  
Of euerie ensamples how yu stonde.  
A kyng which hay yu charge in hounde.  
ye comyn poeple to gouerne.  
off pat he wolle he may wel lerne.  
is noon so good to ye plesance.  
of god is is god gouernance.  
And euerie gouernance is due.  
To pyte yus i may argue.  
pat pite is ye foundement.  
off euerie kynges regiment.  
off it be medled wip iustice.  
yei also remellen alle vice.  
And been of vertu most dailable.  
To make a kynges regne stable.  
To yus ye foure portes to fore.  
In gouernance as yei ben bore.  
off troupe ferst and of largesse.  
off pite fori wip vithelwysesse.  
I haue hem tolde und ouer yis.  
ye ferste poynt so as it is.  
Set of ye reule of policie.  
Wher of a kyng shal medefie.  
ye fleshy lustes of nature.  
I shal telle of such mesure.  
pat yu shal be serued.  
And ebe ye talke of god obserued.

*Corporis et mentis regem decet  
honestas. Romulus de famam mul  
la libido ruat. Et quod est hois ef  
feminat illa voluptas. Sit nisi mag  
namini cordis de obstat et. Iste  
tractus secundum Aristotilem de qui  
in principio regimini poliaa que  
castitatem concepit cuius honestas  
impudicie motus obtemperans tam  
corporis qui ad mundiciam specia  
lis preseruat.*

**C**onsul of Rome and yus to see.  
Of euerie ensamples how yu stonde.  
A kyng which hay yu charge in hounde.  
ye comyn poeple to gouerne.  
off pat he wolle he may wel lerne.  
is noon so good to ye plesance.  
of god is is god gouernance.  
And euerie gouernance is due.  
To pyte yus i may argue.  
pat pite is ye foundement.  
off euerie kynges regiment.  
off it be medled wip iustice.  
yei also remellen alle vice.  
And been of vertu most dailable.  
To make a kynges regne stable.  
To yus ye foure portes to fore.  
In gouernance as yei ben bore.  
off troupe ferst and of largesse.  
off pite fori wip vithelwysesse.  
I haue hem tolde und ouer yis.  
ye ferste poynt so as it is.  
Set of ye reule of policie.  
Wher of a kyng shal medefie.  
ye fleshy lustes of nature.  
I shal telle of such mesure.  
pat yu shal be serued.  
And ebe ye talke of god obserued.

**T**han oper pyn which is duknolde.  
for ye sholde eueri good man knolde.  
And yent how pat in marriage.  
his troupe plyt by in morgage.  
Whiche if he breke it is fulshode.  
And pat discordey to manshode.  
And namely to ward ye grete.  
Wher of ye boke alle tete.  
So as ye philosophre techey.  
To Alisandre and hym by techey.  
ye Lore how pat he shal mesure.  
his body so pat no mesure.  
off fleshy lust he shulde excede.  
And yis forpif i shal procede.  
ye ferste poynt as i seyde er.  
ye chastete which seelde wher.  
comyn nold a dayes in to place.  
And napeles but it be gwa.  
A boue alle oper in special.  
Is noon pat chaste may been al.  
But yit a kynges huse astat.  
Whiche of his ordre as a prelat.  
shal been enoight and seyntesied.  
he mote be more magnified.  
for dignete of his corone.  
han shulde an oper wolle persone.  
Whiche is not of so hie entyse.  
yer fore a pryncce hym sholde amse.  
er pat he fell in such riote.  
And namely pathe ne affote.  
To chaunge for ye womanhede.  
ye womanhede of his manhede.

*Nota de doctrina Aristotilis qua  
dicer pryncps ut animi sui iocun  
ditatem producat mulieres formo  
sas crebro aspicere debet. Caueat  
tamen ne in eis voluptuosa corpe  
cus ex carnis fragilitate in vi  
um dilabatur.*

**C**onsul of Rome and yus to see.  
Of euerie ensamples how yu stonde.  
A kyng which hay yu charge in hounde.  
ye comyn poeple to gouerne.  
off pat he wolle he may wel lerne.  
is noon so good to ye plesance.  
of god is is god gouernance.  
And euerie gouernance is due.  
To pyte yus i may argue.  
pat pite is ye foundement.  
off euerie kynges regiment.  
off it be medled wip iustice.  
yei also remellen alle vice.  
And been of vertu most dailable.  
To make a kynges regne stable.  
To yus ye foure portes to fore.  
In gouernance as yei ben bore.  
off troupe ferst and of largesse.  
off pite fori wip vithelwysesse.  
I haue hem tolde und ouer yis.  
ye ferste poynt so as it is.  
Set of ye reule of policie.  
Wher of a kyng shal medefie.  
ye fleshy lustes of nature.  
I shal telle of such mesure.  
pat yu shal be serued.  
And ebe ye talke of god obserued.







For it set every vice fory.  
 And every vertu put a bak.  
 Wher of prys tomer in to bak.  
 As in Cronyke I may reherse.  
 Which telleth how he kynge of pers.  
 That turis hilt a werre hadde.  
 At yens a poeple which he dradde.  
 Of a contre which he liddo hilt.  
 But yit for oust pat he do myhte.  
 As in bataille upon pe werre.  
 He hadde of hem all the yere.  
 And whan he seih and byt it wel.  
 That he by sechynge wan no del.  
 Yenne aye laste he caste a wile.  
 His worp poeple to by gile.  
 And took wyf hem a feryed pees.  
 Which he sholde laste endeles.  
 So as he seide in wordes wise.  
 But he pouht all in ower wise.  
 For it betyde vpon pe cas.  
 Whan pat his poeple in rest was.  
 Yei token eses many folde.  
 And wordes es as it is told.  
 By weye of kynde is penance.  
 Of every lust which touchet vice.  
 Yis whan yei were in lustes falle.  
 Ye werres ben foryeten alle.  
 Was noon which wolde ye worshipe.  
 Of armies but in ydelshipe.  
 Yei putten by synesse a weye.  
 And token hym to daunce & pleye.  
 But most aboue alle ower prynces.  
 Yei token hem to pe lynges.  
 Of fleschly lust pat chastete.  
 Receyved was in no denye.  
 But every man do what hym list.  
 And whan pe kynge of pers wiste.  
 That yei wou to folie entenden.  
 Wyf his power whan yei lest wenden.  
 More sodeynly pan do yei punder.  
 He cam for enere and put hem vnder.  
 And yus hay pecherie toze.  
 Ye lond which hadde be to fore.  
 Ye beste of hem pat were yis.  
 And in ye bible I fynde also.  
**Q**uota hic qualiter fuit bellum  
 Luxus infortunatus. Et narrat  
 Al Fox Amalech. hebreis sibi in  
 sustantibus resistere nequius. confu  
 lo Balaam mulieres regni sui  
 pulcherimas in castra hebreorum  
 misit qui ab ipis contaminati  
 nam statim amiserunt. Et sic ab  
 Amalech demitti magna multitudo  
 dno gladio occiderunt.  
**E**t tale lach vnto pte pnta.  
 How Amalech ye payen kynge.

Whan pat he myhte by noldweye.  
 Defende his lond and putte a weye.  
 Ye worp poeple of israel.  
 Yis sarayn as it befe.  
 Yough ye conseil of Balaam.  
 A wylte of fyre women nam.  
 Pat lute were and yong of age.  
 And bad hem gon to ye kynge.  
 Of yese hebreus and for yei went.  
 Wyf yhen greye and broldes beute.  
 And wel arayed euerichon.  
 And whanne yei come were a noon.  
 Among ye hebreus was non in fist.  
 But aache whi pat cacche myhte.  
 And eche of hem hese lustes souhte.  
 Which after yei ful dere a bouhte.  
 For gude a noon bygan to faple.  
 Pat whanne yei comen to bataille.  
 Yenne afterward in sory pht.  
 Yei were take and dysconfit.  
 So pat wyf yene a litel prync.  
 Ye myht of hem was ouer prync.  
 Pat whilom were wout to stonde.  
 Til whines ye cause on honde.  
 Hay take yis vengeance laste.  
 But yenne it cessed atte laste.  
 For god was payed of pat he dede.  
 For where he found vpon a stede.  
 A couple which misferde so.  
 Yough out he smot hem bope tbo.  
 And let hem linge in menies yhe.  
 Wher of alle oye which hem fise.  
 Ensampled hem vpon ye dede.  
 And preyeden vnto ye god hede.  
 Here olde synnes to amende.  
 And he which wold his mercy seude.  
 Restored hem to nelve graco.  
**C**hus may it shelle in souny place.  
 Of chystete how ye clemnesse.  
 Accordy to ye wyrmes.  
 Of men of armies ouerall.  
 But most of alle in special.  
 Yis vertu to a kynge bylonger.  
 For vpon his fortune it donger.  
 Of pat his lond shal spede or spale.  
 For yit but if a kynge his wile.  
 His lustes of his flesch restoyne.  
 A yen hym self he maketh a twygne.  
 In to ye which if yit he slide.  
 Him were beare to by side.  
 For every man may vnder stonde.  
 How for a tyme pat it stonde.  
 But is a sory lust to lide.  
 Whos ende maketh a man to pte.  
 And corney ioyes in to sorwe.  
 Ye byghte soune by ye morwe.  
 By synne mot ye derke nyht.



The lusty youpe of mannes myght.  
 In age but it stonde wel.  
 Inforney al ye laste whiel.  
**H**ic loquitur qualiter pynapud  
 irregulara voluptas eos a semita  
 recta multociens deuare compellit  
 Et narrat exemplum de Salomone  
 qui ex sue carnis concupiscentia vic  
 tuis mulieru blandimentis in sui  
 scandalum deos alienos colere pre  
 sumebat.

**T**hat euer Worpi prince is holde.  
 Wip inne hym self hym self bihold.  
 To se yestat of his pson.  
 And yent holl yent be ioyes none.  
 Upon his eyre mad to laste.  
 And how ye flesch shal at ye laste.  
 Ye lust of his hys for sake.  
 Hym ouht a gret ensample take.  
 Of Salomon whos appetite.  
 Was holly sette vpon delit.  
 To take of wommen ye pleasaunce.  
 So pat vpon his inuolunt.  
 Ye wilde world merueiley vit.  
 Pat he whiche alle menmes wit.  
 In yllke tyme hay ouerpassed.  
 Wip fleschly lustes was so lused.  
 Pat he whiche hadde vnder ye salve.  
 Ye poeple of god. hym self wipdule.  
 He hay fow god in suche a wise.  
 Pat he wip shipe and sacri fice.  
 For sondry loue in sondry stede.  
 In to ye false goddes dede.  
 His was ye wise ecclesiaste.  
 Ye fume of whom shal euer laste.  
 Pat he ye myghty god forsoke.  
 And ye ye salve whan he took.  
 His wyues and hys concubynes.  
 Of hem pat weren sarazynes.  
 For whiche he dede ydolatrie.  
 For his rede of his sotte.

**De filia Regis Sidonie.**

**S**he of sydoynie so hym ladde.  
 Pat he kychinge his armes spradde.  
 To a serateu wip gret humblesse.  
 Whiche of hys lond was ye madesse.

**De filia Regis moab.**

**A**nd she pat was a moabite.  
 So ferfor made hym to delite.  
 Wipough lust whiche al his wicdeuourey.  
 Pat he chamios here god honourey.

**De filia Regis amon.**

**A**n oyer amonpte also.  
 Wip loue hym hay assoted so.  
 Hys god asoloch pat wip enuence.  
 He sacrey and dop reuerence.  
 In such a wise as she hym bad.

pus was ye wisest ouerlad.  
 Wip blinde lustes whiche he souhte.  
 But he it after ward abouhted.  
**N**ota hic qualiter Achias ppha  
 in signum quod regnum post mortem  
 Salomonis ob eius peccatum a suo he  
 rede diuineretur palliu suu in  
 duodecim partes scdm vnde decem  
 partes ieroboe filio Nabal qui  
 regnauit postea successit pre  
 cepto dei tribuit.

**A**chias Selonites.  
 Which was whete er his deces.  
 Whil he was in his lustes alle.  
 By tokeney what shal after fulle.  
 For on a day whan pat he mette.  
 Ieroboam ye fuyht he grette.  
 And bad hym pat he holde abyde.  
 To here what hym shal be tyde.  
 And for wip al achias caste.  
 His mantel of and also faste.  
 He put it in to peces tibelie.  
 Wher of tibe partes toward hym selue.  
 He kepte and all ye remenant.  
 For god hay sette hys couenant.  
 He took vnto ieroboas.  
 Of nabal whiche ye sone he was.  
 And of ye fyniges court a fuyht.  
 And skide hym such is goddes myght.  
 As you hast seen departed here.  
 My mantel vnt in such manere.  
 After ye dey of Salomon.  
 God hay ordeyned yer vpon.  
 His regne ynnue he shal diuide.  
 Whiche tyme you shalt eke abyde.  
 And vpon pat diuision.  
 Ye regne as in proporcio.  
 As you hast of my mantel take.  
 Woth shalt receyue q vnder take.  
 And his ye sone shal abyde.  
 Ye lustes and ye lecherie.  
 Of hym whiche now his fader is.  
 So for to taken hede of his.  
 It alking wel to be chaste.  
 For elles he may lighthche waste.  
 Hym self and eke his regne boye.  
 And pat ouht eueri kyng to loye.  
 O whiche a hyne violent.  
 Wher of so wye a kyng was hent.  
 Pat ye deuigance in his person.  
 Was nouht i nold to take a lone.  
 But after ward whan he was passed.  
 It hay his heritage lassed.  
 As i more oppuly to fore.  
 Ye tale tolde and yus perfore.  
 Ye philosophre vpon his kyng.  
 Aristo. O alexander sup omia



*conulo conserua i colore natalem.*

Writ and conserley to a kynge.  
pat he pe surfer of Luxure.  
shal tempze and reule of such mesure.  
Which be to kynde sufficient.  
And eke to reson accordant.  
So pat pe lustes ignorance.  
By cause of no mys gouernance.  
purth which he be ouerproble.  
As he pat Wole no reson knowe.  
for but a mannes Wit be serued.  
Whan kynde is dueliche serued.  
It ouht of reson to suffice.  
for if it fille hym ower wyse.  
he may pe lustes sore drede.  
for of Anthonye thus I rede.

*De Voluptuoso Anthonio.*

Whiche of Seuerus was pe sone.  
pat he his wyf of conuyn wyne.  
pat holly du to ylle vice.  
And ofte tyme he was so wyce.  
Wher of nature here hay compleyned.  
Du to pe god which hay deigned.  
pe werkes which Anthonye wroughte.  
of luste which he ful dre aboute.  
for god his forfet hay so wrote.  
pat in Cronyng it is yit spoke.  
But for to tute remembrance.  
Of special mys gouernance.  
purth couetise and iniustice.  
for wy pe remendunt of vice.  
And nameliche of Lecherie.  
I fynde write a gret partie.  
Whynne a tale as you shalt heere.  
Which is pensumple of his matere.

*De Laquintur de Tarquino imper  
Rome impatore necnon e de eius  
dem filio iudic Arrous qui om di  
aor uarietate repleti tunc in hoies  
qui in unlieres innumera scelera  
petrarunt sed specialiter super  
his que contra Gabios fraudu  
lent opati sut tractare intendit.*

**S**o as pese olde gastes syn.  
pe proude tyrannysch Romeyn.  
Tarquinius which was yankyn.  
And wrought many a wrongful yng.  
Of soues hadde many on.  
Among pe which Arrous was con.  
Lich to his fader of maners.  
So pat wy une a felle yeres.  
wy treson and wy tyrumpe.  
pef Worre of lordes a gret partie.  
And token hede of no iustye.  
Whiche due was to here office.  
Upon pe reule of gouernance.  
But al pat euere was plesance.

Du to pe fleshes lust pef toke.  
And fell so pat pef vnder toke.  
A werre which was not ahoued.  
But ofte tyme he hadde hem greued.  
A yen a folk which yanne highte.  
pe Gabius and al by nyghte.  
pe Arrous whan he was at home.  
In Rome a prync place he nom.  
Whynne a chambre and bet hym selue.  
And made hem woundes ten or abelue.  
Upon pe bakys in was sene.  
And so for wy hys hurtes greue.  
In alle pe hyste pat he may.  
He wd and am pat ower day.  
Du to gabere pef toke.  
And in he wente and whan pat he.  
Was euell anon pe ptes shete.  
pe lordes alle upon hym sette.  
wy dwalle merdes upon hounde.  
This Arrous wolde hem not wyltounde.  
But seide I am here in yowre wille.  
As leef it is pat pe me spillo.  
As if hym olde fader dede.  
And whynne pe same stede.  
Thei preyde hem pat pef wolde see.  
And shewde hem in what degre.  
his fader and his brethern bope.  
Whiche as he seide were wyf.  
Hym hadde been and reuiled.  
for euere and out of Rome exiled.  
And pus he made hem to byleue.  
And saide if pat he myht acheue.  
his purpos it shal wel be yelde.  
By so pat pef hym helpe wolde.  
Whan pat pe lordes hadden seyn.  
How woofully he was beseyn.  
pef toke pte of his grief.  
But yit it was hem wonder leef.  
pat some hym hadde exiled so.  
pese Gabius by conseil po.  
Upon pe goddes made hem were.  
pat he to hym shal trolpe bere.  
And stentren hem wyf al his myht.  
And pef also hym haue byhight.  
To helpeu hym in his queuele.  
pef shopen yanne for his hele.  
pat he wat bayes and anougut.  
til pat he was in lusty poynt.  
And what he wolde pat he hadde.  
pat he al hole pe cite ladede.  
Licht as he wolde hym self deuse.  
And yanne he poust hym in what wyse.  
he myht his tyrumpe shewe.  
And to his conseil took a schewle.  
Whom to his fader for he seute.  
In his message and he po wente.  
And preyde his fader for to seye.



By his adis and hinde a were.  
 How pei ye ate myghten Wyne.  
 Whil pat pei stode so wel per june.  
 And whan ye messenger was come.  
 To Rome and hay in conseil nome.  
 ye Kyng it fel purchaunce so.  
 pat pei were in a Gardeyn vo.  
 his messenger for Wy ye Kyng.  
 And whanne he hadde tolde ye pyn.  
 In what manere pat it stood.  
 And pat Tarquinius vnderstood.  
 By ye messange and how it ferde.  
 And noon he took in honde a yerde.  
 And in ye gardeyn as pei hon.  
 ye litle croppes oon and oon.  
 Where pat pei wereyn sponnen oute.  
 Ho smot of as pei stode aboute.  
 And seide vnto ye messagere.  
 To pis pyn which I do now here.  
 Shal ben in stede of pin answere.  
 And in pis wise as I me bere.  
 you shalt du to my sone telle.  
 And he no leuere wolde dwelle.  
 But took his leue and good Wy all.  
 Du to his lord and told hym all.  
 How pat his fader hadde do.  
 When Arrous herde hym telle so.  
 And noon he wiste what it meute.  
 And yer to sette all his entente.  
 Til he purgh fraude and trecherie.  
 The prynces hedes of Gabie.  
 Wyf myten of and all was donne.  
 his fader cam to fore ye sone.  
 In to ye tollu Wy ye Romeyns.  
 And took and tolde ye Citezens.  
 Wy oute resou or pite.  
 pat he ne sperey no deure.  
 And for ye sped of pis conquest.  
 he wet do make a riche feste.  
 Wy a solempne sacrifice.  
 In phebus temple and in pis wise.  
 Whan ye Romeyns assembled were.  
 In pence of hem alle pere.  
 Upon palster whan al was diht.  
 And pat ye fyres were alight.  
 from vnder paunter sodeynly.  
 An hydolbe serpent openly.  
 cam out and hay deuoured al.  
 ye sacrifice and ete Wy al.  
 ye fyres queynt and fory anoon.  
 So as he cam so is he noon.  
 In to ye depe ground a reyn.  
 And euery man began to seyn.  
 ha lord what may pis signifie.  
 And yer vpon ye preye and cye.  
 To phebus pat pei mihten folwe.  
 ye cause and he ye saunt prollwe.

Wy gastly woe pat all it herde.  
 ye Romeyns in pis Wyse answere.  
 And seide how for pe wikkednesse.  
 Of pride and of vnrithynesse.  
 pat Tarquyn and his sone hay do.  
 ye sacrifice is wasted so.  
 Which miht not ben acceptable.  
 vpon hymne abhominable.  
 And ouer pat yt he hem wisse.  
 And seiy pat which of hem ferst kisse.  
 his moder his moder he shal take.  
 vpon ye wrong and of pat speche.  
 yei ben Wyf june hertis glade.  
 youh pei outward no semblant made.  
 yer was a kyght which Brutus hayte.  
 And he Wyf al ye haste he myhte.  
 To grounde fell and yere kiste.  
 But noon of hem ye cause wiste.  
 But wenden pat he hadde sponned.  
 Parchance and so was ouertorned.  
 But Brutus all an ower mento.  
 for he knelbe wel in his entente.  
 howh perpe of euery maimes kynde.  
 is moder. but yei weren blinde.  
 And fihen not so fer as he.  
 But when yei lest ten ye cite.  
 And comen homs to Rome a reyn.  
 yanne euery man which was Romeyn.  
 And moder hay to here he vende.  
 And kiste. and ech of hem yus vende.  
 To be ye ferste vpon ye chauce.  
 Of tarquyn for to do vengauce.  
 So as yei herden phebus seyn.  
 But euery tyme hay his corteyn.  
 So most it nedes yanne a byde.  
 Til after ward vpon a tyde.  
 In a marvat qd ai Tarquyn in  
 obsidione militatis Ardeor ut eam  
 destrueret iurentus fuit Arrous fi  
 lius eius Romam secreto adiens in  
 domo collatum hospitium est ubi de  
 nocte illam castissimam diuinam lux  
 am ymaginata fraude vi oppressit  
 vnde illa pre dolore mortua ipse de  
 Tarquino patre suo tota conclamauit  
 re Roma impetum exiliu delegata fuit.  
 Tarquynus made dustilfully.  
 And were which was fastebly.  
 A ven a tollu Wy Walles stronge.  
 Which Ardea was cleped Rome.  
 And caste a siege yere a bonte.  
 pat yere may woman passen oute.  
 So it be felt vpon a myht.  
 Arrous which hadde his souper diht.  
 A part of ye chualrie.  
 Wy hym to soupe in compaignie.  
 Hay bede and whan yei comen were.



And seeten at pe souper pere.  
 Among here ower wordes glade.  
 Arrous a gret speking made.  
 Who hadde pe ye beste wyf.  
 Of Rome and her be nam a wyf.  
 For Arrous sey he hay pe beste.  
 So iangle pe wyf oute reste.  
 Til atte laste con collatyn.  
 A wyf fuyht and was coulyn.  
 To Arrous seide hym in pe wyf.  
 It is quod he off noon emprise.  
 To speke a word but of ye dede.  
 That of it is to taken hede.  
 A noon for ye pe same tyde.  
 Lay on ym here and ledde vnde.  
 So may we kuolle bope eke.  
 Dulbarly what oure wydes do.  
 And pat hal be a trewe assye.  
 pe sey houhe ones way. To  
 Duhors but a noon pe lepto.  
 In such manere and no pany slepto.  
 Admyre for til pat pe come.  
 Al pryncyple wyne Rome.  
 In samynge place and down pe lyte.  
 And toke a chambre and ouht off lyte.  
 pe be dysmyssed for a pryncyple.  
 So pat us byf hem hilde kuolle.  
 And to pe pilyers fust pe souhte.  
 To se what pryncyple Lady wrouhte.  
 Of whiche Arrous made his auant.  
 And pe here she of glad semblant.  
 All ful of mayes and of bordes.  
 But a mount alle hure ower wordes.  
 She spak not of here husbunde.  
 And whan pe hadde al vnderfonde.  
 Of ylle place what hem hyste.  
 pe gown hem for pat nam it wiste.  
 By side ylle yate of bras.  
 Collatyn which cleped was.  
 Wher collatyn hay his dwellyng.  
 were founden pe at hom sityng.  
 Lucete his wyf al enuoynd.  
 Wyf women whiche ar abandoned.  
 To wevehe and she wrouhte eke wyf al.  
 And bad hem hyste and sey it shal.  
 be fore myn housbundes were.  
 Which wyf his sheld 2 wyf his spere.  
 Wyf atte seene in gret dysse.  
 And if it sholde hym not dysplese.  
 Now wolde god I had de hym here.  
 For certes til pat I may here.  
 Som good tydynge of his astat.  
 myn herte is euere vpon debate.  
 For so as alle men wrytess.  
 He is of such an hardiesse.  
 pat he can not hym selfe spare.  
 And pat is al myn maste care.

Dy? Whan pe yewalles shalle assaile.  
 But if my wyfshes myht auaille.  
 I wolde it were a quondales pette.  
 By so ye sege were duket.  
 And I myn housbunde she.  
 Wyf pat ye water in here yhe.  
 And pat she ne myghte stoppe.  
 And as men seen pe delbe by droppe.  
 ye leues and ye floures eke.  
 fight so vpon here white cheke.  
 ye woful salte teres felle.  
 Whan collatyn hay herd here telle.  
 ye menyng of hure trewe herce.  
 A noon wyf pat to here he seerte.  
 And seide to my woode deere.  
 Now is he come to yow here.  
 pat ye most louen as ye seyn.  
 And she wyf goodly chere axeyn.  
 By chypre hym in here armies fuals.  
 And ye colour which erst was pale.  
 To beaute yanne was restored.  
 So pat it myht not be nlozed.  
Che fynnes sone whiche was nyh.  
 And of pe Lady herde und seih.  
 pe prynces as pe ben byfalle.  
 The reson of his wytes alle.  
 hay lost. for loue vpon his part.  
 I am yanne and of his fere darr.  
 Wyf such a wounde hay yllursh fuyto.  
 pat he mot nedes feeke and wite.  
 Of ylle blynde malady.  
 To whiche no cure of surgerie.  
 I am helpe but yit napeles.  
 At ylle tyme he held his pes.  
 pat he no contenance made.  
 But oppryh wyf wordes glade.  
 So as he coupe in his manere.  
 he spak and made frendly chere.  
 pat it was tyme for to go.  
 And collatyn wyf hym also.  
 his leue took and so by nyhte.  
 Wyf att pe hyste pat pe myghte.  
 pe ridden to ye sege axeyn.  
 But Arrous was so wo by seyn.  
 Wyf yowhtes whiche vpon hym runne.  
 pat he alby pe brode sunne.  
 To bedde god not for to reste.  
 But for to yenke vpon ye beste.  
 And ye faireste for wyf att.  
 pat euere he seyh or euere shal.  
 So as hym yowhte in his corage.  
 Where he purveyer here ymage.  
 ffere ye fetures of hure face.  
 In whiche nature hadde alle grace.  
 Of womanly beaute besette.  
 So pat it myht not be bette.  
 And how here yelle heere was trefed.



And hure aȝer so wel adressed.  
 And how she stak & how she wrouȝte.  
 And how she wepte al pis he pouȝte.  
 pat he forgeten hyr no del.  
 But it libet hym so wel.  
 pat in þe word nor in þe dede.  
 here lackey nouȝt of womanhede.  
 And þus þis tyrannysse he fynȝte.  
 Was soupled but not half a riȝt.  
 for he noon oȝer poeple toȝt.  
 But pat he myȝte by som croȝt.  
 Al þouȝ it were a ven here wille.  
 þe lustes of his flesch fulfille.  
 Which loue was not resonable.  
 for where honour is remouable.  
 It ouȝt wel to been misse.  
 But he which hap his lust assise.  
 Wy medled loue and tyrannye.  
 hyr founde vpon his trecherie.  
 And weye which he penȝte to holde.  
**Audaces fortuna iuuat.**  
 And seȝ fortune vn to þe bolde.  
 Is falsor able for to helpe.  
 And þus Wyntune hyr self to relpe.  
 As he which was a wilde man.  
 vpon his treson he byȝan.  
 And vpon he sterte and forȝ he wente.  
 On horsbak but his entente.  
 per fulle noȝt & þus he nam.  
 þe next weye til he cam.  
 vnto collacea þe pate.  
 Of Rome and it was somdel late.  
 þis euene vpon þe some sette.  
 As he which hadde shap þis nette.  
 hure innocence to bytrappe.  
 And as it sholde þe myshap.  
 As pryuelliche as euere he myȝte.  
 he roȝ and of his hors alȝhte.  
 To fore collatynes june.  
 And all frendlich he goȝ hym june.  
 As he þus was couȝne of house.  
 And þe which is þe goode spouse.  
 Lucrece and whan þat she hym seȝ.  
 Wy goodly chere drow hym nyȝ.  
 As þe which all honour supposȝ.  
 And hym so as she dar opposȝ.  
 how it stood of here housboud.  
 And he so dede here vnderstonde.  
 Wy tales feyned in his wyȝ.  
 þis as he wolde hym self deuȝse.  
 wher of he myȝt herte glade.  
 pat þe þe bettre chere made.  
 whan þe þe glade wordes herde.  
 how þat here housboud ferde.  
 And þus þe trouȝ was deceyued.  
 Wy shȝ treson which was receyued.  
 To here which mente alle goode.

For as þe festes pame toȝe.  
 his souȝer was riȝt wel armed.  
 But þat he hap no word assaȝed.  
 To speke of loue in no deuȝe.  
 But Wy couert subtilite.  
 þis frendly speche he affintȝ.  
 And as aȝare þis tyme alȝayȝ.  
 In hope for to caȝhe his prey.  
 whan þat þe wordes were alȝe.  
 And þe haue souȝed in þe halle.  
 he seȝ þat sleȝe is on hym fulle.  
 And preyȝ he moȝte go to bedde.  
 And þe wy alle haȝte feredde.  
 So as here þouȝte it was to done.  
 pat euery þing was redy soone.  
 she brouȝt hym to his chambere.  
 And toȝ here leue and forȝ is go.  
 In to hure oldȝne chambere by.  
 As she þat wende certaynly.  
 haue had a frend and hadde a fo.  
 wher of fel after moche lȝe.  
 þis tyrant þouȝ he þe soȝte.  
 Out of his bed aȝer fulȝofte.  
 And goȝ a bouȝe and leȝd his seȝ.  
 To herȝen til þat alle were.  
 To bedde gon and sleȝten fuste.  
 And þan vpon hym self he caste.  
 A mantel and Wy þis word alȝake.  
 he toke in hounde and she vntake.  
 A bedde lay but what she mette.  
 God wot. for þe þe dore vntȝette.  
 So pryuelliche þat non aȝherde.  
 þe soȝte þat & forȝ he ferde.  
 vnto þe bed wher þat she sleȝte.  
 Al soȝynliche and in he creȝte.  
 And hure in hope þis armes toke.  
 Wy þat þis wȝyn Wy a wȝok.  
 which þurȝ tendresse of womanhede.  
 hure voȝe hyr doȝt for þis dȝede.  
 pat o word speke she ne dar.  
 And he had here toke dar.  
 for if she made noȝe or cry.  
 he seȝd þis word lay faste by.  
 To sleȝen here and here toȝt a bouȝe.  
 And þus he brouȝt here herte in dȝout.  
 pat lȝch a lȝombe whan it is seȝed.  
 In wolȝes mȝow so was dȝhesed.  
 Lucrece which he naked fȝnd.  
 wher of she shȝoned in his hȝnd.  
 And as who seȝ lay dȝe oppressȝ.  
 And he which al hym hadde adȝressȝ.  
 To lȝst toȝt þat wȝat hym dȝste.  
 And goȝ his weȝe þat noon it wȝste.  
 In to his oldȝne chambere aȝeyn.  
 And cleȝed vpon his chambereȝeyn.  
 And made hym redy for to ryȝe.  
 And þus þis lecherouse pryȝe.



To hors lepte and forp he was.  
 And she which in hure bed a bood.  
 Whan pat she wyte he was gon.  
 She cleved after wht anon.  
 And up aros longe ev pe day.  
 And cast a way hure flesch away.  
 Als she which hap pe worls for sake.  
 And took vpon pe clothes blake.  
 And euere vpon continuinge.  
 Fright as men en a welle springe.  
 Wyf phen ful of woful teies.  
 Here here hangynge a boute hir eres.  
 She wepte and uolunwiste why.  
 For vit a mount ful pitously.  
 She preyed pat pei uolden breache.  
 Here housbonde for to feache.  
 Forp wyf hure fader eke also.  
 Thus be pei come boye also.  
 And Brutus cam wyf collatyn.  
 Which to Lucretie was couyn.  
 And in pei wenten alle yw.  
 To chambre where pei myghten so.  
 Pe wofulleste vpon pe molde.  
 Which wepte as she to water sholde.  
 Pe chambre dor a noon was stoke.  
 Er pei haue ouht vnto here spoke.  
 Pei she here clothes al desquyde.  
 And holdh she hap hure self despyde.  
 Here heer hangynge vntempr aboute.  
 But unpeles she gan to loute.  
 And fiele vnto here housbonde.  
 And he which farn wolde vnder stonde.  
 Pe cause whi she ferde so.  
 Wyf softe wordes axep yo.  
 Whan lunny wold be my gode wete.  
 And she which pouht hir self vinnete.  
 And pe lest word of women alle.  
 Hure woful chere let down falle.  
 For shame and foupe vneyes loke.  
 And pei per of good hede toke.  
 And preyden hir in alle weye.  
 Pat she ne spare for to seye.  
 Vnto here frendes whi hure eley.  
 Whi she so sore hure self bilvely.  
 And what pe sope wolde mene.  
 And she which hap hure sorwes greue.  
 Here do to telle paine assaue.  
 But tendre shame hure worde deluey.  
 Pat sondry tymes as she mento.  
 To speke vpon pe poynthe she stente.  
 And pei here bidden euere in oon.  
 To telle forp and per vpon.  
 Whan pat she seyh she moste nede.  
 Here tale becomme shame a drede.  
 She tolde not wyf oute peyne.  
 And he which wolde here no restreine.  
 Here housbonde a forp man.

Conforter here al pat he can.  
 And wor and eke here fader boye.  
 Pat pei wyf here be not wrope.  
 Of pat is so a yepn here wille.  
 And preyden here to be stille.  
 For pei to here haue alle foryeue.  
 But she which pouht not to lyue.  
 Of hem wol no foryeuenesse.  
 And seide of pulke wikkednesse.  
 Which was vnto here body wrought.  
 Al were it so she myht it nouht.  
 Afterward pe world ne shal.  
 Reprouen here and forp wyf al.  
 Er any man per of be war.  
 A naked swerd which she bar.  
 Wyf gine hure mantel pryuely.  
 Betwene here hondes soderly.  
 She took and purgh hure herte it prouly.  
 And fell to grounde and euere among.  
 Whan pat she felle so as she myhte.  
 Here doye wyf here hond she vichte.  
 Pat no man dounward fro pe fuc.  
 Sholde any ying of here se.  
 Thus lay pe wyf honestly.  
 Al pouh she deide wofully.  
 Tho was no sorwe for to seke.  
 Here housbonde he fader eke.  
 A swonne vpon pe body felle.  
 Here may no mannes tynge telle.  
 In which angulsh pat pei were.  
 But Brutus which was wyf hem pere.  
 Toward hym self his herte fere.  
 And to Lucretie a noon he lepte.  
 Pe bloody swerd and pulley oute.  
 And wor pe goddes alle aboute.  
 Pat he per of shal so vengance.  
 And she po vnde a contemunce.  
 Here dedly she mid at pe ruste.  
 In yonkyn as it were vnto caste.  
 And so byhelde hym in pe wike.  
 Whil she to looke may suffise.  
 And Brutus wyf a manly herte.  
 Here husbond hap mad vp seerte.  
 Forp wyf hure fader eke also.  
 In alle haste and seide hem yo.  
 Pat pei anon wyf oute lette.  
 A bere for pe body fette.  
 Lucretie and per vpon bledynge.  
 He leyde and so forp out arynge.  
 He goyn to pe mynster place.  
 Of Rome and in a litle space.  
 Purgh cry pe cite was assembled.  
 And euery mannes herte trembled.  
 Whan pei pe sope herde of pe cas.  
 And per vpon pe conseil was.  
 Take of pe grete a of pe fuale.  
 And Brutus tolde hem all pe tale.



And thus cam in to remembrance.  
 Of synne and of continuance.  
 Whiche arrows hadde do to fore.  
 And eke long tyme er he was bore.  
 Of pat his fader hadde do.  
 Of wrong cam in to place so.  
 So pat he comun clamour tolde.  
 Of nelle synne of synnes olde.  
 And all he tollun began to crye.  
 A wey a wey he crymme.  
 Of lecherie and couetise.  
 And atte laste in such a wyse.  
 Of fader in he same while.  
 For by he sone he exile.  
 And taken better gouernance.  
 But yet an ope remembrance.  
 Of vithelwisse and lecherie.  
 A cordent nouht in compaignie.  
 Wy hy in pat he was on hounde.  
 Pat may a man wel vnderstonde.  
 Als by a tale you shalt wite.  
 Of olde ensample as it is wite.  
**¶** *Incipit exemplum sapientie  
 qualiter unus virginis dux  
 exortatus Romanorum vincta filia  
 pulcherrimam habens ad quodam  
 nobili viro uero illicito ut ipm in  
 vxore duceret finaliter concordant  
 et in finem apud claudius tunc in  
 pator duxit formositatem ut ea  
 violaret concupiscens occasione  
 quibus matrimonium impedire ipm  
 et ad sui vxum apprehendere posset  
 libidola conspiratione fieri conuict  
 tunc etiam apud sui desiderij p  
 ductis falsis testibz in iudicio impe  
 rator habere debuisset pater tunc  
 ibidem pscus extulit gladio filie  
 sue pectus mortali vulnere p medu  
 transiit dicens. axilo in de filia  
 mea virginem habere mortuam qui  
 in sui scandalum reseruat ducit*  
**¶** *¶* Rome whan pat Apus.  
 Whos ope name is claudius.  
 Was gouernour of ye cite.  
 For fel a wonder ying to se.  
 Touchyng a gentyl mayde as pus.  
 Whom duxit virginus.  
 Sygeten hadde vpon his wyf.  
 Men saiden pat so faide alyf.  
 As she. Was nolyt in all ye tollun.  
 Of fame which goy and tollun.  
 To claudius cam in his ere.  
 Wher of his pouht a noon was pere.  
 Whiche al his herte hay set a fyre.  
 Pat he bygyn he flowe desire.  
 Whiche longer to mayden hede.

And eke if pat he myght speke.  
 Of synne and of continuance.  
 Whiche arrows hadde do to fore.  
 And eke long tyme er he was bore.  
 Of pat his fader hadde do.  
 Of wrong cam in to place so.  
 So pat he comun clamour tolde.  
 Of nelle synne of synnes olde.  
 And all he tollun began to crye.  
 A wey a wey he crymme.  
 Of lecherie and couetise.  
 And atte laste in such a wyse.  
 Of fader in he same while.  
 For by he sone he exile.  
 And taken better gouernance.  
 But yet an ope remembrance.  
 Of vithelwisse and lecherie.  
 A cordent nouht in compaignie.  
 Wy hy in pat he was on hounde.  
 Pat may a man wel vnderstonde.  
 Als by a tale you shalt wite.  
 Of olde ensample as it is wite.  
**¶** *Incipit exemplum sapientie  
 qualiter unus virginis dux  
 exortatus Romanorum vincta filia  
 pulcherrimam habens ad quodam  
 nobili viro uero illicito ut ipm in  
 vxore duceret finaliter concordant  
 et in finem apud claudius tunc in  
 pator duxit formositatem ut ea  
 violaret concupiscens occasione  
 quibus matrimonium impedire ipm  
 et ad sui vxum apprehendere posset  
 libidola conspiratione fieri conuict  
 tunc etiam apud sui desiderij p  
 ductis falsis testibz in iudicio impe  
 rator habere debuisset pater tunc  
 ibidem pscus extulit gladio filie  
 sue pectus mortali vulnere p medu  
 transiit dicens. axilo in de filia  
 mea virginem habere mortuam qui  
 in sui scandalum reseruat ducit*  
**¶** *¶* Rome whan pat Apus.  
 Whos ope name is claudius.  
 Was gouernour of ye cite.  
 For fel a wonder ying to se.  
 Touchyng a gentyl mayde as pus.  
 Whom duxit virginus.  
 Sygeten hadde vpon his wyf.  
 Men saiden pat so faide alyf.  
 As she. Was nolyt in all ye tollun.  
 Of fame which goy and tollun.  
 To claudius cam in his ere.  
 Wher of his pouht a noon was pere.  
 Whiche al his herte hay set a fyre.  
 Pat he bygyn he flowe desire.  
 Whiche longer to mayden hede.



But as per of he was deceyued.  
For Iulius hadde al conceyued.  
The purpos of the kyng to fore.  
And pouht to be perer per fore.  
In alle haste he cam bydynyng.  
And leste vpon the feld liggynge.  
His hoste til pat he come a yeyn.  
And thus the worthy capiteyn.  
Appereth redy at his day.  
Where al pat euer reson may.  
By lalbe in audience he doy.  
So pat his daughter vpon sop.  
Of pat anawys hure hadde accusid.  
He hay to fore the court exausid.  
The kyng which seih his ppos fule.  
And pat no sleiht myght auail.  
Encombrid of his lustes blinde.  
The lalbe torned out of blinde.  
And half in wymppe as pouh it were.  
In presence of hem alle pere.  
Deceyued of concupiscence.  
Nis for his broper the sentence.  
And had hym pat he sholde se.  
His mayde. and make hym welatise.  
But all wymppe his owne entence.  
He wist how pat he cause wente.  
Of pat his broper hay the wite.  
He was hym self for to wite.  
But the mayden hadde wrong.  
Which was vpon the kyng ylong.  
But a yeyn hym was non appel.  
And pat the fader wiste wel.  
Wher of vpon the gramynge.  
Pat for the lust of lecherie.  
His daughter sholde be deceyued.  
And pat Iulius was weyned.  
Sutwelly fro the marriage.  
Fright as a leon in his rage.  
Which of no dres set at accompte.  
And not what quite shulde amouite.  
And naked swerd he pulley oute.  
The which amouites alle the wold.  
He prest purgh his daughters hede.  
And all a londe the word he cride.  
To take hir pere pou wrouful kyng.  
For me is leuere vpon the ymyng.  
To be the fader of a mayde.  
Pouh she be des man if men sayde.  
Pat in here dwele she were shamed.  
And I per of were euele named.  
So bad the kyng men sholde areste.  
His body but of pilbe heste.  
Nis to be charged wylde boz.  
The houndes whanne he feleth for.  
To wylde and goy for his weye.  
In such a wise for to seye.  
The worthy knyght wylde wende on hounde.

his weye made and rei him wende.  
pat noon of hem his strokes kepte.  
And thus vpon his hote he lepte.  
And wyl his swerd droppynge of blood.  
The which wyl june his daughter stood.  
He cam pere as the polber was.  
Of foute and tolde hem al the cas.  
And seide hem pat the myght leze.  
vpon the wrong of his matere.  
pat better it were to redresse.  
At home the grete vnyuersite.  
Jm for to were in stauunge place.  
And lese at home here owne grace.  
For thus stant euer mannes lyf.  
In reuenge for his wif.  
Or for his daughter if per be.  
Passynge an ope of beaute.  
Of the inuayle which the seyn.  
So apparant to fore here yhe.  
Of pat the kyng hym hay mystoro.  
here ope the hame alle wro.  
pat the wile fonde by the wite.  
And thus of don accord spyn.  
To foute at ones home a yeyn.  
the torne and shortly for to seyn.  
the gramynge cam to mouye.  
pat euer man sey what he couyo.  
So pat the pyme trecherie.  
Which set was vpon lecherie.  
Cam opynly to mannes eye.  
And pat brought in the commun fey.  
pat euer man the perel draide.  
Of him pat so hem ouer lade.  
for the et pat it worse falle.  
purgh commun conseil of hem alle.  
the hame here wrouful kyng deposed.  
And hem in whom it was supposid.  
the conseil stood of his ledynge.  
By lalbe du to the don the kyng.  
where the receyuen the penance.  
pat longer to such gouernance.  
And thus purchast was chastised.  
Wher of the myght ben mysed.  
pat sholde after ward gouerne.  
And by the eydence lerne.  
how it is good a kyng eschulle.  
the lust of vice and feyt falle.  
*In inter alia castitatis regimine  
consequencia loquitur quomodo  
matrimonium cum statu scilicet sa-  
cramenti quasi continencia equi-  
pans etiam honeste delectationis re-  
gimine moderari debet. Et nar-  
rat in exemplum qualiter p eo quod  
illi septem viri qui Sarre pauer-  
at filie magis propter concupiscen-  
cia quam propter matrimonium volup-*



*tuolo nupserunt unus post alium  
 omes pua nocte a demone Asmodeo  
 succillatim ingulati interierunt.*  
**S**o make an ende in his partie.  
 Whiche toucheth to his polias.  
 Of chastite in special.  
 And for conclusion synale.  
 pat every lust is to eschew.  
 By gret ensample I may argue.  
 how in fages a tolling of myde.  
 per was a mayde and as I rede.  
 Sarra she highte and Raquel.  
 hure father was and so besel.  
 Of body boye and of visage.  
 Was noon so faire of se yuange.  
 To seche a moht hem alle as she.  
 wher of ye vhe of ye cite.  
 Of lusty folk pat coupen loue.  
 Assotod were vpon here loue.  
 And asked hure for to wedde.  
 Don was whiche atte laste spedde.  
 But pat was more for bykyng.  
 To haue his lust pan for weddyng.  
 As he wyuine his herte caste.  
 Whiche hym repentyn atte laste.  
 for so it felt ye ferste nyht.  
 pat whan he was to bedde dyt.  
 As he whiche no ying god bysechey.  
 But all only his lustes sechey.  
 A bedde er he was fully warn.  
 And wolde haue take here in his arm.  
 Asmod which was a fend of helle.  
 And seruey as ye bolles telle.  
 To tempte a man of such a wyse.  
 Was redy yere and fulke emprise.  
 Which he hap set vpon delit.  
 he demey painne in such a plit.  
 pat he his necke hap wyre at the.  
 his yong wyf was soz po.  
 Whiche wist no ying what it mente.  
 And unpeles yit pus it wente.  
 Irouht wouly of his ferste man.  
 But after vht as he began.  
 Seve ower of here housbondes.  
 Asmod hap take in to hys hondes.  
 So pat pei alle a bedde deyden.  
 Whan pei here hond tolland here leide.  
 Irouht for ye lalbe of maringe.  
 But for pat ilke fry luge.  
 In whiche pat pei ye lalbe excede.  
 for who pat wole taken hede.  
 What after fel in his mytere.  
 pere myht he wel ye sope here.  
 Whan she was weddes to Tobye.  
 And Raphael in compaignie.  
 Hay taucht hym how to ben honeste.  
 Asmod Wan nouht at pulke feste.

And yit Tobye his Wille hadde.  
 for he his lust so goodly hadde.  
 pat boye lalbe and kynde is serued.  
 wher of he hap hym self preserued.  
 pat he fel not in ye sentence.  
 Of such an open eydeuce.  
 Of his ensample a man may se.  
 pat whan he ying in his demye.  
 Of maringe may forsuere.  
 Wel ouht hym painne in ower weye.  
 Of luste to be ye better amised.  
 for god ye lalbes hay assised.  
 As wel to resou as to kynde.  
 But he ye bestes wold bynde.  
 Don to lalbes of nature.  
 But to ye minnes creature.  
 God pat hym resou for wy al.  
 wher of pat he nature shal.  
 vpon ye causes moresie.  
 pat he shal don no lecherie.  
 And yit he shal hys lustes haue.  
 So be ye lalbes boye saue.  
 And every ying put out of flaudie.  
 As whilom to ying Alianidro.  
 ye wise philosophre tauchte.  
 whan he his ferste lore cauchte.  
 Irouht only vpon chastite.  
 But vpon att honeste.  
 wher of a ying hym self may caste.  
 how wel he how large how ioust how chaste.  
 hym ouht of resou for to be.  
 for wy ye vertu of pite.  
 Irouht whiche he may met pout desue.  
 Tollardes god pat he preserue.  
 hym and his peple in alle welthe.  
 Of xes richesse honour and helpe.  
 here in his world and elles eke  
 My sone as we to fore speke  
 In shryft so as you me seydest.  
 And for myn ese as you me preydest.  
 ye loue prouides for to lisse.  
 pat I ye wolde telle and disse.  
 ye forme of Aristotles lore.  
 I haue it seid and souldel more.  
 Of ower ensamples to assaye.  
 If I ye pernes myht allaye.  
 Irouht any ying pat I can seye.  
 So wey my fader I yow preyre.  
 Of pat ye haue se to me told.  
 I praye yow a yowland fold.  
 ye tales soulden in myn eie.  
 But yit myn herte is elles where.  
 I may my self nouht restreyne.  
 pat I nam euere in lones peyne.  
 Such lore coueyd neuer here.  
 Which myht make me foryete.  
 Of poynt but if so were I slepte.



hat I my tydes ay ne kepte.  
 So yente of Loue and of his Lalle.  
 For here ne can I nouht wy dulle.  
 For y my good fader dere.  
 Deef and speke of my matere.  
 Touchyng of Loue as we begonne.  
 If pat yer be ouht ouer romme.  
 Or ouht for yete or lest behynde.  
 Which folow vnto Loues kynde.  
 Wher of it nedey to be shryue.  
 I tolde axep so pat whil I lyue.  
 I myht amende pat is mys.  
 My good dere sohe yis. **Confessor.**  
 In shryfte for to make pleyne.  
 Yer is hit more for to seyn.  
 Of Loue which is vñ abysed.  
 But for you shalt be wel amysed.  
 Vnto y shryft as it belongey.  
 A point which of Loue hongey.  
 And is ye laste of alle po.  
 I wole ye telle and yinne hao.

**Explicit Liber Septimus.**

**Incipit Liber Octauus.**

Que faret ad viciū Venus hec homo  
 recta confert. et ter nou est contra  
 qui docet ordo placet. Et tunc amor  
 viciū non dū sua dūmna cepit. A  
 Venus iposituū dema fallit iter.  
 A postquam ad iusticiā Amantis  
 confessi Confessor Venus sup hys  
 que iusticiā Regem Alexandri  
 docuit vna ad aliam et conuincit  
 exemplis seriosē tractauit qd vicio  
 in isto octauo volumine ad confes  
 sione in amoris causa regredietur  
 tractare pponit. sup hoc qd nō nulli  
 primordia nature ad viciū volup  
 tuose consequentes nullo humane  
 rationis arbitrio seu ecclie legum  
 impositione a suis excessibz debite  
 refrenantur. Unde quatenus amo  
 rem concernit amantis' consciencia  
 pro finali confessionis materia Ge  
 nius rimari conatur.

**W**hen myghty god  
 Whil vñ begun  
 ne. Stant of  
 hym self and  
 hay begonne.  
 Alle oyer pnyges  
 at his wille.  
 The heuene hi  
 list to fyll.  
 Of alle loie whe  
 re as he. Sit introyed in his see.

And hay his angels hym to serue.  
 Such as hym lyke to preserue.  
 So pat yer molde not forueye.  
 But Lucifer he put a weye.  
 Wy all ye rolle apostazied.  
 Of hem pat ben to hym allies.  
 Whiche out of heuene in to helle.  
 From angels in to fendes felle.  
 Where pat yer is no ioye of lyt.  
 But more derke pan eny myht.  
 Ye peyne shal ben endeles.  
 And yit of fyres napeles.  
 Yer is plente but yer ben blake.  
 Wher of no syt may be take.  
**E**lue Whil ye ynyges ben by fallo.  
 Pat Lucifers court was fallo.  
 Where dedly pryde hem hay conueyed.  
 Anoon forp wy it was purueyed.  
 Ynygh hym whiche alle ynyges may.  
 He made Adam ye sexe day.  
 In paradys and to his make.  
 Hym lyke Eue also to make.  
 And bad hem cresce and multiplye.  
 For of ye mannes prouenie.  
 Whiche of ye woman shal be bore.  
 Ye noumbre of angels which was lore.  
 Whan yer out fro ye blisse felle.  
 He pouht to restore and felle.  
 In heuene yllke holy place.  
 Whiche stood so voyde vpon his trace.  
**B**ut as it is wel wist and knowe.  
 Adam and Eue but a prowe.  
 So as it sholde of hem bytyde.  
 In paradys at yllke tyde.  
 Ye dwelten and ye cause why.  
 Write in ye booke of Genesy.  
 As who sey alle men haue herd.  
 Holy Raphael ye fyr swerd.  
 In honde took and drof hem out.  
 To nere here lyues fode aboute.  
 Vpon yis woful erpe here.  
 Metodre sey to yis matere.  
 As he by reuelacion.  
 It hadde vpon mission.  
 Holy pat Adam and Eue also.  
 Ynyges comen bope tbo.  
 In to ye world and were ashamed.  
 Til pat nature hem hay reclaimed.  
 To Loue and taught hem yllke lore.  
 Pat ferst yer feste and ouermore.  
 Yer doon pat is to kynde dule.  
 Wher of yer hadden faire issue.  
 A sone was ye ferste of alle.  
 Pat Chaym by name yer hym calle.  
 Abel was after ye secunde.  
 And in ye nest as it is founde.  
 A ratre so ye cause ladde.





The doubtres of same Eve hadde.  
 The ferste cleped Calymna.  
 Was. and pat ower Delloza.  
 This was mankynde to byrmyne.  
 For in pat tyme it was no synne.  
 The softer for to take hire broyer.  
 Whan pat yer was of choye noon ower.  
 To Chaym was Calymna bytake.  
 And Delloza hay Abel take.  
 In whom was gete napeles.  
 Of worldes folk the ferste enars.  
 Men seyn pat nedde hay no salve.  
 And so it was by pilke salve.  
 And laste in to the secunde age.  
 Til pat the mete water rage.  
 Of noo which was seyd the flood.  
 The world which ranne in synne stood.  
 Hay dreynit outtake hued cyfro.  
 No was mankynde of lytel weiche.  
 Ben cham gaphet of yese pre.  
 Pat ben the sonob of noo.  
 The world of mannes nacion.  
 In to multiplicacioun.  
 Was so restored welte ayen.  
 So fer for as the bokes seyn.  
 Pat of hem the and here issue.  
 Yer was so large a retenu.  
 Of naciouns seienty and tivo.  
 In sundri places echon of no.  
 The wide world han enhabited.  
 But as nature hem hay exated.  
 Thei toke panne lital hede.  
 The broyer of the softer hede.  
 To wedde wythes til it cam.  
 In to the tyne of Abraham.  
 Whan the yude age was bygonne.  
 The nedde so was ouervonne.  
 For the was poeple ynolth in londe.  
 Pan at the ferste it cam to honde.  
 Pat softer hode of mariage.  
 Was corued in to copmarge.  
 So pat after the whete lye.  
 The Cousyn weddey the Cousyn.  
 For Abraham et pat he deyde.  
 His charge vpon his seruant leyde.  
 To hym and in his wyse spat.  
 Pat he his sone ysaac.  
 To wedde for no worldes good.  
 For only to his owne blood.  
 Wher of his seruant as he had.  
 Whan he was ded his sone hay lad.  
 To Rachel where he febecke.  
 Hay wedded wy the white necke.  
 For she he wyse wel and fith.  
 Was to the chylde Cousyn fith.  
 And this as Abraham hay tauht.  
 Whan ysaac was god bytauht.

Libe

His sone Jacob dede al so.  
 And of Zaban the doubtres tivo.  
 Which was his sone he took to wyne.  
 And gyt vpon hem in his lye.  
 Of hire ferst which hite the.  
 Sex sones of his progenye.  
 And of Rachel tivo sones eke.  
 The remenant was for to seke.  
 Pat is to seyn of foure mo.  
 Wher of he gyt ou Zala tivo.  
 And of Zelfha he hadde eke tivo.  
 And yese tivo as I seye.  
 Yurgh prouidence of god him selue.  
 Ben seyd the Patriarches tivo.  
 Of whom as afterward besel.  
 The tribes tivo of Israel.  
 Engendred were Z ben the same.  
 Pat of hebreus so hadden name.  
 Which of sibrede in alliaunce.  
 For ouele kepten pilke vsaunce.  
 Most comunly to Crist was bore.  
 But afterward it was fore bore.  
 Amonges the pat ben baptizd.  
 For of the tivo canonizd.  
 The poe hay lode to the men.  
 Pat non shal wedde of his lym.  
 Or the secunde ne the thre.  
 But youh pat holy church it bidde.  
 So to restreyne mariage.  
 Yer ben yit vpon lous fage.  
 Ful many such nold a day.  
 Pat taken where thei taken may.  
 For lous which is vnbysyn.  
 Of alle reson us menysyn.  
 Yurgh sortie and yurgh mette.  
 Of his voluptuosite.  
 He sparye no condicioun.  
 Of syn ne yit religion.  
 But as a colke among the heimes.  
 Or as a stalon in the fennes.  
 Which rop amonges alle the stode.  
 Fith so can he no more gode.  
 But tak what yurgh comp next to hode.  
 Why sone you shal vnderstode.  
 Pat such delit is for to blame. **fessoz.**  
 For yit you have don the same.  
 To lous in eny fith manere.  
 Tel forp yer of I shrif the here.  
 My fader nay god bot the sope. **Amas.**  
 My fere is nouht of such a lous.  
 So wilde a man yit was I nouht.  
 Pat of my syn or leef or lousere  
 Me liste lousen such a lous.  
 And eek I not for what emprise.  
 I sholde assote vpon a nonne.  
 For youh I hadde here lous womne  
 It myht in to no pise amolme.



So per of sette Inoon a compte.  
ye may wel axe of pis and pat.  
But sopeh for to telle plat.  
In al pis word per is but con.  
ye which myn herte hay ouer gon.  
am towarde alle ower free.

**R**ul wel my sone noll I se. confessor.  
In word stant enere vpon o place.  
But me per of polv hast a grace.  
pat pou ye myht so wel exaue.  
Of loue such as som men vse.  
So as I spak of noll to fore.  
for al such tyme of loue is lore.  
And noll but to ye bitter wete.  
for pouh it penke a man ferse wete.  
he shal wel felen atte laste.  
pat it is soure and may not laste.  
for as a morsel envenymed.  
So hay such loue his lust mytymes.  
And grette en samples many con.  
A man may fynde per vpon.

**Q**uod loquatur contra istos quos  
demonis sui desiderii feruore ipsam  
in incestuosos efficitur neque prius  
sororibus parant. Et narrat exem  
plum qualiter pro eo quod Cayus  
Caligula tres sorores suas virgines  
civitati illicito oppressit deus tunc se  
lexis penam impune non ferens ipse  
non solum ab imperio sed a vita iusticia  
vindicta plauit. Narrat etiam aliud  
exemplum super eodem. qualiter A  
mon filius David facit amoris co  
cupiscentia puerum sororem suam  
Thamar a sue virginitatis pudici  
cia in viciu deflorant. pro quod  
a ipe a fre suo absolon postea in  
fatus peccatu sue mortis precio in  
viciu redemit.

**I**n Rome ferst if we begynne.  
per shal I fynde holl of no prync.  
An Emperour was for to blame.  
Cayus Caligula by name.  
Whiche of his olde hys fustres pre.  
By restre ye virginitie.  
And whan he hadde hem so ferleyn.  
As he which was all vileyn.  
he dede hem out of londe exile.  
But after ward whi hime a while.  
God lay byrafft hym in his iwe.  
his liff and eke his larene Emper.  
And pus for for whyn of a poble.  
for euere his lust was ouer poble.  
Of no sothe also I fynde.  
Noll his soster a ven kynde.  
Whiche hilt thamar he ferleyn.  
But he pat lust an ower day.

**D**oubt whan pat absolon.  
his olde hys broper per vpon.  
Of pat he hadde his soster shent.  
Took of pat synne venement.  
And solow hym whi his olde hys hound.  
And pus pynkynde vnkynde found.  
**T**he narrat qualiter doth duas  
filias suas ipis consencientibz car  
nali copula cognouit duos qz ex eis  
filios scilicet moab et Amon proge  
nuit quoz postea generacio praua  
et exasperans contra pplm dei in tea  
salem promissionis vario grau  
mine quam sepius insultabat.

**S**ed for to se more of pis pyn.  
ye bible maket a knowlechyng.  
Wher of you myht take eydenes.  
vpon ye fore experience.  
Whan dothes whi was ouer gon.  
And shap vnto ye salte soon.  
As it is spoke in to pis day.  
By bope hys douhtes paine he lay.  
Whi chide he made hem bope wete.  
Til pat nature hem wold lete.  
And so ye cause a bolde lade.  
pat eche of hem a sone hadde.  
moab ye ferste. and ye secunde.  
Amou of whiche as it is founde.  
Cum after ward to met ences.  
Two nacions and natheles.  
for pat ye stockes were not goode.  
ye braunches myhten not be goode.  
for of ye false moabites.  
for whi ye strengthe of Amouites.  
Of pat ye were ferse mytete.  
ye poeple of god was ofte vsette.  
In israel and in iudee.  
As in ye bible a man may se.  
**T**o pus my sone as I ye seve.  
pou myht y self be byseve.  
Of pat pou hast of ower herse.  
for euere yit it hay so ferde.  
Of lones luste if so byfalle.  
pat it in ower plate falle.  
man it is of ye lade sette.  
he whiche his lone hay so be sette.  
more after wards repente hym fore.  
And euery man is opres lore.  
Of pat byfel in tyme er pis.  
ye present tyme which holl is.  
may ben enformed holl it stood.  
And take pat hym penke good.  
And leue pat whiche is not so.  
But for to lobe of tyme ago.  
holl lust of lode excedet lade.  
It ouho for to be whi dralbe.  
for euery man it sholde drede.



And namely in his byredo.  
Whiche torney of ce to vengeance.  
Wher of a tale in remembrance.  
Whiche is a long proces to here.  
I praye for to tellen here.

**Q**uibus est cois amor sed et imode-  
ratos. Qui facit excessus non requi-  
ratur amans. Sors en vnde Venus  
tractat corda videre. Que rationis  
erunt non ratione sunt. **U**hic lo-  
quitur adhuc contra incestuosos a  
mauit colms. Et narrat mirabile  
exemplum de magno rege Antiocho  
qui vxore mortua piam filiam Dio-  
taur. et quia filie matrimoniu pe-  
nes alios impedire voluit tale ab  
eo exijt edictu qd si quis eam in vx-  
orem peteret nisi quoddam pblema  
questionis qua ipse Rex posuerat  
deretur solueret. capitali sententia  
puniretur. Sup quo veniens tandem  
discretus iuuenis princeps Tyri.  
# Appolinus questionem soluit nec ca-  
men filiam habere potuit. s. Rex  
indignatus ipm ppe hoc in mortis  
odiu recollegit. Vnde Appolinus a  
sue Regis fugiens qui plura pnt  
inferius intuluntur ppe amorem  
pericula passus est.

**I**n a Croniqz in days goon.  
ye Which is cleped pautcon.  
in lones cause y rede pus.  
howly pat ye myte Antiochus.  
of whom pat Antioche took.  
his first name as seip ye book.  
was coupled to a noble qweue.  
And hadde a daughter hem byllene.  
But such fortune cam to hounde.  
pat dey Whiche no kynd may wstoude.  
But euery hys it mot obeye.  
ye Worpi queene took a wyre.  
ye kyng Whiche made moche moone.  
so stood as who seip al hym one.  
Wip oute wif but mayeles  
his daughter Whiche was pereles.  
of beaute welte aboute hym stille.  
But whan a myn hay welte in wille.  
ye fleshe is fiele and fulley ofte.  
And pat ye mayde tendre 2 softte.  
Whiche in here fadres chambre dwelte.  
Wipinne a tyme wiste and felte.  
ffor lykynge of concupiscence.  
Wip oute myght of conscience.  
ye fader so wip lustes blente.  
pat he caste alle his hole entente.  
his owne daughter for to spille.  
ye kyng hay leiser at his wille.

Wip trengye and whan he tyme seip.  
ye young mayden he forlepe.  
And she was tendre and ful of drede.  
She coupe not here maydenhede.  
Defende and pus she hay forlore.  
ye flour Whiche she hay longe bore.  
ye helpep nouht al pouh she wepe.  
ffor ye pat holde here body kepe.  
of women were absent de pame.  
And pus ye mayden goy to manne.  
ye wude fader pus deuourey.  
his owne flesch Whiche non socourey.  
And pat was cause of moche care.  
But after ye vylkynde fure.  
Out of ye chambre goy ye kyng.  
And he lay stille and of ye myn  
Wip inne here self such sorwe made.  
ye was nollit pat myght here glade.  
ffor fere of ylle horrible vice.  
Wip pat cam june ye nozice.  
Whiche fwo childhode here hade kept.  
And axey if she hade slept.  
And wip here chere was vnglad.  
But she Whiche hay ben ouerlad.  
of pat she myght not be wreke.  
ffor shame coupe vneyes speke.  
And mayeles mercy she preyde.  
Wip wepyng yhe and pus she sayde.  
helas my suster waylolly.  
pat eue y she ye ille day.  
yng Whiche my body first begat.  
In to ye world only pat.  
ay worldes worship hay byreste.  
Wip pat she wonen noll and este.  
And eue wip after ye dey.  
so pat welmyhe hir lachey dey.  
pat oper Whiche here wordes herde.  
In conforcyng of here ansuerde.  
To lette here fadres fool de sir.  
she wiste no recouery.  
Whan yung is so per is no lote.  
so suffren yei pat suffren mote.  
ye was noon oper Whiche it wice.  
pus hay ye kyng al pat hym lye.  
of his bymyng and his plesance.  
And laste in such continuance.  
And such delit he took yei june.  
hym wipit pat it was no synne.  
And she dorst hym no yung wip seye.  
But fume Whiche goy euery weye.  
To sundry regnes all aboute.  
ye myte beaute tellye out.  
of such a mayde of his parage.  
so pat for loue of mariage.  
ye worpi prynces come and sende.  
as yei ye Whiche al honour wende.  
And knew no yung hold pat it stood.



The fader whanne he understood.  
pat he his daughter pus bysoughte.  
Wit all his Wit he caste & souhte.  
holl pat he myght fynde a lette.  
And pus a statut pan he sette.  
And in his wise his lawe he tacey.  
pat what man pat his daughter axey.  
But if he coupe his question.  
As soule vpon suggestion.  
Of certeyn pynnes pat byfelle.  
ye whiche he wolde vnto hym telle.  
he sholde in certeyn lese his hede.  
And pus ye were many dede.  
Here hedes stondyn on ye gate.  
Till at ye laste longe and late.  
for lacke of answere in ye wise  
ye remenant pat weren wise.  
escheweden to make assay.

**De aduentu Apollini in Antiochia  
ubi ipse filium Regis Antiochi in ex-  
orem postulauit.**

Till it befell vpon a day.  
Apollinus ye pryncce of Tyr.  
Whiche hay to Loue a greet desir.  
As he which in his hille mood.  
Was kyng of his hote blood.  
A yong a fresch a lusty knyght.  
As he lay musing on a nyght.  
Of ye tydynge which he herde.  
he pouht assaye how pat it ferde.  
he was wy worpi compaignye.  
Armyed and wy good nauye.  
To shew he goy ye wynd hym dryuey.  
And sailer till pat he arriuey.  
Saut in ye port of Antioche.  
he poudey and goy to appoche.  
ye kynges court and his presence.  
Of euery naturel science.  
Whiche euery clerk coupe hym teche.  
he coupe knowh and in his speche.  
Of wordes he was eloquent.  
And whan he seih ye kyng pseynt.  
he preyey he moste his daughter haue.  
The kyng a yen began to craue.  
And tolde hym ye condicion.  
holl ferst vnto his question.  
he more answere and faile nouht.  
Or wy his hed it shal be bouht.  
And he hym axey what it was.

**Questio Regis Antiochi. Sceleris  
vexor interna carne vexor. quero pa-  
trem meum matris mee virum uxoris  
mee filium.**

The kyng declaray hym ye cas.  
Wit sterne look and sturvy chere.  
To hym and seide in his manere.  
Wit felonye I am by bore.

I ete and haue it nouht forbore.  
my modres flessch whos housbonde.  
my fader for to seche I fonde.  
Whiche is ye sone of my wyf.  
her of I am quiquisith.  
And who pat can my tale saue.  
Al quyte he shal my daughter haue.  
Of his answere and if he fayle.  
he shal be ded wy outh fayle.  
for in my sone quod ye kyng.  
he wel abyed of his pyn.  
Whiche hay in lyf in iupartie.

**Responsio Apollini.**  
Apollinus for his partie.  
Whan he his question hay herd.  
vnto ye kyng he hay answerd.  
And hay rehersed oon and oon.  
ye poyntz and seide per vpon.  
ye question which you hast spoke.  
If you wolt pat it be vnde.  
It touchey al ye pryncete.  
Byt bene ym othne chyl and ye.  
And stant al hool vpon yowr tye.

**Indignacio Regis Antiochi super  
responsione Apollini.**

The kyng Was wonder for ye.  
And pouht if pat he seide it outh.  
pan were he shamed al aboute.  
Wit sihe wordes and wy felle.  
he sey my sone I shal ye telle.  
pouht pat you be of hiel wit.  
It is no gret merueille as vit.  
ym age may it nouht suffice.  
But loke wel you nouht dispise.  
ym othne lyf for of my mace.  
Of pryncy dapes full apace.  
I graunt ye to ben answerd.

**De recessu Apollini ab Antiochia.**

And pus wy Loue and tyme assyed.  
his yonge pryncce for ye wente.  
And vnderstode wel what he mente.  
Wytinne his herte as he was peryd.  
pat for to make hym afered.  
ye kyng his tyme hay so deliyed.  
Wher of he dradde and was amayd.  
Of treason pat he deye sholde.  
for he ye kyng his sope tolde.  
And so demyly ye nyhtes tyde.  
pat more wolde he not a byde.  
Al pryncely his barne he hente.  
And hom a yen to Tyr he wente.  
And in his othne wit he seide.  
for dred yf he ye kyng be wyrede.  
he knall so wel ye kynges herte.  
pat dey ne sholde he not a ferte.  
ye kyng hym wolde so pursue.  
But he pat wolde his dey eschewe.







made a figure in resemblance,  
of hym and in comyn place.  
pei sette it vp so pat his face,  
myght euery myner man byholde  
so y pe tite was byholde.  
It was of Laton ouergilt.  
pus hay he not his yfste spilt.

*Qualis Helcaus Eius Tyrus Thar  
sin veniens Apollini de insidijs  
Antiochi premuniuit...*

Upon a tyme wy a wylde,  
his lord to pleye wip hym olde.  
And in his weye of Tyr he mette.  
A man which on knees hym grette.  
And helcam by name he highte.  
Which preyed his lord to haue in sighte.  
Upon hym self and sayd hym pus.  
How pat ye mette Antiochus.  
A waytey if he myght hym spille.  
pat oyer pouht and held him stille.  
And poulted hym of his waryng.  
And bad hym telle for no tyding.  
Whan he to Tyr cam home ayein.  
pat he in Tharse hym hadde seyn.  
*Qualis Apollinus portum Tharsis  
velinquens cum ipse p mare nauis  
no securio requiescit supuenien  
te tempestate nauis ad omibus  
pcer ipm solum in eadem conuincit  
iuxta Pentapolim pichitabatur.*

Fortune hay euere be muable.  
And may no while stonde stable.  
For now it hithen now it lollay.  
Now stant vp rith now ouerprolly.  
Now ful of blisse now ful of bale.  
For as in tellyng of my tale.  
Here afterward a man may leue.  
Which is met roupe for to here.  
His lord which he wolde don his best.  
Dymme him self hay litel rest.  
And pouht he wolde his place chage.  
And seche a conre more straunge.  
Of Tharsens his leue a nou.  
he toke and is to shipe goon.  
his cours he muni wy seil vndulde.  
Where as fortune dop he lalle.  
And shewep as i shal reherse.  
How she was to his lord diuerse.  
pe which vpon pe see she ferkep.  
pe wynd a woe pe weder derkep.  
pe blew and made such a tempest.  
A toon anker may pe ship a rest.  
Which hay to broken alle his here.  
pe shipmen stode in such a fere.  
Was noon pat myght hym self byfere.  
But euere a wayte vpon pe leere.  
Whan pat pei sholde drench at ones.

per was i nouh dymme bones.  
Of wepyng and of sorthe po.  
his yong kynny maky mochel wo.  
So for to see pe ship exualle.  
But al pat myght hym not auale.  
pe mast to brak pe sayl to wof.  
pe ship vpon pe walles draof.  
Til pat pei sh a londes coste.  
po made a volke pe leste i moste.  
By so pei myght come to a londe.  
But he which hay pe see on honde.  
A reprimus wolde nouht a corde.  
But al to brak cable and corde.  
Er pei to londe myght approche.  
pe ship to cleef vpon a roche.  
And al goy dollyn in to pe depe.  
But he pat alle ynte may lepe.  
En to his lere was merciable.  
And blouht hym sauf vpon a table.  
Which to pe lound hym hay vpon bore.  
pe remenant was al forlore.  
per of he made mochel moone.  
pus was pus yong lord hym come.  
*Qualis Apollinus nudus sup lit  
iactabatur ubi quidam piscator  
ipm suo colloquio desitens ad dore  
Pentapolim direxit.*

Naked in a pouere plye.  
his colour which was whilom white.  
was yanne of water fide i pale.  
And eke he was so soze acale.  
pat he wiste of hym self no bote.  
It hym no ynt for to mote.  
To gete a yen pat he hay lore.  
But she which hay his depe forlore.  
fortune pouht she wolde nouht pelpe.  
Al so depnly hay sent hym helpe.  
Whan hym pouht alle grace alpe.  
per cam a fishere in pe weye.  
And seih a man pere naked stonde.  
And whan pat he hay vnder stonde.  
pe cause he hay of hym gret wylpe.  
And onlych of his pouere wylpe.  
Of such clothes as he hadde.  
Wy gret pite his lord he claddde.  
And he hym pouht as he sholde.  
And seih hym pat in shal be yalde.  
If euere he gete his stat a yem.  
And preyed pat he wolde hym seyn.  
If nyh were emy toly for hym.  
he seide pe pentapolim.  
Where bope kynny and queene dwelken.  
Whan he his tale herde tellen.  
he gladd hym and gan by seche.  
pus he pe weye hym wolde reche.  
And he hym tuiht i for he wente.  
And preyed god wy god eunte.



To sende hym Joye after his sorwe.  
 It was not passed yet mydnyght.  
*Qualiter Apollinus pentapolim  
 adueniente ludus gignasch p vrbe  
 publice proclamatus est...*  
 Chan yderward his weye he nam.  
 Where soone vpon ye noue he cam.  
 He eete such as he myght mete.  
 And for a noon whan he hadde ete.  
 The goy to se ye tolyn a bolwte.  
 And cam yere as he found a rolwte.  
 Of yong lusty men wy all.  
 And it sholde be by fulle. as  
 pat day was set of such assise.  
 pat pei sholde in ye londes rise.  
 As he herde of ye poeple seye.  
 the comyn game yanne pleye.  
 And cried was pat pei sholde come.  
 In to ye game alle and some.  
 Of hem pat ben deliuered 2 wht.  
 To do such maystrie as pei myght.  
 pei made hem naked as pei sholde.  
 For so pat ilke game wolde.  
 And it was ye custume and vs.  
 A mounge hem was no refus.  
 ye flour of alle ye tolyn was ye.  
 And of ye court also yere were.  
 And pat was in a large place.  
 Ryt euene a fore ye knyges face.  
 Which Arcestrates hight.  
 ye pley was pleyd rht in his sight.  
 And who moste worpt was of dede.  
 receyue he sholde a certey mede.  
 And in ye cite bere a prys.  
 Apollinus which war and wyse.  
 Of euery game coure an ende.  
 He yowht assay how so it wende.  
*Qualiter Apollinus ludu gignasch  
 Vincens in aula Regis ad co-  
 nam honorifice receptus est...*  
 And fel among hem in to game.  
 And yere he wan hym such a name.  
 So as ye kyng hym self acomptey.  
 pat he all oyer men surmountey.  
 And bar ye prys a boue hem alle.  
 ye kyng bad pat in to hys halle.  
 At soup tyme he shal be brouht.  
 And he cam palme and lest it nouht.  
 Wyoute compaignis allone.  
 Als noon so fevly of pson.  
 Of visage and of ymes bope.  
 If pat he hadde what to clope.  
 At souper tyme napeles.  
 ye kyng a myddes all ye pres.  
 Lett clepe hem vp among hem alle.  
 And bad his marchal of his alle.  
 To setten hym in such degre.

pat he vpon hym myght se.  
 The kyng was soone set and serued.  
 And he which hay his prys deserued.  
 After ye knyges owne word.  
 Was maad by hymme a meddel lord.  
 pat bope kyng and aduene him syho.  
 he sat and caste a bolwte his yho.  
 And syh ye lordes in astat.  
 And wyh hym self was in debat.  
 penkyng what he hadde loto.  
 And such a forwe he took per foro.  
 pat he sat euere stille and pouht.  
 As he whiche of no mete trouht.  
*Qualiter Apollinus in cena ream  
 bens nichil comedit. p doloroso dul-  
 tu submisso capite maxime ingenuis  
 celat qui tandem a filia Regis a  
 fortatus cytharam plectens am-  
 tis audientibus archatizans ultra  
 modum complacuit...*  
 The kyng beheld his heynesse.  
 And of his grete gentillesse.  
 his daughter which was fawre 2 good.  
 And at ye boz byfore hym stood.  
 As it was pilke yme of age.  
 he bad to go on his message.  
 And fonde for to make hym glad.  
 And she dede as here fader bad.  
 And goy to hym ye soft pas.  
 And axep whenne 2 whate he was.  
 And preyed he sholde his pouhtes leue.  
 he sey madame by your leue.  
 my name is hote Apollinus.  
 And of my richesse it is pus.  
 vpon ye see I haue it loto.  
 ye coure where pat I was boz.  
 where pat my lons is and my rente.  
 I lesse at ym whan pat I wente.  
 ye worschip per of which I allwte.  
 In to ye god I yere betauhte.  
 And pus to nedre as pei so speke.  
 ye ceceis vome by his cheke.  
 ye kyng whiche per of took good kepe.  
 hay gret pite to see hym wepe.  
 And for his daughter sende a yem.  
 And preyed hys faire and gau to sym.  
 pat she no lemyte wolde deache.  
 But pat she wolde a noon fory fete.  
 hire harpe and don al pat she cam.  
 To glade wyh pat fory man.  
 And she to don here fader heste.  
 here harpe sette and to ye sette.  
 vpon a chayer whiche pei sette.  
 her self next to vis man she sette.  
 wyh harpe bope and eke wyh moupe.  
 To hym she dede al pat she coupe.  
 To make hym chere and euere he fely.



*Sup.*  
And he hym axey how he lyfey.  
Mya dame certes wel he seide.  
But if ye ye mesure pleide.  
Which if yow list shal yow leve.  
It were a glad thing for to here.  
Ha leue sit to quod she.  
I wol take ye harpe and let me see.  
Of what mesure pat ye mene.  
Ye preyer ye kyng ye preyer ye queene.  
For yow ye lordes alle a reue.  
Pat he som mery wolde shewe.  
he taky ye harpe and in his wise.  
he temprey and of such assise.  
Spryngyng he harper for yow all.  
pat as a love celestial.  
hem pouht it sholden in here here.  
as yow pat it an angel were.  
yei gladden of his melodye.  
But most of all ye compaignie.  
ye kynges daughter which it herde.  
And pouht eke of pat he answered.  
Whan pat it was of hys appoynted.  
Wynne here herte hys wel supposed.  
pat he is of gret gentillesse.  
hise dedes been per of wrytess.  
For yow yow yowdom of his lore.  
It nedey not to sechen more.  
he myht nought have such manere.  
Of gentyl blood but if he were.  
Whan he hys harped al his felle.  
ye kynges heste to fulfille.  
A wyf gop dychy alwyf gop cuppe.  
Dowyn gop ye bord ye dore was vpp.  
yei risen and gon out of hallo.  
ye kyng his chamburleyn let calle.  
And bad pat he by all weye.  
A chamburleyn for yow man purveyer.  
Which myht his oldeue chamburleyn.  
It shal be do my lord quod he.  
*Qualiter Apollinus ad Regem pro filia  
sua erudenda retentus est.*  
Apollinus of whom I mene.  
yo took his leue of kyng & queene.  
And of ye wyf mayde also.  
Whiche preyde to his fader po.  
pat she myht of ye yowng man.  
Of ye sciences whiche he can.  
his lore have and in his wise.  
ye kyng here grantyng his appoynt.  
So pat hym self per to assente.  
pat he was accorded er yei wente.  
pat he wyf al pat euer he may.  
his yowng faire freshe may.  
Of pat he couye sholde enforme.  
And ful assented in his forme.  
*Qualiter filia Regis Apollinum ornato  
apparatu vestiri fecit & spe ad puellam*

*Documt in qua pluribz familiariter  
intendebat. Vnde placata puel  
la in amorem Apollini exarsescens  
infirmabatur.*  
Shei token leue as for pat myht.  
And whan it was a moelle byha.  
To to his yowng man of Tyr.  
Of cloys and of good a tyr.  
Wip gold and siluer to despende.  
his wyf yowng lady sende.  
And yow she made hym wel at ese.  
And he wyf al pat he can plesse.  
his seruey wel and faire a yeyn.  
he tauht hir tal she was certeyn.  
Of harpe of cytolle and of fote.  
Wip many a tyme and many a note.  
Upon musyq upon mesure.  
And of hys harpe ye tempreyre.  
he tauht here eke as he wel couye.  
For as men seyn pat felle is yowng.  
Wip leiser and continuance.  
his mayde fel vpon achauice.  
pat loue hys mad hym a queyrelle.  
A yeyn hir yowng freshe and felle.  
pat malgre wher she wolde or nought.  
She mot wyf al hys hertes yowht.  
To loue and to his lorde obere.  
And pat she shal ful sore alye.  
for she wot neuere what it is.  
But euer among she feleye.  
Touchyng vpon yow man of Tyr.  
hys herte is hoot as any fyr.  
And oyer while it is a cale.  
now is she red now is she pale.  
Ful after ye condicion.  
Of hys yunguacion.  
And euer among here yowhtes alle.  
She yowhte what so may befall.  
or pat she lorde or pat she wepe.  
she wolde here good name kepe.  
for feere of womanysh shame.  
But what in earnest and in game.  
she stant for loue in such a plyht.  
pat she hys lost al appetyt.  
Of mere of dymk of nyhtes reste.  
As she not what is ye beste.  
But for to yenten alle hys felle.  
she helde hir oft tynes stille.  
Wip yow here chamburleyn & gop uoc olde.  
ye kyng was of hys lyf in doute.  
Which wist no ying what it mente.  
*Qualiter cres filij principis filiam  
Regis singillatim in dore suis sup  
plicibus postulauerunt.*  
But felle a tyme as he dore wente.  
To walke of prynces sones yre.  
per come and felle to fore his felle.



And eche of hem in sondry wyse.  
 By souht and profrey his seruise.  
 So pat he myght his daughter haue.  
 ye kynge which wolde hir honour saue.  
 Seip she is seke and of pat speche.  
 po was no tyme to by seche.  
 But eche of hem do make a bille.  
 he bad. and write his owne wille.  
 his name his fader and his good.  
 And whan she wiste how it stood.  
 And hadde here billes ouerforn.  
 yei sholden haue answere a yen.  
 Of his conseil yei weren glad.  
 And writen as yei kynge hem bad.  
 And euery man his owne booke.  
 In to yei kynge's hand by took.  
 And he it to his daughter sende.  
 And preyed hir for to make an ende.  
 And write a yen hir owne hond.  
 Fint as she in here herte fond.  
**Qualiter filia Regis omibz alijs re-**  
**gibus Apollini in maritali pelegit.**  
 The billes were wel receyued.  
 But she hay alle here lounes weyued.  
 And pouhte po was tyme and space.  
 To putte here in here fader grace.  
 And wrot a yen and pus she seide.  
 ye shame which is in a mayde.  
 Wyf speche dar not ben duloke.  
 But in writyng it may be spoke.  
 So write I to yow fader pus.  
 But if I haue Apollinus.  
 Of all his world what so betide.  
 I wol noon ower man abyde.  
 And certes if I of hym fayle.  
 I wot riht wel wyf outen faile.  
 ye shul for me be daughter les.  
 his lettre cam and pere was pres.  
 To fore yei kynge yete as he stood.  
 And whan pat he it vnderstood.  
 he gaf hem answere by and by.  
 But pat was so pryncely.  
 pat noon of ower conseil wiste.  
 yei took here leue & whan he liste.  
 yei went forp vpon here weie.  
 yei kynge ne wolde nouht lette.  
 yei conseil for no maner lise.  
 But suffreyd til he tyme fynde.  
**Qualiter Rex & Regina in maritali**  
**conuenerunt.**  
 And whan pat he to chambre is come.  
 he hay in to his conseil nome.  
 his man off Tyt and let hym se.  
 his lettre and all yei pryncere.  
 yei whiche his daughter to hym sente.  
 And he his lre to grownde bente.  
 And pouhten hym and here al so.

And er yei wente pan a tyme.  
 Wyf good herte and wyf good corage.  
 Of ful loue and ful marriage.  
 yei kynge and he been hool accorded.  
 And after whan it was recorded.  
 In to yei daughter hool it stood.  
 yei yiste of all yei worldes good.  
 yei sholde haue made hir half so blyde.  
 And forp wyf al yei kynge as wyf.  
 for he wolde haue hir good assent.  
 hay for yei allene hir moder sent.  
 yei allene is come and whan he herde.  
 Of his matere hool pat it ferde.  
 she sihe debat she sihe desese.  
 But if she wolde hir daughter please.  
 And is yer to assented full.  
 which is a dede wonderfull.  
 for no man kenne yei sope cas.  
 But he hym selfe what man he was.  
 And napeles so as hem pouhte.  
 chise dedes to yei sope wroughte.  
 pat he was come of gentyl blood.  
 hym lackey nouht but worldes good.  
 And as yer of is no despayr.  
 for she shal be hir faderes heir.  
 And he was able to gouerne.  
 pus wol yei not yei lounes werne.  
 Of hym and here in noon wyse.  
 But al accorded yei deuys.  
**Qualiter Apollinus filie Regis**  
**mupit & prima nocte cum ea con-**  
**gubitus ipsam impregnauit.**  
 The day and tyme of marriage.  
 wher lounes is lord of yei corage.  
 hym penkey lounes er pat he speke.  
 But lre lre daste in to yei dede.  
 yei tyme is come and in here wyse.  
 wyf gret offeryng and sacrifice.  
 yei wedde and make a riche feste.  
 And euery ying was riht honeste.  
 wyne house and eke wyf oute.  
 It was so don pat all aboute.  
 Of gret worshippe and gret noblesse.  
 yer cryde many man lounesse.  
 In to yei lordes hihe and londe.  
 yei fuyhtes pat been yong & prowd.  
 yei iouste first and after dounce.  
 yei day is to yei nyghtes chaunce.  
 hay derked al yei briste soune.  
 his lord which hay his lounes womme.  
 he go to bedde wyf his wif.  
 wher as yei lade a lusty lye.  
 And pat was after sonde lene.  
 for as yei preyden hem be adene.  
 yei gret a childe by adene hem al.  
 To whom fell after moche lre.  
**Qualiter Ambasciatores a Tyro**



*In quadam nauē Pentapolim ve  
mentes mortem Regis Antiochi  
Apollino nunciaverunt.*

Now haue I told of spousalles.  
How for to speke of ye meruailes.  
Whiche afterwarde to hem byfello.  
This a wonder for to telle.  
It fell a day per riden othe.  
Per kyng and yllene and all ye rolle.  
To pleyen hem vpon ye fonde.  
Wher all per seen towarde ye londe.  
A ship seylling of gret array.  
To knowe what to mene may.  
Til it be come per alre.  
Howe per stonde on euery side.  
And lons ye shipes boze to thelle.  
Of penoncales a riche welde.  
Per aren when ye schip is come.  
For Tyr anon answered some.  
And ouer his per seiden more.  
Ye cause whi per come fore.  
Was for to seche and for to fynde.  
Apollinus which is of his kynde.  
Hile here lord and he appere.  
And of ye tale which he here.  
He was right glad for per hi tolde.  
Pat for wantaunce us god is wolde.  
Antiochus as men may wyte.  
Wip wonder & litymyng is formyte.  
His doughter hay per same chaunce.  
So be per loye in oo balance.  
For si oure liege lord we seye.  
In name of al ye lord & preye.  
Pat left al ower puny to done.  
It libe yow to come soone.  
And see yowre owne liege men.  
Wip ower pat be of yowre ken.  
Pat huen in loughing and desir.  
Til ye be come ayeu to Tyr.  
His take after ye kyng it hadde.  
Pentapolim al ouer spraddo.  
Per was no ioye for to seche.  
For euery man it hadde in speche.  
And seiden alle of oon accord.  
A wypp kyng shal ben oure lord.  
Pat yowre ferst an heynesse.  
Is shape us now to met in lousse.  
*Qualiter Apollino cu vxore sua in  
Pentapolim decessit  
Tyr nauticantibus contigit vxore  
articulo angustata in nauis filia  
que postea Tyrus vocabatur parere.*  
Howe now per tydynyng ouer al.  
Pat ne de he mot pat ne de shal.  
Apollinus his deene took.  
To god and al ye lord bytok.  
Wip all ye peple lony and brood.

pat he no longer per abas.  
Per kyng and yllene forthe made.  
But per sonde per were glade.  
Of such thing as per herden so.  
And per by thene ye wole and wo.  
To ship he goy his wyf wip childe.  
Per which was euere meke & mylde.  
And wolde not departe hym fro.  
Suche loue was be thene hem elbo.  
Inchorida for hire office.  
Kus take which was a noice.  
To wende wip per winge wyf.  
To whom was shaxe a woful lyf.  
Wip mine a gume as it be tede.  
Whan per were in ye see amydde.  
Owt of ye north per shi a clowde.  
Per storm aros ye wyndes lollde.  
Per blessen many a dredful blaste.  
Per wulken was al ouer caste.  
Per derke nyht ye sonne hay vnder.  
Per was a gret tempest of wonder.  
Per none and eke ye sterres boye.  
In blake clowdes per hem cloye.  
Where of here brist lode per hide.  
Per yowr lady wept and arde.  
To whom no confort myht anale.  
Of childe she began traualle.  
Where she lay in a caban clos.  
Here woful lord for hire aros.  
And pat was longe er eny morlle.  
So pat in anglysch and in forlle.  
She was deliuered al by nyht.  
And ded in euery mannes syht.  
But nydeles for al per wo.  
A maide childe was bore po.  
*Qualiter Apollinus vxoris sue  
mortem plangit.*  
Apollinus whan he per suelle.  
For forlle a shone he ouer prelle.  
Pat no man wisse in hym no lyf.  
And whan he wot he seide a wyf.  
My lust my ioye my desir.  
My welpe and my recouerir.  
Whi shal I hve and yow shal dwe.  
Ha yow fortune I ye diffie.  
Howe hast you do to me in werste.  
Ha herre whi ne wilt yow beeste.  
Pat fory wip here I myht passe.  
My paynes weren wel ye lasse.  
In such wepyng & in such cry.  
His dede wyf which lay hym by.  
A yowand spes he here lisse.  
Was neuer man pat shi ne wisse.  
A forlle vn to his forlle liche.  
Was euere among vpon ye liche.  
He fell a stone as he pat solliche.  
His owne dey which he by southe.



In to ye goddes alle a boue.  
 Wyf many a pitous word of Loue.  
 But suche wordes as wolde be,  
 yit herde neuere mannes ere  
 But only yulke whiche he seide.  
 ye master schip man cam a preyde.  
 Wyf ower such as he per yme.  
 And seyn pat he may no yinglyme.  
 A yepu ye sey but yei hym rede.  
 he be wel war and take hede.  
 ye see by weye of his nature.  
 Receyue may no creature.  
 Wyfynne hym selfe as for to holde.  
 ye whiche is ded for ye woldde.  
 As conseil en al a boue.  
 ye dede body casten oute.  
 For better it is yei seiden alle.  
 pat it of here so byfalle.  
 pan if yei scholden alle synne.  
 ye kynge whiche vnder scod hure wille.  
 And knelle here conseil pat was trelle.  
 Bygan a yen his sorow nelle.  
 Wyf pitous herte and yus to seye.  
 It is al reson pat ye preye.  
**Qualiter suadentibz nautis corpus**  
**vxoris sue mortue in quadam cista**  
**plumbo & ferro obtusa qz circuli**  
**in appolinus cu matris thesauro**  
**dua cu quadam tra sub eius capi**  
**ta scripta recludi in mari pri fecit.**  
 I am quod he but ou allone.  
 So wolde I not for my pson.  
 yere felt such auersite.  
 But whan it may no better be.  
 Doy paine yus vpon my word.  
 Yet make a cofre fauour of boord.  
 pat it be ferme wyf leed and rich.  
 A noon was made a cofre such.  
 All redy brouht vnto his hous.  
 And whan he seih and redy fond.  
 his cofre made and wel enclosed  
 ye dede body was bysolwed.  
 In clop of gold and leyd per yme.  
 And for he wolde vu to hure wyne.  
 vpon som cost a sepulture.  
 vnder hure heed in auenture.  
 Of gold he leyde somes myte.  
 And of jellies strong byete.  
 For wyf a letre and seide yus.  
**Egna lre appolin capiti vxoris**  
**sue supposita.**  
 I lre of Tyr appolinus.  
 Do alle maner men to wyte  
 pat here and se yus lre write.  
 pat helpeles wyf oute red.  
 here lyth a kynnes doughter ded.  
 And who pat happy here to fynde.

For charite take in hys mynde.  
 And so so pat she be bymynde.  
 Wyf me trefor whiche he shal haue.  
 yus whan ye letre was ful spoke.  
 yei haue a noon ye cofre stoke.  
 And bounden it wyf yren faste.  
 pat it may wyf ye walles laste.  
 And stoppen it by such a weye.  
 pat it shal be wyfynne dreye.  
 So pat no water myht it greue.  
 And yus in hope and good byleue.  
 Of pat ye corps shal wel aryue.  
 yei caste it ouer boorde as byue.  
**Qualiter appolinus vxoris sue**  
**corpore in mare proiecto tyrum**  
**relinquens cursum suu versus**  
**tharsin nauigio dolens arripuit.**  
 he schip fory on ye walles wente.  
 ye pryncce hys changed his entente.  
 And seip he wol not come at tyre.  
 As yanne but al his desyre.  
 Is ferst to sailen vu to tharse.  
 ye wyndy storme began to sarse.  
 ye some aryst ye weder cleere.  
 ye shipman whiche by mynde seere.  
 whan pat he seih ye wyndes saunte.  
 Toldwades tharse his cours he stante.  
 Qualiter corp p dicit defuncte sup  
 litus apud ephesum quidam medi  
 cus nomine tarmion ad aliquibz  
 suis discipulis inuenit quod in hospi  
 talis portibus & extra cistam cistam  
 ponens spiraculo vito in ea adhuc  
 inuenit tam plene sanitati restant.  
 ut noll to my miterere a yen.  
 To telle us olde bokes seyn.  
 ye dede corps of whiche ye knolle.  
 wyf wynd and water was forwolle.  
 roll heer noll yere al atte laste.  
 At ephasym ye see vp caste.  
 ye cofre and all pat was per yme.  
 Of gret meruaile noll by myne.  
 may heere who pat sitte stille  
 pat god wol saue may not spille.  
 Fyht as ye corps was ywolle on lounde.  
 yere cam wyllynge vpon ye stounde.  
 A wyfyn clerik a surmen.  
 And ete a gret whysien.  
 Of alle pat lous ye wisest oon.  
 whiche hys maister sermon.  
 yere were of hys disciples some.  
 his maister to ye cofre is come.  
 And yere yere yere somlyht yme.  
 And bad bad hem bere it to his yme.  
 And god hym selfe fory wyf all.  
 all pat schal falle falle shal.  
 yei comen home and tarle nouht.



his cofte in to chambre brouht.  
Whiche put pei fynde faste stoke.  
But pei wyf crast in haue vnlake.  
pei loken in Where as pei founde.  
A body des Which was i wounde.  
In cloy of gold as i seide er.  
pe tresor eke pei founden per.  
for pei pei loken Which pei vede.  
And so pei token beate hede.  
vnlake was pe body done.  
As he put knelt What was to done.  
his noble clerk wyf alle hasty.  
Began pei vernies for to taste.  
And seih hir age was of yowthe.  
And wyf pei crastes Which he coupe.  
he soult und fond a sygne of lyf.  
wyf put pei worpi byrges wyf.  
honestely pei token oute.  
And maiden fyres al aboute.  
pei seide hire on a couche softe.  
And wyf a shete warmed offte.  
here colde brost began to hete.  
here herte also to flucke and bete.  
his maister hay here euery ioynt.  
wyf certeyn oyle and balmie euoynt.  
And put a liquor in hire mouy.  
Whiche is to selve clerkes couy.  
so put she couerey ante laste.  
And ferst hire yhen by she caste.  
And Whan she more of strengthe cauh.  
here armes bope for the seualt.  
helde by here hond und pitously.  
she spak and saide a were and.  
Where is my lord What world is pe.  
As she pat wot nouht how it is.  
But Ceremon put worpi leche.  
And wende a noon upon hire speche.  
And seih ma dame ye ben here.  
Where ye be sauf as ye shal here.  
here afterward for pi nob.  
in conseil is conforter yow.  
for wistep wel wyf olte fule.  
pat olte of reson to be do.  
his passen pei a day or two.  
**Qualit vxor Apollini sanata do  
und religionis peijt vbi sac' vela  
mine munita casta di tepe se vout.**  
Gher spoke of nouht as for amende  
And she began soundel amende.  
And wist here selfe What she mente.  
so for to knolde here hool entente.  
his maister axey all pei cas.  
how she cam yere 2 What she was.  
how she cam here pat wot i nouht.  
Quod she but wel i am by pouht.  
of ower pynnes alle aboute.  
fho poynt to poynt und tolde hym olte.

As forsoyth as she it wiste.  
And he here tolde hold in a liste.  
pe see her preth vpon pe londe.  
And What tresor wyf here he founde.  
Which is al redy at hire wille.  
As he pat shap hym to fulfille.  
wyf att his myht What pynge he sholde.  
she poukey him pat he is wold.  
And att here herte she dysclosey.  
And seih him wel pat she supposy.  
here lord be dreynit hir child also.  
so seih she nouht but alle wo.  
Wher of as to pe world no more.  
ye wole she come and preier yfere  
pat in som temple in pe cite.  
To kepe and holde here chastete.  
she myht a mount pe women dwelle.  
Whan he pis tale here herde telle.  
he was vlt glad und made hire knolven.  
pat he a daughter of his owen.  
hay Which he wole vnto hire yue.  
To serue whil pei bope yue.  
In seide of pat Which she hay lost.  
Al only at his olte cofte.  
she shal be rendred for wyf hire.  
she seih graunt mercy leue fire.  
God wyte it yow per i ne may.  
And pis pei dyne for pe day.  
Til tyme come pat she was hole.  
And so pei taken here conseil hole.  
To shape vpon good ordinaunce.  
And made a worthi purueaunce.  
A yeu pe day pat pei ben veiled.  
And pis Whan pat pei be consealed.  
In blake cloys pei hem cloys.  
his lady and pe daughter bope.  
And yowd hem to religion.  
ye feste und ye profession.  
After pe reule of yst demre.  
Was maad wyf qret solempnite.  
Where as Diane is seyntified.  
his seint pis lady iustified.  
In ordre Where she poukey to dwelle.  
But wold a yendward for to telle.  
In What plit pat his lord stod inne.  
he seiley til he may wyne.  
ye haue of Thawc as i seide er.  
Whan Apollinus was wryued per.  
**Qualit Apollinus Thawm nau  
mans filiam suam Tarsin Scungu  
tion 2 Dionie vxor sic educanda  
comendavit 2 deinde Turum adyt  
vbi am inestimabili gaudio a suis  
receptus est.**  
So in Was purgh pe cite knolde.  
When myht se wyne a yowde.  
As who seih al pe tolln at ones...







Thow shalt be ded. alas quod she.  
 Whi shal I go. Lo yus quod he.  
 my lady. Iowise hay bede.  
 Thow shalt be mayezed in pis stede.  
 yus mayde go for fere shryfte.  
 And for ye loue of god almyghte.  
 She preyed pat for a litel scounde.  
 She myghte knelle vpon ye grounde.  
 Toward ye heuene for to craue.  
 here woful soule pat she may saue.  
 And wyf. pis noyse and wyf. pis cry.  
 Out of a barge fuste by.  
 Which hid was yere on somer fare.  
 men sterten out and weren ware.  
 Of pis felon. and he to go.  
 And she began to crye so.  
 ha mercy helpe for goddes sake.  
 In to ye barge sei hire take.  
 As yelies sholde and for ye wente.  
 vpon ye see ye wynde hem hente.  
 And malgre wher yei wolde or noon.  
 To fore ye weder for yei noon.  
 yer halpe no sei her halp noon ore.  
 For stormed and forblowen fore.  
 In gret perill so for yei dyuo.  
 Til atte laste yey arriue.  
 At antelone ye ere.  
 In huene sauf and whan yei be.  
 ye mayster shipman made him boue.  
 And goy him out in to ye tobu.  
 Don Leonin it herd telle.  
 Which mayster of ye borde was.  
 And bad him goon a redy pas.  
 To feche his hir and for he wente.  
 And Taysse out of his barge he hente.  
 And to pis bordeler he solde.  
 And pat he by his body wolde.  
 Taak auantage let do ere.  
 pat What man wolde his lecherie.  
 attempte vpon here maydenhede.  
 Rey doid ye gold and he shal speke.  
 And yus whan he hay cried it oute.  
 In sight of alle ye poeple abowte.  
 Qualiter Leonin. Thayssin ad Lupa-  
 nar desinuit ubi dei gra puera  
 pnis virginatatem nullus violare  
 He lad hir to ye bordel po. I potuit.  
 No wonder is yowh she be wo.  
 e los in a chambre by hire selue.  
 Eche after ower ten or thilue.  
 Of young men to here in wente.  
 But such a grace god hire sente.  
 pat for ye forde whiche she made.  
 Was noon of hem which poler hade.  
 To don hir any vilenie.  
 pis Leonyn let euere aspie.  
 And waytey after gret bizete.

But al for nouht she was forlote.  
 pat no man wold yere come.  
 Whan he yer of hay hede nome.  
 And knelle pat she was yit a mayde.  
 vnto his olwhue man he sayde.  
 pat Wyf stenge a yere hir leue.  
 so sholde hire maydenhede by reue.  
 pis man goy in but so it ferde.  
 Whan he here woful pleyntes herde.  
 And he yer of hay take kepe.  
 hym luse bette for to wepe.  
 pan doon ouht elles to ye name.  
 And yus she kept hir self fro shame.  
 And knelle doun to yere and preyde.  
 vnto pis man and yus she seide.  
 If so be pat pi mayster wolde.  
 pat I his gold encrese sholde.  
 It may not fall by pis weye.  
 But soffre me to go my weye.  
 Out of his holde wher I am quene.  
 And I shal make hym for to wyne.  
 In som place elles of ye toldn.  
 So so it be of religion.  
 wher pat honeste women dwelle.  
 And yus yowh nyht pi mayster telle.  
 pat whanne I haue a chambre yere.  
 let hym do crye my wyde where.  
 What lord pat hay his daughter dere.  
 And is in this pat she shal bere.  
 Of such a soke pat is trewe.  
 I shal hire teche of yingeb nelle.  
 Which pat noon ower woman can.  
 In al pis lond and so pis man.  
 here tale hay herd he not a yern.  
 And tolde vnto his mayster pleyne.  
 pat she hay seid and yer vpon.  
 Whan pat he sei byzete noon.  
 At ye bordel by cause of here.  
 he bad his man to go and spere.  
 A place where she myht a byde.  
 pat he may wyne vpon som spere.  
 By pat she can but at ye leeste.  
 yus was she sauf of pis tempeste.  
 Qualiter Taysis a Lupanari du-  
 go liberata in sacras mulieres  
 hospitium habens scias qbz edocra fuit  
 nobiles ibide regni puellas edocbat.  
 He hay her fro ye bordel take.  
 But pat was not for goddes sake.  
 But for ye luse as she hym tolde.  
 yowh comen so pat comen wolde.  
 Of women in here lusey yollwe.  
 To here and se what ying she coupo.  
 She can ye wisdom of a clerke.  
 She can of eny lusey werk.  
 Which to a gentill woman longey.  
 And some of hem she vnderfouney.



To ye title and to ye harpe,  
 And whom it libey for to carpe.  
 Proverbes and demunde shelle.  
 An opey such pei neuere shelle.  
 Which put science so wel so wel taught.  
 Wher of she gret yfces caught.  
 put she to leouyn hay womne.  
 And pus here name is bygonne.  
 Of sondry yunges put she techy.  
 put al pei lous du to hyre sechey.  
 Of yong women for to leere.  
 roll lere we pus mayden here.  
 And speke of dyonysie a yen.  
 And of theophile ye vileyn.  
 Of which I spak of now to fore.  
 Whan thaysse sholde haue be for lere.  
**Qualiter theophilus ad diouisiu**  
**mane rediens affirmavit se thaysin**  
**occidisse sup quo thomsia una cum**  
**stranctulione marito suo dolorem**  
**publico confingentes exequias a se**  
**pulturam honorifice quantu ad ex**  
**tra subdola conuentione fieri ostendit.**  
 This false clerk to pus lady.  
 Whan he cam home al pryuelly.  
 he seip madame slayn I haue.  
 pus mayde thaysse and is bygonne.  
 In pryue place as ye me bede.  
 for pi madame takey hede.  
 And kepe conseil how so it stonde.  
 pus fend which pus hay vnderstonde.  
 Was glad and weney it be for.  
 roll herke her after how she dor.  
 she wep she sorwe she compleyny.  
 And of sekensse which she feyny.  
 she seip put thaysse sodernly.  
 By nyght is ded as she and I.  
 To gedre leyn nyght my lord.  
 she was a woman of record.  
 And al is leued put she seip.  
 And for to yeue a more feip.  
 here housbonde and eke she boye.  
 In blake clothes pei hem cloye.  
 And made a gret entremement.  
 And for pe poeple shal be blent.  
 Of thaysse as for pe remembrance.  
 After pe real olde vsance.  
 A tombe of laron noble and riche.  
 Wip an ymage du to hyre liche.  
 lighnyng a boue per vpon.  
 pei made and sette it vp anoon.  
 here epitaffe of good assise.  
 Was write aboute and in pus wise.  
 It spak. O ye put pus biholde.  
 To here hy she ye which was holde.  
 ye fauest I ye flour of alle.  
 whos name thaysse men calle.

ye kyn of thys apollinus.  
 here fader was nobly she pus.  
 fourtene yer she was of age.  
 Whan dey hure took to his viage.  
**Qualiter apollinus in regno suo a**  
**pus thysm existens parliamen**  
**tum fieri constituit.**  
 pus was pus false treson hidde.  
 which after ward was wide kyd.  
 As by ye tale a man may here.  
 put to declare my matere.  
 To thys I penke turne a yen.  
 And telle as ye avenges seyn.  
 Whan put ye kyn was comen hom.  
 And hay left in ye salte fom.  
 his wyf which he may not foryete.  
 for he son comfort wolde gete.  
 he let somone a parlement.  
 To which pe lordes were assent.  
 And of ye tyme he hay ben oute.  
 he seip ye yunges alle abolte.  
 And told hem eke how he hay fare.  
 whil he was olte of londe fare.  
 And preyde hem alle to abyde.  
 for he wolde atte same tyde.  
 To shype for his wyues mynde.  
 As he put wol not be vnkynde.  
 Solempne was yllke office.  
 And riche was ye sacrifice.  
 ye feest really was holde.  
 And per to was he really byholde.  
 for such a wyf as he hadde oon.  
 In yllke dayes was per noon.  
**Qualiter apollinus post parliamen**  
**tu thaysin pro thaysse filia sua**  
**querenda adit qua ibidem non inu**  
**it. unde nauigio no recessit.**  
 Whan pus was do pui he hym pouit.  
 vpon his douhter and bysoulit.  
 Such of his lordes as he wolde.  
 put pei wip hym to thaysse sholde.  
 To fetter his douhter thaysse pere.  
 And pei a noon al redy were.  
 To shype pei gon and fory pei went.  
 Til pei pe haue of thaysse hent.  
 pei londe and faile of put pei seide.  
 By conuentione and sleight of speche.  
 pus false man stranctulio.  
 And thomsie his wyf also.  
 put he ye bettre tweluen mylto.  
 pei laden hym to haue a fite.  
 wher put here tombe was awayed.  
 ye lasse vit he was myspayed.  
 And unyelles so as he dorste.  
 he cursey and seip alle ye worst.  
 du to fortune so as ye blinde.  
 which can no slyer weye fynde.



For she hym nelley euere among.  
 And medley sorde wyf his song.  
 But syt it may no better be.  
 he poukef god and fory goy ho.  
 Seylmyng towarde tye ayein.  
 But sodeynly pe Wynd and reyn.  
 Bygonne vpon pe see debate.  
 So pat he soffre mot almyte.  
**Qualiter nauis Apollini Venetis agi-  
 tata portu Vrbis intelene in die  
 quo festu festu rextinu celebrari  
 confluuerunt applicuit sed ipse pre  
 dolore Thaisie filie sue qua mortu-  
 am reputabat in fundo nauis obsu-  
 ro iacens diuina videre noluit.**  
 The lorde which rextine ordeyned.  
 Wher of ful ofte tyme he pleyney.  
 And helde hym wel pe more esmayed.  
 Of pat he hay to fore assayed.  
 So pat for pure sorde and care.  
 Of pat he sey his world so fare.  
 pe reste he leste of hys claban.  
 pat for pe conseil of no man.  
 A yem per June he nolde come.  
 But hay byney his plate nome.  
 Where he wepyng a lone day.  
 were as he seih no ligh of day.  
 And pus to fore pe Wynde per dryue.  
 Til lounge and late pat arbyue.  
 Wyf met distresse as it was sene.  
 vpon pis tollu of antelene.  
 Which was a noble cite so.  
 And hupney pulke tyme so.  
 pe lorde boye and pe conuine.  
 pe hys feste of rextine.  
 vpon pe stronde ante rymage.  
 As it was custume and vsage.  
 Solempliche pei bysyhe.  
 Whan pei pis struunge vessel fhe.  
 come in and hay his seil aulled.  
 pe tollu per of hay spoke and tales.  
**Qualiter Athenagoras Vrbis mite-  
 lene princeps nauim Apollini in  
 destitutus ipm sic contristatu nihil  
 respondente consolari satagebat.**  
 The lorde which of pat cite was.  
 Whos name is Athenagoras.  
 Was pere and seide he wolde se.  
 What shyp it is and who pei be.  
 pat boen per June and after sone.  
 Whan pat he seih it was to done.  
 his barge was for hym awayed.  
 And he goy fory and hay assayed.  
 he fond pe shyp of met away.  
 But what pany in amoune may.  
 he seih per maden heuy chere.  
 But wel hym poukef by pe manere.

pat pei be woryn men of blood.  
 And axey of hem how it stood.  
 And pei hym tellen alle pe cas.  
 how pat here lorde fordryue was.  
 And which a sorde pat he made.  
 Of which pere may no man him glade.  
 he preyey pat he hure lorde may see.  
 But pei hym tolde it may not be.  
 for he ly in so derke a place.  
 pat pere may no wylt se his face.  
 But for al pat pouh hem be lode.  
 he fond pe laddre and doun he goy.  
 And to hym spak but noon answer.  
 A yem of hym ne myht he bere.  
 for oust pat he cam don oz seyn.  
 And pus he goy hym vpon a yem.  
**Qualiter pcepto principis ut Ap-  
 pollini consolaretur Thaisie cum  
 aphara sua ad ipm in obscuru na-  
 uis ubi iacebat producta est.**  
 Thus was pere spoke in many wyse.  
 Amounges hem pat weren wyse.  
 vroll pis noll pat but atte laste.  
 pe wisdom of pe tollu pis caste.  
 pat yonge Thaisie were assent.  
 for if pere be amende ment.  
 To glade wyf pis woful kyn.  
 She cam so muche of euery ying.  
 pat she shal glade hym anon.  
 A messagere for hure is goon.  
 And she cam wyf hure harpe on hounde.  
 And seyde hem pat she wolde fonde.  
 By alle pe weyes pat she cam.  
 To glade wyf pis fory man.  
 But what he was she wylt nouht.  
 But all pe shyp hit hay by souht.  
 pat she hure wyltes on hym despende.  
 In amiter if he myht amende.  
 And seyn it shal be wel a quit.  
 Whan she hay vnderstonden hit.  
 Sho goy hir doun pere as he lay.  
 Where pat she harpey many a day.  
 And bych an angel sang wyf all.  
 But he no more pan pe wal.  
 Took heede of eny pany he herde.  
 And whan she seih pat he so ferde.  
 She faller wyf hym in to wordes.  
 And telley hym of sondry bordes.  
 And axey hym demaundes strauunge.  
 Wherof she made his herte chaunge.  
 And to hure speche his ere he yerde.  
 And hay meueile of pat she seyde.  
 for in prouerbe 2 in problem.  
 She spak and bad he sholde deme.  
 In many a subtil questiou.  
 But he for no suggestiou.  
 Which tollu hym she coupe fere.



Qualiter Athenagoras Apollinū de  
nau in hospitium honorifice recelegit

**Thyngs pze of enaete i wyore dym.**  
 This kynge hay founde nelle grace.  
 So put out of his derke place.  
 he got hym vp in to pylght.  
 And wyf hym cam pat swete wyht.  
 his doughter & harse and fory anon.  
 wei bope in to ye saban noon.  
 Which was ordeyned for ye kyng.  
 And yere he did of all his ying.  
 And was awayed fealy.  
 And olte he cam al openly.  
 Where & then agoras he fond.  
 ye which was lord of al ye lond.  
 And preyed ye kyng to come and so.  
 his castel bope and his cite.  
 And yis yei noon fory alle in feere.  
 yis kyng yis lord yis mayden deere.  
 This lord yo made hem riche feste.  
 Wyf euery ying which was honeste.  
 To plesse wyf yis worthy kyng.  
 yer lackey hym no maner yling.  
 But yit for all his noble abray.  
 Wyfles he was in to pat day.  
 And he put yit was of yong mane.  
 So fel yere in to his corage.  
 ye lusty wo ye glade reyne.  
 Of loue whiche no man refayme.  
 yit neuere myht as now tofor.  
 yis lord yentey al his worlde forlore.  
 But if ye kyng wolde doon hym more.  
 he wyntey tyne he wyntey place.  
 hym pouht his herte wol to breke.  
 If he may to yis mayde speke.  
 And to hire fader eke also.  
 for mariage and it fel so.  
 pat al was do riht as he pouhte.  
 his purpos to an ende he brouhte.  
 She kyddey hym as for here lord.  
 yus be pet all of oon accord.  
**Qualiter Apollinus vna cum filia  
 et eius marito nauim ingrediētes  
 a mycelena vsq; Tharsim cursu  
 apposuerūt. Sz Apollinus in sonu  
 mo amonitus versus Ephesum ut  
 ibidem in templo Diane sacrifici  
 vet delu p mare diuertit.**  
 Whan al was do riht as yei wolde.  
 ye kyng vn to his sone tolde.  
 Of Tharse yllke wayterio.  
 And seide how in his compaignie.  
 his doughter and hym seluen eke.  
 Shal go vengeance for to seke.  
 ye shipes were redy sone.  
 And Whan yei syhe it was to done.  
 Wyf oute lette of eny wente.  
 Wyf seil vp dwalbe fory yei wente.  
 I olwardes & harse vpon ye ride



But he pat wot what shal bytyde.  
 we hys god which wolde hym kepe.  
 When pat his kynge was fast a slepe.  
 By nyghtes tyme he hay hym bede.  
 To seile vn to an ower seide.  
 To Ephezin he bad hym dralle.  
 And as it was pat tyme lalle.  
 he shal do yere his sacrifice.  
 And eke he bad in alle wyse.  
 pat in ye temple amonget alle.  
 his fortune as as was byfalle.  
 Touchyng his doubter & his wyf.  
 he shal be knolle vpon his hyf.  
 ye kynge of his auision.  
 hay gret ymaginacion.  
 What yung it signifie may.  
 And naxles when it was day.  
 he bad caste anker and abood.  
 And when pat he on anker wode.  
 ye Wynd which was to fore strange.  
 vpon ye port began to change.  
 And tozney vnder as it sholde.  
 ye knelle he wel pat god it wolde.  
 And bad ye mayster make hym xaw.  
 To fore ye Wynd for he wol faw.  
 To Ephezin and so he dede.  
 And when he cam in to ye seide.  
 where as he sholde londe he londey.  
 Wyf all ye haste he may and fondey.  
 To shapen hym by such a wyse.  
 pat he may by ye morde a ryse.  
 And doon after ye maundement.  
 Of him which hay him vider sent.  
 And in ye Wyse pat he pouthe.  
 vpon ye morde he so wrouthe.  
 his doubter and his sone he nom.  
 And fory in to ye temple he com.  
 Wyf a gret rothe in compaignie.  
 his yistes for to sacrifice.  
 ye Euzephie po herden seye.  
 Of such a kynge pat cam to preye.  
 vnto Diane ye goddesse.  
 And lest al ower byfynesse.  
 ye comen vider for to se.  
 ye kynge and ye solemnyte.  
**Qualiter Apollinus Ephezin in**  
**templo Diane sacrificans vxore**  
**suam ibidem delatam inuenit qua**  
**qua sead assumpta in uauum versu**  
**Exum regressus est.**  
 Wyf wotye Euzephie endroued.  
 ye kynge hym self hay abandoned.  
 in to ye temple in good engente.  
 ye dore is vp and in he wente.  
 where as Wyf gret deuocion.  
 Of holy contemplacion.  
 Wyf iune his herte he made his shifte.

And after pat a rich yister.  
 he offreyd Wyf gret reuerence.  
 And yere in open audieuce.  
 Of hem pat stoden all aboute.  
 he tolde hem and declarey olde.  
 his hay such as hym is byfalle.  
 yer was no yung foryete of alle.  
 his Wyf as it was goddes wyue.  
 which was professed in ye place.  
 As she pat was ablesse yere.  
 vnto his tale hay lerd hir ere.  
 she knell ye boys and ye visage.  
 for pure ioye as in a rage.  
 she straucht vn to hym al at ones.  
 And fel a stone vpon ye stones.  
 wherof ye temple flore was paues.  
 she was a nooh Wyf water laued.  
 Til she cam to here self axeyn.  
 And pan she began to seyn.  
 A blessed be ye hys seounde.  
 pat I may se myn housbonde.  
 which whilom he an I were con.  
 ye kynge Wyf pat knell here anon.  
 And toke here in his arm and hysce.  
 And all ye tolln pus soone it wiste.  
 ye was yere ioye many fold.  
 for euer man ye tale hay told.  
 As for miracle and weren glade.  
 But neuere man such ioye made.  
 As dop ye kynge which hay his Wyf.  
 And when men herde how pat hir hyf.  
 was saued and by whom it was.  
 yei wondren alle of such a cas.  
 purgh all ye lond a ros ye speche.  
 Of axayter Cerimon ye Leche.  
 And of ye cure which he dede.  
 ye kynge hym self po hay hym bede.  
 And eke ye gudeye fory Wyf hym.  
 pat he ye tolln of Ephezin.  
 wol leue and go where as yei be.  
 for neuere man of his deure.  
 hay do to hem so mochel good.  
 And he his profic vnder stood.  
 And grumtey Wyf hem for to wende.  
 And pus yei maden yere an ende.  
 And token leue and goon to shipe.  
 Wyf al ye hole felaschipe.  
**Qualiter Apollinus vna cu vxore**  
**sua ex filia sua Exum applicuit.**  
 This kynge which uold hay his desir.  
 he seih he wole holde his colurs to Ex.  
 yei hadde Wynd at wille po.  
 Wyf capseil cole and fory yei go.  
 And seynken neuere til yei come.  
 To Ex wher as yei haueue nome.  
 And londen hem Wyf mochel blisse.  
 ye was yere many a mouy to lisse.



Tho welcomy oper hom.  
 But whan ye gyltene to londe com.  
 And thaise hure dylhter by hys side.  
 pei ioye which was yllke tide.  
 per may no mannes tynge telle.  
 pei seiden alle here comye wel.  
 Of all domanysh grace.  
 pe kyng hay take his real place.  
 ye gyltene is into chambre go.  
 per was met feste arrayed po.  
 whan tyme was pei goon to mete.  
 alle olde forlorn ben for yete.  
 And gladen hem wyf ioyes newe.  
 ye discolorid pale helpe.  
 is now by come a wode cheke.  
 per was no mery for to seke.  
**Qualiter Apollinus Athenagora**  
**ad Thaise vxore sua sup tyranni co-**  
**ronari fecit.**  
 But euery man hay pat he wolde.  
 pe kyng as he wel couye and sholde.  
 waky to his weple riht good chere.  
 And after done as pou shalt heere.  
 A parlement he hay somoned.  
 wher he his doughter hay coroned.  
 for wyf pe lord o mycelene.  
 pat con is kyng pat oper is gyltene.  
 And pus pe fadres ordynance.  
 his lond hay set in gouernance.  
 And seide pat he wolde wende.  
 To thaise for to make an ende.  
 Of pat his doughter was bytrayed.  
 wher of were alle men wel payed.  
 And seide how it was for to done.  
 pe shipes weren redy soone.  
**Qualiter Apollinus a tyro p ma-**  
**re versus Tharsim iter arripens**  
**vindicta contra Strangulionem.**  
**et Dionisiam vxorem sua p iniuria**  
**quam ipi Thaise filie sue intule-**  
**rat iudicialiter affecutus est.**  
 A strong polber wyf hym he took.  
 upon pe sty he cast his look.  
 And seih pe wynd was couenable.  
 pei hale vp anker wyf pe cable.  
 pe seil on hyhe pe steer on honde.  
 And saulen til pei come a londe.  
 At thaise nyh to pe cite.  
 And whan pei wisten it was he.  
 pe tollu hay doon hym reuerence.  
 he telley hem pe violence.  
 which pe traytour Strangulio.  
 And Dionise hym hadde do.  
 Touchyng his doughter as ye heere.  
 And whan pei wiste how it ferde.  
 As he which pees and loue southe.  
 On to pe tollu pe he bysoughte.

To don hym riht in Iugement.  
 A noon pei weren bope assent.  
 Wyf strengpe of men 2 comen soone.  
 And as hem pouht it was to done.  
 Aterut pei weren by pe lalbe.  
 And demed for to honne and dralbe.  
 And breut and wyf pe wynd to blasse.  
 pat al pe world it myht fuolbe.  
 And upon pis condicion.  
 pe dom in execucion.  
 Was put a noon wyf oute faule.  
 And euery man hay gret meruaile.  
 which heere tellen of pis chance.  
 And ponkep goddes purueance.  
 which dop mercy for wyf justice.  
 Slayn is pe worder and mordre.  
 purgh derrey twolpe of rihtfulnesse.  
 And purgh mercy sauf is symple.  
 Of hure whom mercy preserue.  
 pus hay he wel pat wel deserue.  
**Qualiter Arcestrate Pentapoli**  
**rege mortuo ipi de regno Epilas**  
**sup hoc Apollino duxerunt. Dn**  
**de Apollinus Dna ad vxore sua**  
**vident aduenientes ad decus Inny**  
**am magno gaudio coronati sunt.**  
 Whan al pis ynyng is doon 2 ended.  
 his kyng which lound was 2 frended.  
 A lettre hay which cam to hym.  
 By shyp fro Pentapoli.  
 In which he pe lond hay to hym writte.  
 pat he wolde vnderstolde 2 wite.  
 how in good mynde and in good pees.  
 Ded is pe kyng Arcestrates.  
 wher of pei all of oon accord.  
 hym preyden as he here horelde.  
 pat he pe lettre wole conceye.  
 And come his regne to receye.  
 which god hay yone hym 2 fortune.  
 And pus bysoughte pe comune.  
 for wyf pe grette lordes alle.  
 his kyng seih how it was byfalle.  
 fro thaise and in prosperite.  
 he took his leue of pat cite.  
 And goy hym in to shyp ayein.  
 pe wynd was good pe see was pleyin.  
 hym nedey nouht a ryf to lake.  
 Til pei Pentapoli haue take.  
 pe lond which herde of pat tyding.  
 Was wonder glad of his comyng.  
 he rescey hym a day or tivo.  
 And took his conseil to hym po.  
 And sette a tyme of parlement.  
 wher al pe lond off don assent.  
 for wyf his wyf hym hay coroned.  
 wher all good hym was forsoned.  
 To what it is to be wel grounded.



For he hay ferst his loue founde.  
 Honestelyche as for to wedde.  
 Honestelyche his loue he speide.  
 And hadde children wyth his wyf.  
 And as hym luste he hadde his wyf.  
 And in ensample his wyf was wyte.  
 For alle louers myghten wyte.  
 How atte laste it shal be sene.  
 Of loue what yit wolden mene.  
 For se nold on pat ower side.  
 Antiochus wyth al his pryde.  
 Whiche sette his loue vnderdely.  
 His ende hadde sodeynly.  
 Sette ayein hynde vpon venyance.  
 And for his lust hay his penance.

**Confessor ad Amantem.**

Myne myne myght you leue.  
 What is to loue in good manere.  
 And what to loue in ower wyse.  
 Ye made a rist of ye seruise.  
 Fortune yowh she be not stable.  
 Yit at som tyme is favorable.  
 To hem pat ben of loue trewe.  
 But certes it is for to velle.  
 To se loue ayein hynde falle.  
 For pat may sore a man to falle.  
 As you myght of to fore rede.  
 For yit myne I wolde rede.  
 To lete al ower loue a weye.  
 But if it be pat such a weye.  
 As loue and reson wolde acorde.  
 For elles if pat you discorde.  
 And take lust as day abeste.  
 Yit loue may not be honeste.  
 For by no skile pat I fynde.  
 Such lust is not of loues kynde.

**Confessio amantis ad finali con-  
 clusione consilii confessoris ipetrat.**

My fader how so pat it soude.  
 Your tale is herd & vnderstoude.  
 As ying which worpi is to here.  
 Of gret ensample and gret matere.  
 Wher of your fader god yow quite.  
 But in his poynt my self aquite.  
 I may tute wel pat neuere yit.  
 I was assot in my wit.  
 But only in pat worpi place.  
 Where alle lust and alle grace.  
 Is sette if pat daunger ne were.  
 But pat is al my most feere.  
 I not what ye fortune accompte.  
 But what ying daunger may amoute.  
 I not wel for I haue assayed.  
 For whan myn herte is best awayed.  
 And I haue al my wit purgh souht.  
 Of loue to by seche here ouht.  
 For al pat euere I skile may.

I am concludid wyth a may.  
 Pat o sillable hay ouer prome.  
 A thousand wordes on a tolde.  
 Of such as I best speke can.  
 Yit am I but a lilled man.  
 But fader for ye ben a clerk.  
 Of loue and his matere is derk.  
 And I can euere leue ye lisse.  
 But yit I may not lete it passe.  
 Your hole counseil I be seche.  
 Pat ye me by som weye teche.  
 What is my best as for an ende.  
 Myne son to ye troupe wende.  
 I wol I for ye loue of ye.  
 And lete all ower trusse be.

**He sup amoris causa finita con-  
 fessione confessor Geminus ea que  
 sibi salubrius expediunt sano con-  
 silio finaliter inungit.**

He more pat ye uede is hihe.  
 Ye more it ueder to be sihe.  
 To hym which hay penede on hounde.  
 I haue wel herd and vnderstoude.  
 Myne son al pat you hast me seyd.  
 And eke of pat you hast me preyd.  
 Yow at his tyme pat I shal.  
 As for conclusion final.  
 Counseil vpon his uede sette.  
 So yeu I finally to lucte.  
 In cause wher it is to broke.  
 And make an ende of pat is spoke.  
 For I behit ye pat yite.  
 Ferst whan you come vnder myn shirte.  
 Pat yowh I toward venus were.  
 Yit I shal I suche wordes pere.  
 Pat for ye presthode which I haue.  
 Myn ordie and myn astut to saue.  
 I saide I wolde of myn office.  
 To vertu more than to vice.  
 Eucling and teche ye my lore.  
 For yit to speken ouer more.  
 Of loue which ye may auayle.  
 Take loue wher it may auayle.  
 For as of his which you art iune.  
 By pat you seyst it is a yume.  
 And yume may no prys deserue.  
 Wyth oute prys and who shal serue.  
 I not what profit myght auayle.  
 Yis folley it if you traunyle.  
 Wher you no profit hast ne prys.  
 You art toward yit self vnyse.  
 And sy you myghtest lust atteygne.  
 Of euery lust yeu is peyne.  
 And euery peyne is good to fle.  
 So it is wonder ying to se.  
 Whi such ying shal be desired.  
 Ye more pat a stot is fyred.



ye myght in to ay ch it corney.  
 ye foot which in ye weye sporne.  
 ful ofte his heed hay ouerprole.  
 yus loue is blynd and can not knolle.  
 wher pat he goy til he byfalle.  
 for pi but if it so bifalle.  
 wy good counseil pat he be lad.  
 hym ouht for to been a dand.  
 for counseil passer alle pyn.  
 to hym which yentey to be a kyn.  
 And euey man for his parrie.  
 A kyngdom hay to gusehie.  
 pat is to seyn his owne dom.  
 If he my frellle pat kyngdom.  
 he lesen hym self and pat is more.  
 yun if he leste shyp and ore.  
 And all ye worldes good wy al.  
 for what man pat in special.  
 hay nouht hym self hay nouhtelles.  
 to more ye perles pan ye shelles.  
 Al is to hym of o value.  
 yowh he hadde at his retene.  
 he wyde world rht as he wolde.  
 whan he his herte hay not wypholde.  
 toward hym self is al in deyn.  
 And yus my sone i wolde seyn.  
 As i said eer pat yow arise.  
 Er pat you falle in such a wyse.  
 pat you ne myght pi self recouere.  
 for loue which pat blynd was eue.  
 waky al his seruantz blynde al so.  
 my sone and if you haue ben so.  
 yit is it tyme to wypholde.  
 And sette yin herte vnder pat lalle.  
 ye which of reson is gouerned.  
 And not of will and to be leved.  
 Examples you hast many on.  
 of now and eke of tyme a noon.  
 pat euey lust is but a whylo.  
 And who pat wole hym self byphole.  
 he may ye rayer be deceyved.  
 my sone now you hast conceyned.  
 som what of pat i wolde mene.  
 here after ward it shal be seue.  
 If pat yow leue vpon my lord.  
 for i am do to ye nomore.  
 But teche ye vnt wyse.  
 yow ches if you wolt lyue or dye.  
*Inc qualis de contrarietate que in  
 confessorum a amante in fine confes-  
 sione deservatur.*  
 My fader so as i haue herd.  
 yowre tale but it were amfwerd.  
 i were mochel for to blame.  
 my wo to yow is but a game.  
 pat feleu nouht of pat i fele.  
 ye felynge of a mannes heele.

my nouht be lykened to ye herte.  
 i may nouht wuh i wolde a sterte.  
 And ye be fre from alle peryn.  
 Of loue wher of i me pleyne.  
 It is rht esy to comaunde.  
 ye hert which fre goy on polande.  
 rot of an oxe what hym exley.  
 It faller ofte a man merueyle.  
 Of pat he sey an over fare.  
 But if he sheld hym self ye fare.  
 And felt it as it is in soy.  
 he sholde son rht as he doy.  
 or elles worse in hys deye.  
 for wel i wot and so do yo.  
 pat loue hay euere yit ben dyed.  
 So mot i nedes ben excused.  
 But fader if ye wolde yus.  
 vnto cynde and to venus.  
 eke frendlyche toward my querele.  
 So pat myn hert were in helye.  
 Of loue which is in my breste.  
 i wot wel ying a better preft.  
 Was neuer mad to my byndue.  
 But all ye while pat i haue.  
 In noon certeyn by thern ye al.  
 And not wher i to wele or wo.  
 Shal torne pat is al my dred.  
 So pat i not what is to rede.  
 But for final conclusion.  
 i yente a supplicacion.  
 Wy pleyne wordes and expresse.  
 Write vnto venus ye myneste.  
 ye which i prey yow to bere.  
 And bring a yem a good an swere.  
 yo was be thern my prest me.  
 Debate and gret pleynte.  
 my reson vnderstand hym wel.  
 And sheld it was for eueri del.  
 pat he hay seid and not for pi.  
 my wil hay no ying set per by.  
 for touchyng of so wyse a port.  
 Is vnto loue of no desport.  
 yit myht neuere man bypholde.  
 Reson wher loue was wypholde.  
 yel be not of o gouernaunce.  
 And yus we fellen in to distauce.  
 my prest and i but i spak faine.  
 And ying my wordes deboune.  
 yamle ut ye laste we accorden.  
 So pat he seih he wol recorden.  
 To greke and stonde vpon my side.  
 To venus hope and to cynde.  
 And bid me write what i wolde.  
 And seih me treldy pat he sholde.  
 my deere bere vnto ye greene.  
 And i sat down vpon ye greue.  
 fulfille of lous fantasie.



And wyf ye tere of myn eye.  
 In tere of iute I gan to write.  
 ye wordes which I wolde endite.  
 In to Cupide and to Venus.  
 And in my letter I seide thus.  
**Quia tuat formam cuiusdam sup-**  
**plicationis qua ex parte amantis**  
**probat Geni sacerdotis sui Venus**  
**libi porrectam acceptabit...**  
**U**ndeloful perne of loue maladye.  
 A ven ye which may no phisic auayle.  
 Myu her hap so byllyaped in sothe.  
 That wher so put I refect or traualle.  
 fynde it euere redy to assaile.  
 My reson which pat can hym nor dede.  
 my seide I helpe wher of I myght amende.  
**H**er to nature if I me compleigne.  
 For fund I holb y euery creature.  
 Sout tyme a yer hap in his demerme.  
 So pat ye lital wrenne in his mesure.  
 hap yit of kynde loue vnder his cure.  
 And I but oon desyr of which I misse.  
 And y but I hap euy kynde his blisse.  
**O** he reson of my wit it ouerpasser.  
 At pat nature techer me yelwey.  
 To loue and yit noterteyn se axussey.  
 I shal I shal speke y by elvene ye elwey.  
 I seonde I not wher I shal hucor dore.  
 For pouh reson a xeyn my wil debate.  
 I may not fle pat I ne loue algate.  
**O**pon my self is yllke tale come.  
 holb whilom xan which is ye god of fnde.  
 Wy loue whafel z was ouercome.  
 For euere I whastel z eue I am byhynde.  
 pat I no strenge in all myn heart fynde.  
 wher of pat I may seonde euy prowe.  
 So fer my wit wy loue is ouerprowe.  
 hom neder helpe he mot his help aude.  
 Or helplee he hat his nede spille.  
 pleyntly mynly soult my wites all I shal.  
 But noon of hem can helpe after my wille.  
 And also wel I myt fute stille.  
 As preye in to my Lady euy helpe.  
**U**ndelof I not wher of my self to helpe.  
 In to ye grete loue and if I bidde.  
 To do me grace of yllke wete tunne.  
 Which vnder boye in his celer amydde.  
 By couched pat fortune is ouercome.  
 For of ye blater cuppe I haue bygonne.  
 I not holb ofte and thus fynde I no ganne.  
 For euere I age z euere it is ye same.  
 The ye world stonde euere vpon eschance.  
 I not wyndes loude z not yelwiter ofte.  
 I may seide ye grete more chaunge.  
 And thus which now is lorde is eft a lorde.  
 ye drosful wertes in to pes ful ofte.  
 For torme z eue is daunger in a place.

Which wol not change his wil to do me grace.  
**U**ndelof I not wher of my self to helpe.  
 In to ye grete loue and if I bidde.  
 To do me grace of yllke wete tunne.  
 Which vnder boye in his celer amydde.  
 By couched pat fortune is ouercome.  
 For of ye blater cuppe I haue bygonne.  
 I not holb ofte and thus fynde I no ganne.  
 For euere I age z euere it is ye same.  
 The ye world stonde euere vpon eschance.  
 I not wyndes loude z not yelwiter ofte.  
 I may seide ye grete more chaunge.  
 And thus which now is lorde is eft a lorde.  
 ye drosful wertes in to pes ful ofte.  
 For torme z eue is daunger in a place.

Which wol not change his wil to do me grace.  
**U**ndelof I not wher of my self to helpe.  
 In to ye grete loue and if I bidde.  
 To do me grace of yllke wete tunne.  
 Which vnder boye in his celer amydde.  
 By couched pat fortune is ouercome.  
 For of ye blater cuppe I haue bygonne.  
 I not holb ofte and thus fynde I no ganne.  
 For euere I age z euere it is ye same.  
 The ye world stonde euere vpon eschance.  
 I not wyndes loude z not yelwiter ofte.  
 I may seide ye grete more chaunge.  
 And thus which now is lorde is eft a lorde.  
 ye drosful wertes in to pes ful ofte.  
 For torme z eue is daunger in a place.

Which wol not change his wil to do me grace.  
**U**ndelof I not wher of my self to helpe.  
 In to ye grete loue and if I bidde.  
 To do me grace of yllke wete tunne.  
 Which vnder boye in his celer amydde.  
 By couched pat fortune is ouercome.  
 For of ye blater cuppe I haue bygonne.  
 I not holb ofte and thus fynde I no ganne.  
 For euere I age z euere it is ye same.  
 The ye world stonde euere vpon eschance.  
 I not wyndes loude z not yelwiter ofte.  
 I may seide ye grete more chaunge.  
 And thus which now is lorde is eft a lorde.  
 ye drosful wertes in to pes ful ofte.  
 For torme z eue is daunger in a place.



And as it were halving againe.  
 She axep me what was my name.  
 My name I seide Johan Colver.  
 And Iohn quod she in my power.  
 You muste as of y<sup>e</sup> love stonde.  
 For y<sup>e</sup> y<sup>e</sup> hille haue vnder stonde.  
 And whiche to Cupido and to me.  
 Some del you haue complemed y<sup>e</sup>.  
 And somdel to nature also.  
 But pat shal stonde among yow<sup>e</sup> th<sup>e</sup>.  
 For y<sup>e</sup> of hille I not to done.  
 For nature is vnder y<sup>e</sup> none.  
 Myselfe of euery kynge kynde.  
 But it so be pat she may fynde.  
 Som hilly may pat wol wy<sup>e</sup> dralle.  
 His kynde shal axepn hir lalle.  
 But seelde whanne it fulle so.  
 For felle men yere been of y<sup>e</sup>.  
 But of yere ope yowle be.  
 Whiche of here othwe meete.  
 A yere nature and here office.  
 Deliten hem in sondri vice.  
 Wher of pat she ful ofte hay plemes.  
 And eke my court it hay destemmes.  
 And euere shal for it receyue.  
 A yere such pat kynde so deceyue.  
 For al onliche of gentyl loue.  
 My court stant alle courtz aboue.  
 And takey nouht in to retene.  
 But ying which is to kynde delbe.  
 For elles it shal be refused.  
 Wher of I holde y<sup>e</sup> excused.  
 For it is many dayes goon.  
 Pat you amouges hem were oon.  
 Which of my court shal be wyholde.  
 So pat y<sup>e</sup> more I am byholde.  
 Of y<sup>e</sup> dyshe to comune.  
 And to remelde pat fortune.  
 Whiche many daye hay y<sup>e</sup> greued.  
 But if my conseil may be leued.  
 You schalt ben er you go.  
 Of yille vusely Ioly wo.  
 Wher of you seist yin herte is fyred.  
 But as of pat you hay desired.  
 After y<sup>e</sup> sentence of y<sup>e</sup> bylle.  
 You most y<sup>e</sup> of doon at my wille.  
 And y<sup>e</sup> y<sup>e</sup> of me wol myse.  
 For be you shal it shal suffice.  
 My medicine is nouht to seke.  
 Y<sup>e</sup> whiche is helson to y<sup>e</sup> seke.  
 I thought al parchaunce as y<sup>e</sup> it wolde.  
 But so as y<sup>e</sup> by y<sup>e</sup> son scholden.  
 Accordant to y<sup>e</sup> lous kynde.  
 For in y<sup>e</sup> phyt which I y<sup>e</sup> fynde.  
 So as as my court it hay allayed.  
 You shalte delych wellayed.  
 And if you woldest more crue.

It is no right pat you haue.  
 Qui cupit id quod here nequit sua  
 rempa p<sup>o</sup>dit. Est vbi non posse bel  
 le salute auet. Non estatis opus  
 gelidis hirsuta capillis. Cu calor  
 abcessit equipabit hyemps. Sicut  
 h<sup>o</sup> mayus non dat natura decet.  
 Nec poterit compar floribz esse lu  
 tid. Sic neqz decet pita semid iue  
 nile voluptas. ffloret i obsequi  
 Venus ipa petat. Conuiciens igitur  
 foret ut quos cana senectus. Accidit  
 Alterius corpora casta colant.  
**H**ic in exemplum cont quosdā  
 viros in deteratos amoris conal  
 piscencia affectantes loquitur be  
 nius hui<sup>9</sup> qz amantis confessi suppli  
 cacione quasi deridens ipm pro eo  
 qd senex z debilis est multis exor  
 tuacionibz insufficente redaruit.  
**E**ius which stant wy oute lalle.  
 In noon certeyn but as men dralle.  
 Of pagemā vpon y<sup>e</sup> chaunce.  
 She ley no yere in y<sup>e</sup> balauce.  
 But as hir likey for to weye.  
 Y<sup>e</sup> tuelle man ful ofte allewe.  
 She putte which hay hure grace led.  
 And sette an vntrelle in here stede.  
 So yus blyndly y<sup>e</sup> world she demey.  
 In lous cause as to me semey.  
 I not what ope men wolde seyn.  
 But I aligat am so by seyn.  
 And stonde as oon amouges alle.  
 Which am out of hure grace fülle.  
 It neder take no witnesse.  
 For she whiche seid is y<sup>e</sup> goddesse.  
 To wheyer part of lous it wende.  
 Hay sette me for a fymal ende.  
 Y<sup>e</sup> poynt wher to I shal holde.  
 For whan she hay me wel byholde.  
 Halving in scorn she seide yus.  
 You wost wel pat I am Venus.  
 Whiche al only my lustes sette.  
 And wel I wot yow<sup>e</sup> yow<sup>e</sup> by sette.  
 My lous lustes been yere noone.  
 Whiche I may take in y<sup>e</sup> y<sup>e</sup> sone.  
 For lous lust and loctes hore.  
 In chambze accorden neuere more.  
 And yow<sup>e</sup> you feyne a yow<sup>e</sup> coram.  
 It shewer wel by y<sup>e</sup> visage.  
 Pat olde wyset is no folle.  
 Yere ben ful many yeres stole.  
 Wy y<sup>e</sup> and such ope mo.  
 Pat outward feynmen wolde so.  
 And ben wy y<sup>e</sup> of yere assay.  
 Myn herte wolde and I ne may.  
 Is not beloued now a dayes.



Er wol make eny such assayes.  
 To loue and faile vpon ye fet.  
 Better is to make a beau regret.  
 For pouh you myghtest loue atteigne.  
 It were it but an ydel peyne.  
 Whan pat you art not sufficient.  
 To holde loue his conent.  
 For pi take hom ym herte ayein.  
 Pat you trauncyld not in beyn.  
 Wher of my Court may be deceyued.  
 I not and haue it wel conceyued.  
 How pat pi wil is good ynough.  
 But more byhouep to ye plough.  
 Wher of ye lackey as i tolde.  
 So farte it wel pat you byknowe.  
 Pi feble astat er you begynne.  
 ying Wher you myght nede eude thine.  
 What sholde a man assaye.  
 Whan pat hym lackey for to paye.  
 my soue if pat you wel ye bepowht.  
 pi touchen ye for yete it nouht.  
 ye yingne turned in to was.  
 ye which was whilom grene gras.  
 is wellwed hey as tyme nold.  
 for pi my conseil is pat polw.  
 Remembre wel how polw art old.  
 Whan Venus say here tale told.  
**Qualit sup deusoria Venere exor-  
 matione contristatus Amans qua-  
 si mortuus in terra coruit ubi ut  
 ibi uidebatur Cupidine ad in nu-  
 mera multitudinem amantid dant  
 is turmis assistentid conspiciebatur.**  
**W**han i bepowht was al aboute.  
 And wist wel wy oute dourte.  
 pat yere was no recouery.  
 And as a man ye blase of fyre.  
 Wy water quencher so ferd g.  
 A cold me caught so dely.  
 for sorlle pat myn herte made.  
 my dedly face pale and fade.  
 By cam z stone i fel to grounde.  
 And as i lay ye same stounde.  
 ye fully quyt ne fully ded.  
 ye powht sp to fore myn hed.  
 Cupide wy hys bolle bent.  
 And rich vn to a parlement.  
 Which were ordeyned for penones.  
 Wy hym cam all ye world at ones.  
 Of gentyl folk pat whilom were.  
 Douers i sh hem alle yere.  
 forp wy Cupide in sondry routes.  
 my yhe and as i cast a boutes.  
 To knowe amonge hem who was who.  
 I sh where lusty youpe ye.  
 The which was a suppleyn.  
 To fore all eper vpon ye pleyu.

Stood wy his route wel by gon.  
 here hedes kempt and ped vpon.  
 Garlandes not of colour.  
 Some of ye leef some of ye flour.  
 And some of nyte perles were.  
 ye nelle gyle of beallme yere.  
 Wy sondry yingres wel deuised.  
 I sh wher of ye ben queynised.  
 It was al list pat ye wy ferde.  
 yer was no song pat i ne herde.  
 Which vn to loue was touchyng.  
**Pan id est deus nature.**  
 Of pan and all pat was lyhmyng.  
 As in ppyng of melodye.  
 Was herd in yllke compaynye.  
 So loude pat on euery syde.  
 It pouht as al ye heuene cryde.  
 In such a cord and such a soum.  
 Of bombard and of clarion.  
 Wy cornemuse and shamele.  
 pat it was half a mannes hele.  
 So glad anoyse for to here.  
 And as me pouht in pis manere.  
 Al fresch i sh he hem spyrnyng z daunce.  
 And do to loue here eutensaunce.  
 After ye lust of youpes heste.  
 yere was i nough of joye and feste.  
 for euere amonge ye laue z pleye.  
 And putten care out of ye weye.  
 pat he wy hem ne sat ne stood.  
 And ouer pis i vnderstood.  
 So as myn gre hit myht a reche.  
 ye most matere of here speche.  
**De nobz illoz nup amantid qui  
 tuc amanti pasuato aliqui iuue-  
 nes aliqui senes apparuerut. Se-  
 nes aute papue cam exa deu qui  
 deam amoris pro sanitate aman-  
 tis recuperanda multiplicatis prea-  
 bus misericorditer infabauit.**  
**W**as of knyghthod and of armes.  
 And what it is to luge in armes.  
 Wy loue whan it is acheued.  
 yer was Tristram which was bilueed.  
 Wy bele yold and lancelot  
 Stood wy Ginox and Galaoht.  
 Wy his lady. and as me pouht.  
 I sh wher jason wy hym brouhte.  
 his loue which eueysa lyhte.  
 And hercules which muche myhte.  
 Was yere beynng his grete mace.  
 And most of all in yllke place.  
 he peyne hym to make chere.  
 Wy Golen which was hym dere.  
 he seus pouh he were yntrewe.  
 To loue as all women knelle.  
 pat was he yere napeles.



Wip feda d'hom to loue he ches.  
 of Grete eke pere was Thelamon.  
 Which fto pe kyng lamenedon.  
 At Troie his souhter refte a weye.  
 Efeonen as for his prey.  
 Which taken was whan Jason cam.  
 fto folows and pe Grete nam.  
 In deungeance of pe ferste hate.  
 pat made hem after to debate.  
 Whan primums pe nelle to lvn.  
 Wip mad and in mufion.  
**W**e pouht pat Jsh alfo.  
 Etor for Wip his brepreu tldo.  
 hyn self ftood Wip p'ntafce.  
 And next to hyn Jmyht fce.  
 Where p'ntafce ftood Wip faure Elyne.  
 Which was his ioye fcheverne.  
 And Troylus ftood Trufte.  
 But euere among al pouht he pleyde.  
 Ely fcmblant he was heuy chered.  
 For Troiede as hyn was lered.  
 Elyne to be his p'ntoner.  
 And pus ful many a bachelier.  
 A poufand mo pan I can feyn.  
 Wip pouxe I feih pere Wel befeyn.  
 For Wip hure lones glad & blype.  
 And fomes I fhe Whiche ofte fpe.  
 Complenguen hyn in foudry Wye.  
 Among pe Whiche I feih narife.  
 And Pyramus pat for were.  
 pe Werf Greck alfo was pere.  
 Achilles Whiche for loue d'ede.  
 A hamenon eke as men fce.  
 And menelay pe kyng alfo.  
 I fih Wip many an oter mo.  
 Whiche hadden be fortuneds fore.  
 In lones caufe and ouer more.  
**O**f women in pe fame cas.  
 Wip hem I feih Wihere Dido was.  
 Forfak Which was Wip Grece.  
 And phyllis eke Jmyht fce.  
 Whom Demophon deceyued hadde.  
 And Adriane hure forlde lade.  
 For Thesens hure fofter toot.  
 And hure inkyndely forfok.  
 I fih per eke among pe p'ces.  
 Complenguen Wipon hercules.  
 His ferst loue Deiane.  
 Whiche sette hyn after War afyre.  
 medea was pere eke and pleyney.  
 Wip Jason for pat he feyne.  
 Wip oure caufe and took anelwe.  
 She feide fy on all vntelwe.  
 I fih per eke Deydany.  
 Whiche hadde left pe compangne.  
 Of Achilles Whan Troiede.  
 To Troie hyn sette Wipon pe nede.

**A**mong pe otre Wipon pe grene.  
 I fih alfo pe Woful yweene.  
 Cleopatras Whiche in a cade.  
 Wip Serpents hay hir self byrrane.  
 And quyt and fo she was to toze.  
 For forlde of pat she hadde toze.  
 Antony Whiche here loue hay bo.  
 And for Wip hir Jsh Wylle.  
 Whiche on pe fharpe Wodes p'nt.  
 For loue deide in foy p'nt.  
 And as myn Gre myht fce.  
 She feide Wip Wip all fce.  
 pe pleynte of p'nt and p'nt.  
 per herde I what it Wolde men.  
 holl Terens of his vntrolpe.  
 Wude hem boye and pat was roupe.  
 And next to hem I fih Canace.  
 Whiche for anachure here fader grace.  
 Hay l'fte and deyde in Woful p'nt.  
 And as I feih yn my fpirit.  
 we pouht amonges otre pus.  
 polixena Whom p'ntus fce.  
 Was pere and made forlde Jmou.  
 As she Whiche deyde gultel.  
 For loue and pat was lones.  
 And for to take pe deffort.  
 I fhe per fome of otre p'nt.  
 And pat was Grece and Calippe.  
 pat coupen do pe moone Eclipe.  
 Of men and chaunge pe likneffe.  
 Of artmagyn fce.  
 per helde in honde many on.  
 To loue Wihere per Wolde or noon.  
**O**ut aboue alle pat pere were.  
 Of women I feih foure pere.  
 Whos name I herde moft comended.  
 Ely hem pe court ftood all amended.  
 For Wihere per comen in p'nt.  
 Wihedden hem pe reuelance.  
 As pouht per hadden be godesf.  
 Of al pe world and Emperelles.  
 And as me pouhte an Gre Jlyde.  
 And herde holl pat p'nt otre fce.  
 To p'nt ben p'nton pe foure Wye.  
 Whos fce was p'nted in hure Wye.  
 For in enffamle of alle moode.  
 Wip marlage fo per fce.  
 pat fume Whiche no gret p'nt.  
 Wih in croniz of hem abidey.  
 Penelope pat on was hote.  
 Whom many a fuyht hay lones hote.  
 Whil pat hir lord Dices lay.  
 fful many a yer and many a day.  
 Wipon pe grete Siene of Troie.  
 But she Whiche hay no Wodes ioye.  
 But couht of here housbonde.  
 Whil pat hir lord was out of londe.



Sorrel hay kept her womanhede.  
 pat all ye world per of took hede.  
 And unmelliche of hem in grece.  
**C**hrytopher Woman Was Luarece.  
 Wif to ye Pomeyn Callatyn.  
 And she constreyned ofte angryn.  
 To ying which was a ren hir wille.  
 She wolde not hire selue scille.  
 But deyde only for dred of shame.  
 In lepyng of hir good name.  
 As she which was oon of ye beste.  
 ye vnde wif was hore Alceste.  
 Which whan Ametio sholde dre.  
 vpon his grete maladie.  
 She preyde vnto ye goddes so.  
 pat he receyue alle ye do.  
 And deyde hir selfe to yene hym lyf.  
 See wher ye were a noble wif.  
**T**he ferre wif which i per fih.  
 i herde of hem pat were wif.  
 how she was cleped Alacone.  
 which to Seyn hir lord allone.  
 And to no mo hir body kepte.  
 And whan she seih hym deit she lepte.  
 In to ye walde wher she stam.  
 And yere a sefol she bycam.  
 And wif hir wyngre hym by sprade.  
 For loue pat to hym she hadde.  
 To yere foure weren so.  
 which i seih as me poult po.  
 A moun ye grete compaignie.  
 which loue hadde for to yre.  
 But youte which in speial.  
 Of loues court was marshall.  
 So besy was vpon his lay.  
 pat he noon heed wher i lay.  
 hay caak. 2 pan as i beheld.  
 me poult i fih vpon ye feld.  
 wher elde cam a softe pas.  
 Toward Venus yere as she was.  
 Wif hym met compaignie he laded.  
 But not so fele as youte hadde.  
 ye moste part were of yere age.  
 And pat was iene in here visage.  
 And not for ye so as ye myhter.  
 ye made hem youtly to ye sighte.  
 But ye herde i no yppes yere.  
 To make myre in manes ere.  
 But ye myre i myhter fih.  
 for olde men which solued loue.  
 Wif harpe and lute. 2 Wif citole.  
 ye houe dance and ye carole.  
 In suche a wyse as loue hay bede.  
 A softe pas ye daunce and wede.  
 And wif ye woman oper while.  
 Wif softe cheer among ye smile.  
 for launtyer was ye noon on fih.

And napeles fih del i fih.  
 pat ye ye more queynte in mde.  
 for loue in whom ye weren glade.  
**A**nd yere me poult i myht so.  
 ye fih dand wif Berfabe.  
 And Salamon was not wif oute.  
 passing an hundred in a route.  
 Of wydes and of concubynes.  
 The eke and Sarazines.  
 To hym i seih alle eucendunt.  
 I not if he were sufficient.  
 But napeles for all his wit.  
 he was attach wif pat wit.  
 which loue wif his hond enlepe.  
 for whom non erpely man appelepe.  
 And ouer ye as for a wonder.  
 Wif his leon which he put vnder.  
 Wif Dalida Sampson i fih.  
 whos loue his seynge al ouerpress.  
**A**nd i ye pete Aristotle also.  
 whom ye grete of grece so.  
 hay bydet pat in palke yme.  
 She made hym such a syllogyme.  
 pat he forpat al his logyng.  
 for was noon arte of his pratyng.  
 puruh which it myht ben excludid.  
 pat he ne was fully concludid.  
 To loue and dede his oberfauce.  
 And eke vngile of aqueytraunce.  
 I seih wher he ye mayden preyde.  
 which was ye doughter as men seyde.  
 Of pempour whilom of Rome.  
 Sortes and plato wif hym come.  
 So dede euyde ye poete.  
 I poult paine how loue is swete.  
 which hay so wise men reclaimed.  
 And was my self ye lasse ashamed.  
 Or for to lese or for to whine.  
 In ye myschies pat i was yune.  
 And yus i lay in hope of grace.  
**A**nd whan ye comen to ye place.  
 wher Venus stood 2 i was fih.  
 ye olde men wif o boys alle.  
 To Venus preyden for my sake.  
 And she pat myht not for sake.  
 So grete a clamour as was yere.  
 Yet yere come in to hir ere.  
 And forp wif all in to euyde.  
 She preyde pat he vpon his side.  
 ye wolde puruh his grace sende.  
 Som confort pat i myht amende.  
 vpon ye cas which is bifalle.  
 And yus for me ye preyden alle.  
 Of hem pat weren olde aboute.  
 And eke som of ye yonge route.  
 Of gentileste and pure troupe.  
 I herde hem telle it was grete roupe.



**I** hat ȝ Wy outen helpe so ferde.  
And pus me pouht ȝ lay and herde.  
*hic tractat qualiter Cupido aman-  
tis senectute confecti viscera pscru-  
tans 2 ignita sue concupiscentie te-  
ra ab eo penitus extraxit que Ven-  
postea absq; calore papiens vacu-  
um reliquit 2 sic tandem promissa  
senectus rationem innocens holum  
interiore ppris amore infatua-  
tum metis sauitati plenē restituit.*  
**C**upide which may hurte 2 hele.  
In Loues cause as for myn hele.  
Upon ye poynt which hym was pde.  
I am Wy Venus here ȝ was leyde.  
Sithynnyng upon ye grene gras.  
And as me pouht a noon yer was.  
On euery side so greet ptes.  
pat euery ȝf began to ptes.  
ȝ Not not Wel how many score.  
Such as ȝ spak of now tofore.  
Louers pat comen to bihold.  
But most of hem pat weren olde.  
ȝei stoden yere at yille tyde.  
To see what ende shal bytyde.  
Upon ye axe of my sottie.  
ȝo myht ȝ here greet parcie.  
Spekyng and eche his owne abyde.  
ȝay told oon pat an ower ȝe.  
ȝut amang alle ȝis ȝ herde.  
ȝei weren do pat ȝ so ferde.  
And seiden pat for no riote.  
ȝ An olde man sholde not assore.  
ȝ For as ȝei tolden redely.  
ȝer is in hym no cause whi.  
ȝut if he wolde hym self be nyce.  
ȝo were he Wel ȝe more nyce.  
ȝ And pus desputen some of ȝoo.  
ȝ And some seiden noþing so.  
ȝut pat ȝo Wilde Loues rage.  
ȝ In mannes lyf forberey noon age.  
ȝha yere is oyle for to fyre.  
ȝe Amys is whiche set a fyre.  
ȝ And is ful hard et it be queynt.  
ȝut why if it be som seynt.  
ȝhich god ȝseruey of his grace.  
ȝ And pus me pouht in sondry place.  
ȝ Of hem pat Walken by and doun.  
ȝere was diuerse oppynow.  
ȝ And for a while so w laste.  
ȝut pat Cupide to ȝe laste.  
ȝ For Wy his moder ful adysed.  
ȝay determyned and deuyled.  
ȝ On to what poynt he wole descende.  
ȝ And all ȝis tyme ȝ was lighende.  
ȝ Upon ye ground to fore his yhen.  
ȝ And ȝei pat my deshef shen.

**S**upposen not. scholde lyue.  
ȝut he whiche wolde punne yde.  
ȝis grace so as it may be.  
ȝis blynde god which may not so.  
ȝay groped til pat he me fond.  
ȝ And as he putte forp his hond.  
ȝ Upon my body where ȝ lay.  
ȝe pouht a fryy lancegray.  
ȝhich whilom puruh myn heert ȝe.  
ȝe pullep out and also faste.  
ȝ As ȝis was do Cupide nam.  
ȝis wepe ȝ not wher he bycam.  
ȝ And so dede al ȝe remenant.  
ȝhich vn to hym was entendant.  
ȝ Of hem pat in adision.  
ȝ I hadde a reueladon.  
ȝ So as ȝ tolde now tofore.  
**V**enus went not perfore.  
ȝe genius which yille tyme.  
ȝ A biden hope faste byrme.  
ȝ And she whiche may ȝe heres bynde.  
ȝ In Loues cause and eke vubynde.  
ȝ Er ȝ out of my trans a rob.  
ȝ Venus whiche helde a boyste dos.  
ȝ And wolde not pat ȝ shulde dore.  
ȝ Took out more cold ȝam eny ȝore.  
ȝ An oynement 2 in such poynt.  
ȝ She ȝay my wounded herce a noynt.  
ȝ my temples and my repues also.  
ȝ And forp Wy al she took me ȝo.  
ȝ A wonder anyow for to holde.  
ȝ In which she bad me to byholde.  
ȝ And taken hede of pat ȝ ȝerh.  
ȝ Wher ȝime anon myn heres yeh.  
ȝ I caste and syhe my colour fade.  
ȝ my phen dymme 2 all vutylade.  
ȝ my chekes pynne and al my face.  
ȝ Wy elde ȝ myht se deface.  
ȝ So ryueled and so w by seyn.  
ȝ pat yere was no ymyt ful ne pleyne.  
ȝ I sh also myn heres hore.  
ȝ my Wil was ȝo to se no more.  
ȝer Wy. for yere was no plesance.  
ȝ And pynne in to my remembelance.  
ȝ I dwollh myn olde dayes passed.  
ȝ And as reson it ȝay compassed.  
*Ad stat hodie mensis anni equiparat.*  
ȝ I made a lictnesse of my selue.  
ȝ On to ȝe sondry monyes tibelue.  
ȝ Wher of ȝe yere in his astat.  
ȝ Is maad and stant upon debat.  
ȝ pat lich til ower non acordey.  
ȝ For who ȝe tymes Wel recordery.  
ȝ And pynne at march if he by hymne.  
ȝ Whan pat ȝe lusty yere comy ȝime.  
ȝ Til August be passed and septembre.  
ȝ ȝe myht yow ȝe may remembre.



In which ye yer hay his deduyt.  
 Of gras of flour of leef of fruyt.  
 Of corn and of ye dymy grape.  
 And after ward his tyme is shap.  
 To frost to snow to wynd to fern.  
 Til eft pat maye be come a yern.  
 ye wynter wol no somer knolle.  
 ye grene leef is ouer growe.  
 ye cloped eye is paine bare.  
 Respyred is ye somer fare.  
 pat erste was here is pan chelo.  
 And plus penyng polhtes felo.  
 Was out of my stowe affayred.  
 Wher of I shal my wittes frayred.  
 And gan to clepe hom hom a yern.  
 And whan resou it herde seyn.  
 pat lones rage was a weye.  
 he cam to me ye ryht weye.  
 And hay remembred ye sotte.  
 Of yllke dyllyse fantasie.  
 Wher of pat I was wout to pleyne.  
 So pat of yllke fry peyne.  
 I was mad sobbe and hool ynowh.  
 Venus beheld me pan and loush.  
 And axey as it were in game.  
 What lous was. and I for shame.  
 ye wylt what I sholde answere.  
 And napeles I gan to swe.  
 pat by my twylpe I knelle hi nouht.  
 So fer it was out of my pouht.  
 Filt as it hadde neuere be.  
 my goode sone po quod she.  
 It olt at his tyme I leue it wel.  
 So goop he fortune of my wheel.  
 For pi my counseil is pou leue.  
 A dame seid I by poure leue.  
 ye weten wel and so wot I.  
 pat I am by houely.  
 poure court fyw pis day fory to serue.  
 And for I may no wylt deserue.  
 And also for I am refused.  
 I prey you to ben excused.  
 And napeles as for ye laste.  
 Whil pat my wittes wywle laste.  
 Touchyng my confession.  
 I axe an absolucion.  
 Of Venus er pat I no.  
 ye prest a word was redy po.  
 And seyde sone as of pi shryfte.  
 you hast ful pardon and foryfte.  
 For yett pow and so wol I. **Amas.**  
 In holy fader graunt mercy.  
 Quod I to hym. and to ye greene.  
 I fel on knees vpon ye greene.  
 And took my leue for to wende.  
 But she pat wolde make an ende.  
 As per to which I was most able.

A peyre of redes blak as sable.  
 She took and heng my necke aboute.  
 vpon ye gaudes al wyw oute.  
 Was write of gold pour reposer.  
 Do pus she seide Johan Golder.  
 Now you lott at ye luste cast.  
 pis haue I for pi ease cast.  
 pat you no more of loue seche.  
 But my wil is pat yow besche.  
 And prey here after for ye pees.  
 And pat you make upleyn reles.  
 To loue which takelitel hede.  
 Of olde men vpon ye neede.  
 Whan pat ye lustes ben alweye.  
 for pi to ye wyw but oweye.  
 In which let resou be pi myde.  
 for he may sone hym self mys myde.  
 pat seep not ye peril to fore.  
 my sone be wel bar per fore.  
 And kepe ye sentence of my lore.  
 And tane you my colure no more.  
 But ye pere moral vertu dwelle.  
 Wher bel pi booke as men telle.  
 Which of long tyme you hat write.  
 for pis I do ye wel to write.  
 If you pi hele wil purchase.  
 you myht nouht make fyte & chace.  
 Wher pat ye game is not quable.  
 It were a myght duresonable.  
 A man to be so ouer seye.  
 for pi take heede of pat I seye.  
 for in ye laste of my comune.  
 he be not shapen to comune.  
 pi self and I neuere after pis.  
 Now haue I seid all pat per is.  
 Of loue as for pi final ende.  
 A dieu for I mot fyw ye wende.  
 And grete wel chaunce whan ye meete.  
 As my dysciple and my poete.  
 for in ye floures of his yowpe.  
 In sondry wyse as he wel coupe.  
 Of sytees and of songes glade.  
 ye which he for my sake made.  
 ye lond fulfilled is ouer al.  
 Wher of to hym in special.  
 A loue allt ower I am most hold.  
 for pi now in his dayes olde.  
 you shal hym telle pis message.  
 pat he vpon his latter age.  
 To sette an ende of all his werk.  
 As he which is myn owen clerk.  
 To make his testament of loue.  
 As you hast do pi shryft aboue.  
 So pat my court it may recorde.  
 A dame I can me wel acorde.  
 Quod I to telle as ye me bydde.  
 And wyw pat word it so bytiede.



Out of my sight al so demy.  
 Enclosed in a sterry sky.  
 Up to ye heuene Venus straichte.  
 And y my riht weye caughte.  
 hom fro ye wode and forp y wente.  
 Where as wyf al myn hool entente.  
 yus wyf my bedes vpon honde.  
 for hem pat trewe loue fonde.  
 I penke bidde while y hve.  
 vpon ye point which y am chryste.  
**E**t laudem xpi que tu virgo pepe-  
 rista. Sic laus Ricardi quem septem  
 colunt leopardi. Ad sua precepta co-  
 pleni carmina cepta. Que Brutina  
 tu legat anglia perpetua. **Q**uia  
 in fine libri honorificos qz filios  
 illustrissimū principis dñi fili Re-  
 gis Anglie Ricardi secundi mores  
 sicut dignū est laude commendabili  
 describens p eiusdem status salu-  
 bres conuersatione acutpotem deuo-  
 ans exorat.

**W**hich wyf yme dayes seene.  
 ye lauge world forp wyf ye heuene.  
 of his eternal prouidence.  
 hay mad and wilke intelligence.  
 In mannes soule resonable.  
 Enspired to hym self semblable.  
 Wher of ye man of fecture.  
 A boue alle erpely creature.  
 After ye soule is immortal.  
 To palke lord in special.  
 As he which is of alle ynges.  
 ye creatour. and of ye kynges.  
 hay ye fortunes vpon honde.  
 his grace and mevey for to fonde.  
 vpon my bare knees y prey.  
 pat he my worpi kyng conueye.  
 Richard by name ye secunde.  
 In Whom hay euere hit be fonde.  
 Justice medled wyf pite.  
 Pargesse forp wyf charite.  
 In his pson it may be shelded.  
 What is a kyng to be wel yelved.  
 Touchyng of pite namely.  
 for he yit neuere vnpretensely.  
 A yem ye lieges of his lond.  
 for no defaute which he fond.  
 yurgh cruallte vengeance southe.  
 And yowh ye wildes chaunce i brouhte.  
 of infortune gret debat.  
 yit was he nouht infortunat.  
 for he which ye fortune ladde.  
 ye huse god hym ouerspradde.  
 of his justice and kept hym so.  
 pat his a stat stood euermore.  
 Sauf as it ouht wel to be.

**L**iber  
 Lyd to ye some in his degre.  
 Which wyf ye cloude by a losse.  
 Is derked and by shadowed ofte.  
 But holl so pat it wold be in pte.  
 ye some is euere byght and fere.  
 wyf yme hym self and nouht fere.  
 Al yowh ye weder be despered.  
 ye heued planete is nouht to wite.  
 my worpi pryncce of wch y wite.  
 yus stant he wyf hym self cleve.  
 And dop what ly in his power.  
 not only heer at hom to seke.  
 Done and accord but outward eke.  
 As he pat saue his poeple wode.  
 So been we alle wel byholde.  
 To do seruice and obeysaunce.  
 To hym which of his hys suffraunce.  
 hay many a gret debate appesed.  
 To make his siege men ben esed.  
 Wherfore pat his cronikz shal.  
 for euere be memorial.  
 To ye Loenge of pat he dop.  
 for his wot euery man in soy.  
 What kyng pat so desyre pees.  
 he take ye weye which crist ches.  
 And who pat cristes weyes surer.  
 It pryncer wel pat he eschuer.  
 ye vices and is vertuous.  
 Wher of he mot be gracious.  
 Toward his god and acceptable.  
 And so to make his regne stable.  
 wyf all ye wil pat y may reue.  
 I prey and shal whil pat y hve.  
 As y which in subiection.  
 stonde vnder ye protection.  
 And may my seluen nouht byllde.  
 What for sekensse and what for eke.  
 Which y receyue of goddes grace.  
 But yowh me lacke to purchace.  
 my kynges yowh as by decerte.  
 yit ye synplesse of my pouerte.  
 vnto ye loue of my ligence.  
 Desyre for to do plesauce.  
 And for his cause in myn entente.  
 yis pouere hood here y presente.  
 vnto his huse worpinesse.  
 Write of my synple bysynesse.  
 So as sekensse it soffre wolde.  
 And in such wise as i first tolde.  
 Whan yis book bygan to make.  
 In soni partie it may be take.  
 As for to lauge and for to pleye.  
 And for to loke in oyer weye.  
 It may be wisdom to ye wyse.  
 So pat soundel for good appyse.  
 And eke soundel for lust and game.  
 I haue it made for yllke same.



Which are forto ben excused,  
 That I no poynt haue vsed  
 Upon ye forme of eloquence,  
 For pat is not of mi science;  
 But I haue do my trewe peyne  
 Wip rude wordes and wip pleyne  
 To speke of ying which I haue told.  
 But now pat I am feble and old,  
 And to reworship of mi king  
 In loue aboue alle ower ying  
 Pat I yis bol haue mad and wite,  
 Mi muse dop me forto wite  
 Pat it is to me for ye beste  
 For yis day for to take reste,  
 Pat I nomore of loue make.  
 But he which hap of loue his make  
 It sit him wel to singe and daunce,  
 And do to loue his entendance  
 In songes bope and in seyinges  
 After ye lust of his pleynges.  
 For he hap pat he wolde haue:  
 But where a man schal loue craue.  
 And faile, it stant al owerwise.  
 In his prouerbe seip ye wise,  
 Chan game is best, is best to leue:  
 And pus fori my synal leue.  
 Wip oute making any more,  
 I take now for euere more  
 Of loue and of his dede hele,  
 Which no phisicien can hele,

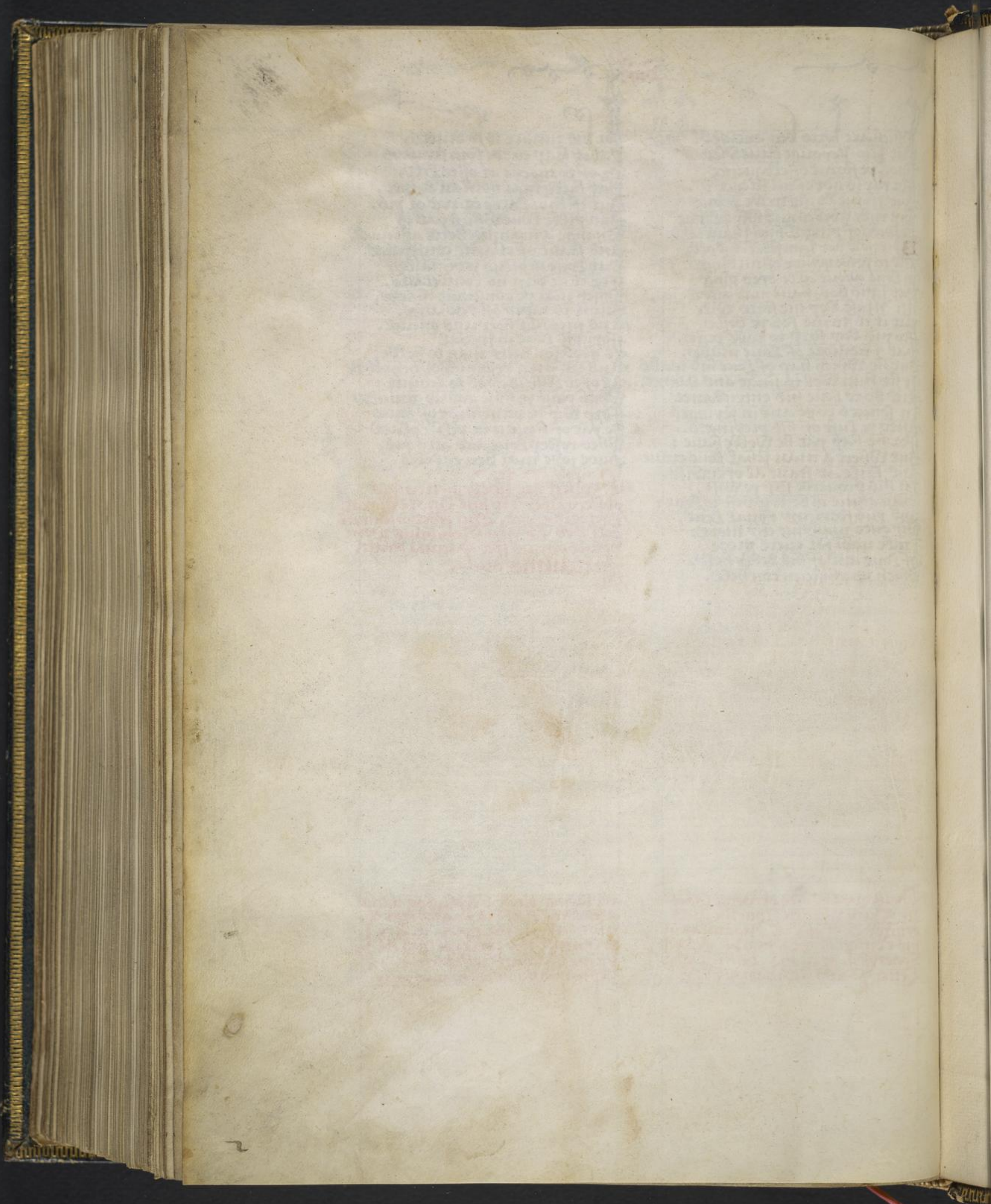
for his nature is so diuers,  
 Pat it hap euere som trauiers  
 Or of to moche or of to lite,  
 Pat fully mai noman dehyte.  
 But if him lacke or pat or yis.  
 But yilke loue which pat is  
 Wipinne a mannes herte affermed,  
 And stant of charite confermed,  
 Pat loue is of no repentaile;  
 For it ne beip no contritaile,  
 Which mai ye conscience chaunge,  
 But it is wipen off deschaunge.  
 And needful heer and ouerul.  
 For yis loue in special  
 Is good for euery man to holde,  
 And who pat resoun wol beholde,  
 Al ower lust is good to daunte:  
 Which ying ye sihe god us graunte  
 For yis ye remenant of grace  
 So pat of heuene in yilke place  
 Wher resten loue and alle pes,  
 Dure ioye mai ben endeles.

Explicit iste liber, qui transeat  
 obsecro liber ut sine timore bigeat  
 lectoris in ore. Qui sedet in scannio  
 celi det ut ista Johannes per  
 petuis annis stet pagina grata  
 Britannis ann

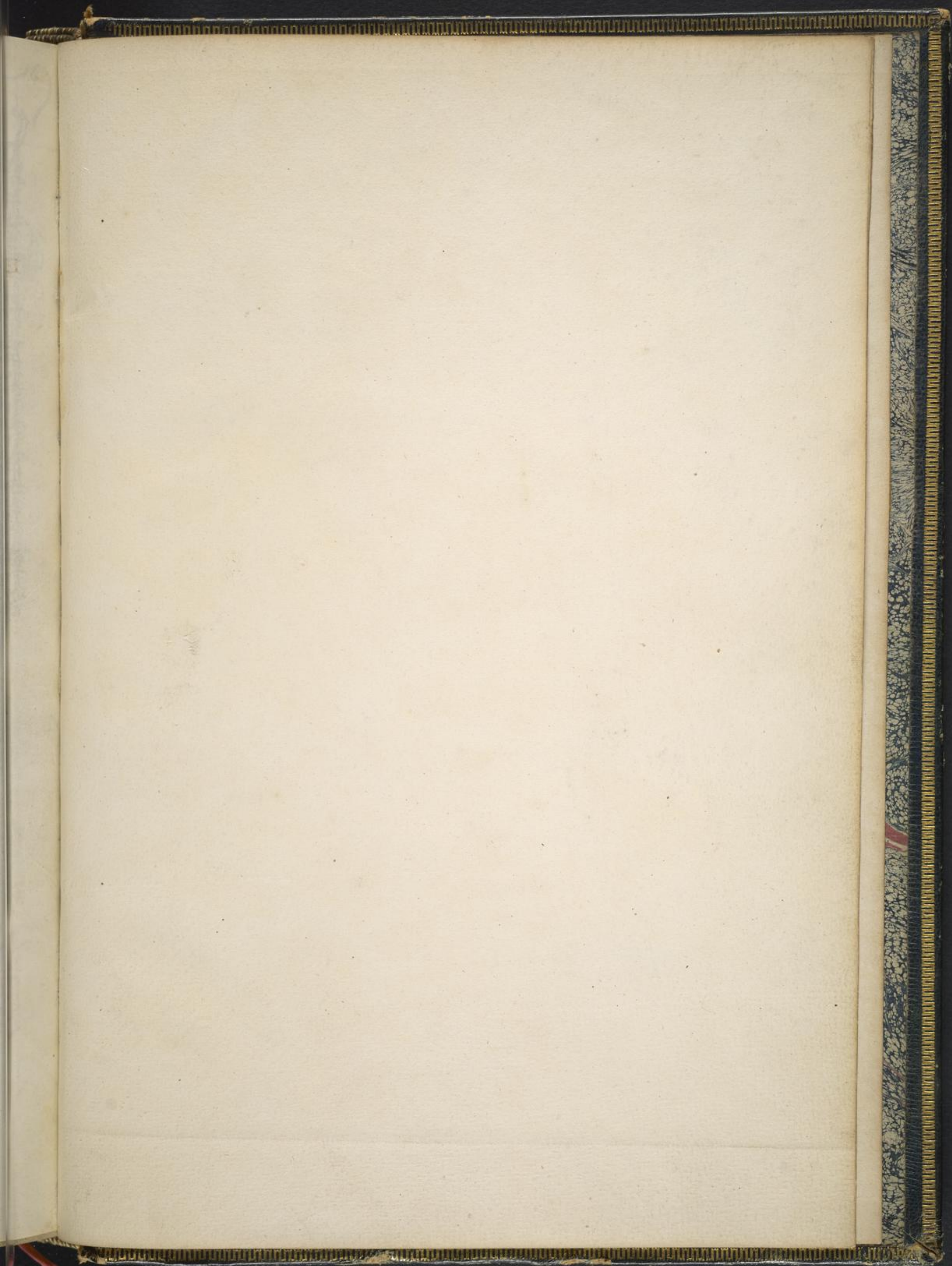
The above 56 lines of verse (58 of  
 MS) are written from the mod-  
 ernized text of G. C. Macaulay in  
 his edition of the poem, E. E. Text  
 Society, 11. 475-478, but the early  
 letter forms have been used (p.

replacing th, & f replacing initial  
 & medial s, of his printed text &  
 v for inl. u, for medl. u, & v  
 to imitate the style of this MS.  
 by me Edward Johnston 14-15  
 September Anno Domini mcmxxv.

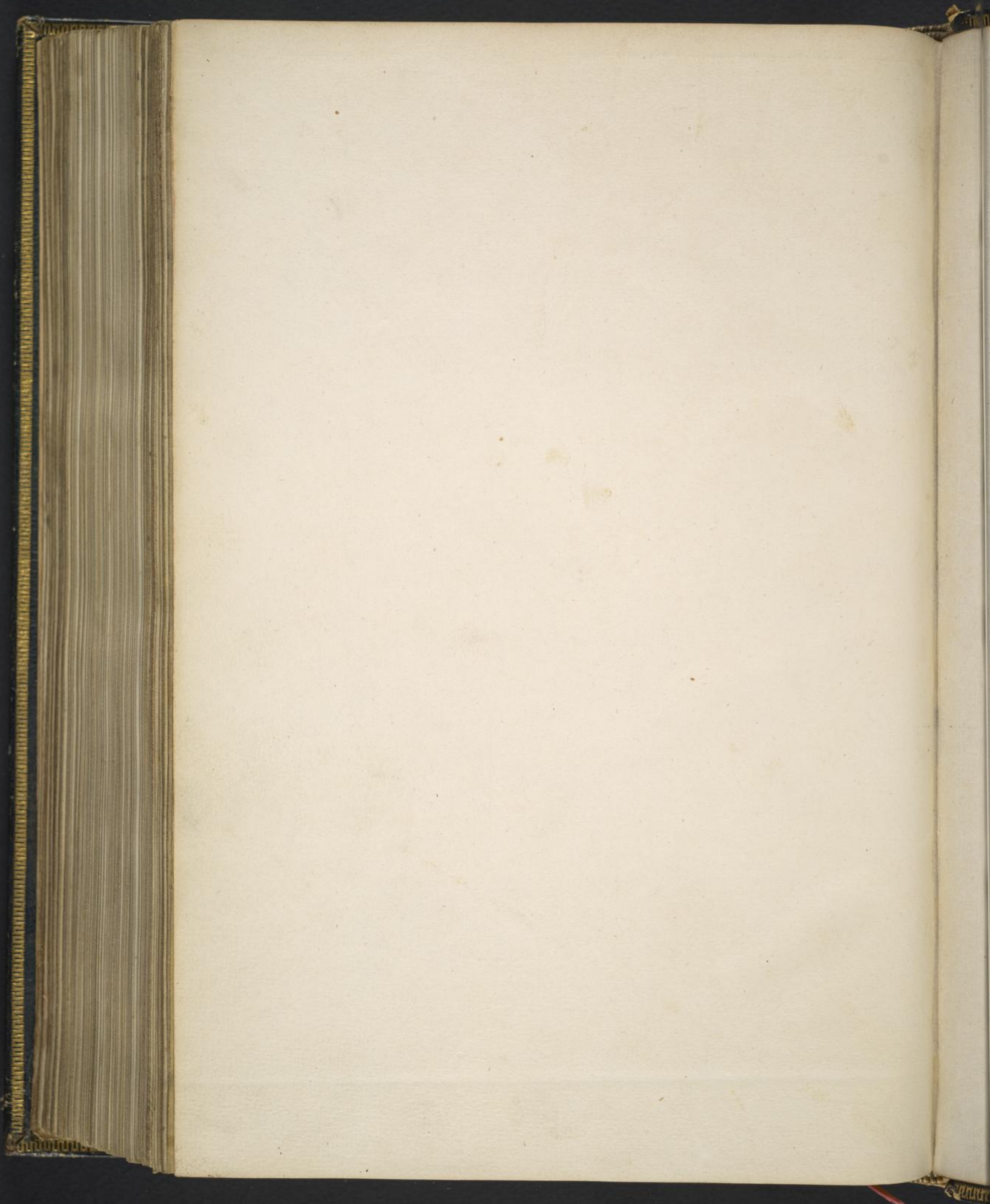




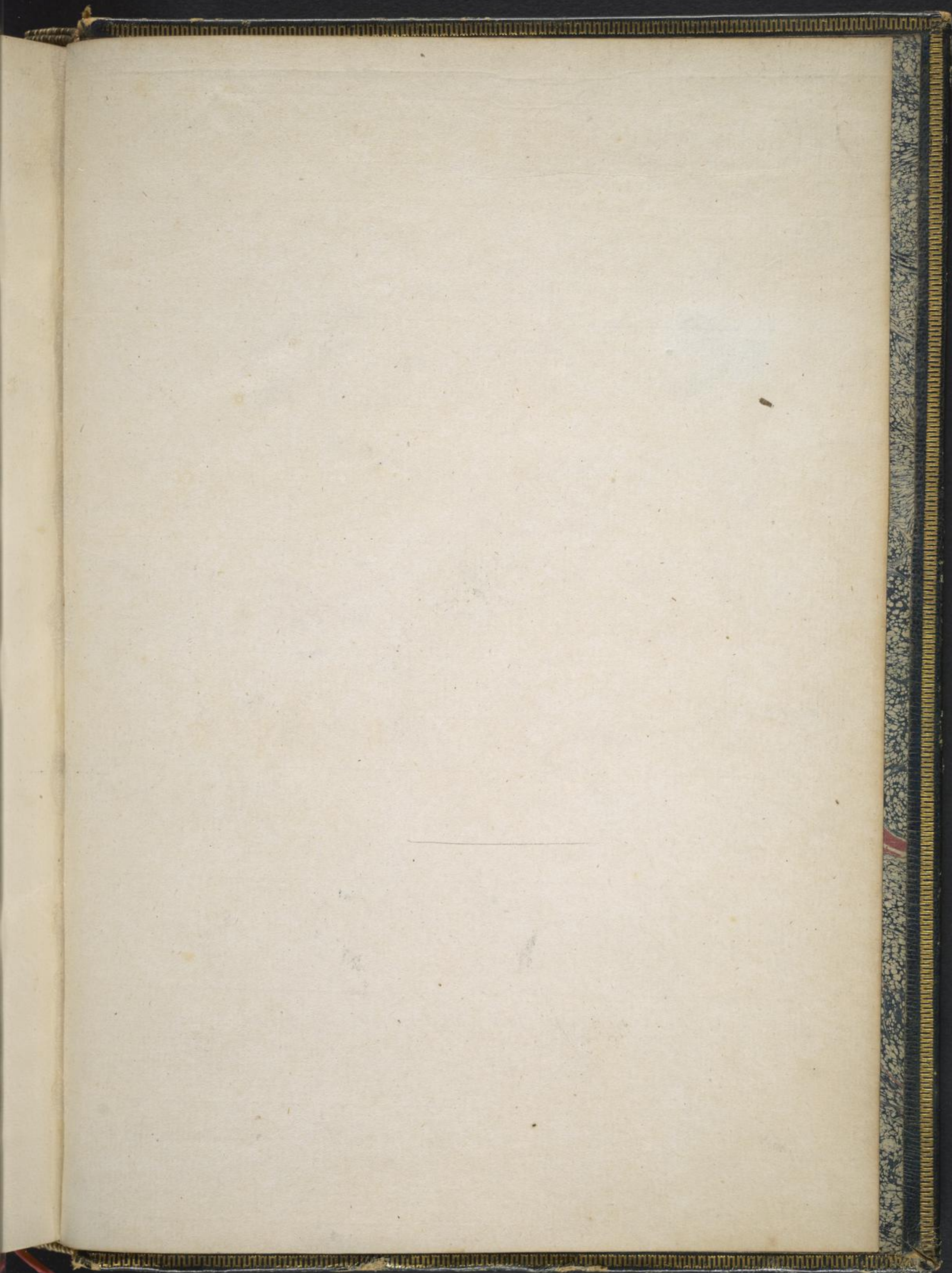




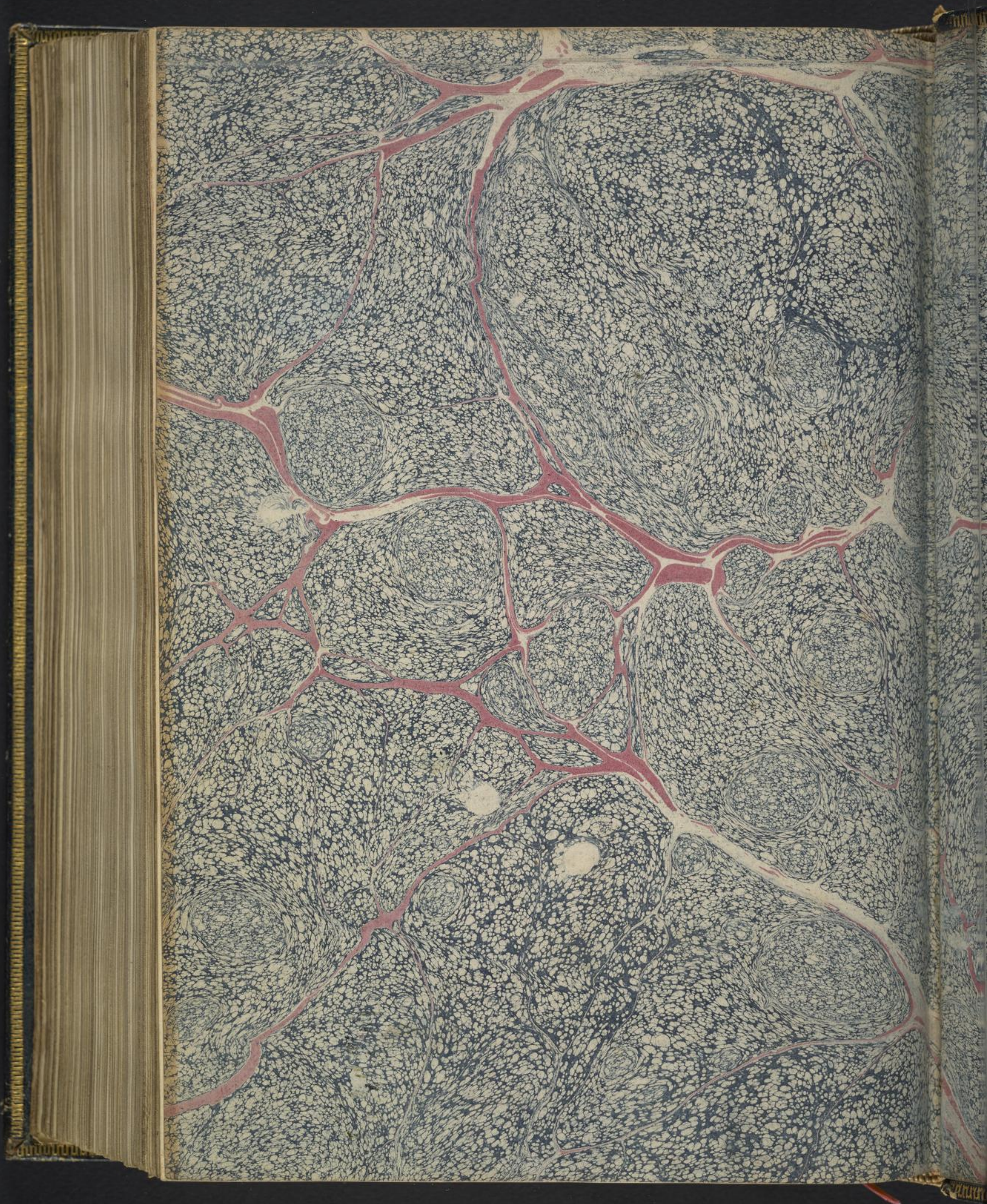




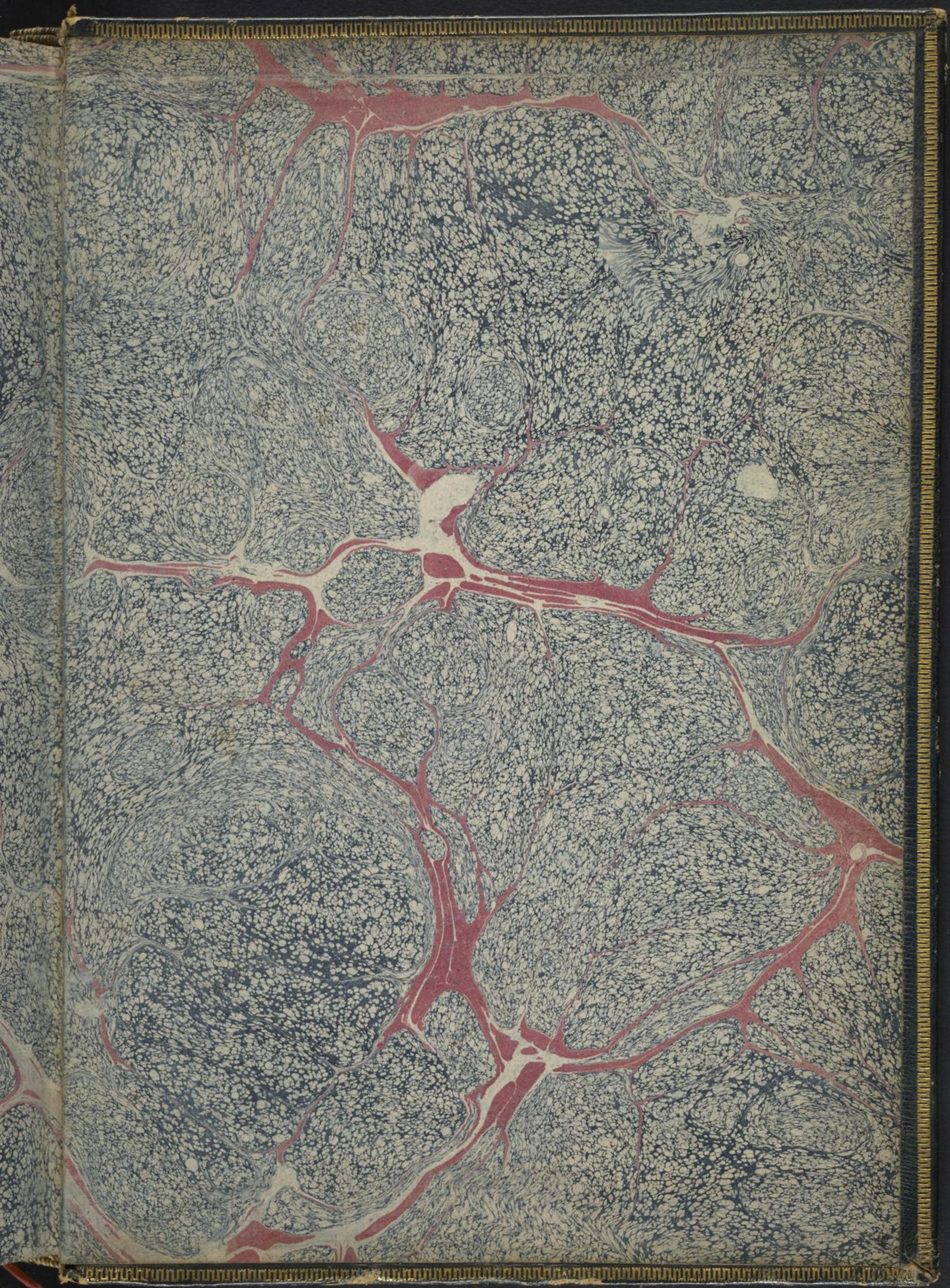




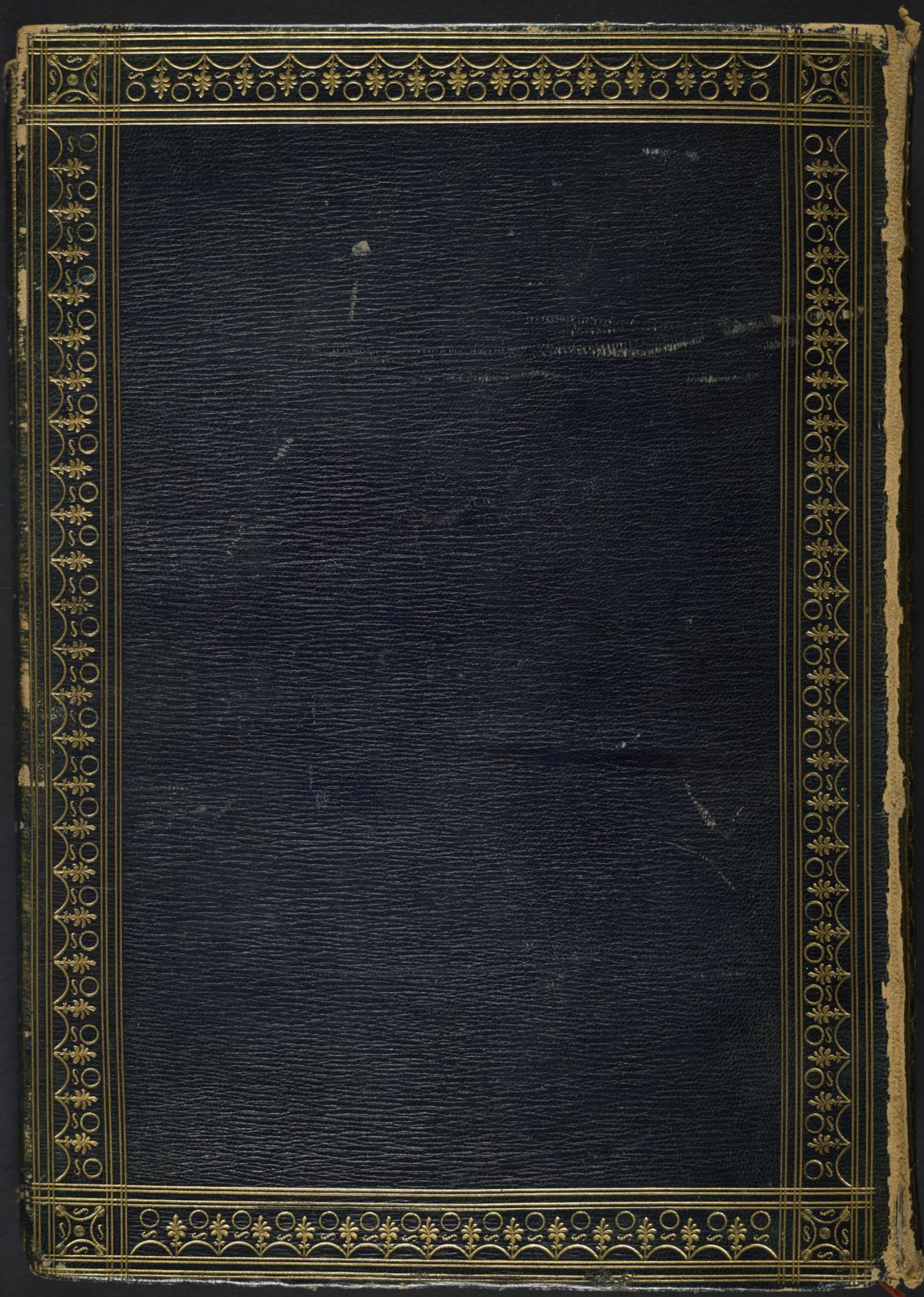














GOWER'S  
CONFESSIO  
AMANTIS

MS











